



CASTLE OF BLACK IRON

BOOK 04

Drunk Tiger

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Castle of Black Iron

(黑铁之堡)

by

Drunken Tiger

(醉虎)

Synopsis

After the Catastrophe, every rule in the world was rewritten.

In the Age of Black Iron, steel, iron, steam engines and fighting force became the crux in which human beings depended on to survive.

A commoner boy by the name Zhang Tie was selected by the gods of fortune and was gifted a small tree which could constantly produce various marvelous fruits. At the same time, Zhang Tie was thrown into the flames of war, a three-hundred-year war between the humans and monsters on the vacant continent. Using crystals to tap into the potentials of the human body, one must cultivate to become stronger.

The thrilling legends of mysterious clans, secrets of Oriental fantasies, numerous treasures and legacies in the underground world — All in the Castle of Black Iron!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the WQL @ [Qidian International](#)

Translation edits by DarkGem / Geoffrey @ [Qidian International](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301: An Idea on Making Money

At sunset, the wind blew heavily while waves surged. The sea waves near the Pearl Field were over 3 m high.

Having stayed in the sea for the whole day, Zhang Tie popped his head out of the sea and moved along the undulating sea waves. Raising his head, Zhang Tie realized the weather today was a bit unusual as the sea waves were like walls in all directions that even blocked his view. After undulating with sea waves twice, Zhang Tie came to the peak of sea wave and could finally see clearly the situation of the castle in the far.

A tangerine safe lamp had been highly suspended at the top of the castle.

After seeing that lamp, Zhang Tie leisurely dove into the coming sea wave and slowly swam towards the castle, leaving a splash behind.

Although it was not tranquil 30 m under water, it was already able to be described as calm compared to that above sea.

After a short while, Zhang Tie had already sensed an underwater current. He then immediately dove into that underwater current and was carried along by it.

After increasing his sensitivity 9 times over, Zhang Tie had gradually grasped this underwater skill, which could help him easily sense the underwater currents in the surrounding sea and

the general directions of them. Additionally, after entering the underwater current, he could effortlessly utilize the propulsive force of the underwater currents.

After entering the underwater current, Zhang Tie felt really cool. It was like flying in the sky like a bird.

With this skill, Zhang Tie could touch a splendid corner of this limitless, vast world.

There were numerous underwater currents in the sea, which had various causes, such as temperature, moisture and density in the sea, tide, season, submarine relief, weather above sea, geological movements, self-rotation of galaxy and the changing moon phase.

There were all sizes of underwater currents in the sea. Bigger ones might form ocean currents which could last several hundred thousand miles. There were also numerous smaller underwater currents, some of which were tributary of bigger underwater currents while the others would form and disappear at any time.

Those underwater currents of different sizes granted the sea with more tiers and mystique and constituted this splendid and mystical submarine world.

Zhang Tie felt those underwater currents in the sea were like wind on the land. It was like dashing in the wind. Although being in the sea, Zhang Tie who was wandering in the underwater current, felt as if he was a wolf running on the New Crescent Prairie.

After being sent to the place not far from the castle by this underwater current, Zhang Tie swiftly swam out of it and dove into the underground entrance of the castle after a short while.

With a sound of splash, after slightly patting the water, Zhang Tie had already jumped onto the bank of the pond.

When he landed, he found senior Chen, Zhu Wenqiang and the other buddies were all there. They had already put on their clothes. At the sight of Zhang Tie, they glanced at him at the same time with shimmering eyes.

"Oh, you've not left!" Zhang Tie took off his diving clothes as he walked towards the water pipe to clean the muck off his body.

As sea water had a high content of salt. If he didn't wash off the sea water, the salt particles would stick to his skin. Additionally, the sea water near the bottom was fishy, therefore, they had to take a bath before leaving every day.

Not until Zhang Tie finished bathing, washed his diving clothes, and suspend them on the line did Zhang Tie realize that all the others were still gazing at him with an obscure and weird expression. Senior Chen rubbed his beard using one hand without even blinking.

Although having exposed his naked butt many times in front of them, at the sight of their weird expression, Zhang Tie still felt his asshole being tightened as a layer of goosebumps appeared on his

skin all over.

Zhang Tie then put on his clothes at the fastest speed ever and said, "Argh, won't you leave? I will leave then!"

"Wait a moment!" Senior Chen started the topic.

"What's up?"

"Can you bring me more of your brew tomorrow?" Senior Chen said.

"The more, the better!" Yang Yuankang added.

Zhang Tie swiftly thought it through in his mind twice before replied, "As there are only a small amount left, if you want, I can make more, but it will take longer. Were you waiting for me just for this?"

"That's it!" Senior Chen said as he rubbed his knees with a bashful expression, "I don't know why, but after drinking the thing you brought this morning, my rheumatism has been much better. Soon after I drink it, the ache on my knees has disappeared. I feel pretty comfortable all day long! Therefore, I was hoping you could bring me more tomorrow..."

"We felt strange too. After drinking that thing, we were much more energetic than before in the daytime and don't feel very hungry, even now!" Zhang Lin added with a dubious expression.

"I thought only I felt this way; however, I would never have imagined that everyone else is also in a much better condition than before!" Zhu Wenqiang said.

Yang Yuankang also nodded.

Zhang Tie was shocked by their words inside. Because he had improved very fast these days and had eaten a great amount of wild wolf seven-strength fruits before, he was always exceptionally energetic. Therefore, although he felt good these days, he didn't think too much about it. It was really out of his imagination that senior Chen, Yang Yuankang and the other guys could feel that good after eating the mutated yeast for the first time.

Receiving no reply, senior Chen thought Zhang Tie might be considering the cost.

"Zhang Tie, I don't know whether that thing is expensive or not. If it's too much for you, I will pay you for one bottle!" After drinking that thing, senior Chen felt so cool like a dried land finally welcoming sweet dew. He was too impressed by that thing. It felt much better than taking medicine. Therefore, senior Chen even wanted to buy some.

Senior Chen had spent too much trying to deal with his rheumatism over many years.

"Hah, senior Chen, what are you talking about, how could I take your money! Go get a bottle, I will bring one bottle for you!" Zhang

Tie waved his hand as he said generously.

Senior Chen instantly revealed a big smile as the wrinkles on his swarthy face unfolded, "Fine, I will go get a bottle!"

After saying this, senior Chen immediately went upstairs for bottle.

"Zhang Tie, what the hell is that drink?" Zhu Wenqiang asked out of curiosity.

"They are brewed with various fruits in a secret method!"

Zhang Tie knew that it was the effect of the essential-energy reiki yeast. That brewing process was not sophisticated and had a low cost. Anyone could master it if they were told how.

However, if he told Zhu Wenqiang that that was yeast solution, they might try to brew it themselves. If they didn't get the same effect, they would definitely blame him for lying to them on purpose.

Therefore, he thought that he'd better tell them this was a secret knowledge so that they would know that it was easy to make it. This would save a lot of troubles for him in the future. No matter what, essential-energy reiki yeast was almost like a secret knowledge, neither did Zhang Tie plan to share it with the others.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhu Wenqiang didn't look strange;

instead, they all looked like they'd been expecting it. Because it was a secret knowledge, the other guys then felt embarrassed about asking for the brewing process.

When they went upstairs, senior Chen had fetched a delicate silver-gilt flagon which could contain over 300 ml.

After taking that flagon and promising that he would bring more solution for them the next day, Zhang Tie then left the Long Wind Pearl Field.

As usual, after leaving the Long Wind Pearl Field, Zhang Tie had arrived at the fish market near the wharf and spent less than 10 silver coins to buy all the sand-scale fish in the fish market and set them free in the sea.

In the recent months, Zhang Tie almost came here every day. As a result, all the fish vendors had become familiar with him. Additionally, as Zhang Tie was generous and didn't bargain, many vendors would like to keep the sand-scale fish for Zhang Tie every day.

When Zhang Tie threw the last barrel of sand-scale fish into the sea and watched them returning to the sea jubilantly, Zhang Tie had formed an indescribable pleasure inside. Previously, he set the fish free to eat fruits, now it had gradually become an enjoyment for Zhang Tie to set free fish.

This was an incomparable enjoyment.

Each time, Zhang Tie could clearly feel the fish's cheers of freedom, pleasure of rebirth and affection towards life and the sea when they returned to the sea. Being affected by such a feeling, Zhang Tie felt that each time he set free fish, he was setting free a part of himself in a weird sense.

Some small sand-scale fish didn't escape away at once when they returned to the sea; instead, they formed a circle and kept rotating, seemingly expressing their gratitude to Zhang Tie, which really amazed him.

"Wuh? I never could've imagined these small things could circle in the sea!"

A voice drifted in his ear from aside. Zhang Tie then turned his head and found that an old man had already been squatting beside him.

The old man seemed like a beggar who was shabbily dressed, with disordered hair, and a beard on a dirty face from which Zhang Tie could not even identify his real age.

"Brat, why these fish are circling in the sea?" The old beggar fixed his eyes on Zhang Tie and asked seriously.

Hearing this question, Zhang Tie became stunned as he didn't know how to answer him. After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie replied, "They might be happy about going back home soon!"

"Going back home?" Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the old beggar's bright eyes became watery.

"Going back home...going back home...going back home, where's my home? Argh, why don't I have a home...fish have a home, why don't I have a home? How could I not even match...where's my home? I couldn't remember my home, argh..." the old beggar started to shriek painfully while hugging his head. After that, he stood up and turned back before ran away like a mad...

'There might be something wrong with this old beggar's mind. What a poor man!' Zhang Tie shook his head as he went back to the fish market to give the barrel to the vendor.

After leaving the wharf, Zhang Tie didn't return to the Hidden Dragon Palace; instead, he wandered towards the White Dragon Town.

When he arrived at the White Dragon Town, it had been completely dark.

Compared to the other towns around the Dragon Cave, White Dragon Town looked more boisterous as about half of the people on the island lived here.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that his solution could be noticed by others today. Now that it happened, he needed to deal with the aftermath.

As he lived in Songtao Pavilion of Breaking Heaven Department, he could not hide too many things in his room. If they went to see his solution in his room, he could not move them out of nothing. If so, the secret of Castle of Black Iron would expose sooner or later.

As a thoughtful man, of course Zhang Tie would notice and patch up the loophole, now that he brewed the solution himself, he should at least pretend to have done that. No matter what, as he had been in the Hidden Dragon Palace for so long, nobody would know when he brewed a vat of solution.

After taking a round in the White Dragon Town, Zhang Tie already had a plan.

He went to the carpenter's shop in the White Dragon Town and bought a portable wooden case at the price of 2 silver coins before bought a terrine which could contain 20-30 kg of solution in a porcelain store at the price of over 10 copper coins. Then, he came to a remote place and put the terrine into the wooden case before returned to the Hidden Dragon Palace with that wooden case.

It seemed easier for him to put the terrine into the Castle of Black Iron; however, Zhang Tie didn't want to expose his real ability in a place full of powerhouses. Therefore, he needed to pay special attention to all details.

What if it was seen by someone else when he made the terrine disappear?

As details determine success or failure, it was not bad to be a bit

careful. It was also reasonable if he put the terrine into the wooden case. Even if it was noticed by people from Hidden Dragon Palace, they would not see through the wooden case either.

When Zhang Tie was going to leave the White Dragon Town, the roadside gate was suddenly opened while a person was carried and thrown out by some strong servants.

"Pah, you jerk beggar, this is the Zhao Mansion in White Dragon Town. It is not your home. Don't come here to seek for your relatives. I've seen so many liars like you. Our lord would never have such a relative. Roll out of here!"

A steward pointed at that man being thrown out and swore him. After that, the steward glared at those servants, "What were you doing just now? Are you blind? You didn't even know when this jerk beggar came in. This jerk said Zhao Mansion was his home and swaggered into the west bedroom before being noticed by a servant girl. Half of your salary this month will be deducted!"

The servants became so depressed. After the steward entered the Mansion, two servants were so furious that they directly rushed towards that old beggar who was lying on the ground and wanted to beat him again before being hurriedly stopped by the other two servants.

"Easy, this old beggar is already so thin, if he was beaten to death by you outside the gate, it would be unfortunate and troublesome!"

"Damn, we've been here for a whole day, yet we didn't see how he

entered!" A servant kept swearing and finally stopped beating that old beggar.

"I've told you before that the dog door over there is too big; we need to make it smaller!"

The servants then walked into the gate before shutting it, making a loud sound, "bang".

Leaving that old beggar sitting alone on the street before the gate of Zhao Mansion. He looked so painful that he pulled his hair and mumbled, "Where's my home...Isn't my home Zhao Mansion? How could my family members disappear...argh!"

Zhang Tie saw what happened in front of his eyes. He had not imagined that he could meet that old beggar here.

Seeing that old beggar sitting on the street alone, being mad, not knowing where his home was, Zhang Tie felt like crying inside as he walked towards him and pulled out his money purse and gave them to the old man. They were 2 gold coins, dozens of silver coins and over 10 copper coins in total.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie wanted to pull out a part of the spare money; however, seeing his poor air, Zhang Tie directly squatted in front of that old beggar and put his money purse onto the old beggar's hand.

Even though the old beggar was holding the money purse, he was

still unconscious as he mumbled there. Watching that old beggar, Zhang Tie directly foisted his money purse into his pocket.

After doing this, Zhang Tie stood up as he sighed inside. With another two glances at him, Zhang Tie returned to the Hidden Dragon Palace.

After returning to the Xuan No. 7 room of Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie opened the wooden case and took out of the terrine. He washed the terrine with water before he lugged it into the cultivation room. While focusing on his concentration, Zhang Tie soon filled the $\frac{2}{3}$ of the terrine through a spring in the air in more than 10 seconds.

After smelling the refreshing fragrance in the new terrine, Zhang Tie patted his hands as he covered the lid of the terrine. Now he could explain it to his friends that the solution in the terrine was brewed himself since he came to the Hidden Dragon Palace. He had drunk $\frac{1}{3}$ and left $\frac{2}{3}$ inside.

After filling the flagon of senior Chen and his own kettle, Zhang Tie fixed his eyes onto the liquid while a thought suddenly flashed across his mind, 'Could I make money with this? If I can make money with this, I would not have to worry about living in the Hidden Dragon Palace from then on! Perhaps...I can have a try... Coincidentally, senior Chen and the other guys could test its effect...'

Chapter 302: Storm

Since midnight, it had been raining heavily. The wind whipped through the pine woods outside the Songtao Pavilion, making a horrible sound.

The following morning, Zhang Tie got up early. After walking out of the Songtao Pavilion, he found the wind and rain was even heavier than it had been yesterday. The bean-sized rain drops that landed on him were quite painful. Some pine trees in the Breaking Heaven Department were broken while most of them were bent over by heavy wind and fiercely resisting the strong storm.

He had seen the omen of this storm last night; however, Zhang Tie had not imagined it could be that heavy.

After eating breakfast, Zhang Tie put on a raincoat and quickly arrived at the Long Wind Pearl Field.

The waves on the pearl field looked extremely fierce. When the huge waves, greater than 10 m in height, lashed onto the reefs and the precipice on the seaside, they caused loud sounds. The whole world seemed to be shaking from the fury of the sea.

Arriving at the seaside, Zhang Tie felt that he was almost blown away by the heavy storm like a kite. The sprays caused by the huge waves under the castle of the Long Wind Pearl Field drifted dozens of meters high in the air and fell onto Zhang Tie's face; the rain tasted weirdly fishy.

The moment he entered the castle, Zhang Tie saw senior Chen.

"Come on in, it's raining heavily outside!" Standing outside the door of a room on the first floor of the castle, senior Chen waved his hand towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then hurriedly walked towards him.

When Zhang Tie was near the door, senior Chen glanced over Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then patted a place under the raincoat as he nodded towards senior Chen. Senior Chen then revealed a big smile as he pulled Zhang Tie in.

The moment they entered the room, the other guys in the room instantly cast their glances at Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was also familiar with the other guys as they were all yakshas in the sea of Long Wind Pearl Field. The youngest one among them was over 40 years old while the eldest one was over 60.

"These old buddies are suffering the same trouble as me. They are all troubled by rheumatism and arthritis at such an age. Especially yakshas in the sea like me, as we have to stay in the water all the year round, once the cold qi enters our body, we'll have to suffer from diseases when it becomes wet outside! These buddies have not slept well last night." Senior Chen explained to Zhang Tie, "These senior buddies heard that the solution you brew was marvelous, they are especially eager to give it a try!"

"No problem!" Zhang Tie nodded, "But I've not taken too much

today, besides the bottle for you, I've only got one additional bottle!"

"No problem, I will share my bottle with buddies and see whether it truly has an effect!" Senior Chen generously said.

After hanging up his raincoat, Zhang Tie took out his kettle and the flagon. Senior Chen then found several cups and made 100 ml of that solution for each one according to the content that he drunk yesterday.

Zhang Tie's aluminum military kettle was just enough for five people's cups.

When he poured it out, all the others in the room had surrounded him. Watching the golden and pale green luster of the solution which had a stronger smell than water, they all widened their eyes.

"Argh, how could it smell so good!"

Not only the luster which made them excited, when they smelt the fragrance of that solution, they instantly felt cool all over and dripping saliva out of their mouths.

The moment senior Chen filled the cups, the others had carefully taken the cups and couldn't wait to bottom up the solution. After that, they sat quietly in the room and tried to sense the feeling of that solution spreading across their body.

They all took this thing as a medicine; however, it tasted much better than all the other medicines that they had tried. Therefore, they were all shocked about it.

Senior Chen also had a cup. After that, senior Chen even cleaned his cup with fresh water before drinking the fresh water.

"The wind and waves are too heavy today. They can't pick pearls today; so, we can have a day off!"

When they were waiting for the effect of the solution, senior Chen told Zhang Tie.

"What about my clan contribution points today?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"Of course, you'll still earn them!"

Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh. As long as he stayed here for several more weeks, he would be able to get enough clan contribution points for all the compulsory courses that he needed to learn. Each compulsory course required 70 clan contribution points.

— Fundamental movements, fundamental swordsmanship, shield defense skill, preliminary archery, flying skill and horsemanship. The six courses required 420 clan contribution points in total. As he could gain 60 clan contribution points a week

here, he planned to work 2 months, namely 9 weeks here for 540 clan contribution points so as to finish these fundamental compulsory courses.

Zhang Tie had not forgotten those weird movements of Zhang Qingguo.

Zhang Lin, Zhu Wenqiang and Yang Yuankang also arrived at this moment. When they caught sight of that empty kettle, they became a bit disappointed. However, looking at the others who were waiting for the effect of the solution, they became curious too.

Yesterday, as only senior Chen drunk that solution, it was uncertain whether it was the effect of the solution that relieved senior Chen's disease. However, this time, the other 5 people drank the solution. If the effect reappeared on them, it would be great.

As it was storming heavily outside, they had nothing to do inside. They then started to brag and chat in the room to kill time.

One hour soon passed...

"Argh, I seem feel warm inside. It starts to spread across my body..." A yaksha in the sea shouted.

"I feel it too. It was aching just now. But it's relieving now!"

"Argh, me too. Before drinking that, my two shoulders felt being

pinched by pliers. But not they are becoming relaxed..."

"My knees are also recovering. That's too marvelous, just like what senior Chen said!"

The room started to be boisterous as the yakshas all cast their glances towards the flagon of senior Chen.

Zhu Wenqiang, Zhang Lin, and Yang Yuankang then stared at Zhang Tie with shocked expressions. It turned out Zhang Tie's solution could really relieve diseases, it was even pretty effective. If they had not seen it with their own eyes, they would never have believed it. How could a small cup of solution relieve the diseases that they had suffered many years?

What the hell? The same thing could cure diseases for someone and make the others feel energetic. How could it be that marvelous? Zhu Wenqiang, Zhang Lin, and Yang Yuankang looked at Zhang Tie in a new light.

"Senior Chen, come on, give me some more!" A 50 year-old yaksha urged with a bashful expression.

Hearing his request, senior Chen instantly pulled his flagon back in fear of being stolen, "No more, most of Zhang Tie's solution has been drunk by all of you; this is mine!"

After exchanging glances with each other, the yakshas then focused their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then stretched out his hands, "I only brought this today!"

"Do you have more?"

"I have some more in my room, but not too much!"

"Can... can you sell some to us?" That yaksha previously wanted Zhang Tie to gift some to them, yet he felt bashful to ask for that for free, therefore, he expressed his intention to buy it.

"Haha, I've met these old buddies many times. Don't talk about money, it would harm our friendship. Each of you can fetch a bottle, I will gift a bottle to each of you!"

Having not expected that his solution had such a great potential in the market by being that effective in curing diseases, Zhang Tie became really thrilled inside. After working as an assistant in Donder's grocery store, Zhang Tie knew what public praise meant. He needed them to advertise for his solution, therefore, he became generous.

"Zhang Tie...can you..." Zhu Wenqiang scratched his head with a bashful expression.

"Hehe, I live in the Xuan No. 7 room of Songtao Pavilion. When I come back, you can take your bottles and go to find me there. I will gift one bottle to each of you three too!" Zhang said generously.

Zhu Wenqiang, Zhang Lin and Yang Yuankang all revealed a big smile. Zhang Tie's solution really deeply impressed them.

Right then, the girls from Zhixing Department arrived.

Previously, Zhang Tie arrived earlier than them and stayed in the sea all day round; therefore, these girls had no chance to see him in the Pearl Field at all. They didn't know that Zhang Tie was a yaksha in the sea either.

Today, when they came to the Pearl Field, the girls were told that they might face danger if they dove in the sea today due to the heavy storm. Therefore, they didn't need to pick up pearls today. They then planned to take a rest in the castle and take shelter from rain before returning. They had not expected to encounter Zhang Tie here. After having not seen Zhang Tie for 2 months, the girls were even slightly shocked at the sight of Zhang Tie.

With a bad temper, the moment Du Yuhan caught sight of Zhang Tie's smile, she instantly raised her eyebrows and asked straightforwardly, "What are you here for?"

"Hehe, I'm here to have a look at you. It's almost been 2 months, the interest of the debt that you owe me almost becomes 18 gold coins. Plus the cost, each of you owe me almost 108 gold coins. I want to see when you will pay up!" Zhang Tie made a grimace as he started a joke with those girls.

The moment they heard the debt, those girls all looked bitter.

The 108 gold coins was simply a huge amount of money for those girls who had only just started to attempt to make money for themselves. Additionally, the interest of these huge amount of money will rise 10% per month. Many of them could not even pay off the interest per month.

"We will pay off the debt..." Liu Shasha replied in a fragile voice.

"It's okay if you cannot pay off the debt. As long as you can accomplish the designated tasks, you can also deduct half of you debt!" Zhang Tie moved his "evil" eyes onto Liu Shasha.

The moment she recalled the "disgusting task" that should be accomplished by mouth, Liu Shasha's face suddenly turned pale. She didn't even dare to look at Zhang Tie; instead, she looked like a flurried rabbit who hurriedly hid behind another girl.

Not until this moment did those girls who had bet with Zhang Tie know what it meant by lifting a stone and dropping it onto one's feet. At the beginning, they forced Zhang Tie to sign the agreement with them as they thought they could deal with this jerk in this way. However, they had never expected that they were dealt with by this douchebag.

After teasing these little girls, Zhang Tie burst out laughter as he returned to the room where senior Chen and the other buddies stayed. As yakshas in the sea, if they wanted to gain the clan contribution points, even though they didn't need to dive in the sea, they had to stay in the castle on duty in case of emergencies.

Those girls seemed having not realized why Zhang Tie acted that way in the castle of the Long Wind Pearl Field.

After 10 minutes, while Zhang Tie was cracking melon seeds in the room and listening to funny stories of the other yakshas, a girl rushed in with a panicked, pale face.

"Du Yuhan was rolled away by the waves..."

Hearing the words, Zhang Tie instantly sprung up and dashed outside like a wind...

Chapter 303: Yaksha on the Waves

Facing the wuthering wind and rain, Zhang Tie immediately rushed out of the room, exited the castle and swiftly arrived at the Pearl Field.

Looking at the fierce waves, some girls were hugging each other on a mountainous path beside the Pearl Field. They were shivering while tears were covering their faces. In front of the power of the sea, some girls' impulsion caused an unexpected result.

"Where's she?" Although it was a short distance, Zhang Tie was covered in rain.

With tears in her eyes, Lyu Shasha pointed at the reef in afar where the waves were most fierce. Zhang Tie then rushed towards where she pointed without any pause. He didn't even take off his clothes. Before those girls responded, he had already jumped into the sea from the reef.

The moment Zhang Tie jumped in, a huge wave had arrived, which caused a spray of a few dozen meters high near the reef. When the spray declined, Zhang Tie had disappeared.

The decisive image of Zhang Tie deeply impressed those girls which will forever remain in the hearts of the girls for the rest of their lives.

Senior Chen and the other yakshas in the sea also followed closely.

"Where's Zhang Tie?" Senior Chen changed his face as Zhang Tie was nowhere to be found.

"Zhang Tie...Zhang Tie jumped in!' A girl pointed at that reef from where Zhang Tie jumped into the sea.

"Senior Chen, take these girls back. We'll take a look in the sea!" A yaksha of the Pearl Field told senior Chen at once.

When senior Chen brought the girls back, a girl suddenly pointed at the sea, "Argh...Zhang Tie!"

They then looked along the direction the girl pointed and caught sight of Zhang Tie.

At this very moment, Zhang Tie was really like a yaksha on the waves in the legend as he was stepping on the huge waves of over 10 meters in height. He jumped from one wave peak to another. Sometimes, he would sink in; sometimes, he would fly onto a wave peak in order to see clearly. He continued to jump and strive bravely in huge waves...

The heaven-breaking waves were like rolling ladder under Zhang Tie's feet. Zhang Tie stepped on the wave peaks as steadily as rushing on smooth land like a spirit in the sea, causing snow-white sprays.

Watching Zhang Tie risked his life to seek for Du Yuhan, Lyu

Shasha and the other girls all felt a burning heat and started to burst into tears.

Senior Chen and the other yakshas were really stunned about what they saw.

"Yaksha on the waves. Each step is so elegant...it's really yaksha on the waves..." A yaksha in the sea of the Pearl Field had forgotten what to do, while he was watching Zhang Tie who was jumping among the huge waves in afar.

"Yaksha on the waves, water doesn't reach knees. It's true..." Senior Chen was also shocked. In the legend of that the elders told in the Pearl Field, only those yakshas in the sea who had been favored by the sea god could perform such a marvellous skill in the sea.

The sea with surging and rolling waves was like a shallow small ditch under Zhang Tie's feet. Before the seawater reached his knees, he would have already stridden one feet out. He kept running among the surging waves...

Zhang Tie's image at this moment was definitely a rare painting for the other yakshas in the sea who were going to jump into the sea.

"Wait for Zhang Tie to come back..." A yaksha took a deep breath, "No matter what, Zhang Tie would get her out of the there!"

He didn't mean to give up but reverence——the reverence and belief to a yaksha on the waves from a yaksha in the sea who had been working in the sea for many years.

At this very moment, Zhang Tie didn't know how amazing he was. He only felt a constantly rolling strength from the seawater. He felt that he was able to move freely on the sea with that strength. Therefore, he did it automatically.

Among the surging waves in afar, there seemed to be a hand stretched out of the sea. Although it was just a second, Zhang Tie still caught it with his eyes.

Zhang Tie then jumped off the wave and dived into the sea. The moment he opened his space tunnel, he started to shoot towards there like a bolt.

That was truly Du Yuhan. She had been wrapped by long seaweeds along with the huge waves. She was dragged underwater by seawater and was in half coma.

After he arrived, Zhang Tie instantly hugged Du Yuhan and kissed her while transferring air into her mouth from the Castle of Black Iron. After that, he tore off the seaweeds that surrounded Du Yuhan.

Zhang Tie hugged Du Yuhan with one hand as he transferred air to her, mouth to mouth. Then, he rapidly dived towards the bay of the Pearl Field. After a short while, his presence was seen on the huge waves near the bay.

"Argh, Zhang Tie is back..."After they saw Zhang Tie's shadow and the person he was carrying, everybody let out a sigh.

When they ran to the bay to check the situation of Du Yuhan, they were all dumbfounded.

All the girls' faces blushed while senior Chen and the other yashas revealed obscure smirks.

Du Yuhan was like an octopus, her arms wrapped tightly around Zhang Tie's neck, while her legs naturally wrapped around Zhang Tie's waist. Besides, she forcefully sucked onto Zhang Tie's mouth,as if there was delicious food in his mouth.

This was just a natural response of a drowning person as if she grabbed a floating stick of straw to take in fresh air. Being unconscious, Du Yuhan didn't even know what she was doing.

As Zhang Tie's mouth and tongue were tightly sucked by Du Yuhan, he could not speak. Therefore, he could only tell the other girls to quickly move Du Yuhan away from him. As she was sucking so forcefully, Zhang Tie even felt a pain on the root of his tongue.

"Yuhan, Yuhan..." Lyu Shasha and a girl called Qu Liangying walked over. One forcefully patted her back, while the other separated Du Yuhan's arms from Zhang Tie's neck.

For those girls, Zhang Tie and Du Yuhan' s posture were so embarrassing.

Because Du Yuhan could pick up pearls in the sea, she excelled in diving in the sea. When Zhang Tie found her, she was just became breathless and fainted. After Zhang Tie passed on some air to her several times and being patted and called by the other girls, she finally woke up.

After she woke up, Du Yuhan saw Zhang Tie at her first sight who also had his eyes fixed on her. Their eyelashes could almost touch each others. Because they were too close to each other, Du Yuhan could not recognize the person who was in front of her. Meanwhile, she realized that she was still kissing this person while a soft thing was in her mouth, which she was forcefully sucking greedily and didn't feel like separating with.

Soon after, Du Yuhan noticed their ambiguous gesture as she was wrapping his neck with her arms and riding his waist.

Being greatly shocked, Du Yuhan made a shrill shriek as she immediately jumped off Zhang Tie's body. Because she was too nervous, she even bit Zhang Tie's tongue before she left.

Closely followed by Zhang Tie's shrill shriek, who then sprung up from the ground...

...

"Bullsh*t!" A manager of the Pearl Field was blaming the girls whose clothes had been dried around fire and were standing there, being upset, "Zhang Tie was here for your debt? Then you little girls wanted to pick up pearls in this weather so as to make money instead of apologizing to him? Who told you Zhang Tie was here for your debt?"

"He told us!" A girl justified softly.

"Zhang Tie is a yaksha in the sea of the Long Wind Pearl Field. In the past month, he had been here everyday so as to drive away the dangerous living beings under water. When you were picking up pearls, he was vigilant in the outer sea area for your safety. Each day he was here one hour earlier than all of you and left after you!"

The manager then let out a sign as he looked at those girls from Zhixing Department, "Normally, you could not see him; but due to the heavy storm today, you were unable to pick up pearls, therefore, he was here for a rest in the castle! Coincidentally, you encountered him here! If he wanted you to pay off the debt, he had long asked for that. No need to wait until today!"

"Argh!" All the girls of Zhixing Department covered their mouths with their hands as they exchanged glances with each other. They had not imagined that the person that they hated most could have protected them for such a long time in the dark.

"If it was not for Zhang Tie today, you might have been dead. Girls, don't be that impulsive in the future!" The manager told Du Yuhan in a serious way.

Du Yuhan had a mixed mood. The moment she thought back of how she kissed Zhang Tie after being saved out of there by him, Du Yuhan felt feverish on her face as she had a strange feeling towards Zhang Tie.

'Humph, that bastard. How could I have given him my first kiss...they said that the bastard instantly jumped into the huge waves after knowing that I was drown. Even Shasha and the other girls were too moved that they even cried...' The girl wanted to blame him yet she didn't really wanted to. ' 'Did I overly bit him. I wonder whether if he is still hurting...'

Chapter 304: Fighter's Training

The storm lasted 2 weeks. 6 days after Zhang Tie saved Du Yuhan, he finally accomplished the first round of advancement of his ancestral bloodline - precise throwing - after 2 months' practice.

He accomplished this round of advancement perfectly. When Zhang Tie used a finger-sized javelin to lock onto wild wolves precisely which were over 100 m away, Zhang Tie knew that he had accomplished his advancement.

From then on, he didn't have to depend on javelins or the size of the weapon. As long as he locked onto the target, Zhang Tie would accomplish the precise throw.

After that, Zhang Tie was so excited that he even tried throwing shells, stones, snails, knives and long swords. The fact was that no matter what the item was, as long as they were held by Zhang Tie and was thrown out with a terrifying strength, they would exert a huge destructive force.

Anything, once reaching a certain speed, would bring a huge destructive force.

With Zhang Tie's great strength, those items could fly very fast.

In order to achieve explosiveness, Zhang Tie even tried to accomplish throwing training in the sea.

In the same 2 weeks, the situation on the east continent varied fast. More news about the discovery of demons on Hurricane Plateau came into Hidden Dragon Palace. In the task hall of Breaking Heaven Department, the Hidden Dragon Palace had officially released the clan training task about hunting demons on the Hurricane Plateau.

Everybody who was above LV 6 could attend this clan training task. The only requirement was that everybody who attended this task should at least have passed all the compulsory courses for fighters.

This task would proceed by batches. Each batch lasted 3 months. Each batch was available for 50 students in the Breaking Heaven Department.

This task shocked the Breaking Heaven Department. Zhang Tie's cousin Zhang Su applied to attend the first batch of training. One day, Zhang Su and the other 49 people took an airship sent by the Zhang clan and left from the Hidden Dragon Island for the Hurricane Plateau which neighbored Golan Empire.

Most of the first batch of trainees were above LV 7. It was said that 1/3 of them were from the Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List.

By killing each demon, the fighter would gain 100 clan contribution points as a payment. This made many people drip off saliva. However, from the award, everybody knew that this task was very risky. Fighting demons wasn't funny - at all.

The reason that demons were terrifying was that all the demons would be equal to LV 6 human fighters when they became adult without having to cultivate themselves.

That was why people could not be called fighters until they reach LV 6. This standard was set to fight common, mature demons. Those people who could not reach LV 6 could only be called warriors.

This ability of demons was really terrifying. In contrast, the good news for human beings was that all the demons had to devour the other demons in order to accomplish their rite of passage. That was a genetic plunder. The bad news was that demons could also accomplish their rite of passage through devouring human beings.

This explained why human beings were demons' implacable foe. Because all human beings were their supper and dim sum.

Not all the demons in the demon troops were adults; however, the lowest level of those demons who were about to be adults were already LV 5 warriors. With the arrival of the holy war, more and more demons would accomplish their rite of passage on the battlefield.

What made the demon corps terrifying was that each corps of demons would grow more powerful through battles. In the later period of the early 2 holy wars between human beings and demons, all the remained corps of demons were terrifying killing machines being composed of adult demons. These killing machines brought

huge destruction to human world.

Finally, what enabled human beings to survive the 2 earlier holy wars between human beings and demons was not human beings' fighting force but their excellent reproductive ability.

Such a task was nothing to do with Zhang Tie at all at least for the time being. Therefore, Zhang Tie could only diligently lay a solid foundation on the Hidden Dragon Island.

Only a few days after the storm, Zhang Tie had already left the Pearl Field and ended his task as a yaksha in the sea.

This task lasted 9 weeks which brought Zhang Tie 540 clan contribution points.

With these clan contribution points, Zhang Tie could finally attend the training of compulsory courses for official fighters.

There were 6 compulsory courses for fighters in the Breaking Heaven Department, namely fundamental movements, fundamental swordsmanship, shield defense skill, preliminary archery, flying skill, and horsemanship.

Because of lacking foundation, Zhang Tie really lacked the training of these fundamental skills at the present.

Actually, Zhang Tie was an emulative guy. Although those girls of Breaking Heaven Department wanted to find him trouble when

he attended the training of fundamental movements and shield defense skill, Zhang Tie still chose the two courses firstly.

2 days after paying 140 clan contribution points, Zhang Tie arrived at the training field for fundamental movements and saw the women who were sneering at him.

It was more like a huge steam-driven machine than a training field.

What was in front of his eyes were hydraulic metal columns which were rising and falling while being driven by steam in the training field of thousands of square meters.

Many people were jumping on the hydraulic metal columns and dodging from the high-pressure water flow shooting towards them from all directions. Those being hit by the water cannon would drop off the columns with a shrill shriek and fell into the pond below.

"Right here?" Zhang Tie pointed at those rising and falling hydraulic metal columns as he asked those women who were sneering at him.

"That would be too nice for you. That training field is for testing your fundamental movements. Its length is 100 m. Only when you could run through that passage without being wet could you pass the test for fundamental movements. You don't even know what is fundamental movements. Do you want to attend the test?"

"No crap. I know you want to deal with me. Just do it, I'm waiting for that!" With arms crossed, Zhang Tie said. As he was here, he didn't believe that they could mistreat him.

"Well! Come with us..."

Zhang Tie then followed them into a room dozens of meters long. One of the women manipulated some switches and handles on the wall. Soon after that, 6 hydraulic metal columns that were as same as those outside rose up from the ground.

They didn't stop until they reached about 4 m in the air. The area of the top of each hydraulic metal column was only as large as the mouth of a bowl, which could only hold a foot.

The moment the columns reached at the highest points, those women then exchanged glances with each other.

"Ruomei, you first or me?"

"I'll go first!"

Saying this, one woman walked to the foot of a hydraulic metal column. She then easily jumped onto the top of the 4 m high column and stably stood there with only one foot like a rooster which usually stood with one foot. At the same time, she looked at Zhang Tie proudly.

Even though Zhang Tie didn't have a good impression of the

woman, he still applauded at her performance.

"It's your turn!"

"What for?" Zhang Tie became a bit puzzled.

"This is the first step for fundamental movements, quincuncial piles. You can only use your feet on the piles, instead of using your battle qi. When you could stand on the piles for 2 minutes and successfully dodged from Ruomei's kicks, you will pass the first step!"

"I'm not allowed to kick her? Wouldn't I suffer a loss then?"

"If you are that talented, you can also try to kick here. As long as you could kick her down from the quincuncial piles, you would pass this step, too!" A girl said arrogantly.

"Ok!"

Zhang Tie then walked to the foot of the piles and took a deep breath before jumped onto the top of a pile with the help of feet and hands.

If that woman called Ruomei was regarded as a swallow, Zhang Tie was just a bear who only knew how to use his strength stupidly.

Zhang Tie then stood on the top of a pile with one foot. When he looked around, he started to sway. Realizing that he could not imitate that woman, Zhang Tie immediately landed his other foot on the top of another pile. After swaying twice more, he finally stood fast.

During this process, that woman who was standing on the top of one pile kept sneering over there. After Zhang Tie stood fast, she finally opened her mouth, "Are you ready?"

"Ready!"

The moment Zhang Tie finished saying "dy", he had felt dizzy as his right leg had been hooked by her foot, causing him to lose his balance. As a result, he directly fell off the piles with face towards the sky.

"Damn it!" Thanks to his iron-body fruits, Zhang Tie picked himself up and jumped onto the piles once again.

This time, Zhang Tie became smarter. The moment the woman intended to hook his leg, he had hurriedly moved away that foot. However, before he moved the other leg away, that woman had directly kicked onto his butt and directly sent him fly off the pile.

This time, Zhang Tie became more embarrassed. At the sight of Zhang Tie's embarrassing look, all the women revealed their sneers but hurriedly hid them.

When Zhang Tie tried for the 3rd time, he chose to launch an attack preemptively. However, before he touched the woman's clothes, he had been kicked off.

In the next 2 hours, the other women fiercely mistreated him in turn.

During this process, Zhang Tie gradually realized the secret of using quincuncial piles to train fundamental movements

This was actually a pure match problem. When one stood on one pile, if one wanted to move, one would have 5 different movements. With 6 piles, one would be familiar with 30 movements in all directions and distances.

After you turned the movements on the top of quincuncial piles into instinct, when you fought others on the land, you would have too much space to dodge.

Zhang Tie understood this secret at the price of falling onto the ground heavily with a bloody nose and a swollen face.

"Later on, you should train yourself every day. We could only 'guide' you 2 hours a day. Our guidance today has ended; we will continue tomorrow!" After saying this, the women left.

After staying in the room for a while, Zhang Tie had become familiar with those switches. He then found the columns had been lifted to the highest points; however, their lowest positions were

only 50 cm above the ground.

This was the price for offending women.

F*ck!

Chapter 305: Fermenting

After two days' thorough practice, Zhang Tie had gradually adapted to the movements on top of the fine quincuncial piles that was 4 m in height. He then became increasingly flexible and could stand longer on them. From the 3rd day onwards, it had been harder for those women to kick Zhang Tie off the piles.

Additionally, as he practised movements on the quincuncial piles, Zhang Tie gradually combined the five basic movements of iron-blood fist, which were used to coordinate the 36 free hand movements into the movements on quincuncial piles.

He was not accustomed to that at the beginning, as he previously practiced it on the ground. Yet he had to practice on the quincuncial piles now. If he were to step on the place several inches away from the right place, he would lose his balance.

However, Zhang Tie gradually became familiar with the five basic movements of iron-blood fist on the quincuncial piles.

Zhang Tie didn't know that the five basic movements of iron-blood fist on the quincuncial piles were the orthodox secret knowledge of iron-blood fist. Actually, except for the imperial households of Norman Empire, only a few people knew about this cultivation method. What Zhang Tie did instantly fixed the only shortcoming of his iron-blood fist.

Compared to his embarrassing state when he started to learn the fundamental movements, Zhang Tie excelled in learning the shield

defense skills. That was a sharp difference.

Before he started to learn shield defense skills, Zhang Tie only knew that shields were used for defense and collision. After learning it, Zhang Tie only then knew that the three-worded skill of shield use were defense, attack and hide.

Defense referred to defense, block and protection; attack referred to collision, to move forward and to break the opponent's attacking rhythm; hide referred to the shielding of one's attacking intention during the process of the attack and defense.

Attack, defense and hide co-existed with each other. They could convert into one another and coordinate with each other for the sake of the application.

After learning shield defense skills systematically, Zhang Tie showed an extremely high talent when he used shield for the first time.

The women's alleged guidance towards Zhang Tie were to attack Zhang Tie with storm-like attacks with a short javelin, the head of which was covered with a cloth ball. During this period, Zhang Tie could only defend himself with a shield.

He was purely there to be beaten. Those women wanted to give him a good lesson; however, it was out of their imagination that Zhang Tie, with a shield in hand, totally changed. Besides the attack at the beginning which made Zhang Tie grit his teeth, towards the end, Zhang Tie resembled an oily iron tortoise that

could never be hurt.

It was the same even though they had changed into other weapons to attack Zhang Tie as the shield in Zhang Tie's hand was a movable armor for him. No matter how they attacked Zhang Tie, they would be held back by his shield.

Finally, as they could not punish Zhang Tie when he practiced shield defense skills, those women directly gave up their "guidance" to Zhang Tie on shield defense skills; instead, they transferred gave him guidance on the course of "fundamental movements".

Zhang Tie remembered a sentence told by Donder——peaches and plums do not speak, yet there was a path under them. [1] No matter how, you could not lift one's morality by praising him; similarly, you could not ruin one's morality by slander and gossip.

Time was the realest eyes as it could expose one's real personality. Only those whose real personality could stand the test of time could gain others' respect, as they would definitely be more charming than those only with language talent.

Zhang Tie felt that he was in that situation.

He never thought that he had high morality; however, at least, he knew that he was not bad as he had never done any bad things like benefited while others were harmed and dropped righteousness or been lecherous at the sight of beauties. He would always respect them kind people; he would always sympathize the

underprivileged ones; he would never bully timid guys.

This was what his mom had taught him since he was very young. Zhang Tie always kept it in mind.

As Zhang Tie spent more time with those women, they started to change their attitudes towards him even though Zhang Tie didn't urge for it . They started to realize that Zhang Tie was greatly different from the one described in gossip.

Zhang Tie was not as mean, shameless and lecherous as that in the gossip; instead, they could even find many good personalities of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was very strong-willed; no matter how many times he was kicked off from the piles, he said nothing before he jumped back once again.

Zhang Tie was very generous. Although he would joke around with them, he would never argue about little things. Even though he suffered some bruises, he just gave a big laughter and never place it in mind because Zhang Tie didn't have evil thoughts when he looked at others. After several days, they finally lost their vigilance towards him.

Speaking of being lecherous, he was only flirting with them. In daily contacts, those women found that Zhang Tie paid special respect to girls. Even on the piles, he wouldn't attack them excessively as he just narrowed the attacking range on their thighs and below their knees.

Especially after hearing that Zhang Tie had saved a girl's life at the risk of his own life when he was a yaksha in the sea and didn't expect for any payment, those women's who "educated" Zhang Tie on the piles had gradually changed their attitude towards him.

Therefore, gradually those women started to call Zhang Tie junior brother. When they stood on the piles together with Zhang Tie, they were no longer finding ways to kick him off, instead, they taught him more.

Compared to the three-worded skill of the use of the shield, the three-worded skill of the use of fundamental movements was fast, accurate and fierce——fast referred to high speed, accurate referred to precise judgement while fierce referred to great strength. After reaching the 3 basic requirements, he had to meet the further requirements: landing on the piles as steadily as a nail being pounded into the wood by an iron hammer; moving as fast as a bolt leaving the string which was as heavy as thousand jun [2] and as light as a goose feather.

During the days when Zhang Tie were practicing the fundamental movements and shield defense skills, the effect of the solution gradually spread.

Each man had his own circle of friend, including yakshas in the sea, senior Chen in the Pearl Field, Zhu Wenqiang, Yang Yuankang and Zhang Lin from Breaking Heaven Department. After gifting a bottle of that special solution to each of them, its effect started to spread amongst those guys' friend circles.

More and more people would like to try his solution. Within a short period of time, most of the dozens of kg of special solution taken out of the Castle of Black Iron had been taken away by Zhang Tie's friends and his friends' friends.

...

On May 18, 890 of Black Iron Calendar, it was definitely a memorial day for Zhang Tie.

In the morning, it was no different from the other days. After getting up early, Zhang Tie spent 1 hour to read the last chapters of the thick book—"General History of Human Beings". After breakfast, he started his monotonous and hard learning and practiced about the compulsory courses for fighters.

Accepting the suggestion of those senior sisters, Zhang Tie included preliminary archery and the fundamental swordsmanship into his daily exercise in the previous 2 days. Now, Zhang Tie needed to practice four courses; instead of two.

Now, Zhang Tie could only rest less than 5 hours a day. He used to leave his residence at 6 am and came back at 1-2 am in the midnight when he was tired.

Zhang Tie felt that he had completely changed himself into a machine since he came to the Hidden Dragon Palace.

When he was in the Zhixing Department, he was a set of machine

for picking navy-blue iron ores. When he was in the Breaking Heaven Department, in order to make clan contribution points, he became a diving machine. After making enough clan contribution points to apply for compulsory courses, Zhang Tie became other machines.

When he was learning the fundamental movements, Zhang Tie became a machine that jumped here and there on the quincuncial piles; when he was learning the shield defense skills, Zhang Tie became a machine which was beaten with a shield; when he learned preliminary archery, Zhang Tie became a machine that had to shoot an arrow; when he learned fundamental swordsmanship, Zhang Tie became a machine that constantly practiced picking, chopping, stabbing, hacking and cutting...

Besides, he was also a machine which only knew how to sleep, eat and shit.

He had been in the Hidden Dragon Island for over half a year. Besides monotonous training and tasks, he didn't do anything else. Compared to such a lifestyle, his survival training in the Wild Wolf Valley was as sweet as lovers who were having a holiday.

Even when he was in the Iron-Blood Camp, Zhang Tie didn't lived that hard.

Zhang Tie knew that he had no other choice. Although he could live a more relaxed life, facing the sense of crisis brought by the third holy war between human beings and demons constantly drove Zhang Tie to run forward while he gritted his teeth. He didn't even dare to slightly loosen up.

It was a good day. Before he entered the training field for fundamental movements, Zhang Tie raised his head and looked up at the azure sky.

The azure sky reminded Zhang Tie of that sapphire ring he gifted Alice. The moment Zhang Tie thought about Alice, he remembered his friends in the Blackhot City.

'How are they now?'

Zhang Tie mumbled as he shook his head to drive all the thoughts out of his mind. He then pushed open the gate of the training field...

Zhang Tie didn't know that he was going to be rich in this common day.

...

When Zhang Tie entered the training field for fundamental movements, at the entrance of the Dragon Cave, Yang Yuankang and some of Zhang Tie's friends in Breaking Heaven Department had just ended their tasks as yakshas in the sea and were checking their equipment. They were ready to enter the underground world to hunt the LV 7 centipede.

Like bezoar in ox, stone of gallbladder, kidney and bladder in dogs, pearls in seashells, there were also some precious items in the

magical beasts and the mutated living beings. People could find magical cores from very few centipedes.

Centipede's magical core was a treasure which was mainly used to form battle qi and increase the power of battle qi.

In the latest months, the purchasing price of centipede's magical core quoted in the Breaking Heaven Department had already reached 1200 gold coins, which was almost two times more compared to last year's.

In order to make money, Yang Yuankang and some friends decided to enter the underground world to make money at the risk of their lives.

"We'd better check our own equipments and medicaments one more time in case of the worst scenario. What was most important was that we should make sure that we've taken LV 1 antidote!" As the leader of the team, before going down, Yang Yuankang reminded the others.

"Don't worry. We've taken them all. But the price of antidote had risen again. Now, each vial of antidote would cost us 5 gold coins and 60 silver coins, while each vial of night viewing medicament had risen to 40 silver coins. Damned! if we cannot obtain a centipede's magical core, we would suffer a loss this time!" A person said gloomily.

"Zhang Feng, the antidote will be used in saving your life. Once you were hit by the the venom of the centipede, if you don't drink

the antidote, you would lose your life in a couple of minutes! Although it's expensive, it could never match your life!"

"I was just complaining about it. Those alchemists are really good at making money. Many vials of antidote would be sold on the Hidden Dragon Island. Compared to them, we are so stupid. We have to risk our lives to make a bit of money..."

"You only see the thief eating meat, you've not seen them being beaten. Each of the alchemists who could make antidotes on the Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List and the Hidden Dragon Wealth List had experienced many hardships. Who were born to be able to produce antidotes. Even though antidotes could bring them money, they could not be easily produced!" Yang Yuankang spoke to Zhang Feng with a smile.

That man called Zhang Feng then gave back a smile as he recalled something. He then patted on the medicament container on his waist, "Yuankang, whether this solution distributed by you is as marvelous as you told us?"

"Trust me, when we have no weapons and rations, if we drink that solution, we could definitely last longer!" Yang Yuankang replied with confidence. This was discovered by Yang Yuankang, Zhu Wenqiang and Zhang Lin after they concluded their experiences from several occasions.

Zhang Tie's solution seemed very nutritious. After 100 ml of that solution was drank, one could remain energetic for another 10 hours.

For hunting centipede's magical cores, Yang Yuankang shared some of the solution which was gifted by Zhang Tie with the others. Each team member possessed one vial of the solution for emergency uses.

In Yang Yuankang's opinion, Zhang Tie could definitely sell his solution.

After the confirmation, everybody dripped some night viewing medicament into their eyes. After that, under the leadership of Yang Yuankang, the team of 6 entered the Dragon Cave...

...

There is an allusion about this proverb: although peach and plum trees don't intend to attract people, their fruits and flowers are attractive. After a long time, there would be a path left by visitors under the trees. This proverb is used to praise someone who has high morality yet always remain a low profile. Even though, their high morality are still known by the public.

jun, 钧, was a unit of weights in ancient China, one jun equalled to 15 kg. Thousand jun equalled to 15000 kg.

Chapter 306: Fortune Day

Soon after Yang Yuankang and his hunting team entered the Dragon Cave, the manager of the Long Wind Pearl Field started to suffer from a stomachache again.

The manager was called Zhang Heng, who was an elder of Long Wind Business Group under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Palace. He had served Long Wind Business Group for dozens of years. Recently he hadn't been as healthy as before because of his age; however, he couldn't stand being lonely, therefore, it was arranged for him to work as a manager of the Pearl Field on Hidden Dragon Island. Because there was little work to do in the Pearl Field, it was an easy job for him. Actually, it was almost like having a vacation.

In the early morning, soon after he got up, Manager Zhang suffered his stomachache once again.

He had been troubled with gastric ulcers for many years. Besides paying special attention to his diet, he had also tried many acupuncture therapies and medicine which were all very limited in effect.

Even while he suffered from that scorching pain which extended like a wildfire in his stomach, manager Zhang still wanted to make a patrol around the Pearl Field.

In contrast, the yakshas in the sea near the Pearl Field looked so energetic these days. Even though they had not been assigned with the task, they still went in the sea in the early morning to guide the

young men to practice diving skills. This made manager Zhang Tie reassured.

Soon after making an inspection tour, manager Zhang returned to the office. He then covered his mouth with a handkerchief and started to cough heavily.

However, this time, he tasted blood in his mouth. After coughing, he looked at his handkerchief and was shocked by the red color mixed in with the mucus.

Is it really that severe? Gazing at the blood on his handkerchief, manager Zhang forced a bitter smile. The doctor had told him that if his gastric ulcer became severe, he would suffer a complication of spitting blood, which indicated that his blood vessels had been influenced. When this truly happened, it would be dangerous.

Heavy coughing, hemoptysis, plus increasingly scorching pain made manager Zhang weak for quite a while. Sitting on the chair in his office a bit tiredly, manager Zhang touched his upper abdomen and gasped for quite a while before relieved it a bit.

Hearing manager Zhang's heavy coughs, senior Chen ran into his office, "Manager Zhang, are you okay? How about calling a doctor for you from White Dragon Town?"

Senior Chen also knew that manager Zhang had suffered this illness for many years; however, hearing him coughing especially heavily today and seeing his forehead turn blue while the veins on his forehead almost pop out, senior Chen started to concern about

him.

"Hehe, it's okay, senior Chen. No need to trouble you. I know my disease very much..." Saying this, manager Zhang silently put away his handkerchief, "You've been here for many years, after this year, I prepare to recommend you to the superior officer and let you take over my seat as I might not be able to stay longer on this position."

Hearing this, senior Chen hurriedly waved his hand, face turned blushed, "Manager Zhang, I don't mean that..."

"Senior Chen, listen to me. We've been working for several years. I know your personality very much. I've worked for so many years. In the past, I could not stand being alone; now, I'm old and am not after fame and wealth any more. Therefore, I want to have a good rest at home and accompany my grandsons. As you've been very familiar with the affairs in the Pearl Field, it would be most proper for you to take over my position after I leave..."

Saying this, manager Zhang looked at senior Chen. These days, senior Chen looked very energetic; his face looked better one day after another. Compared to manager Zhang, senior Chen at least could work 10 more years in the Pearl Field according to his current condition.

"Manager Zhang, I think you've not got the proper prescription. Take me and some old buddies in the Pearl Field as an example, after working in the sea for half of our lives, we were always tortured by rheumatism and arthritis and felt that we could not stand any longer. But, now, as we've met the most proper

prescription, we become fully energetic once again!"

Manager Zhang heard the news that senior Chen and some yakshas in the sea had greatly recovered from rheumatism and arthritis that they had been suffering for so many years. He didn't pay more attention to this news. In his opinion, this was because they were just fortunate enough.

Hearing that they drank a special solution brewed by a young yaksha in the Pearl Field called Zhang Tie using a secret knowledge, manager Zhang then took this as an eccentric medicament. Besides feeling lucky for them and praising Zhang Tie's talent, manager Zhang didn't think too much about that.

For the words that the solution could make ones more energetic and feel not tired, manager Zhang thought that was a bit exaggerating. For him who had seen so many things, it was actually not difficult to reach the same effect. After drinking a bowl of ginseng braised with chicken soup, he could almost realize the same effect.

"Is that solution given by Zhang Tie truly that good?" Hearing senior Chen mention that thing once again, manager Zhang then casually asked.

"It's not good, it's marvelous. Since drinking that thing, I and the other old buddies didn't suffer from arthritis any more. What's more, we all feel healthier these days like having become several years younger!"

The moment he mentioned the solution gifted by Zhang Tie, senior Chen had become spirited. Because the solution was too effective, senior Chen and his other old buddies asked for some more from him and carefully hid it. These days, they would only drink a small mouth of that solution everyday as they all felt recovering vitality.

"Hehe, you're lucky enough to meet the right prescription..."

"Manager Zhang, that thing could not only cure our diseases, senior Wei told me that yesterday his grandson got a fever and caught a cold. He kept crying. As the boiled decoction of the medicinal ingredients tasted too bitter, his grandson didn't eat it. As a result, the whole family became so anxious just like ants on the hot pot, including senior Wei, guess what?"

"What?" Being curious about senior Chen's words, manager Zhang kept asking.

"Heh heh, since realizing the marvelous effect of the thing given by Zhang Tie, senior Wei bought a beautiful and delicate silver kettle and put them inside the kettle. In usual time, he would take the kettle with him like treating a treasure. Yesterday, his grandson cried because of catching a cold, senior Wei then teased him with that silver kettle; however, he had not imagined that the moment his grandson smelt the flavor of the solution from the mouth of the kettle, he desperately wanted to eat what was inside. Senior Wei then opened it and let his grandson drink several mouthfuls. The result was that soon after drinking that, his grandson had become calm. In 1 hour, his grandson's cold and fever had relieved and finally was cured!"

"It also works on fever?" Hearing this news, manager Zhang became dumbfounded for a while. This folk's prescription seemed to have too many effects. It didn't seem possible. But he believed that senior Chen wouldn't tell a lie. Because there were only several hundred people in the Pearl Field. As long as something happened, it would soon be spread among the rest.

"That's why we say it's marvelous..." senior Chen revealed a big smile, "Senior Wei even told me that he wanted some more from Zhang Tie for his grandson. Hearing senior Wei's daughter-in-law mentioning about it, some households in the Pearl Field even wanted to ask for some solution from Zhang Tie for their own kids!"

After chatting with manager Zhang for a while, senior Chen left manager Zhang's office. Sitting in his office alone, manager Zhang considered about senior Chen's words as he faintly shook his head. Perhaps, it was a just a coincidence. If that solution was really that effective, it could definitely be sold like the medicament produced by alchemists.

After senior Chen left, manager Zhang still felt a scorching stomachache. The wildfire like scorching pain was gradually enlarging. After standing it for some more minutes, senior Zhang's forehead oozed fine sweat drops.

Senior Chen's praise and favor about the strange solution kept ringing in manager Zhang's ears. Manager Zhang then pulled open a drawer under his desk.

There was also a glass bottle in the drawer, which was containing the solution which was mentioned by senior Chen. This was what Zhang Tie gifted the manager before he left the Pearl Field.

It was just a common glass. When Zhang Tie gifted it here, manager Zhang just felt that Zhang Tie was sensible. Because he regarded it as a folk prescription for curing rheumatism and arithmetic, he just put it into a drawer.

At this time, manager Zhang took out of the bottle.

The color of the solution inside the bottle looked very energetic as the golden color was mixed with a faint green color.

Remembering that senior Chen said it smelt very good, even kids wanted to eat it. Being driven by curiosity, manager Zhang opened the lid of the bottle and smelt it carefully.

He smelt a strange and refreshing flavor.

Only after smelling several times, manager Zhang had started to drool. Having lost appetite from early morning until the present due to the intense pain, manager Zhang suddenly felt hungry and wanting to eat something.

After taking a careful look at the solution, manager Zhang couldn't stand to have a sip like drinking alcohol.

It tasted really good. He then took another sip...

In only half a minute, manager Zhang had felt a wisp of cold and comfortable sense from his stomach which was suffering from a scorching ache. In a short while, that fire in his stomach had been dying out.

"Wuh..."

At the beginning, manager Zhang thought it was an illusion. After sensing it seriously, he realized it was true.

He then took another big mouth of that solution before rested in the chair with his eyes closed.

10 minutes later, manager Zhang became so excited that he directly stood up with his eyes shimmering brightly. Fixing his eyes on that bottle of solution, when he wanted to take another mouthful and had another look at it, manager Zhang found his hand was shivering...

Chapter 307: Fortune Day II

The underground world was as vast as the sea. Even though one had reached 5-6 km away from the mouth of the Dragon Cave, it only equaled to coming to the beach, still a distance away from the real sea.

When manager Zhang carefully asked those who had used Zhang Tie's solution in his office about the effect of the solution, the centipede hunting team, led by Yang Yuankang, had already delved into Dragon Cave and arrived in an underground space where huge centipedes were always seen.

The underground karst where most of the Hell-black spiders gathered was more than 3000 m away from the entrance of Dragon Cave. However, huge centipedes lived in a darker place. Only when they reached 5000-6000 m away from the entrance could they see huge centipedes.

In the ecological system of the underground world, huge centipedes had a very wide range of food. All the rotten animals, the corpses of magical beasts, those mutated underground snails and huge flies that liked to wander among the various underground fungi and plants were the food of huge centipedes. Sometimes, if huge centipedes were too hungry, they could even engulf the Hell-black spiders.

Compared to Hell-black spiders, centipedes were much larger. Most of them were longer than 10 m. Additionally, centipedes moved more swiftly. Those centipedes hiding in the seams could charge at you at any time and cause a fatal harm on you.

What made people more worried were that huge centipedes' shells were much stronger than that of the Hell-black spiders. They were much more difficult to pierce. This was an underground creature with a very powerful vitality. Even if they were broken into halves, they could still stay alive for 1 week before death.

Most people who ventured into the living area of centipedes were there to attempt advancement to level 7. Compared to the difficulty of forming battle qi at level 6, when they reached level 7, the formed battle qi would be like dried straws; as long as they absorb a ball of soul fire, it would lead to a new battle totem.

All the members of the huge centipede hunting team were level 7 fighters. Each of them had been here many times. Soon after they entered the underground living area of centipedes, they had met their first prey.

For level 7 fighters, it wasn't too hard to deal with a centipede. Through cooperation, it only took them several minutes to kill the centipede.

After that, a fighter used a huge ax and opened the hardest head.

Although no magical core was found, they didn't become disappointed as it would be too lucky for them if they could find a magical core from the first huge centipede. Before coming down, they already prepared to gain nothing.

Many people from Breaking-Heavens Department were here to

hunt for huge centipedes' magical cores every day; however, above 98% of them might not see one huge centipede's magical core for 1 week's work as the possibility for huge centipedes to produce magical cores was less than 1/1000.

Because there was no magical core inside it, they only took its fist-sized venom container. At least they could sell it for some money. There were some business groups purchasing venom containers of huge centipedes at the price of 2 silver coins each. They could be made into medicines including poison and medicament that could cure venom, relieve inflammation, and sores.

The huge centipede's shell could also be made into a special glue. However, as it was cheap and was difficult to deal with, besides special personnel who were dispatched here from business groups above to clean up and collect these things, the other people would feel reluctant to deal with such cumbersome things.

"Let's go for the second target. We're in a persistent war, watch out everyone." After receiving no gains, Yang Yuankang called others to continue walking forward.

Fortunately, 7 hours later, after they killed the 34th huge centipede in a narrow crack and opened its head, they finally found one magical core.

It was a grape-sized bead which radiated a faint red light in the dark underground cave.

At the sight of this bead, everybody was amazed as they hadn't imagined that they could gain one so easily today. However, dangers always came when people let their guards down. When they were excited about their achievement, another huge centipede suddenly drilled out and charged towards them by springing up its body from 10 m away.

Two huge centipedes lived in this crack, not one.

"Watch out!"

Yang Yuankang was the first one who responded as he immediately shouted loudly and jumped up. At the same time, he broke out his battle qi once again...

In a split second, a great amount of fine venom was sprouted out of the huge centipede's mouth and was covering towards them like suddenly sprayed raindrops. Although they all responded quickly, facing such an undifferentiated attack, 3 people of the team were still sprayed by the venom.

After dozens of seconds, the second huge centipede was also killed in the most violent way by them; however, those guys who were splashed by the venom also started feeling its effects.

The venom of huge centipede was known for its extremely strong permeability and slight corrosivity. Once sprayed, it would be no different from being bitten by the huge centipede as its venom would permeate into your blood through your skin as soon as possible.

"Argh, I might have been splashed by its venom..."

"So was I..."

"Hurry up, check up yourself. As long as you find being splashed by its venom, drink your antidote as soon as possible!" Yang Yuankang raised his voice.

Only after 1 minute, Zhang Feng had already felt his pulse and heart racing. Additionally, he started to feel disgusting and a bit dizzy. At the same time, he's tongue gradually became stiff and numb.

"F*ck!" Zhang Feng swore as he touched his neck when he felt the location on his neck which was close to the left side of his jaw was a bit hot just like having been burnt by some drops of hot water

As people's neck was very close to one's heart and brain, therefore, the venom of huge centipede would act on one's neck faster than other places. Zhang Feng became a bit hurried as he opened his medicament capsule and pulled out of a vial of antidote. After opening its lid, he instantly engulfed it, making a sound of "Gulp Gulp"

In less than 1 minute after he drunk it, he had already felt better. The disgusting feeling gradually disappeared. Then, his tongue also recovered flexibility; he became more conscious; what was more, his pulse and heart beat also recovered.

"Wait, this antidote doesn't feel good!"

After recovering his sense of taste, Zhang Feng sucked his lip as he felt it tasted not as same as those before.

...

"Is everybody okay?"

"Okay, f*ck, but I wouldn't have imagined that there were two huge centipedes in the crack. If we've didn't find the magical core, we've already suffered a loss now!"

"If not for that magical core, we might not have been that easily attacked by that bi**h!"

The members started to discuss.

"Feng, are you all right?" Seeing Zhang Feng staying still over there after drinking the antidote, Yang Yuankang walked towards him as he started to worry about him. He then patted Zhang Feng's shoulder and asked.

The other guys who noticed Zhang Feng's situation also walked towards him. Some of them instantly noticed those red points on his neck where had been splashed by the venom.

Thinking that Zhang Feng had been poisoned, Yang Yuankang hurriedly grabbed his hand as he touched Zhang Feng's pulse. However, he found Zhang Feng's pulse was steady, no signal of being poisoned at all.

Everybody then noticed Zhang Feng's extremely weird expression.

"What's wrong?" Yang Yuankang asked out of curiosity.

"Head, is that solution you gave me is able to help people recover vitality?" Zhang Feng asked Yang Yuankang in a curious expression.

"That thing is very effective to rheumatism and arthritis! Some people who had tried it all said it was marvelous!"

"What else?"

"What do you mean?"

"I find... that medicament might also be used to detoxify venom!" Zhang Feng said in a lowered tone.

"What? How?"

Facing the other's dubious eyes, Zhang Feng put his hand into his medicament capsule again and pulled out another vial of

medicament. After that, he presented that empty vial, "After being poisoned just now, I made a mistake and took the medicament which was given by the head. However, the real antidote is still here. Soon after I drunk that medicament, the symptoms of being poisoned had disappeared!"

Looking at the two vials of medicament that were almost the same size, everybody became stunned immediately as it was really out of their imagination.

The most shocked one was Yang Yuankang. After being dumbfounded for several seconds, Yang Yuankang made one thing that was out of everybody else's expectation——He directly opened his palm skin using his dagger and squeezed a bit venom out of the huge centipede's venom container onto the wound. After half a minute, he took out of the vial of solution which was given by Zhang Tie and bottomed it up in front of the others.

Everybody then fixed their eyes on Yang Yuankang without a wink.

Only after 2 minutes, Yang Yuankang had already shown an uncontrolled expression...

"It truly works..."

"In a split second, Yang Yuankang's head was filled with many thoughts. After thinking for almost 1 minute, Yang Yuankang started to recover his composure.

"Let's go back to the Breaking-Heavens Department!"

Zhang Tie might not know about the true value of that solution that he brewed. As his friend, Yang Yuankang thought he was obligated to tell Zhang Tie that those solutions that he brewed were not only solutions but a real medicament. He should tell Zhang Tie about the true value of the medicament.

Yang Yuankang then exchanged glances with the other members who went down the underground cave. From then on, the value of Zhang Tie's solution soon spread in Breaking-Heavens Department.

...

Chapter 308: Cooperation

When Zhang Tie finished his day's training and went back to his residence, he saw Yang Yuankang waiting for him on the ground floor of the Songtao Pavilion with some other senior brothers from Breaking-Heavens Department. The moment they saw him, Yang Yuankang hurriedly waved hands towards him while the other guys instantly cast their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

"Senior Yang, it's been so late, what's up?" Zhang Tie revealed a big smile.

It was truly very late. As the swordsmanship training gym in the Breaking-Heavens Department wasn't locked up until 11 pm, Zhang Tie always returned Songtao Pavilion after the training gym was closed. Therefore, it was almost 12 pm.

"Hoho, I'm here to congratulate you, junior brother Zhang Tie!" Yang Yuankang smiled. As they had sold the huge centipede's magical core the moment they returned and each of them had gained a lot from it, they were all very happy, including Yang Yuankang.

"Congratulate me?" Zhang Tie stared at Yang Yuankang in a dubious expression, "but why?"

"Junior brother Zhang Tie would enter the Hidden Dragon Wealth List very soon. Of course, we're here to congratulate you!"

"Senior brother Yang, you must be kidding me. I truly have some

money now, but I won them from the bet with those in the Zhixing Department. Even including the debts that have not been cleared up, they are just 2000 gold coins in total. I even spent a lot. Each of the guys on the Hidden Dragon Wealth List have above hundreds of thousands of gold coins, compared with them, my small amount is nothing!" Zhang Tie shook his head.

Yang Yuankang smiled before he told Zhang Tie about the effect of that solution given by Zhang Tie that they found in the Dragon Island.

After hearing that his solution could detoxify venom very effectively, Zhang Tie was really shocked as he had not imagined that his solution could have that effect, "Senior brother Yang, you mean that solution could detoxify venom?"

"You didn't know about that?"

Zhang Tie tried to recover his composure before he asked, "I really didn't know about it. When I first gained the secret knowledge, I knew nothing about its effect except for feeling very comfortable after drinking it. I couldn't have imagined that it could detoxify venom!"

"The effect of your solution could definitely match that of a LV 1 antidote. Even if you only sell it at the price of an antidote, you could still gain thousands of gold coins a day. It's just a matter of time before you enter the Hidden Dragon Wealth List. Additionally, that solution has other marvelous effects. It could definitely be very useful in the future! We were wondering, how much of it do you still have?"

"Only little of the first batch is left. If senior brother Yang wants it, I can gift you some!"

"Now that we know your solution is very precious, how could we ask for your thing for free!" Yang Yuankang's eyes radiated shimmering lights as he continued, "We didn't just come here to tell you all this news but in order to negotiate a business deal with you!"

"Business?" In an instant, Zhang Tie had almost completely guessed Yang Yuankang's plan. He then smiled as he cast another glance over them, "Thanks for bringing me such good news, senior brother Yang. As it is almost midnight, it's not proper to talk about that here. Why not talk about it in my room!"

Yang Yuankang was also smart. Knowing that Zhang Tie had not refused it and even invited them to talk about it in his room, he knew that the business was doomed to succeed. After exchanging glances with the other guys, Yang Yuankang also saw the excitement from all the others' eyes.

Therefore, Zhang Tie invited them to enter his Xuan No.7 room.

After they sat well on the sofa and in the chairs, Yang Yuankang looked solemn.

"Junior brother, do you know how many antidotes are required on Hidden Dragon Island every day?"

Zhang Tie shook his head.

"As the Dragon Cave of Hidden Dragon Island is one of the entrances towards the underground world, there are at least thousands of warriors, fighters and adventurers deepening into the Dragon Cave to reinforce their battle qi or to seek out treasures every day. They come from all across Jinyun Country. They make the Hidden Dragon Island prosperous and many things become very urgent in demand!"

"Are antidotes items that are often in urgent demand?"

"Yes!" Yang Yuankang nodded, "This antidote is necessary for all the people entering the underground world. It could save one's life. Each people entering underground world would at least carry one vial of this antidote in case of emergency! In this case, they could see at least 500-600 vials of antidote on the Hidden Dragon Island every day. They might even sell over 1000 vials of antidote a day."

Zhang Tie nodded as he remembered that Zhang Su, his cousin also carried some vials of antidote when he took Zhang Tie to form battle qi in the Dragon Cave.

Of course, the alleged antidote could not detoxify all the poisons. Take that blue frost that he was poisoned by before as an example. Only a special antidote could detoxify it. There were some lethal poisons that could not be detoxified at all.

In this age, antidotes were always universal which was mainly targeted at detoxifying venoms possessed by various creatures and magical beasts below LV 9. They were made of special minerals.

Universal antidotes below LV 9 could be further divided into 3 levels. Those which could detoxify the venom of creatures below LV 7 belonged to LV 1 antidote; those which could detoxify the venom of creatures below LV 8 belonged to LV 2 antidotes; those which could detoxify the venom of creatures below LV 9 belonged to LV 3 antidotes.

"Although LV 1 antidotes are the most common ones, their sales volume and variety of purposes are much greater than other antidotes. They could be used in many places. Not only warriors, fighters and adventurers are equipped with this medicament, even many common households had them. Because most people are only likely to meet dangerous creatures below LV 7!"

Zhang Tie nodded once again. It was true. Take sea serpents as an example, they were just LV 0 living beings before mutation; however, for commoners, it was also very severe if being bitten by them. Among all the dangerous creatures, the amount of creatures below LV 7 occupied above 95% of the total amount of these creatures.

"According to my knowledge, the alchemists on the Hidden Dragon Island can only produce over 200 vials of LV 1 antidotes a day. The shortage in demand is transported by business groups of the Zhang clan from outside the island. Now that we already know that your medicament can detoxify venom, we can definitely make a lot using your solution!" Yang Yuankang said with a spark in his

eyes.

"What's your plan, senior Yang?"

"My friends and I have just gained a huge centipede's magical core and sold it for 1200 gold coins today. We'll prepare to rent a store on the island in order to sell your medicament exclusively!"

Gradually, Yang Yuankang had changed the name of Zhang Tie's solution into "medicament".

After testing the detoxifying effect of Zhang Tie's medicament, Yang Yuankang and the others were so confident about it. They'd found a great business opportunity in it. After negotiating for a while, Yang Yuankang and the others decided to make investment using the money they made today. They prepared to make a lot by the relationship with Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie was greatly moved by Yang Yuankang's idea.

Speaking of opening a store, Zhang Tie had much more experience than Yang Yuankang and the other guys. After assessing its feasibility, Zhang Tie started to negotiate about the cooperation with them seriously.

If they wanted to make money with that solution, they still needed to solve a lot of problems.

The first problem is that few of his solution was left, only a bit

more than 10 kg. It was definitely impossible to enter the market using it.

Zhang Tie then directly took that terrine of solution out of his bed room and put it on the desk in front of them.

"Junior brother, your stuff is so small now?" A senior sister uttered.

She didn't feel anything wrong when she said this; however, after saying it, she found the faces of all the guys in the room turned weird at once. Their face all blushed. Then, she realized the ambiguity in his words. Her face blushed soon, too.

"This thing...has become so little!" Zhang Tie said with a slightly embarrassed expression.

"Alas..." Yang Yuankang coughed twice as he recovered composure, "Junior brother Zhang Tie, how long will it take you to make such medicament?"

"At least 2 months!"

"Can you be faster?"

"I can catalyze a batch of them rapidly, it will take me 2 weeks!"

It was just Zhang Tie's excuse for catalyzing them. Actually,

Zhang Tie prepared to move some of the fermented solution out of the Castle of Black Iron. As long as he made preparations, he would not arise their doubts.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Yang Yuankang and the others all looked very thrilled.

"That's too incredible. If we restrict the sales volume of the rest medicament, we can last 2 weeks with them. We can make it popular first. After this is sold out, new batches will be ready!"

Zhang Tie nodded, "I also mean for it to be like that. If you put the rest into standard vials, you can still make over 100 vials of it. In the next 2 weeks, you can sell it as a trial and check the response of the market. If there's any problems, we can find them in time; if it works well, it could work like hunger marketing!"

Hearing that, everybody nodded.

They then negotiated about the cooperation details before separating.

After seeing them off to the ground floor of the Songtao Pavilion, Zhang Tie returned to his own room. Staring at that terrine, Zhang Tie still couldn't believe the solution inside could have that marvelous effect.

As he had sold rice brew with yeast for over 10 years at home, will he sell yeast again?

Zhang Tie felt the marvel of destiny. Meanwhile, he also became thrilled as he seemed to see numerous gold coins flying towards him...

Chapter 309: The First Transaction

Since that they had decided to do it, they would do it well.

As they were all young men and full of passion, after making up their minds, they all started to move enthusiastically.

Early the next morning, Yang Yuankang had already arrived at the Songtao Pavilion in the appointed place.

He brought two crates of new crystal vials into Zhang Tie's room. Yang Yuankang and Zhang Tie then filled all the solution from the terrine into the vials. They got 138 vials of medicament in total.

"These vials of medicament have no symbols. In the future, we should customize all the vials of medicament!" Yang Yuankang said.

"Where will we customize them?"

"It's available in the Breaking-Heavens Department. The students who cultivate to be alchemists would customize their personal vials for medicaments after being able to produce them. There are private symbols on their vials. You can call them trademarks. All the private symbols on the vials are trademarks. They are registered in the Alchemists Association and are the only private image-text symbols being protected by the Alchemists Association!"

"I'm not an alchemist. How could I register my private symbol on the vials?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"You can. All the vials with medicament inside could be registered for exclusively private symbol in the Alchemists Association!" Taking an empty crystal vial of medicament, Yang Yuankang pointed at some special designs on it, "This crystal vial includes several unique patents from aspects like ingredients and craftsmanship. These patents are exclusively enjoyed by the Alchemists Association. The Alchemists Association monopolizes the production of all the vials and the right to register and authenticate the symbols on the vials!"

Zhang Tie nodded. He thought if this batch of solution could really sell well, as long as he could produce it on a large scale, he would definitely customize his own vials.

After filling the solution inside the vials, Yang Yuankang took away 120 vials. Zhang Tie asked to keep the rest 18 vials. For the 120 vials, Zhang Tie sold them at the price of 4 gold coins for each.

Zhang Tie decided to set the price of each vial at 5 gold coins, which was 10% lower than the common LV 1 antidote on the market, leaving 20% of gross profit to Yang Yuankang and the other guys.

Because medicament were usually very expensive. Most of stores and sales terminals would variate from 5% to 8%. As the first dealer of Zhang Tie, Yang Yuankang could enjoy 20% of the gross profit. This was really too profitable.

As the condition for the cooperation between both parties, if they could sell these products successfully, in the future, regardless of the rising sales price of the terminals, Zhang Tie always provide them at least 10000 vials of medicament at the price of lower than 4 gold coins a vial so as to ensure their investment benefits as the first ones who dared to eat crabs.

After taking the 120 vials of medicament, Yang Yuankang became so excited that after bidding a farewell with ZhangTie, he hurriedly left.

Staying in his room, Zhang Tie smirked as he counted the 480 gold coins paid by Yang Yuankang for many times. He was filled with pleasure. This was Zhang Tie's first time making money with his real talent and ability. Previously, although Zhang Tie had manipulated more money than this, he actually didn't make it with his own ability.

When the Gregory family compensated 5000 gold coins for him, they were actually paying for the life of a second lieutenant of the Iron-Blood Camp of Norman Empire.

When in Blapei, although he took the position as an officer in the logistics department and could gain a lot of gold coins per week, that was due to the concern about him from the big figures of the Iron-Horn Army.

Even though that rune ring was still picked up from the battlefield, it was due to good luck.

However, today, with his own ability, he made 480 gold coins. Holding the heavy gold coins which weighed over 10 kg, Zhang Tie felt very satisfied.

After Yang Yuankang left, Zhang Tie also left Songtao Pavilion with some money.

...

Seeing Zhang Tie falling off the 4 m high quincuncial piles once again, although standing on the ground steadily, Gu Caidie who was responsible for guiding Zhang Tie frowned her forehead with a serious expression at once.

"Junior brother Zhang Tie, you seem not concentrated today! As you've made progress very fast during this period, you shouldn't slack off!"

"Yes, senior sister Gu!" Feeling embarrassed, Zhang Tie scratched his head as he slightly jumped up from the ground and stood back onto the piles. After practicing it for several days, although Zhang Tie could still not defeat those girls, his movements had become increasingly more flexible. He could stand longer and longer on the piles now. Even when falling off the piles, Zhang Tie could still stand on the ground safe and sound, instead of being that awkward at the beginning.

Today, because Zhang Tie was thinking about making money, he became a bit mind-absent on the piles.

"Although you have great strength on your feet, it was not enough, as you have to feel being both a nail and a spring on the piles, in each second, you should be at the equilibrium point between the nail and the spring. Only when you could fix and move your foot in a split second could you pass the test!"

Zhang Tie nodded.

After concentrating, Zhang Tie performed much better. Two hours passed very soon.

The moment it was finished, after bidding a farewell with Gu Caidie, Zhang Tie had hurriedly left the training field.

Seeing that Zhang Tie was that anxious, Gu Caidie could only reveal a smile as she shook her head.

Even though after Two hours' training, when Zhang Tie left the training field for fundamental movements, it was still 9 am..

After leaving the training field, Zhang Tie directly came to the hall of the Middle Castle and queued up before the counter where he handed in money at the beginning.

After the front ones handed in the monthly payment, it was finally Zhang Tie's turn.

Behind that counter was still those senior scholars who were wearing oversleeves.

"I want to rent a warehouse!" Zhang Tie directly gave his clan plate to a senior scholar.

Taking Zhang Tie's clan plate, the old man inserted it into the slot of the machine. After pulling down a drawbar, he looked at the data on the machine before nodding. "You have good credit. You can rent some facilities of Hidden Dragon Palace. What sort of warehouse do you want?"

"The area of the warehouse should be above 200 sq meters. It should have good access to water, wind and items. Additionally, the warehouse should be safe. Besides me, nobody else can enter!"

"The only one that meets your requirements should be the workshop for herbal medicine apprentices in the Hidden Dragon Palace. Each herbal medicine apprentice is equipped with a herbal medicine warehouse which covers 210 sq meters. The warehouse is access to to wind, water. Besides, its illumination and temperature are adjustable!"

"The workshop of herbal medicine apprentices? It doesn't sound too bad." Zhang Tie thought inwardly.

"What about the rate?"

"The rent for each workshop is 15 gold coins a month! You should

pay off one year's rent before being able to use it."

This price was still too high for purely renting a room; however, as it was in the Hidden Dragon Palace, it was still acceptable for Zhang Tie.

"Well, I want to rent a workshop then!" Saying this, Zhang Tie pulled out his purse and counted out 180 gold coins, which were a part of that paid by Yang Yuankang and the other guys. After the payment, only 300 gold coins left.

"Your workshop is in the Poria Cocos Park in Herb Valley." The old man returned the clan plate to Zhang Tie as he give him a metal plate marked with "Poria Cocos". "This plate is the only secret key to open the Poria Cocos Park. Take it and register in the Administration Center of the Herbs Valley, where someone will guide you to the Poria Cocos Park!"

After taking a serious look at the metal plate marked with "Poria Cocos", Zhang Tie found it was a bit similar to his clan plate as on the back of each plate was graved with some secret metal grains.

Holding the secret key, Zhang Tie instantly rushed into Herb Valley.

Herb Valley was beside the Lower Castle. It was not far from the Secret Knowledge Pavilion and was only over 500 m away from the Zhixing Department. Herb Vallley was in the east while the Zhixing Department was in the west with a ridge between them. This was a more tranquil small valley, which was covered with

many herbal fields. The moment Zhang Tie entered this region, he had smelt the fragrance of many kinds of herbal medicines.

Those independent small parks were scattering in this small valley. On the way, Zhang Tie saw many rooms were named "White Peony Park", "Licorice Park", "Angelica Park", "Red Peony Park" and "Ginseng Park", etc...

Zhang Tie entered the Administration Center of Herb Valley to register himself. After that, a staff member guided him into Poria Cocos Park.

There was a firm iron gate outside the Poria Cocos Park. After inserting the secret key into the slot on the iron gate, Zhang Tie twisted the handle on the iron gate to open it.

Poria Cocos Park covered more than 300 sq meters. It was divided into many small rooms, including a lab, lounge room and herbal medicine warehouse. There were some simple tools for processing herbal medicines.

Zhang Tie was concerned about the warehouse most. After circling around the warehouse, Zhang Tie found some wooden brackets in the warehouse which almost filled the whole warehouse. He then faintly frowned, "I don't need these things, can you have someone move them out of here?"

"These items are used to dry and store various herbal medicines. Each herbal medicine apprentice would use them!" The staff explained as he thought Zhang Tie didn't know their purpose.

"I won't use them!"

"Aren't you a herbal medicine apprentice?" The staff asked out of curiosity.

"Who told you I was a herbal medicine apprentice?" Zhang Tie asked.

"But what do you rent it for..."

"I have money, I want to pickle vegetables here!" Zhang Tie smirked...

Chapter 310: Preparations

It took him an hour to clean up the warehouse of the Poria Cocos Park. After that, Zhang Tie shut its gate and instantly went to White Dragon Town.

Now that he wanted to make that solution, he had to prepare the necessary tools and raw materials.

The tools were terrines that were used for fermenting while the raw materials were various fruits and sugars.

The White Dragon Town was very populated. Zhang Tie soon found the pottery store where he bought that terrine last time.

The pottery store sold various earthenwares, which were the most common items in regular families. They were not delicate, but very simple and durable. Compared to porcelains, these earthenwares were much cheaper.

After looking around, Zhang Tie found the items in the store were smaller than those he needed. He then asked the salesman.

"Buddy, do you have some bigger terrines?" Zhang Tie made a gesture with his hands. As he wanted to produce that solution on a large scale, the terrines should also be big enough, each of which should be able to contain over 100 kg of solution; however, the terrines in the store were all smaller. The largest one could only hold 40-50 kg.

"Larger ones are in the warehouse!"

"Can you show me there?"

The salesman then glanced over Zhang Tie with a dubious expression. Zhang Tie looked very young and didn't look like making business to survive himself. Given Zhang Tie's figure, he didn't look like an islander who always visited this store, the salesman became a bit curious.

Whereas, now that Zhang Tie wanted to visit there, the salesman could only take him there. As there were two salesmen in the store, after telling the other guy that he was leaving for the warehouse with Zhang Tie, that man then guided Zhang Tie there.

There were more earthenwares in the warehouse, which were piled up in several layers. After following him into the warehouse, Zhang Tie saw a 1 m high terrine. "That's it!"

After checking the patterns and workmanship, Zhang Tie nodded.

"Buddy, how much is this terrine!"

"9 silver coins each!"

After calculating it inside for a second, Zhang Tie instantly got

the answer, the whole warehouse could hold 90-100 terrines like this.

"I want 80 terrines of this kind!" Zhang Tie pointed at that terrine as he said. Although his warehouse could hold more such kind of terrines, he had to leave some space for people to move inside. Therefore 80 terrines were proper.

"How many do you want?" The salesman thought that he had heard incorrectly.

"I want 80 terrines of this kind!" Zhang Tie repeated, "Can you deliver them to my door?"

Realizing that Zhang Tie was not kidding, the salesman became excited at once as he became instantly enthusiastic about Zhang Tie. After guiding Zhang Tie back to the store, the salesman hurriedly made a cup of water for Zhang Tie.

"As those terrines are of thin profits, if you want us to deliver them to your door, you need to add some transportation fee. As these items are not valuable, yet were cumbersome, we have to pay a lot to ask for help!"

"How about 9 gold coins in total?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the salesman became so excited that he hurriedly nodded, "It's enough, it's enough..." As Hidden Dragon Palace was not far from the White Dragon Town, it would

not cost much by transporting them there.

As his family was doing such small business before, Zhang Tie knew they were working hard. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't bargain with him as he directly counted out 9 gold coins and gave them to him. The moment the salesman got the money, he became more enthusiastic.

"When do you need them, sir, I will have someone deliver them to you!"

"How about today?"

"No problem, but since few people would buy such huge terrines, we don't have that much in stock. We have to make them in the kiln!"

"How many days do you need?"

"We only need 2 days!"

"How many do you have now?"

"A bit more than 20!"

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie replied, "Okay, you can deliver those inventory to Hidden Dragon Palace first, I will go to buy something else. I will wait for you in Hidden Dragon

Palace!"

"May I know your surname, sir?"

"I'm Zhang Tie. If I'm not there when your goods arrived, just wait for me over there for a while!"

"No problem!"

After making the deal, Zhang Tie left the pottery store.

Later, Zhang Tie bought a lot of items in White Dragon Town. Therefore, he returned to the Hidden Dragon Palace with 2 carriages behind him, which were used to load his items.

Among them, there were various fruits, over 100 kg of liquor, several hundred kilograms of honey, several hundred kilograms of brown sugar, more than 10 kitchen knives, 10 chopping boards, huge iron-sheet basins, etc..

When Zhang Tie returned to the Hidden Dragon Palace with the two carriages leisurely, those huge terrines also arrived.

Because outsiders were forbidden in, Zhang Tie had to carry these items into the Poria Cocos Park in Herb Valley one by one.

After moving all of them into the park, Zhang Tie was still busy as he had to clean up the over 20 huge terrines with water before

sterilizing the inside of them with liquor.

It was a trifling affair. It took Zhang Tie the whole afternoon to clean up and sterilize those terrines.

Zhang Tie then directly went to the fish market in the wharf. After setting free fishes today, Zhang Tie came to the Zhixing Department. He firstly chated with Wei Wu and Zhang Liang and the other friends before asking a great number of girls who had just finished their supper to work for him.

Zhang Tie even paid each of them 1 gold coin for their assistance——of course, this should be deducted from the debt that they owed him. Considering it was a great compensation, all the girls accepted the task.

Zhang Tie then brought them to the Poria Cocos Park. At the sight of the fruits and terrines around the park, everybody became dumbfounded.

"So many items! What do you want us to do?" Du Yuhan showed the white of her eyes as she said in a tender voice.

After that affair when Zhang Tie saved Du Yuhan at the risk of his own life, the girls' impression about Zhang Tie had greatly changed. Many of them started to call him senior brother. Zhang Tie realized that his good personality was finally admitted.

Zhang Tie then cast a glance at Du Yuhan, whose attitude

towards him had greatly changed. Previously, she was always furious with him; however, since last time when he saved her, her face always blushed in front of him. Additionally, she became more tender. At the moment, watching Du Yuhan's look, Zhang Tie suddenly felt his mummy jumped out of no reason.

"God bless me. I haven't touched girls in a long time." As a great number of girls were gazing at him, Zhang Tie dared not to lose face this time. Therefore, he put his right hand into a pocket of his trousers in a cool way and started his "Right hand covering method" stealthily. "Your job is very simple. Do you see these fruits? Your task today is to clean up 1/3 of those fruits. After that, you should shatter them into pieces and put them into the terrines!"

"That's it?" Du Yuhan winked her eyes as she asked in a dubious way.

"Of course, your senior brother is always kind and generous with great morals. Previously, you must have misunderstood me. You felt that I was mean. Actually, you can make money from your senior brother very easily. That's it! It's much easier than selling 100 packs of sea shell oil!" Zhang Tie winked his eyes towards Du Yuhan.

The girls then cast their whites of eyes to Zhang Tie at the same time. Seeing Zhang Tie have already prepared all the tools, they then started to work. This job was really very easy. Under Zhang Tie's guidance on one side, those girls then started to work seriously.

Having been busy since morning, Zhang Tie suddenly remembered that he had not eaten. His stomach started to coo. Therefore, Zhang Tie casually picked up a banana and started to eat.

"Senior brother, do you believe that each girl would know your Chinese Zodiac at the sight of you?" Said Qu Liangying, who was washing fruits rolled her eyes when she saw Zhang Tie eating a banana.

Zhang Tie became stunned as he soon engulfed that banana, "That's impossible, I don't believe! Tell me my Chinese Zodiac sign then."

"Sisters, tell him what our senior brother's Chinese Zodiac is?" Qu Liangying shouted loudly, "I count 1, 2, 3 and let's tell him in unison!"

"Fine!"

"1...2...3...Sisters, tell him what is his Chinese Zodiac!"

"Monkey!" After shouting the answer out loudly in unison, the girls then exchanged glances with each other as they could stand to burst out laugh loudly at the same time.

Zhang Tie looked at his banana as he instantly realized that he was set up. He then burst into laughter too. At the beginning, Zhang Tie said all the girls' Chinese Zodiac was spinning top. He

had not imagined that they finally asked for his compensation. Girls were really born to be narrow-minded.

"It's not bad. If I'm a monkey then I'm definitely the monkey king. I can have over 10 female monkeys and let so many female monkeys pick up fruits and wash fruits for me every day. If any female monkey performs well, I will feed her bananas..." Zhang Tie replied with a big smile.

"Pah..."

Soon after Zhang Tie said that more than ten fruits were thrown towards him from all directions. Zhang Tie rapidly collected them in the air and hugged them all.

"Look, the moment you heard that I would feed you bananas, you've already become so excited. Don't be that anxious for being specially favored by me!" Zhang Tie flirted with them all again. Seeing the girls who were shattering fruits pretending to throw kitchen knives towards him, Zhang Tie pretended to be scared and immediately escaped away.

After exchanging glances with each other, the girls then revealed smiles once again.

...

In less than 3 hours, the girls had cleaned and shattered all the fruits, put them into the terrines, added sugar, water and honey.

In the later 2 days, the girls worked 2 hours for Zhang Tie at each night after supper so as to deduct 1 gold coin's debt. In this way, they worked three days for Zhang Tie. After three days, all the 80 huge terrines were filled.

"Senior brother, what are you fermenting so many enzymes for?" Not until the third day after they finished work did Li Yurou asked Zhang Tie out of curiosity.

"Enzymes? You mean I'm fermenting enzymes?" Being faintly shocked, Zhang Tie stared at Li Yurou as he had heard this word for the first time.

"Yes, I always fermented enzyme at home when I was young. I remember that my grandma told me that if one eats enzymes, one would not have health problems! It's easy to make enzyme; however, this item isn't worth much money."

"Hoho, it's a secret. You will know about it in the future." Zhang Tie said in a mysterious way.

"Humph, narrow-minded!" Li Yurou then pouted her peach-like mouth.

"As you've helped your senior brother for three days, your senior brother will send each of you a small gift!" Zhang Tie then took out those vials that had been filled with that special solution.

"What's this?" The girls took his "gift" as they started to look it around.

"This thing is as effective as a level 1 antidote. Additionally, it could replenish your energy. Take it and go play!"

"Argh!" The girls exclaimed. Even with the effect that it equaled to that of a level 1 antidote, this thing would worth no less than 5 gold coins. They had not imagined that Zhang Tie could be that generous.

"Well, well, don't be that moved with watery eyes. If you really want to thank me, you can marry me. If we are a family, your senior brother would even clear off your debts!" Zhang Tie made a grimace.

After showing the whites of their eyes, the girls then left.

Because it was too late, Zhang Tie didn't come back to the Poria Cocos Park until he sent the girls into the Zhixing Department. After that, Zhang Tie closed the gate of the Poria Cocos Park before going to the warehouse again. Facing the 80 huge terrines, Zhang Tie was filled with a sense of achievement.

Later, Zhang Tie took some essential-energy reiki yeast out of Castle of Black Iron and added them into the terrines. The moment he added the essential-energy reiki yeast into the terrines, the items in the terrines had become different from that before. With the exception of Zhang Tie, nobody knew that the items in the terrines had become different.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie took two huge terrines of well-fermented special solution out of the lab in Castle of Black Iron and exchanged them with another two huge terrines in the warehouse which had just been fermented. By then, he finished all the preparations.

The 80 huge terrines of solution in the warehouse weighed almost 12 tons in total. If Yang Yuankang's sales could stimulate its demand, 2 months later, the value of the 12 tons of special solution would at least equal to that of 12 tons of LV 1 antidote.

It could definitely shock a great number of people if he told it to others. How come such precious detoxification solution could be counted by tons!

"Perhaps I should go to the library of Breaking-Heavens Department to look up the books about enzyme. I want to figure out the reason why such mysterious solution is so marvelous!" Zhang Tie mumbled.

Feeling very nice, Zhang Tie then left the Poria Cocos Park. On the way back to his residence, Zhang Tie encountered a woman in Herb Valley who had love affairs with him for the rest of his life...

Chapter 311: Audacious

It was a good nightscape [with bright moons and sparse stars](#), the moonlight was as tender as flowing water. Walking through Herb Valley, Zhang Tie smelt the refreshing air as he thought about his future life of counting gold coins every day. A wisp of smirk appeared at the corners of his mouth.

Walking in the moonlight, Zhang Tie heard a mournful flute melody. The melody was otherworldly. Although Zhang Tie didn't know much about music, he felt pure and free listening to it. Zhang Tie then slowed down his footsteps and walked in the direction of the flute melody's source.

Zhang Tie walked along a stream in the valley. He passed through an herbal medicine park and took a detour through a bamboo wood before he caught sight of a scene that he would never forget for the rest of his life.

A girl in a red skirt was sitting on a huge, cyan stone under the purely white moonlight. She was elegantly playing a dark green jade flute.

Sitting on the cyan stone, the girl revealed her elegant figure. With snow-white skin and cascading, black hair, she looked like a fairy from a painting. With a pair of snow-white feet, she was playing with the water at the same time.

By then, although Zhang Tie was not acquainted with many girls, he had met a lot of girls; however, the moment he saw this girl,

Zhang Tie felt like being tamped by a hammer as his brain droned and sparkled. In Zhang Tie's eyes, that girl was perfect all over. She was filled with allure as if her entire body was emitting sparkles.

The snow-white skin, the delicate fine waist, the elegant gourd-shaped curve of her butt that was sitting on the cyan stone, a pair of beautiful feet, and a pair of slim, charming legs...

After playing a song, the girl heard a weird sound from aside. She then looked toward there and found a 16-17 old juvenile who was forcefully swallowed his saliva.

Zhang Tie was as hilarious as an idiot who was stretching his neck so long. At the sight of him, the girl couldn't stand to titter. After that, she found Zhang Tie was fixing his eyes onto her delicate feet. Her face instantly blushed as she hurriedly hid her feet into her skirt.

"Hey, brat, have you seen enough?"

Zhang Tie then looked up and realized that the girl was talking to him. He instantly recovered his composure.

"Not yet!" Zhang Tie shook his head as he replied very seriously.

The girl had not imagined that he would be so audacious. Commoners, when being asked in this way, would have long escaped. It was really out of her expectation that Zhang Tie could

be that audacious and didn't fear about her at all.

The girl then blinked her eyes as she felt a bit curious about Zhang Tie, "Don't you know who I am?"

"I'm going to ask for your name, my senior sister."

This girl was 20-21 years old, who was a few years elder than Zhang Tie; therefore, it was proper for Zhang Tie to call her senior sister.

"You want to know my name? What's your name then?" That girl fixed her eyes onto Zhang Tie seriously as she seemed to be wanting to find a trace of deceit from Zhang Tie's face.

'Is this juvenile new here in the Hidden Dragon Palace? He doesn't even know who I am; otherwise, he would've known my status, yet he's just disguising and wanting to get close with me.' The girl considered it inside as she had encountered so many men like him these years.

"I'm Zhang Tie. I'm 16 years old. Single!" Zhang Tie smirked as he started to try his best to introduce himself.

Zhang Tie had learned from those girls of Rose Association that girls actually didn't like those gentlemen; unless that man was very handsome, had great power, or literary talent. Men who could not meet any of the former three conditions should not pretend to be cool in front of girls. If not, the outcome could only be that the girl

he beloved would sleep with other bad boys.

Saying that, Zhang Tie walked towards that girl.

Hearing Zhang Tie's introduction, the girl couldn't stand to giggle; after watching Zhang Tie's look, the girl was finally sure that Zhang Tie might truly not know his real status.

"Are you new here?"

"How come?" Zhang Tie shouted loudly liking being heavily wronged, "I've been here since last year. I was even rated as one of the top excellent youths in Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"Top excellent youths in Hidden Dragon Palace?" Hearing this, the girl became slightly stunned as she started to frown her forehead and uttered in a tender voice, "Weird, I've not heard about that!"

"Of course you don't know about that. Because I rate it myself. I've not even rated the other 9 yet!"

At this moment, Zhang Tie had already gotten quite close to her, when the girl realized that Zhang Tie was fabricating lies. She then felt both angry and tittering as she fiercely glared at Zhang Tie; however, she suddenly felt something new inside. She had not seen a man like Zhang Tie who was so audacious in front of her.

"I've told you my name, it's your turn." Walking close to her,

Zhang Tie asked directly.

"Aren't you one of the top excellent youths in Hidden Dragon Palace? How come you don't know even an average person like me?" That girl rolled her eyes as she said smartly.

"Of course I know your name!" Zhang Tie hid his smirk as he looked at this girl seriously.

'Was he disguising all the way? He truly knows who I am?' A thought flashed across the girl's mind once again.

"You know who I am?"

"Of course! You're [Rumeng](#), right? You walk out of my dream. The moment I saw you, I felt like going back to my dream again..." Zhang Tie's eyes instantly became that audacious. That girl had not seen such a man who dared to bare his heart to her in only a few minutes after seeing her. Additionally, Zhang Tie was a few years younger than her.

The girl had really not heard such hot words since she was born.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the girl's eyes widened as she instantly felt goosebumps all over.

The girl became slightly flurried as she felt Zhang Tie glancing over her body with hot eyes. Those men who knew her real status never dared to be so audacious in front of her.

At this moment, the girl had already known that Zhang Tie didn't know her real status.

"Argh, don't come here..." The girl hurriedly hid behind the cyan stone.

"I will not go there..." Zhang Tie continued as he walked 2 steps closer to that girl, "Watch out, don't fall off!"

Seeing the girl going to fall off, Zhang Tie hurriedly stretched out his hands to hold her fast. The girl planned to give him a lesson by smacking his face; however, at the sight of Zhang Tie's sincere look, the girl suddenly gave up her plan.

Therefore, before Zhang Tie's hands touched her, the girl had gritted her teeth and flew from the cyan stone like a red cloud. She instantly landed steadily on the bamboo of 7-8 m high beside the stream.

Standing on the slightly swaying bamboo, the girl was like a fairy on the waves.

"Rumeng, you've not told me your name? Watch out the bamboo leaves, they might hurt your feet..." Zhang Tie shouted loudly.

As it was the first time for her to be pursued by a man so audaciously, the girl's face suddenly blushed as her heart raced. She became completely confused about how to face him. Finally,

she directly sprung from the bamboo and swiftly flew away on the bamboo leaves, with swaying, loose sleeves, in a blink of eye.

Gazing at the girl like an idiot, Zhang Tie felt like he'd be extremely frustrated in a second...

Not until the fresh, red color disappeared into the distance under the moonlight did Zhang Tie feel frustrated as he rubbed his face, 'You couldn't stand only this much? I've not done anything wrong? My mom told me that Chinese girls were all reserved. Was I not reserved just now? But what is 'reserved', I really don't know about that!'

He remained stunned for quite a while, then the moment he wanted to leave, he suddenly noticed something beside that cyan stone near the stream. Zhang Tie's eyes then lit up.

There was a pair of delicate embroidered shoes on one side of the cyan stone.

...

Over 10 minutes later, the fairy like a red cloud returned. Falling onto the cyan stone from the twigs, the girl looked around and didn't see her embroidered shoes. The moment she thought about Zhang Tie's face, she became both bashful and furious as she stamped onto the stone and swore in a low voice, "Rascal..."

The moment she wanted to leave, another man had jumped

swiftly towards her.

The man in white clothes soon landed before her. This man was handsome with sword-like eyebrows and sparkling eyes.

"Senior sister Xi, I saw someone in red clothes jumping over the twigs just now and thought that might be you. It truly was you!"

"What's up?" Seeing him, the girl stealthily hid her bare feet into her skirt. At the same time, she recovered her composure like before. Feeling majestic with her calm expression, after a single glance at her, the man became scared and didn't dare to even look at her.

"I heard senior sister had just come back from the open waters after completing the task. I've not imagined that you'd also heard about the secret medicament. You must be here in Herb Valley to see who produces the new medicament!" The man revealed a big smile.

"New medicament..." The girl mumbled as she suddenly frowned her slim eyes and stressed, "You mean someone has produced the new medicament in Herb Valley?"

An alchemist who could develop a wholly new medicament was like a rune manufacturer who had discovered a new rune. This creative achievement was definitely an outstanding event.

"Right, a couple of days ago, someone in the Qinyun Palace said

there was a new LV 1 antidote which could not only detoxify venom, but also reinforce one's vitality and energy. It has exceptional effects. At the beginning, many people didn't believe that; however, someone who tried it recently found it was true!"

"Is that from Master Pure Cloud?" The girl asked.

"Shouldn't be that. Because there's no symbol of Master Pure Cloud on the vials. They use vials with no symbol!"

"Do you have any of the medicament? Show me!" The girl directly asked.

"Coincidentally, I bought a vial in Qinyun Palace today!" The man smiled as he took out a vial. The moment he wanted to give it to her, the girl had already made it fly into her hand through the air over a distance of several meters. At the sight of this scene, the man remembered her reputation of being blunt and her impressive power as he was instantly shocked and hurriedly stopped his footsteps.

"How much? I want this vial?" Looking it over for 2 seconds, the girl then said straightforwardly. She didn't even ask whether he would refuse or not.

"Senior sister Xi, no kidding, it's just a few gold coins. If you want to pay me, you must be looking down upon me!"

"What's Master Pure Cloud's test result on this medicament?"

"I heard Master Pure Cloud had just got such a vial of medicament today too. He's testing it. We're all waiting for the result. If that person who produces this medicament could gain the favor of master Pure Cloud, he would become famous in a second!"

"Hmm, I will have a look in Master Pure Cloud's lab!" After saying this, the girl suddenly disappeared. When she reappeared, it was already 10 more meters away. She moved so fast that in a blink of eye, she had already been 100 meters away, more than 10 times faster than when she was "scared away" by Zhang Tie.

Standing still, after seeing off that girl, the man let out a sigh as he shook his head and jumped away too.

It was each man's fortune and misfortune to stay together with such a girl in the Breaking-Heavens Department!

According to the common sense, when moons are bright, stars are always sparse as the brightness of stars are always dwarfed in front of bright moons.

Rumeng, 如梦, means like dream.

Chapter 312: Medicament Test

After only 10 minutes, that girl - in a pair of new shoes - appeared in front of the Heavens-Dependence Pavilion of Master Pure Cloud in the Breaking-Heavens Department.

Master Pure Cloud was the chief alchemist in Hidden Dragon Palace. As a golden-robe alchemist who enjoyed a high reputation in the entire Waii Sub-Continent, he was LV 9 in the world of alchemists. Besides that, he was also an officer of Zhang clan's Huaiyuan Palace. As a LV 9 alchemist, he was definitely a master.

Heavens-Dependence Pavilion was where Master Pure Cloud lived in the Breaking-Heavens Department and where he taught his apprentices and produced medicaments. As an important place in Breaking-Heavens Department, it was protected by three tiers of guardians. With the exception of the students of Master Pure Cloud and those who were allowed in, common students of Breaking-Heavens Department were forbidden entry.

That girl directly entered without encountering any obstacle. Everybody greeted her respectfully, including the guardians. The girl then slightly nodded towards them with extreme majesty.

She directly entered the lab of Master Pure Cloud.

"Argh, Senior Sister Xi, you've returned!" It was the workshop of Master Pure Cloud's apprentices and assistants outside the lab. At the sight of the girl, all of them hurriedly greeted her.

"Is master inside?"

"Master is testing the new medicament inside!"

"I'll take a look inside!" After saying this, the girl walked in the lab directly with gentle footsteps.

An old man with snow-white hair and beard in a brilliant golden robe was standing in front of a great pile of sophisticated instruments and vials. Raising his head toward the sky, he was gazing at the ceiling while mumbling.

"It's not right. Although it could detoxify venom, I don't find any element of medicine inside. Am I using the wrong testing method? It's impossible. Even though I couldn't detect it through testing, I could at least detect it through taste; unless no medicine is used in this medicament at all. But how could a medicament that contains no medicine detoxify venom and recover one's vitality and energy, which are the features of compound medicament, it could only be..." The old man shook his head, "It shouldn't be that! That thing's effect is progressive, it could never be that strong..."

With changing looks, he seemed to be a bit confused about it all.

"Master..." The girl became a bit respectful in front of Master Pure Cloud.

"Ah, Yunxi..." Turning his head, the master revealed a smile at the sight of the girl in the red skirt, "When did you come back?"

"I've just come back today. I heard that master was testing a new medicament. So, I came here for a look!" Saying that, the girl looked over at the instruments on the test-bed before smelling the familiar scents of the testing reagents, "Master, have you got the testing result?"

"The last test!"

While talking with her, Master Pure Cloud had gradually organized his thoughts. Golden-robed alchemists were extremely confident about their own professional knowledge. Instead of doubting his professional knowledge, he preferred to trust that others might create miracles.

However, it required a last short test.

Master Pure Cloud was also extremely straightforward. Once he made the decision, he instantly started to do that. He then directly took a silver knife from the test-bed and cut a small wound on his own hand in the red-skirt girl's shocking eyes.

"Argh, master..."

"It's okay, Yunxi, just a small wound. In order to verify whether that medicament is really what I want, this is a necessary step! If I did this on others' hands, they might not be as sensitive about the medicament as me. You know, for a medicament, this wound is nothing serious at all, just like being stung by a mosquito..."

The old man raised his hand to stop the girl who was walking towards him as he revealed a smile and rapidly opened a vial of medicament made by Zhang Tie. He slightly poured a bit of medicament out and daubed it onto the wound. Being really strange, the moment he daubed it onto the wound, he had stopped bleeding while a refreshing feeling started to spread across his hand.

The old man then kept his eyes closed as his snow-white eyebrows were slightly moving. After that, he opened his eyes and started to manipulate the equipment on the test-bed. In a short while, the old man had fabricated a wholly new vial of green medicament and directly engulfed it.

The red-skirt girl just looked aside. Of course, she knew that the medicament made by Master Pure Cloud was a simplified advanced recovery medicament using Zhang Tie's medicament as the ingredients. Usually, although it could rapidly cure his wound, it could not reach the perfect recovery effect of true advanced recovery medicament that would leave no scar on his body at all.

However, after drinking it, the small wound started to recover in a visible speed. In less than half a minute, the wound had already completely recovered. Master Pure Cloud then rubbed on the place where the wound lay and tore off a thin layer of medicament left by Zhang Tie's medicament. What really shocked him was that no scar was left over there.

A perfect recovery!

The girl called Yunxi just watched aside. When she saw no scar was left on master's hand, she was also somewhat shocked. Based on her knowledge about medicaments, of course she knew what this meant. That medicament had the effect of perfect recovery. How come?

Looking at the place where the wound lay, Master Pure Cloud revealed a strange expression, which looked like feeling relieved, being dubious and being very shocked.

"I've not imagined it could be that thing..." Master Pure Cloud faintly signed as he mumbled, "Created things are always unrivaled; great laws are always the simplest!". After saying that, he carefully took that vial of Zhang Tie's medicament.

The girl called Yunxi found that although Master Pure Cloud's voice was calm, his hand was faintly shaking, which, for a golden-robed alchemist was almost impossible.

When making various medicinal powders and medicament, an alchemists' hands were required to be precise and stable. Their hands and instruments were not allowed to shake. Actually, even a common suspending-kettle alchemist would not shake their hands when in operation; how could it be seen on a golden-robed alchemist.

'If not because of a great shock inside, Master Pure Cloud would never shake his hand.'

"Master..." Yunxi called him, a bit worried.

"I'm okay..." Master Pure Cloud revealed a smile as he took a deep breath and looked at her, "From today on, an excellent figure will appear in the Hidden Dragon Palace. You won't feel lonely from then on!"

"Master, even though it's a compound medicament with mixed effects, the producer might not be qualified to be praised in that way!" The girl didn't agree.

"Yunxi, you don't understand. This medicament is not a compound medicament. Precisely, it was an all-purpose medicament, which numerous alchemists are dreaming for!" Master Pure Cloud said seriously.

"Argh!" Hearing the phrase all-purpose medicament, the girl called Yunxi was extremely shocked as she remembered a presumption of all-purpose medicament and super enzyme that had been spread in the world of alchemists for a long time. In order to verify this presumption, numerous alchemists had been working for it; yet nobody could make any breakthroughs on it.

The moment she thought about that presumption which was crowned with the most brilliant pearl in the world of alchemists, the girl called Yunxi also became thrilled; however, she still didn't believe it, "Master, you mean...someone in Hidden Dragon Palace has verified that presumption..."

"The truth lies in front of you. In this marvelous world, although I could not make it, it doesn't mean that others could not make it!"

Master Pure Cloud gradually recovered his composure, "Now that we know what is this medicament, the following process would be simple. We only need to complete a few more tests! You must have remembered the Felinan grouping contrast test for testing the effect and components of this medicament."

"I remember it!"

"Well, go call in those people in the outside. Let's work it together, hurry up!"

"Nice!"

Not much later, all the apprentices and assistants of Master Pure Cloud were called in. After knowing that they were going to make the Felinan grouping contrast test, all of them were shocked; however, at the same time, they became also very thrilled. Had someone really developed the super enzyme? Did the all-purpose medicament really appear in the Breaking-Heavens Department?

Fact was better than eloquence. As the Felinan grouping contrast test proceeded, contrast data and effects gradually came out after repetitive confirmations.

—Its detoxification effect was equal to that of LV 1 antidote. It worked on the venom of all the living beings below 7. Because of the obvious physical absorbing effect, its detoxifying time was 18% faster than common LV 1 antidote. It had no side effect at all!

—Its effect on recovering physical wounds equaled to 67% of that of common preliminary recovery medicament. It could be either taken orally or dabbed on the wounds without any side effect!

—Compared to common preliminary energy medicament, its effect equaled to 52% of that of the preliminary energy medicament. It could effectively relieve fatigue and provide the energy required by human bodies. According to preliminary estimations, 2 vials of such medicament could provide the physical energy required by a common fighter without any side effect!

—After drinking it, commoners' visceral functions and immune system could be activated completely. Their blood could be purified. Additionally, the oxygen content in their red blood cells obviously raised; the devouring ability of their white blood cells reinforced; their intestines crept faster. What was more, their physical metabolic system could exclude foreign bodies much faster...without any side effect!

—Pathological experiment...without any side effect!

...

It really was an all-purpose medicament and a super enzyme. Seeing the test results one by another, everybody was shocked. Although this medicament could not provide any additional abilities to people like that of night-viewing medicament or strength reinforcing medicament, it could clear off or relieve all the abnormal or unhealthy conditions of the human body, adjusting one's body to the healthiest, purest and most vital condition...

Someone in Breaking-Heavens Department really had realized that famous presumption in the world of alchemist by producing the all-purpose medicament!

Drifting from the Heavens-Dependence Pavilion of Master Pure Cloud, the news suddenly aroused a great shock among all the alchemists in the Breaking-Heavens Department!

Who, who made that medicament?

Hearing the news, everybody started to guess who made this all-purpose medicament. Immediately, Yang Yuankang and the other guys who sold the medicament aroused the attention of them...

Chapter 313: Being Strong-Willed

Early the next morning, when Zhang Tie first woke up, he had forgotten about the look of that girl whom he encountered in the Herb Valley last night.

What he could only remember was her red skirt, her flute, and her fairy-like figure that flew away above the shadows of the trees.

He didn't mean to forget that, but because he kept thinking about her since he came back last night. He kept thinking about her hair, eyebrows, eyes, nose, lips, and the other details of her. As a result, Zhang Tie abruptly felt panic as he could not remember her look any more.

She became a shadow, a symbol and a frame that was deeply impressed in his mind.

By then, Zhang Tie found that memory was like an eraser. When he thought too much about one person. The person's look would be unclear. Each time you tried to think about her, it would be like using an eraser to wipe off the words on the paper. The words on the piece of paper were clear; however, if you often tried to wipe them, they would gradually be unclear. Finally, the piece of paper would be broken, leaving empty holes in his memory.

Over one night, Zhang Tie had broken the piece of paper. When he woke up in the morning, he found 1 more empty hole in his heart.

Last night was like 1 year for Zhang Tie. He had never experienced this before.

'What if I never see her again? What if I can't remember her face in the future?' Zhang Tie became flurried out of no reason.

After getting up, Zhang Tie finished cleaning up before noticed that pair of beautiful embroidered shoes on the desk beside his bed.

The shoes were both delicate and clean. Holding them, he even faintly smelt the fragrance and the rouge of her body.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not do anything perverted with her shoes. After taking the shoes back last night, Zhang Tie saw some dirt on the soles and the sides of the shoes; therefore, he fetched a brush to clean them off. After that, he wrapped them with cotton paper and dried them on the desk.

At this moment, he took the shoes, opened the cotton paper and found they were already dried; therefore, Zhang Tie fetched a piece of clean, soft cloth and placed the pair of embroidered shoes inside his coat before left.

Zhang Tie lived very regularly in the Breaking-Heavens Department. He used to get up early in the morning and read books for 1 hour before going to eat breakfast. After that, he would head for the training gyms to practice his fighting skills.

During this period, Zhang Tie had made rapid progress in the shield defense skill. He was able to pass the test. He was considering learning the flying skill after finishing this course, 'after adopting the flying skill, if he met the situation like that last night, he might choose to chase after his wife in the moonlight. That might also be very funny, ha...ha...'

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't know that his solution had shocked the entire Breaking-Heavens Department over last night.

He kept practicing fundamental footsteps in the entire morning. In the afternoon, when he thought of the "enzymes" mentioned by Li Yurou, Zhang Tie came for the library of Breaking-Heavens Department. He wanted to look up something about enzyme in the library.

This time, he was really shocked as Zhang Tie had never imagined that that thing he produced was really an enzyme.

The books in the library of Breaking-Heavens Department were inclusive. Most of them originated from the knowledge left by human beings before the catastrophe. After connecting the knowledge about enzyme, Zhang Tie had a general understanding about the effect of enzyme and finally understood why his solution was so marvelous.

Chinese people first discovered the great effect of enzymes on physical health. As early as over 2000 years ago before the catastrophe, healthcare and disease treatment had already been popularized among Chinese people.

In the traditional Chinese medical science, vinegar - which was reputed as the "head of medicines" - had long played a role in curing diseases and healthcare. Vinegar was also an enzyme fermented by provisions. It was the enzyme in vinegar that made vinegar the "head of medicines".

The reason that enzyme had such an effect was that it was the most fundamental and important energy and material that sustained all important vital activities and health of human cells. Describing enzymes' roles in the functioning of a human body, a biologist before the catastrophe had made a very important metaphor.

He described it as "If human body was bulb, enzyme is current!" Although he could not see bulbs now, it didn't affect Zhang Tie's understanding.

Another biologist who had won a top honor in biology made a more critical comment on the effect of enzymes, "Human beings are short lived because they lack enzyme".

Before the catastrophe, human beings had achieved many major discoveries by studying enzymes. They realized that many physical diseases of human beings were actually due to the shortage of enzymes. It might not be very effective to deal with these diseases; however, when the number of enzymes in the human body reached a level, these diseases would disappear naturally.

Before the catastrophe, many witches and doctors in remote

regions even took fermented enzymes as the only method to deal with diseases and keep healthy.

Because the library in Breaking-Heavens Department was managed by a difference engine, Zhang Tie could easily search for a lot of books through key words and indexes.

In the book 'Guerrilla Battlefield Doctor', the only medicine that battlefield doctor, who was responsible for curing various wounds and relieving various pains for guerrilla members, used was an enzyme fermented by raw gingers, apples, tangerines, and other wild fruits in drinking bottles.

Among the included data was a great amount of evidence that could verify that long-term use of enzymes could help postpone aging and increase life span.

In a local, Chinese biography, there was a funny story about "monkey's wine". The story went as follows: In the wild of Leizhou State, there were a lot of monkeys. It was said that those monkeys were raised by immortals. They could produce immortal wine using various fruits. One day, a woodman who climbed the mountain to chop some wood saved a monkey out of the mouth of a huge snake. After being saved, the monkey guided the woodman into a mountain cave.

After entering the mountain cave, the woodman found a stone groove. There were various fruits in the stone groove and a yellowish crystal liquid was flowing out of the stone groove, radiating an extremely appetizing fragrance. The woodman then took a sip. He felt it pretty refreshing and fragrant. His heartbeat

calmed down and his mind seemed to be clearer. He then fell asleep very comfortably. When he opened his eyes, he felt cozy all over and very energetic. Therefore, he praised the fluid greatly.

Later on, the woodman would always take a small mouth of it whenever he was in the mountain. As a result, when he was over 100 years old, he still looked rosy and healthy. Finally, he died at 126, which became a legend.

The story of monkey's wine was just recorded in the book as a marvelous anecdote. The writer might not know the taste of monkey's wine; however, after reading this story, Zhang Tie instantly understood that the alleged monkey's wine was an enzyme drink naturally fermented by various wild fruits in the mountain.

The monkey's wine drunk by that woodman was almost exactly the same as that enzyme produced by Zhang Tie. Additionally, because mountains and rivers could gather reiki, the monkey's wine was more effective than common enzymes. It was regarded as an immortal wine that the fairy taught the monkeys to brew.

The moment he found the effect of enzyme, Zhang Tie couldn't wait to leave a huge vat of it to his parents so that they could drink it every day.

Before the catastrophe, many people already knew a lot about the marvelous effects of enzymes; however, at that moment, the largest tragedy of human beings is that they were misled by some groups to rely on chemical products and science. Many of them formed a false thought and believed in a great lie — In the fields

food and medicine, the more scientific they were, the more that was chemically synthesized something was, the better it was for them, compared to if they used naturally produced food and medicine.

Because of this great lie, numerous people were eating various food and medicines which included poisonous chemicals as additives. Numerous people were taking chronic suicidality as normal.

However, after the catastrophe, alchemists understood the effects of enzymes the most, because of enzymes' positive effects on human health covered almost all aspects; however, compared to medicaments, common enzymes took effect slower and it would take a longer time for enzyme to take effect on the human body. It could not relieve many diseases or health problems in a short period of time; therefore, some alchemists made a mad presumption:

— One day, if someone could produce a super enzyme that could take effect on the human body faster than that of common enzymes, this super enzyme would be an all-purpose medicament which was able to cure many diseases and recover many people's abnormal conditions.

Zhang Tie finally understood a lot of things about his solution. It turned out to be the 1st generation of super enzyme being made of essential-energy reiki yeast.

Zhang Tie knew that it was impossible for him to not be famous this time. This time, being different from when he formed his

iron-blood battle qi. Although iron-blood battle qi was sharp, after all, there were still many people who had formed it. He was only a special one among those who had formed the iron-blood battle qi. A LV 6 guy who had formed iron-blood battle qi could not raise people's attention too much on the Hidden Dragon Island.

However, this time, Zhang Tie casually produced the super enzyme. This was truly an influential, colossal event. Additionally, he could produce the super enzyme by the tons. Such a great ability would soon be known to the public. He could not bury the secret at all. This would definitely make him more popular.

When in Wild Wolf Castle and Blackhot City, Zhang Tie had already known how it felt when being well-known — gold, social status, beauties, crises, challenges would arrive closely after him. He had not imagined that he would soon be famous once again, and would be much more well-known than when he was in the Blackhot City.

'Have you prepared for it?' Zhang Tie felt that the hand of destiny was forcefully pushing him from behind after several months' rest.

After skimming over those books, Zhang Tie sat in the library for 1 more hour as he started to recall faces one by another, including that of his family members, his friends, those girls of the Rose Association, those comrade-in-arms in the Iron-Blood Camp. Finally, he locked on the bald-headed man, first lieutenant Freo.

He remembered that first lieutenant Freo was smoking a extra big cigar and was ferociously staring at him while his cigar almost

touched onto Zhang Tie's forehead.

— Brat, remember that, you survive on behalf of me. You have to live well in the rest of your life. When you see beauties, you should f*ck them forcefully; when you see enemies, you should kill them all. That's what a man should do! Look at your coward performance during this period. Are you a man from the Iron-Blood Camp? It's just some fame. What are you afraid of? Once you become famous, women, money, and enemies will come chasing after you. How cool! For that red-skirt beauty, hurry up and f*ck her. What are you waiting for? Waiting for her to call you uncle?

'You said that men should live as splendid as summer flowers and die as cool as spring thunders. Look at you. Since you return to the Huaiyuan Prefecture, you have been living like a [green dog-tail grass](#) being hit by the frost. F*ck! Are you hesitating on this? Are you my bro? Are you the man from the Iron-Blood Camp?'

"Of course, I'm your bro whom you've saved at the cost of your own life. Of course, I'm a man from the Iron-Blood Camp..." Zhang Tie mumbled. Then he gradually became strong-willed inside.

'F*ck, it's this father who develop the super enzyme. So what?'

Dog-tail grass refers to green bristlegass.

Chapter 314: Being Famous

After leaving the library, it was already dark outside. Zhang Tie then went back to the place where he saw the red-skirt girl yesterday and sat there, waiting for her.

Zhang Tie was still hoping to see her over there once again; however, after waiting over 3 hours, with the exception of the chirps of insects and the refreshing wind, he didn't see anything. Finally, Zhang Tie knew that the red-skirt girl would not appear tonight. He then revealed a bitter smile as he stood up from cyan stone and shook dirt off his clothes before left.

'What about making a notice on people wanted...' a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. He then remembered what 'Freo' had told him. Would I really want to wait for her baby to call me uncle?'

The moment Zhang Tie thought of that red-skirt girl having a kid who called him uncle, Zhang Tie's face and heart started to twitch irregularly. Finally, he touched that pair of embroidered shoes and gritted his teeth.

When he returned to his residence in Songtao Pavilion, he confirmed another sentence — what is not known by only one person is not be a secret at all. That he produced the all-purpose medicament had been known by at least 7 people.

Although it was already too late, there were still more than 30 people waiting for him outside the Songtao Pavilion, including

both male and female. Most of them were dreaming to be apprentices of alchemists. Many of them were here to be onlookers. As they heard that guy who produced the all-purpose medicament was living in the Songtao Pavilion, everybody wanted to see who he was.

All-purpose medicament! It was really shocking that someone could produce it. Those apprentices who were striving to be alchemists felt frantic about it. It was as unimaginable for a commoner that an average person who he met every day would suddenly become a super star.

Because enzyme could be easily manufactured, for those young men who were striving to be alchemists, most of them had attempted to produce super enzyme so as to prove that famous presumption in the world of alchemists when in the herbal medicine apprentice stage.

Although they all failed, their experiences in attempting to make super enzyme was the start for them to become alchemists. Although enzymes were easily made, it required a wide range of knowledge. Their teachers would require them to be familiar with the attributes of various herbal medicines and plants and gradually know more about the secrets of human body.

Almost every herbal medicine apprentice had tried to make enzymes at the beginning and had dreamed to create an all-purpose medicament using the super enzyme and become famed overnight.

However, it was just a dream. When none of them succeeded,

everybody just accepted it calmly. But, they had never imagined that one day, the dream that thousands of herbal medicine apprentices could not realize over several hundreds of years was realized by a guy from nowhere.

How could they not be shocked? How could they not be thrilled? How could they not be curious? They all could not wait to have a look at that guy. They wanted to see if he had some sort of super power.

Those who were waiting for Zhang Tie had various purposes. As there were no idiots in the Breaking-Heavens Department, almost the moment they knew that someone could produce the all-purpose medicament, everybody smelt gold coins and privilege.

Compared to other special medicaments, this all-purpose medicament made of super enzyme didn't have many special effects, it didn't work too much on very healthy and strong warriors and fighters. They would at most take it as a preliminary compound medicament with many effects. However, for many people suffering from various diseases, this all-purpose medicament was definitely a marvelous medicine that would take effect instantly.

When Zhang Tie drew close to the Songtao Pavilion, those people only took him as an onlooker. Zhang Tie knew that he finally had to face this; therefore, he didn't care about that; instead, he just walked in front of the gate and prepared to insert his key inside.

Not until Zhang Tie took out of his key to open the gate did those people realize something. Because he was almost the last one who

come back in Songtao Pavilion, everybody else was waiting for him.

Those people surrounding the Songtao Pavilion then exchanged glances with each other. In a second, it became so quiet. Some of them were looking at each other, some took deep breaths while others wanted to surge forward toward Zhang Tie.

Finally, someone walked forward.

"Excuse me, are you Zhang Tie, your excellency?" A voice drifted from behind Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then stopped and looked back. He then found a 20-year old youth standing behind him, who was glancing over him in a serious way.

"Right, I'm Zhang Tie!" Zhang Tie said frankly as he looked around; he had already prepared for that question mentally.

"Argh, he's Zhang Tie..."

"I did not imagine that he'd be so young!"

"I thought he was a senior brother. He's a junior brother!"

"He's handsome!"

Hearing Zhang Tie admitting his status, whispers drifted to him from all directions while their eyes became more sparkly.

"Sorry to trouble you, but are you the producer of the all-purpose medicament?" That youth made the final confirmation.

"Yeah, I make the all-purpose medicament!" Zhang Tie revealed a wisp of smile, "I know that you all want to see the look of the guy who produces the all-purpose medicament. Now you've seen that. It's too late and very cold now. You'd better go back, I will not invite you in!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, everybody became dumbfounded while the youth who spoke first didn't even know what to say now.

When Zhang Tie turned back and wanted to push open the gate of Songtao Pavilion, another person walked out of the crowd.

"Hold on, junior brother!"

Zhang Tie then slightly frowned his forehead as he turned back. Hearing the man's appellation, Zhang Tie instantly felt being dwarfed and felt this man's trick.

It was a youth just over 20 years old, dressed in a white robe with an eye-attracting waist which was embroidered with grasses and gourds. Given from his waist, Zhang Tie could identify his real status — a waist banded alchemist. A waist banded alchemist was qualified to be proud of himself wherever he was.

"I'm Gu Bai; have you heard of my name?" Although smiling, this youth revealed a faint arrogance. When he spoke, he glanced at Zhang Tie, waiting for Zhang Tie to say something like 'I've heard about your name for a long time.'

However, after glancing at this guy twice, Zhang Tie shook his head, "Not before now!" Zhang Tie really had not heard about his name. 'Gu Bai' was nothing to do with him.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Gu Bai's face became a bit stiff. But it soon recovered. He remained his smile and acted gracefully, "As junior brother has been in Hidden Dragon Palace for a short time, you might not know about me. I just ranked 27 on the Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List; not too sharp!"

He showed his modesty by giving an excuse.

Hearing that he entered the Hidden Dragon Craftsmanship List, Zhang Tie cast 2 more glances at him; however, Zhang Tie's tone remained very calm, "What do you want?"

"I heard you've worked out the all-purpose medicament. I want to invite you to the Flying Feathers Pavilion in Herbs Valley!"

"Flying Feathers Pavilion?" Zhang Tie mumbled.

"Yes, after hearing that you've worked out the all-purpose medicament, some of my friends in the Herbs Valley are all very

curious about this. They want to learn from you!"

Hearing his words, Zhang Tie then stared at Gu Bai's gleaming eyes. He then instantly understood it. Actually, they just wanted to steal away his method on producing the all-purpose medicament. At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't feel like talking with them at all.

"Sorry, I don't study too much on making medicinal powders. As I use secret knowledge to make the all-purpose medicament, I'm afraid that I will not share it with you!"

Being directly refused by Zhang Tie, Gu Bai's smile became stiff at once; he soon looked like bemoaning the universe.

"All-purpose medicament has numerous effects. As long as it is promoted, it will definitely benefit all living beings. Junior brother, you don't need to treasure it too much and act that exclusive. With one more people's effort, our star would be better. I'm offering out of good intentions!"

Hearing his words, Zhang Tie immediately pretended to be righteous, "As senior brother wants to bring happiness to the living beings on this planet, I will definitely give you a favor. How about this? In front of the public, you take out all of your personal property to buy a batch of my all-purpose medicament at cost. Then you distribute this batch of medicament to those that you want to bring happiness to for free. There are so many poor guys even in the Hidden Dragon Island. How about that? The one who regrets their words and dares not to do that would be a bastard and son of a b*tch!"

"Heh...heh..." Gu Bai started to cough after hearing Zhang Tie's words. He could not maintain that sad look any more; instead, his face blushed, "You...you...how could you treat bringing happiness to the rest of the world so frivolously?"

"It's a truly great undertaking to bring happiness to the rest of the world. In front of such a great undertaking, personal lives and honors are just trifling matters. We can abandon them if we want. Never care about the money. Senior brother dares not to forego these trifling things?" Zhang Tie asked with a smile.

"Erm...for this thing, how do I need your favor. If I can produce an all-purpose medicament myself, I will do that myself. No need for your help at all!" Gu Bai didn't know what to say.

"Right, senior brother, I also think so. For men, great undertakings like bringing happiness to the rest of the world is like entering the bridal chamber. Even though I am too tired and exhausted, I would always do it myself. I don't like others' help!" Zhang Tie stared at Gu Bai with a big smile, "Do you need others to help you with this? If you really need, I feel like doing you a favor..."

Puh! Hearing Zhang Tie's words, many onlookers burst out laughter; some girls' faces blushed as they swore at Zhang Tie inside, 'Rogue!'

Nobody had imagined that the person who produced the all-purpose medicament in the Breaking-Heavens Department could

be like that.

"Of course, no need!" Gu Bai was choked by Zhang Tie's words as the blue veins on his forehead started to pop. He could not lose his temper in front of this huge crowd.

"So, please go back, senior brother, I don't need your help either..."

By then, Gu Bai realized that he had fallen into Zhang Tie's trap as his words were full of contradictions. After looking around at the crowd of the onlookers and glaring at Zhang Tie, Gu Bai couldn't stay there anymore. He directly left the Songtao Pavilion in an embarrassed manner.

Everybody knew that Zhang Tie was not a figure that could be cheated logically.

"Junior brother Zhang Tie, do you still sell all-purpose medicament? We want some! Someone asked loudly among the onlookers.

"The first batch has been sold out. The latest ones would be in 2 weeks. You can come to me then! Please go back, I'm really going to the bed!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, everybody left.

After seeing everybody leave, Zhang Tie intended to enter his

door. All of a sudden, he raised his nose. He then instantly took out of the cloth-wrapped embroidered shoes from his coat and put them on his hands. After that, he started to touch that pair of shoes like touching a small white rabbit while sighing in an extremely kind way.

"What poor embroidered shoes! You've been deserted by your owner. If your owner still doesn't come for you tonight, you'll have to follow me in! But, trust me, I will treasure you very much. If your owner doesn't appear, I will have to hang you in the hall of Qinyun Palace for your owner."

"Douchebag!" Soon after his words, Zhang Tie saw that girl who was wearing red skirt in front of him. Whereas, now, she had changed into a moving white skirt.

At the sight of her, Zhang Tie felt the whole world, including his heart becoming alive. It felt like a rainbow which abruptly appeared in front of him while that blurry hole in his memory was filled with mixed moods in a split second.

"Give me my shoes!" The girl glared at Zhang Tie with somewhat bashful and furious expression. Her face was faintly covered with an icy frost. Across the entire Hidden Dragon Palace, nobody dared to take her belongings and play tricks with her like that.

As if he hadn't heard her words, Zhang Tie just fixed his eyes on her, "I went to the place where we met last night and waited there for 3 hours; knowing that you might not go there, I came back!"

"Why did you wait me?" The girl's voice became icy still.

"Because I couldn't remember what you looked like any more. Last night, when I came back, I kept missing you too much, even in my dreams. Therefore, I almost forgot your face! As I'm afraid of being unable to remember how you look, I wanted to meet you there to see you again..." Zhang Tie revealed a big smirk jubilantly, "It's okay now, I know your look once again!"

The girl had planned to beat Zhang Tie ferociously; however, not knowing why, hearing Zhang Tie's words, she only felt her face start to get a fever while that layer of icy frost over her face started to fade away.

She was a bit shocked by Zhang Tie's words. She didn't believe that if one thought too much about someone, they could forget that person's looks. Nevertheless, hearing Zhang Tie's frank and passionate statement, she knew that Zhang Tie wasn't lying to her.

Zhang Tie's passion was like a fire ball. The girl had not experienced such audacious love words before; she had not even heard about such words before.

After glancing at Zhang Tie's bright and honest eyes, her heart suddenly started to race. As a result, she dared not to stare at Zhang Tie's eyes any more.

"Argh, stay away from me!" The girl looked very furious at first; however, seeing Zhang Tie taking 2 steps towards her, she immediately became slightly flurried. Even though she was too

much more powerful than Zhang Tie, as long as Zhang Tie drew close to her, she started to become stressed. For her, Zhang Tie seemed to be full of aggression.

"Well, I will not move..." Being afraid of scaring her away like yesterday, Zhang Tie hurriedly stopped.

"How did you know I was here!" The girl asked Zhang Tie with widened eyes. Seeing Zhang Tie stay still, she finally recovered her composure.

"Your smell. You smelt very special!" Zhang Tie looked around this girl with greedy and gleaming eyes as he kept sniffing the air forcefully, "You look so nice in any skirts. Oh, you've not told me your name?"

The girl glared at Zhang Tie incredulously, "Why would I tell you my name?"

"Because you lost your shoes and I picked them up. Additionally, I kept them 1 day for you. You should at least be polite to the one who helped you! Furthermore, you need to give me a photo of you, so that I never forget you again!" Zhang Tie waved his hands as he said loudly.

"Douchebag. It's obviously you who stole my shoes!" The girl bit her lips as she added, "It's already too polite to you that I don't beat you up!"

"No crap! How could a talented youth like me steal a woman's shoes! Are your shoes very expensive? How could I steal away your shoes if they were on your feet?" Zhang Tie replied brutally, "I don't care. If you don't tell me your name, you will not get back your shoes!"

After saying this, Zhang Tie felt empty on his hands as that girl directly grabbed her shoes away from Zhang Tie's hands in the air.

Zhang Tie was really frightened by this girl's power. After taking her shoes, the girl glanced at Zhang Tie pleasantly. Out of her expectation, Zhang Tie directly charged at her like how a starved tiger would chase after its prey...

Chapter 315: Being Shameless

In a split second, Zhang Tie had opened his arms and charged at her. As a result, the girl became really flustered as she dashed away quickly and immediately flew 10 m away. Zhang Tie didn't stop; he kept surging towards her like a starved wolf.

The girl kept moving back while Zhang Tie kept moving forward. In the night, the girl flashed 100 m away in a blink of an eye. At the same time, Zhang Tie also exploded at his maximum speed and kept chasing after her.

"If you keep chasing after me, I'll beat you up!" The girl became a bit furious.

"You stole my things, now you want to run away?" Zhang Tie said aggressively.

"They're my shoes!" The girl was really infuriated by Zhang Tie.

"You snatched them away from me. How could they be your shoes? I picked up those shoes from the wild. How can you justify that you're that owner? Only you have shoes? You can bully your junior brother just because you are the senior sister? You can do whatever you want just because you have higher fighting skills? Even though I could not defeat you, I will also have a try. I will see whether you can beat me to death..." Zhang Tie said like being wronged by a villain.

"What a douchebag!" The girl swore him furiously. When she saw

Zhang Tie charging at her like a rascal once again, she instantly flew backward with a blushed face.

Zhang Tie charged at her with arms completely stretched. He was definitely intending to hug her. Since she was born, she had not been hugged by anyone in such a brutal way. Zhang Tie's behavior really frightened her.

The production of all-purpose medicament was a big event in Hidden Dragon Palace. When she heard that the one who produced all-purpose medicament was named Zhang Tie, who was living in the Songtao Pavilion, she wanted to have a look inside.

As there were people with the same name in the Hidden Dragon Palace, when she heard the name Zhang Tie, who produced the all-purpose medicament, she firstly recalled that douchebag that she met in Herb Valley. Being driven by curiosity, she came to the Songtao Pavilion to have a look and found it was truly the same person.

The girl hadn't imagined that Zhang Tie could notice her through smelling. Not even this, he even forced her out of there using aggressive words. Furthermore, Zhang Tie's passionate and honest words and the shameless movements along with his aggressive intention scared her away once again.

The girl hadn't seen such a man since she was born. She didn't know how to deal with him at all. Although she wanted to give Zhang Tie a lesson, the girl couldn't make the final decision. Therefore, facing Zhang Tie's straightforward passionate, honest eyes and shameless behavior, the girl felt breathless and dared not

even to look directly into Zhang Tie's eyes.

At this moment, even she wanted to escape away, Zhang Tie wouldn't let her go away; instead, he kept chasing after her.

She had not been chased after like that. Therefore, when being chased after by Zhang Tie, she had a strange feeling that she hadn't experienced before.

However, the girl was really much more powerful than Zhang Tie. Even though Zhang Tie had unrivaled endurance as he had eaten 9 wild wolf seven-strength fruits, he still could not match the girl's speed.

In a blink of an eye, they had moved 500 m away from Songtao Pavilion. When the girl would soon run out of his vision, Zhang Tie became flurried. This time, he didn't even hold her tender hands. If she escaped away like this, he didn't know when he would see her next.

"Heh, stop. If you keep running, I'll launch an attack!" Zhang Tie started to threaten her. Although Zhang Tie couldn't match that girl on speed, with wild wolf Seven-Strength Fruits, Zhang Tie had lasting endurance. Even when rushing, Zhang Tie could still talk like usual.

Hearing Zhang Tie shouting loudly in a flurried way, the girl in front of him revealed a wisp of a smile.

Having not imagined that Zhang Tie could still talk normally at this moment, the girl became amazed about Zhang Tie's endurance and running ability inside.

"You have 3 seconds, no regret!"

The girl ignored Zhang Tie's warning. "3...2...1...catch the thief, that female thief stole my shoes. Catch the thief, a female thief steals my shoes..." Zhang Tie shouted loudly behind her, "If you don't stop, I will report the case to the Qinyun Palace by offering a reward. I'm not frightened by you. I could really do that. You female thief who steals my shoes, just wait for others' judgment then..."

The girl became so irritated that she had never imagined that Zhang Tie could be that shameless. As she didn't want this trifling matter being known by the public, after swearing Zhang Tie "douchebag", she finally stopped.

When Zhang Tie caught up with her, the girl was so angry that she directly threw that pair of shoes onto Zhang Tie's head, "Here are you!"

Zhang Tie burst out loud laugh as he grabbed that pair of shoes by hand at once before hugged them into his coat, "That's it, how could you grab another's belongings casually? You have to return it to its owner!"

"You bastard!" The girl swore.

Zhang Tie then replied with rolling eyes, "You really don't need them?"

"Yes, I don't need them!" The girl glared at Zhang Tie with gritting teeth. She wondered what else would that douchebag do.

"Well, now that it is your token of love, I will take it.

Never mind, I will preserve it well!" Zhang Tie then fixed his eyes onto that girl with full of emotions, which really made her quiver for one time.

"You...you...when have I given you the token of love?" The girl's face totally blushed as she pointed at Zhang Tie.

"You said it just now!" Zhang Tie then waved her embroidered shoes in front of her before hurriedly hid them in his coat, "You gave me your embroidered shoes and told me you didn't need them. Isn't this a token of love?

I'm not fixing one's shoes; however, a girl gifted her beloved embroidered shoes to me. Isn't that a token of love? How about explaining to the public and asking for their judgments. Doesn't it mean that a girl falls in love with that man by gifting her embroidered shoes to him? Do you dare to say this pair of shoes isn't yours? You dare to say you didn't gift it to me?"

Zhang Tie fabricated as he made a grimace towards that girl.

"You...you bastard!" The girl was so irritated and bashful that she wondered why there was such a shameless man in the world? He was really the rogue of rogues. How could he say that I stole his belonging by taking my own shoes back? If I didn't need it, it then became his token of love.

"Now that you could gift me your embroidered shoes, may I know your name now?" Zhang Tie replied without knowing what shame was.

"Give my shoes back!" That girl was driven so mad that she almost passed out. Hearing Zhang Tie's reply, she became so bashful and irritated that she directly slapped towards Zhang Tie.

However, Zhang Tie didn't even hide from her attack. He just watched her and waited for her smack. With a miserable shriek, he directly flew backward and fell down onto the grassland several meters away. He then rolled off the 10-m high grass slope and finally lay at the foot of the grass slope. With one foot cramped twice, he didn't move anymore.

The girl was also dumbfounded that she had not imagined that Zhang Tie didn't even hide just now. It only took her 30% of strength to smack him; but she clearly knew that even with one smack, she could easily kill a tiger or a leopard. Commoners could hardly stand it at all.

'Is he that weak? I've beaten him to death?' The moment she thought about this, the girl suddenly felt very sorry. Seeing Zhang Tie lying there like a corpse, the girl hurriedly flew downwards the grass slope.

Lying on the grassland, Zhang Tie's face turned completely pale. With eyes closed, he looked a bit frightening. At the sight of Zhang Tie's look, the girl felt sadder inside as she hurriedly squatted in front of Zhang Tie to take a check.

The girl stretched her hand under Zhang Tie's nostrils to test his breathing rhythm. Out of her imagination, Zhang Tie directly tilted his head and kissed her hand.

"Argh..." Feeling like being struck by a lightning bolt, she quivered all over. Before she responded, Zhang Tie who was lying on the grassland like a corpse immediately grabbed her two wrists and tightly hugged her. Then, after turning over, he directly pressed her under his body.

It was really out of her imagination that Zhang Tie was playing dead. Without any preparation, she was successfully raided by Zhang Tie. His strength was so big that the girl could not shake herself out. As a result, she could only be pressed under Zhang Tie's body brutally and barbarously.

At this moment, it looked like that Zhang Tie was raping her. The girl was really irritated; then, she became bashful; finally, she became flurried.

Although Zhang Tie had pressed many girls before, this time, he felt most stimulative. Although pressing this girl, Zhang Tie didn't do any movement excessively; instead, he just fixed his eyes on her.

The girl then twisted her body when she found that Zhang Tie was like a robust ox who didn't allow her to exert strength at all. As a result, she just stared at Zhang Tie bashfully and furiously and tried to look stern, "What do you want, hurry up, let me off!"

"I won't!" Zhang Tie stubbornly shook his head, "If I let you off, you will escape away. If you escape away, I will not be able to catch up with you! As it's really hard to catch up with you, if I just let you off, I would be an idiot!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the girl felt being filled with a strange feeling, which was warm, bashful, a bit sweet and furious. "If I know you are such a bastard, I would have slapped you to death!" While restraining that strange feeling, the girl uttered ferociously...

Chapter 316: Roguish Lord

"I will say nothing of being slapped to death by your hand!" Zhang Tie made a grimace as he tilted his head to look at her, "It's said that beauty would look more beautiful in the lamplight. Actually, you also look more beautiful in the moonlight, especially when you look stern!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's compliment, the girl almost could not keep her stern look. Tilting her head, she dared not to look into Zhang Tie's hot eyes, "You douchebag, let me off!"

"If not because of my [thick face](#), I would have been heavily wounded just now. You want me to end this by letting you off? At least you need to pay me a bit compensation..."

"What compensation?"

Pressing the girl under his body, Zhang Tie felt so stimulative. Seeing the girl could do nothing but lying under his body, Zhang Tie felt a pretty powerful, cool sense rising from inside.

"Tell me your name first!"

"I'm Lan Yunxi!" The girl replied as she looked at Zhang Tie's expression.

"Hmm, this name sounds nice. But it's strange, I might have heard about it somewhere before!" Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes

and thought for awhile; however, he failed to remember where he had heard it before. Therefore, he didn't think about it anymore.

"Can you let me off now?" The girl tried to be calm.

"No way!"

"Why?" The girl glared at Zhang Tie.

"Because as long as I let you off, you will definitely beat me up! Additionally, it's not enough by only telling me your name!" Zhang Tie seriously explained.

"B*stard!"

"You should promise me one more thing, then, I will forgive you for that smack!"

"What?" The girl asked.

"Call me husband!" Zhang Tie said shamelessly.

With widened eyes, Lan Yunxi glared at Zhang Tie as she had not imagined that Zhang Tie could pose such an excessive requirement——calling him hu...husband.

The girl didn't speak again; instead, she instantly tried to

struggle out of Zhang Tie's control. This time, she was so powerful that she almost turned Zhang Tie over to the ground. Her hand almost broke out of Zhang Tie's control too. This really shocked Zhang Tie as he hadn't imagined that this girl was so powerful. He almost lost control.

Zhang Tie was almost level 7 now. During the period in Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie's strength surged so fast that even his hands could produce over 1 ton's strength. "In this case, the girl could still almost break out of my control." Zhang Tie was really shocked about her.

Although her hand didn't break out of Zhang Tie's control, one of her feet gained certain moving space. The girl then moved her foot and directly crashed against Zhang Tie's lower abdomen, which was really painful for Zhang Tie.

If not the iron-body fruits that Zhang Tie had eaten during this period, this girl would have long made Zhang Tie pass out.

Although not passing out, Zhang Tie almost became dizzy by this kick. As a result, he kept taking deep breaths.

When the girl prepared to kick Zhang Tie for the second time, Zhang Tie immediately stopped her kick by putting his knee against hers. At the same time, he wrestled his feet with hers while he tightly hugged that girl with his hands. When the girl started to struggle, two of them started to roll on the grassland.

When they stopped, the girl exclaimed once again as she was

pressed under Zhang Tie's body again. Additionally, her legs had been split by Zhang Tie's legs from the middle. Zhang Tie had cut into the center of her legs like a plug. As a result, she could not even put her legs together. Furthermore, Zhang Tie kept his own lower abdomen close to that of hers, making her not able to attack the places above Zhang Tie's thigh, almost leaving no moving space for Zhang Tie.

This gesture made her much more bashful as it felt like Zhang Tie was raping her.

They both used all their efforts; at this moment, they both had been gasping.

"B*stard, let me off!" Lan Yunxi glared at Zhang Tie while her cheeks flushed like the rainbow in the skyline due to the previous movements and such a bashful gesture.

"Call me husband!" Zhang Tie widened his eyes at stared at her.

"No way!" Lan Yunxi tilted her head.

"You have one more chance, do it or not?"

"No way!"

At the sight of that girl under his body, Zhang Tie's heart raced as he lowered his head and ferociously kissed her lips.

"Wuh..." With widened eyes, Lan Yunxi could never believe that Zhang Tie dared to forcefully kiss her.

With widened eyes, they both stared at each other while their eyelashes almost collided. Zhang Tie kept watching her as her moods changed from shock, fury to shame in a few seconds.

Zhang Tie kept sucking her tender lips greedily. He had practiced his kissing skills by those girls of Rose Association. He really excelled at kissing. When he kissed her lips, his tongue constantly swam between her lips.

Soon, Lan Yunxi's eyes changed from being bashful into half-closed blur.

"Hmm..." When Lan Yunxi couldn't wait to utter a raptured nasal sound, Zhang Tie had finally opened her purely-white teeth using his tongue.

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie had already loosened his clutch; however, the girl had willingly hugged Zhang Tie and started to respond to him enthusiastically...

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie had been panting while his mummy had been as hard as iron. He then immediately left the girl's lips and knelt on the grassland in front of her. Being gasping, he instantly took off his trousers and hurriedly started to undo the girl's skirt.

When Zhang Tie was undoing his own waistband, that girl suddenly became shocked and became awake. The moment she saw the ugly mummy of Zhang Tie, who was going to pull off her skirt, the girl was driven extremely bashful in a split second.

"Argh, you...what are you doing?" The girl asked full of panic. Each girl would be a bit flurried when they faced this thing for the first time.

Zhang Tie raised his head and uttered seriously, "I'm going to occupy the shortcut towards your heart!"

Soon after he finished this sentence, Zhang Tie had been kicked and sent fly in the air and rolled 5-6 m away on the grassland.

After that attack, Lan Yunxi instantly jumped up from the grassland. Touching her fevered face, she instantly flashed several dozens of meters away without caring about whether Zhang Tie was live or not.

Twitching his mouth and touching that footprint on his chest, Zhang Tie climbed up from the grassland. He then saw that shadow 100 m away. Zhang Tie still wanted to chase after her; however, he realized that his butts were still naked.

Zhang Tie felt it a bit pitiful as she finally escaped away; however, thinking of tonight's achievement—He had already kissed her lips when they met for the second time, Zhang Tie burst out laughing once again, feeling full of an unspeakable sense of

achievement.

For the girl's coy yet enthusiastic response just now, Zhang Tie felt like having discovered a treasure——this is a girl who looks cold yet is hot inside.

"Lan Yunxi...Lan Yunxi..." Zhang Tie smacked his lips as he mumbled. At this moment, he could still taste the remaining fragrance from the girl's lips, 'Wuh? That's so strange, how could I feel this name becoming so familiar!'

When Zhang Tie muttered this name, he walked towards Songtao Pavilion. He faintly felt having seen this name somewhere before.

When Zhang Tie returned to the Songtao Pavilion and caught sight of the tall cornice of the Songtao Pavilion, he instantly remembered where he had seen the name.

Gosh! When he finally remembered where he had seen this name, Zhang Tie instantly stopped. With widened eyes, Zhang Tie finally remembered that he had seen this name on the Hidden Dragon List in the Qinyun Palace.

Lan Yunxi ranked both first on the Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List and the Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution List.

"Is that girl, who became so flurried at the sight of him taking off his trousers, the 1st sister, the most famous figure in Breaking-Heavens Department?"

After thinking for quite awhile, Zhang Tie finally accepted this fact. Tonight, he had completed an earth-quaking reversal!

At this moment, Zhang Tie also figured it out why he couldn't remember where he had seen this name. Because when he saw this name in Qinyun Palace, he thought that must be a man.

...

On the second early morning, Yang Yuankang had come for Zhang Tie with an apology.

"When we got that batch of medicament a couple of days ago, we didn't know that is all-purpose medicament either. Zhang Feng then told some friends that you made the all-purpose medicament. Therefore, the moment they knew that was an all-purpose medicament, many people knew that you made that. I heard many people came here for you last night. Did they find trouble for you?"

Zhang Tie really didn't think too much about this event as he knew that it would happen sooner or later. Therefore, he didn't blame Yang Yuankang; instead, he comforted him, "Never mind, sooner or later, they would know that. How about the sales these days?"

Speaking of the sales, Yang Yuankang instantly became thrilled, "Demand totally exceeds supply. If we hadn't controlled the sales volume, we'd have long sold them all in one day!"

"He...he...you must have made a lot!"

"Previously, the selling price of one vial of that medicament was 5 gold coins; these days, it had risen to 9 gold coins!" Feeling embarrassed, Yang Yuankang looked at Zhang Tie, "How should we share the surplus profit..."

Zhang Tie then waved his hands generously, "It's yours. In the future, I will still provide your at the cost of 4 gold coins per vial..."

Yang Yuankang revealed a big smile as he felt Zhang Tie was really a good friend, "We rented a store in the Black Dragon Town. It's been decorated recently. We will start running it a few days later!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he suddenly recalled something, "Oh, do you know Lan Yunxi?"

"Senior sister Xi?" Yang Yuankang glanced at Zhang Tie surprisingly, "She's the most famous person in Hidden Dragon Palace. Many people were pursuing her..."

"I know, she ranks first in both Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List and Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution List. Those who dare to pursue her is really brave enough!" Saying this, even Zhang Tie didn't know how he felt. He just gritted his teeth inside and realized that he had a lot of competitors, "Could those guys be as shameless as I?"

"Hoho, senior sister Xi has an excellent look and great fighting force. What's more, she's the daughter of count Long Wind and the princess of Zhang clan in Huaiyuan Palace. It was nothing different than entering the sky with one footstep to get her heart for many people!" Yang Yuankang explained with a smile.

"What? Lan Yunxi is the daughter of Zhang Taixuan, the count Long Wind?" Zhang Tie widened his eyes, "Why not she surname Zhang?"

"Senior sister Xi's mother was born in the Lan clan of Xi'an Palace, who's a princess of Lan clan, also the first woman who married Lan clan after Lan clan and Zhang clan established connections through marriage. Her first offspring for Zhang clan should also surname Lan; therefore, senior sister Xi followed her mother's surname!"

Zhang Tie was really stunned. He finally understood what a holy fairy the woman he loved was! 'F*ck, that's too bad. If Count Long Wind knew that his daughter was almost raped by me, will he come to the Hidden Dragon Island with a sword to chop off my head...'

In China, face, "脸“ means honor; thick face refers to being shameless while thin face indicates that someone is of high morality.

Chapter 317: Manjusaka

Zhang Tie was really shocked by the status of the woman he loved.

Zhang Tie understood that braveness was a necessary requirement for a man to love a woman. But being brave was not enough. He loved her not because of her status and the benefits that she could bring him. He didn't care about Lan Yunxi's family background and dad, but Zhang Tie had to admit that if he wanted to marry her, the relation between him and her would definitely be affected by the arguments and everything about her. This was unavoidable.

After Yang Yuankang left, Zhang Tie became very serious. He started to consider this issue seriously. After thinking for quite a long while, Zhang Tie got a damned and self-abased conclusion——with his present social status and position, even though Lan Yunxi agreed to marry him, she would still sustain great stress and contempt due to him. She might even encounter troubles that she could have avoided before.

If he married Lan Yunxi, the outcome would be similar to that of a princess marrying a wood cutting passer-by.

Although Zhang Tie felt uncomfortable about this conclusion, Zhang Tie knew that it was the fact. Zhang Tie would definitely not let a woman stand stress from her family and the reality because of his strong self-esteem.

He would not even frown his forehead a bit if he could stand all the stress for Lan Yunxi; however, all the stress should be carried by Lan Yunxi herself. Therefore, Zhang Tie would never let this happen. If a man could not help his beloved woman out of trouble; instead bring more troubles to the woman, he would not be qualified as a man.

Zhang Tie then gritted his teeth as his boiling mind started to recover composure and became as firm as heavy and hard granite.

"Lan Yunxi..." Zhang Tie silently mumbled this name several times before trying his best to recall her image. The girl's face became looming in his mind. Finally, Zhang Tie sadly found that over one night, with the exception of her clothes, he had forgotten about her look once again. If he told this to others, nobody would trust him; however, it was true.

'Is this lovesickness?' Zhang Tie didn't know. Shaking his head, Zhang Tie controlled his impulse to find Lan Yunxi and recall her look; instead, he took out of that pair of embroidered shoes from the inside of his coat and took a deep breath before he left.

Zhang Tie also knew that he was not qualified to mention the sacred word "love" in front of Lan Yunxi; however, he knew that his personal emotion to her was as fiery as fire and as firm as iron.

This morning, Zhang Tie practiced fundamental moving skills so seriously and painstakingly which greatly shocked his senior sister Ma Aiyun who was "guiding" him on one side.

After two hours of training, senior sister Ma Aiyun who had just heard the news. She then asked Zhang Tie, "It's said that there's a guy called Zhang Tie who had produced the all-purpose medicament, is that you?"

After throwing the towel used to clean his sweat on one side, Zhang Tie revealed a smile, "Haha, that's me."

"You're a hidden alchemist? But you didn't mention that before." Ma Aiyun asked out of curiosity.

"I'm not an alchemist. I was just fortunate enough to stumble upon the secret to producing this medicament!"

"Your medicament is really in urgent demand. Many of my friends want to buy it. But they could not get one even with 10 gold coins!"

"Your friends want that?"

"Of course, haven't heard that enzyme is the best beauty products for girls. Even common enzyme is good for beautifying skin and delaying wrinkles, let alone a super enzyme!" Saying this, Ma Aiyun smiled and asked in a joking way, "How about buying it directly from you at a lower price?"

'Using all-purpose medicament to beautify oneself?' Zhang Tie realized that he really didn't know about girls. For girls, the biggest role of all-purpose medicament which could save one's life at the

critical moment is to beautify and delay old age. They would even spend all of their money on it.

Zhang Tie knew that 10 gold coins was not cheap for many girls. The monthly payment of Breaking-Heavens Department was only 30 gold coins, which had troubled many people a lot. However, there were still girls who would like to spend 10 gold coins to beautify themselves.

Realizing that Zhang Tie became a bit mind-absent, Ma Aiyun thought that it was a bit difficult for Zhang Tie to produce it in a short period; in her opinion, it was hard for professional alchemists to produce that, let alone Zhang Tie who wasn't an alchemist.

"Don't feel sorry about that. If you can't produce it in a short period, just forget about it." Although saying this, Ma Aiyun still revealed a sense of disappointment.

Zhang Tie then smiled as he directly took out his medicament container from the clothes rack on his side and took out 6 vials of all-purpose medicament that had been filled recently and gave them to Ma Aiyun, "Haha, if others want it from me, I might not have; but if senior sister Ma wants it, of course I have!"

At the sight of the vials of medicament, Ma Aiyun revealed a big smile at once as her face lit up. "It really wasn't expected that would you have some with you. How much? Tell you what, I can never afford more than 10 gold coins!"

"It's free. I gift them to you and the other senior sisters, 1 for each of you. Please share them with the other senior sisters. Thanks for your guidance to me during this period. This is just my little gift!" Zhang Tie added generously. "If I wanted money from you because of this little thing, you would look down upon me."

Ma Aiyun was also a generous person among Zhang Tie's senior sisters who could identify personal emotions very well. Hearing Zhang Tie's reply, she didn't hesitate anymore as she directly put away the vials, "Fine, I will say thank you to you on behalf of them. No matter what, you won't lack money in the future!"

Zhang Tie smirked as he suddenly remembered one thing, "Senior sister Ma, how do you usually make money with the other senior sister?"

"Mainly by doing clan tasks or collecting special items!"

"Is that hard?"

Raising her beautiful face, Ma Aiyun peered at Zhang Tie in a contemptuous way, "You think everyone can make money like you——by betting or producing all-purpose medicament? Any girls coming out of the Breaking-Heavens Department have become tough girls!"

Zhang Tie became slightly embarrassed as he smiled, "I have an idea. If you and the other senior sisters think it's feasible, you can open a store to sell all-purpose medicament on the Hidden Dragon Island. All-purpose medicament has a good market now. Later on, I

can provide you all-purpose medicament at a lower price and you won't have to work that hard."

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Ma Aiyun fixed her eyes on him as she blinked her eyes and asked seriously, "Do you mean it?"

"Of course I do!"

"What's the price if I take that medicament from you?"

"Only 4 gold coins per vial for you and the other senior sisters!"

"4 gold coins?" Ma Aiyun was really shocked by such a low price. She looked at Zhang Tie seriously like watching a flower before puffed, "That's not bad, tell me, Caidie or Ziyi, which one do you like? I will play matchmaker!"

"Actually I want you. You really have a nice figure, senior Ma. You're plump and womanly. Each time I see you I'd feel my heart racing fiercely!" Zhang Tie joked.

Hearing his words, Ma Aiyun's cheeks blushed as she punched her tender fists towards Zhang Tie's head, "Snake-tongued, take my punch."

Zhang Tie hurriedly jumped away with a big smile...

...

After today's training, Zhang Tie came to the administration center of Herb Valley in the afternoon and booked his first batch of exclusive vials of all-purpose medicament.

As many alchemists were gathered in the Breaking-Heavens Department's Herb Valley, it became Herb Valley's responsibility to provide various services for alchemists of all levels, including providing customized vials of medicament, which is the most common service. Of course, even one if wasn't an alchemist, you could also customize vials to hold vinegar as long as you could afford that.

Considering his later development, Zhang Tie decided to use his private registered symbol on the vials.

The fee for registering personal symbol for the vials of medicament in the Alchemists Association was 86 gold coins, which was very expensive and far exceeded commoners' purchasing ability. After this register, the registrant would enjoy the protection of the Alchemists Association and owned all the rights and interests of this symbol.

Previously, Zhang Tie wanted to register a sapling as his symbol; however, he was told that many alchemists had adopted saplings as symbols which were of great similarity. Therefore, the Alchemists Association had determined to not accept sapling as an exclusive symbol.

Finally, Zhang Tie used a wholly new symbol!

It was composed of two elements, a mysterious, bloody, beautiful flower in full bloom and a word under it which could arise unlimited imaginations from people, Manjusaka.

Manjusaka was also named Higanbana or demon's kindness. It represented elegance and purity. In some places, it also represented sad memory and mutual miss.

After receiving Zhang Tie's symbol, a professional painter would be responsible for designing it. The symbol was featured by aestheticism.

When the painter finished the manjusaka, it reminded Zhang Tie of Lan Yunxi. Therefore, he directly fixed that.

Compared to this beautiful symbol, the quantity of the first batch of vials of medicament Zhang Tie booked shocked all the people in the Administration Center——10.000 vials! For any alchemists, this was a terrible quantity. In the entire Breaking-Heavens Department, no alchemist could produce so much medicament at once.

After Zhang Tie left Herb Valley, the news about a number of vials of medicament he ordered was heard by someone, which arose a series of changes in the later, which even out of Zhang Tie's imaginations.

After leaving Herb Valley, Zhang Tie came to the Wharf to set free fishes again. After that, he had supper before returning to his

residence. He then entered the Castle of Black Iron.

In a few seconds, after entering the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie was really startled as he could see no fruit on the entire Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree...

Chapter 318: Free Will

Zhang Tie remembered that when he entered the Castle of Black Iron last time, he could still see a lot of fruits hanging from the tree, including 3 ripe Leakless Fruits which were used for spare blood, a Leakless Fruit which should have been ripe today, an Iron-Body Fruit which had been over 80% ripe, a raw huge wolf Seven-Strength Fruit, a raw Fruit of Redemption from golden uangs, a raw Fruit of Redemption from earthworms and those Fruits of Redemption from sand-scale fish that he had set free these days. However, at this moment, all of them had disappeared.

Watching the small tree, Zhang Tie rubbed his eyes. He moved around the small tree for a circle with disbelief. He could see nothing but tree leaves. "What's happening?"

Zhang Tie couldn't stand being vacant as he stretched his hand towards the small tree while a line of words appeared in front of him.

—The sacred free will is inviolable. It is the supreme law that all the living beings in this universe should follow. As Lord has violated someone's free will recently, the aura and energy of all the fruits on the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree would dissipate automatically. Besides, no other fruits would ripen on it in two weeks.

'Sacred free will is inviolable? When did I violate someone's free will?' Zhang Tie became dumbfounded as he tried to remember, 'Wait, is it because of what happened last night...no...'

When Zhang Tie became dumbfounded, Heller, the steward of Castle of Black Iron had already stood beside the stages below the small tree and watched Zhang Tie in a frustrated expression.

Zhang Tie then walked downwards the stages.

"Castle lord..." Heller bowed in front of Zhang Tie elegantly.

"Heller, what's wrong with this? Why are the fruits..."

"You should ask yourself, my lord. The Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree reflects the law of cause and effect. Your behavior will definitely cause the corresponding result! This is the price for you to violate other's free will..." Heller said calmly.

"Free will? Is it because of Lan Yunxi?"

"Right! You forcefully restricted the girl's freedom and movement before forcing her to call you husband; finally, you even kissed her. You had violated her free will!" Staring at Zhang Tie with endless interests, Heller added, "Were you really wanting to rape her at that moment? If so, you must have overridden her free will and you might suffer an even more serious consequence!"

Feeling extremely embarrassed, Zhang Tie scratched his head, "How come, I was just making a joke at the beginning. Although being a bit roguish in the later, I would never do that excessively..."

"But you've even taken off your trousers!" Heller answered with a wisp of smile.

"Um...I was too concentrated then. At the beginning when I forcefully kissed her, she was truly opposing; however, in the later, I didn't force her any more; instead, she started to hug me and kiss me. I thought she...she would like to do that with me. However, she was finally scared away!"

This was what Zhang Tie truly thought. For the girls whom Zhang Tie had encountered, he found that as long as they felt like kissing him in that way, they seemed to be not resistant to do that. That night, although it started with a forceful kiss, in the middle, they both indulged in doing that. Therefore, out of impulsion, Zhang Tie wanted to directly make love with her. However, it was out of his imagination that the moment he took off his trousers, he woke up her who then directly kicked off this awkward, lewd man.

After doing that, Zhang Tie made a conclusion. He also felt being a bit anxious to do that at that moment. The girls of Breaking-Heavens Department could never be matched by those in the Rose Association, let alone Lan Yunxi. If he only forcefully kissed her like an innocent boy and let her off, the result would be completely different from now.

Saying this, Zhang Tie suddenly remembered something. How could Heller know what happened last night so clearly? He had not imagined about this question before. He then instantly widened his eyes and gazed at Heller, "Does it mean that you know everything I did outside?"

"Never mind, castle lord, what I know is only about the affairs between you and the fruits of Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree. This is the meaning and reason for my existence!" Heller explained, "As for others unless you told me, I would never know!"

'Hush...' Zhang Tie finally let out a sign. 'It's good. If Heller knew everything about what I did outside, it would be too awkward. In the future, if I marry a wife and make love with her, Heller could even know when I take off my clothes and break a wind, that would be nothing but live performance.'

"And...if I make love with women, will it lead to any fruits?" Zhang Tie asked obscurely.

"No!" Heller answered.

Zhang Tie finally became reassured. However, looking at the fruitless small tree, Zhang Tie felt painful once again, 'My Leakless Fruits! It's really a great loss this time. Besides those fruits that have disappeared, the small tree would even stop bearing any fruit in 2 weeks. It seems to be a protest about what I've done last night.'

'No way, I was just forcefully kissing her. I've not even done anything excessively. If some girl forcefully kiss me, I will definitely not protest at all.' Zhang Tie complained inside.

"Oh, what do you mean by free will? If someone wants to set me up, will I violate their free will by beating them?"

"You could counterattack your enemies for free. This would not bring you any punishment!" Heller stared at Zhang Tie, "Free will is the most fundamental right of all the living beings. It is the meaning and foundation for living beings to exist and the right of free choice that every living being own to experience their independent lives and value of existence. The more senior and intelligent the living beings and social existences were, the more they would respect the free will of all the rest living beings. By comparison, the lower, corrupted and darker the living beings and social existences were, the more they would destroy and trample on others' free will!"

"Like Sun Dynasty?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Yes, Sun Dynasty is that extremely corrupted and dark social existence. It tramples on everybody's free will in the name of supreme gods. This is the largest blasphemy to all living beings!"

"Are there truly gods?" Zhang Tie rolled his eyes as he asked instantly.

Heller immediately saw through Zhang Tie's trick as he answered wisely and obscurely, "I've told you that I didn't know about the answer of this question; perhaps, from the perspective of free will, you can call those who own the most unlimited and powerful abilities to completely carry out their own free will as gods."

"You mean, those deities are always happy. Because a person or living being who could perform his free will to the utmost would never be irritated and frustrated. Neither would he have any negative mood!" A thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

Heller's answer immediately reminded Zhang Tie of this question, "If so, why are many deities in the legends are very narrow-minded? Why do they have various negative moods like fury, jealousy and always punish others?"

"They're just tricks used by those scoundrels, they put their own desires and fears onto real deities and create fake deities to frighten people. In their words, deities are all-mighty. They create everything; however, deities could not control the living beings that they created. They might even create something that they dislike, which make them tired and troubled with mixed moods. This is a self-contradiction. Because there isn't a deity who's both all-mighty and incompetent in the universe. This violates the fundamental rule of the universe."

"What's the fundamental rule of the universe?" Zhang Tie's curiosity was arisen once again.

Heller cast a deep glance at Zhang Tie and put it straightly, "Everything runs as it should be."

"Everything runs as it should be." This answer was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination. It sounded very simple, yet contained many secrets. Zhang Tie mumbled it twice. Although a thought flashed across his mind, he still couldn't understand it. After thinking twice, Zhang Tie still couldn't understand anything not catch anything. Zhang Tie then didn't think about it anymore as what he usually did. He was not that stubborn.

"You say you know everything about the fruits on the small tree?"

"Hmm, right..." Zhang Tie changed his focus so fast that even Heller was startled about that. How could a guy who was interested in the fundamental rule of the universe suddenly asked about fruits on the small tree?

"You must know the causes about those disappeared fruits, right?" Zhang Tie revealed a bit wretched which even Heller could not stand.

"Yes!"

"Then, I want to know that...that...whether that is Lan Yunxi's first kiss?"

Looking at the wicked guy, Heller became wordless.

"I refuse to answer you about that question!" Heller remained his principle.

Zhang Tie then crossed his arms like a rogue, "As long as you told me, I will instantly increase 100,000 of basic energy storage units for Castle of Black Iron!"

"I have my principle, please don't insult me, castle lord!" Heller looked very righteous.

"200,000!"

"You think I'm that person?"

"300,000!"

"As Castle of Black Iron is yours, do you think its useful to lure me with your belongings?"

"400,000!"

"It's not a kind way to talk about a girl's privacy!"

"500,000!"

"That's not good!"

"600,000..." Zhang Tie gritted his teeth as it would take him several days to increase so many basic energy storage for Castle of Black Iron.

Heller still didn't say anything. Zhang Tie then turned around and intended to leave while Heller hurriedly stopped him by pulling his arm, "Yes, that was her first kiss!"

Zhang Tie then burst out a big laughter. He suddenly felt that the lost fruits were worthwhile...

Chapter 319: Big Wave

The headquarters of Long Wind Business Group was located in a 300-m skyscraper in a prosperous area of Yiyang City. The entire building was like a sailboat. The building was covered with sparkling reinforced glass walls. It was beautifully shaped and was the landmark of this region.

Being directly affiliated with the Zhang clan, Long Wind Business Group not only reached each corner of Huaiyuan Prefecture but also in the entire Waii Sub-continent. It was qualified to rank top 20 in Waii Sub-continent.

The total asset of Long Wind Business Group was 3.8 billion gold coins. It's business scope covered banking, insurance, industry and mining, shipping, manufacturing, port, overseas trading, munition, daily goods, medicine, traffic, navigation and armed employment.

The business group employed 870,000 people directly. It owned the largest armed fleet across the Waii Sub-continent. Meanwhile, it was the largest military supplier across Waii Sub-continent. The rune weapons sold by Long Wind Business Group occupied 1/8 of the high-end military products market across the Waii Sub-continent. Additionally, the battle crossbows produced by Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace and sold by Long Wind Business Group monopolized above 70% of the high-end battle crossbows market in Waii Sub-continent.

Zhang's crossbows were well-known around the world. All the warriors and fighters who took battle crossbows as weapons knew

Huaiyuan Palace's battle crossbows. Many of them were proud of having a advanced battle crossbow produced by Huaiyuan Palace.

From some perspective, Long Wind Business Group was an epitome and tentacle of Zhang clan of Huaiyuan Palace to the outside world.

To manage such a huge business empire, the headquarter of Long Wind Business Group had to collect and analyze information from everywhere.

The headquarter of Long Wind Business Group was matched with the largest crystal remote-sensing communication center, which contained over 1000 staff. In each second, messages from across the Waii Sub-continent would be collected here through communication nodes, enabling the headquarters of the Long Wind Business Group to master the latest news from all aspects like a big invisible net.

The news being collected here included latest prices of commodities, business opportunities, special events, changing ruling powers and all the other economical, political, cultural and social dynamic information from wherever the agencies of Long Wind Business Group were located.

The news that Zhang Tie customized 10,000 vials of medicament was also received by Long Wind Business Group late on May 23rd.

The message being received through crystal remote-sensing communication was a series of remote-sensing communication

codes composed of signals of different duration. This message was first passed to the communication center of the headquarter. After that, a remote-sensing message receiver on a communication position recorded the signals and sent back a receipt before giving the record paper to the examiner on his side.

Although it was already in the late night, staff in the Remote-Sensing Communication Center of the headquarter were still very busy. After checking the codes a few seconds, the examiner found no problem with it. He then rapidly took that recording paper to the Decoding Center of the Communication Center.

"News from Hidden Dragon Island; it's sent through Fengxin B LV 3 cryptographic codes, please decode it as soon as possible!"

Soon after taking the recording paper, the staff in the Decoding Center had already translated the information. It was only one common sentence.

"Zhang Tie, a student of Breaking-Heavens Department registers his exclusive symbol of medicament and orders 10,000 vials of medicament at once. He says that he will purchase another great batch of vials in a short period. He estimates that the further purchase would not be less than 100,000 vials! Given his abnormal order, please pay special attention to him!"

After decoding this sentence, the staff didn't waste any time; instead, he directly passed this message to the Information Center. The moment the staff of the Information Center received this information, he had stored this message in the super brain over there.

The super brain of the information center of Long Wind Business Group was a Xuanyuan 7-type large-scale steam-driven computer from the East Continent. It contained 154,000 computing gears and parts with super high precision, which weighed 513 tons in total. The perimeter of its computing gears could circle twice around Yiyang City. The entire steam-driven computer consisted of three functions, namely computing, storage and input/output. Additionally, it could output message through printing, mapping and card. In this age, undoubtedly, such a set of steam-driven computers represented the top achievement of human beings in machinery manufacturing.

Only a few minutes after Zhang Tie's message was input into the storage equipment of this steam-driven computer, a information analyst of the Information Center had discovered 3 intelligence information chains concerning "Zhang Tie" and "All-purpose medicament" that Long Wind Business Group had received in these days from the intelligence associative feedback output from the steam-driven computer.

The earliest message was sent from manager Zhang of the Long Wind Pearl Field on the Hidden Dragon Island——Zhang Tie, a student from Breaking-Heavens Department can produce a special solution which is of great effect to rheumatism, arthritis and gastric ulcer. It is of great medical function and promotion value. Manager Zhang suggested the business group to dispatch someone to negotiate with Zhang Tie so as to purchase the secret knowledge of Zhang Tie's special solution or directly cooperate with him. After mass production, the business group will promote the solution to the market through the channels of the business group for mutual benefit.

The second intelligence arrived a couple of days later than the first one. It was sent from the Hidden Dragon Palace——Zhang Tie, a student from Breaking-Heavens Department had produced the all-purpose medicament which had passed the medical effect test of master Su Yun, it's medical effect is as follows...

The third intelligence was just received——Zhang Tie, a student of Breaking-Heavens Department registers his exclusive symbol of medicament and orders 10,000 vials of medicament at once. He says that he will purchase another great batch of vials in a short period. He estimates that the further purchase would not be less than 100,000 vials! Given his abnormal order, please pay special attention to him!"

When manager Zhang sent the first intelligence, he didn't know that Zhang Tie was producing the super enzyme, namely the all-purpose medicament. However, the second message from Hidden Dragon Palace justified the real status of Zhang Tie's solution. Today's message then indicated that Zhang Tie would push his all-purpose medicament into the market.

If not the quantity of the vials that Zhang Tie customized, the value of the three messages were not great to the Long Wind Business Group at all.

For super powers like Long Wind Business Group, it didn't lack cooperation with alchemists. Even though Long Wind Business Group and Zhang clan cultivated alchemists themselves. These alchemists were all excelled in making various medicaments; some of them could even produce advance medicaments.

Although Zhang Tie's all-purpose medicament had various marvelous effects, most of which were based on human beings' physiological functions. According to the strictest standards on dividing medicaments adopted by the Alchemists' Association, those all-purpose medicaments produced by Zhang Tie could only rank LV E and LV D. It was more effective than LV 1 antidote; additionally, it owned many other effects which were a bit dwarfed than other professional medicaments. This indicated that the price of one vial of this medicament could hardly reach 7-10 gold coins.

Many alchemists won't even waste time on producing such "cheap" items. Those who made money by producing LV 1 antidote were all low-level suspending gourd alchemists. When they reached binding-belt alchemists, they would be able to produce more valuable items.

However, every change would finally reach a qualitative change.

If a common suspending gourd alchemist spent all of his efforts and time on producing LV 1 antidote in one year, he could only produce 300-500 vials.

Even senior alchemists like master Suyun could not produce more than 1000 vials of LV 1 antidote in one year. This explained why many senior alchemists didn't want to produce low-level medicament—they could not gain more profits than producing advanced medicament at the cost of the same time.

For example, if one used an advanced machine tool which could

process steam-driven computer's precision gears to process spades and iron hammers, one would not gain more profits.

However, don't forget the number of vials of medicament that Zhang Tie customized for the first batch!

10,000 vials, and 100,000 more in the future!

What did this mean? If this was the speed at which Zhang Tie produced the all-purpose medicament, even though merely taking these all-purpose medicaments as a LV 1 antidote, Zhang Tie had already been more efficient than hundreds of suspending-gourd alchemists at producing a LV 1 antidote by working overtime.

Although LV 1 antidote was not expensive, it was also a very significant strategical material like crystal, wheat flour, steel & iron and one of the necessary battle materials that were required by a human army.

In the past half a year, with the gradually intense situation in the Waii Sub-continent, the marketing prices of various medicaments including LV 1 antidote, especially some fundamental strategical materials had grown at least 50%. Many powers had already enlarged and accelerated the storage of "materials for the winter"

Let alone Huaiyuan Palace, even the entire Jinyun Country had enlarged the purchase of various strategical materials; however, the total quantity of the vials of LV 1 antidote that Jinyun Country stored might not even surpass 100,000.

When the information analyst caught sight of the last one of the three messages concerning Zhang Tie, he almost couldn't believe his own eyes. How could someone need so many vials of medicaments? After a confirmation, his face instantly changed as he stood up at once and rushed into the director's office.

Only after two minutes, the director of the Information Center had hurriedly left his office.

Without heading for other managers of the business group, the director directly ascended to floor 99 of the skyscraper using the elevator at the fastest speed and entered the director-on-duty's office.

...

"You mean that juvenile called Zhang Tie in the Breaking-Heavens Department probably have known how to produce all-purpose medicaments in a large scale?"

In the office of almost 1000 sq meters, a 50-odd-year-old white man seriously asked him with his eyes fixed on the director of the Information Center in an extremely majestic manner.

"That's it. According to the first message that the manager of the Long Wind Pearl on the Hidden Dragon Island sent, Zhang Tie generously gifted at least 10 kg to the yakshas in the sea and the other staff in the Pearl Field, which was equal to over 100 vials of that medicament. If he could not produce it so easily, how could he gift so much at once?"

"What else?"

"Before that medicament was verified as an all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie took this thing as a drinking that he drunk a great amount of such a medicament over a long period of time. Judging from the situations and so many vials of medicament that Zhang Tie ordered this time, we could ensure that Zhang Tie had probably mastered the method to produce this medicament on a large scale!"

Standing in front of that man's desk, the director of the Information Center slightly bent over and answered respectfully.

The 50-odd-year-old man then narrowed his eyes as he tapped the intelligence on the desk slightly while fixing his eyes on the testing data on Zhang Tie's all-purpose medicament made by master Suyun. He started to be serious.

"Large-scale..." The on-duty director of Long Wind Business Group mumbled slightly as a shred light flashed across his eyes.

Large-scale steel & iron manufacturing capability...large-scale grains production capability...large-scale army...large-scale funds...large-scale massacre...large-scale population...even large-scale ants—Any thing, once being connected with "large-scale" would form a threatening force.

At this moment, what was behind "large-scale" was a medicament above LV 1——large-scale all-purpose medicament production...

"It seems that I have to go to the Hidden Dragon Island tomorrow!" The director of Long Wind Business Group replied calmly, "For so many vials of medicaments that Zhang Tie ordered, the business group had to keep secret. Nobody is allowed to look up the intelligence concerning this without the consent of the director of the Business Group!"

"Yes, sir!" After the reply, the director of the Information Center remembered something, "Hidden Dragon Island has already sent the news that Zhang Tie registers his exclusive symbol and orders 10,000 vials of the medicament for the first batch to the Alchemists Association of Jinyun Country!"

Hearing this, the director of Long Wind Business Group faintly frowned his forehead...

...

At the same time, two people were talking icily and simply in a gloomy basement.

"Someone on the Hidden Dragon Island of Huaiyuan Palace's Zhang clan suddenly orders 10,000 vials of medicament with uniformed symbol!"

"10,000 vials? Do we know him?"

"We don't, a new symbol is used on the vials——Manjusaka!"

"Go check!"

"Yes, sir!"

...

Chapter 320: Enlightenment

Zhang Tie didn't know that the director of Long Wind Business Group intended to see him. Therefore, on the second day, Zhang Tie still did as usual. In the early morning, after breakfast, Zhang Tie had already arrived at the training field and started practicing fundamental movements.

Zhang Tie had been able to walk on the quincuncial piles as steadily as walking on the ground. He had been familiar with fundamental movements so well. Even if competing with his senior sisters on agility and speed, Zhang Tie could also easily stand several minutes.

After applying the five fundamental movements like bow step, sliding step, bumping step and the quick short step of Iron-Blood Fist into the movements on quincuncial piles, Zhang Tie felt that he had gained a new insight into the Iron-Blood Fist.

The five fundamental movements on the 30 positions of quincuncial piles could provide Zhang Tie with 150 kinds of movements. Being accompanied by the 36 styles of freehand movements of Iron-Blood Fist, Zhang Tie could apply 5400 fighting movements. This brought Zhang Tie a cool, limitless feeling like a bird flying into the sky after breaking out of its shell.

The daily training was not simply on fundamental movements, but on further improving his Iron-Blood Fist. Each move of Iron-Blood Fist was constantly absorbed by Zhang Tie and rearranged by Zhang Tie according to his own demand and will. Although being hard cultivation, Zhang Tie gradually felt free.

This was a pure cultivation experience which could not be described in words. Not until this moment did Zhang Tie feel that Iron-Blood Fist had gradually become an integral part of his body together with his blood, flesh, veins, and bones.

In such cultivation, especially today, Zhang Tie experienced no hardships anymore, but freedom; he could experience the vast, limitless freedom on the narrowed quincuncial piles.

It was like how a bird flew into the sky, a fish jumped into the sea and a wild wolf rushed onto the prairie. Zhang Tie was so excited that he almost wanted to exclaim. It was his first time to experience this pleasant freedom in Iron-Blood Fist.

By then, Zhang Tie had reached a new level; namely, each hand move or foot movement would bring him a scene in his mind. It felt so pleasant like enjoying the beautiful and unique scenery in a trip.

The scenery would wash off his fatigue and enable him to be vigorous because he knew that there was always unique scenery waiting for him in the next.

This morning, Zhang Tie senior sisters all arrived. After "guiding" Zhang Tie one by one for two hours, the girls all stood below the quincuncial piles and watched Zhang Tie practicing Iron-Blood Fist on the piles.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie moved regularly and slowly. He then

moved faster and faster on the piles. Finally, he moved so fast that in a blink of an eye, he had already moved 6 steps on the piles. Accompanied by each step, Zhang Tie applied a different move of Iron-Blood Fist. the 6 quincuncial piles were like 6 Zhang Tie. Each of them was performing different moves each second.

Along with Zhang Tie's consistent moves were various sounds, like growls of tigers, the sound of breaking the air with a huge ax, the sound of saber and sword chopping off something. Finally, these sounds converged into one and started to reverberate in the room like dull thunder.

The girls were all dumbfounded as their faces turned pale. At this moment, Zhang Tie had entered a strange state. Standing on the piles, he became a plum blossom. The 6 shadows of Zhang Tie on the quincuncial piles were like flowers that were in full bloom. It was beautiful in a bizarre and brisk pattern.

The 6 hard and icy quincuncial piles came to life because of Zhang Tie.

The girls had not even heard about this before, let alone having seen it. Although many people were cultivating fundamental movements on the quincuncial piles in the Breaking-Heavens Department, nobody had ever heard about such a strange scene when in practice.

The girls knew or heard that some senior brothers or sisters on the Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List looked weird when they cultivated on the piles. They either moved as fast as lightning bolts or as stable as Mountain Tai; they also heard that a senior brother

looked still when he moved on the piles; comparatively, the quincuncial piles under his feet seemed moving freely, which even brought people an illusion.

However, Zhang Tie's hand moves and foot movements on the quincuncial piles at this moment looked "alive". Zhang Tie was like a plum blossom with 6 petals which could change its shape at any time. Each second, he would present a new scene to the onlookers. To reach this effect, Zhang Tie had to move fast, stable and realize the essence of foot movements or hand moves.

"I will have a try!" Looking at Zhang Tie's performance, one of Zhang Tie's senior sisters became jealous as she wanted to jump onto the piles.

However, when she was 1 m away from the pile, the wind and qi of Zhang Tie's movements on the piles had forced this girl to fall back onto the ground. She was even forced to move back two steps awkwardly.

After exchanging glances with each other, the other girls jumped up at the same time as they all wanted to try Zhang Tie's fighting force; however, like 6 Zhang Tie on the piles, each girl was forced back by the wind and qi of Zhang Tie's punches.

One girl felt envious of him. When she punched against the wind and qi of Zhang Tie's punches, she instantly felt that the power of the opponent surged 10 more times; as a result, with a sound of "bang", she was blown 3 m away, raising the girls' exclamations.

The girl blown off by Zhang Tie's qi was Gu Caidie. Being unable to exert strength in the air, she shifted into a colorful butterfly and elegantly made some nice backward rolls in the air. By touching the wall of the training room slightly, she had steadily fallen onto the ground.

Although she had landed stably, her face turned faintly pale. Right now, with the collision, Gu Caidie's qi and blood started to roll up faintly. Not until gasping heavily several times did she recovered composure.

"Caidie, are you okay?" Some girls immediately surrounded her.

"I'm okay!" Gu Caidie slightly shook her head.

"Zhang Tie, you are too excessive, how could you do that?"

Gu Caidie became faintly perplexed as she looked at Zhang Tie on the quincuncial piles in the far, "He didn't mean it. Right now, I found he was closing his eyes. He was counterattacking me in terms of qi. I feel that Zhang Tie is...is immersed in a special condition...he seems...seems to have become enlightened."

"What?" The other girls became startled at the same time. Enlightenment could not be encountered easily. Some cultivators might experience it once or twice by chance in their whole lives while others might not even experience it once.

The alleged enlightenment referred to a break-through in mental

state after a deep and sudden realization of some advanced fighting skills and battle qis. If the influence of the higher levels and daily cultivation on advanced fighting skills and battle qis were taken as quantitative change, enlightenment was a qualitative change. The first was similar to slowly erecting ladders against the wall in the courtyard or boring a hole on the wall to borrow light from the neighbor while the latter was similar to directly pushing open the door and passing through the hall into the inner chamber.

"This girl is right. That boy is being enlightened!" Nobody knew that a 50-odd-year-old white, graceful man had stood among them.

Although Gu Caidie and the other girls didn't know who he was, they were familiar with the girl beside him. She was the idol of all the girls in Hidden Dragon Palace, Lan Yunxi, who had ranked top in the Hidden Dragon Fighting Force List and the Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution List.

"Argh, senior sister Xi!" At the sight of Lan Yunxi, the other girls hurriedly bowed to her.

"Take it easy, junior sisters." Lan Yunxi greeted them with a smile as she stared at a douchebag who was being enlightened on the quincuncial piles.

Thinking of what the asshole did to her last night, Lan Yunxi gritted her teeth became furious.

"Occupy the shortcut towards your heart"——Lan Yunxi finally knew the origin of this sentence these days. It was a female scholar

before the Catastrophe, which meant that "The shortcut towards woman's heart is her vagina". She had not imagined that some b*stard applied this line onto her. The moment Lan Yunxi thought about this, she would feel a fever on her face and grit teeth out of fury.

Lan Yunxi had imagined many scenes on the third encounter with Zhang Tie; however, she had not thought that could come so abruptly. She had not imagined that her 4th uncle could come to Hidden Dragon Palace so suddenly. After encountering her 4th uncle and chatting with him for a short while, her 4th uncle had requested to see Zhang Tie; therefore, she brought him here.

As she had to be polite to her 4th uncle and didn't want to reveal the "special thing" between her and Zhang Tie, Lan Yunxi had to grit her teeth and led him here.

Out of her imagination, that b*stard was undergoing enlightenment at this moment...

Chapter 321: One Movement, One Scenery

Not knowing how long he had practised on the quincuncial piles, after being immersed in that bizarre situation, Zhang Tie felt pleased as he opened his eyes. He then knew that a great amount of people in the training room were watching him.

Among them, besides his senior sisters who guided him in the morning and some men who he didn't know, he caught sight of Lan Yunxi.

The moment he saw her, Zhang Tie seemed to notice a halo on her as the entire world became alive. In a split second, the empty land in his memory was fulfilled once again. Only after 1 days since he left Lan Yunxi, Lan Yunxi's image had been obscure in his mind again. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt that he had not seen her for several years.

With eyes fixed on Zhang Tie, nobody uttered, especially Zhang Tie's martial sisters. They looked like they had seen a ghost. Even Lan Yunxi's eyes became a bit surprised.

"What a mighty Iron-Blood Fist..." One of those strange men let out a long sigh with a smile on his face.

'Mighty?' glancing over the metal hydraulic columns which fell down like daisies being destroyed by heavy wind, Zhang Tie also became shocked. At the last moment when he was immersed in that situation just now, Zhang Tie even felt that those quincuncial piles under his feet became surplus. They were just like broken

stones on the road. He just kicked them away casually and broke them into pieces. When he "woke up", he found that he was already standing on the ground.

Each of the metal hydraulic columns being connected to the power equipment in the room weighed a few tons. Although they were not completely solid, they were as firm as robust trees. Those metal hydraulic columns twisted and lay down around Zhang Tie in radial patterns, forming a weird scene. As a result, the oil in the broken metal hydraulic columns slowly flowed over the ground.

Zhang Tie lowered his head and found that some liquid almost reached his feet; he hurriedly jumped away.

"Zhang Tie, what happened to you just now? Caidie said you found some insights. What have you got?" Ma Aiyun was straightforward. Seeing Zhang Tie walking over there, she opened her mouth first.

"I don't know..." said Zhang Tie, scratching his head. Zhang Tie became a bit bashful. Just now, he truly had realized something; however, it was pure subjective experience which could not be described. That was why it could not be easily realized.

"You don't know?" Widening her eyes, Ma Aiyun added, "How come?"

"I really don't know how to describe it. I only felt something pour out of my inner heart. This brought me a strange experience. I don't know what I've realized!"

"What experience?" Gu Caidie asked out of curiosity. Some girls who guided Zhang Tie had not received any experience on finding the insight at all. Therefore, they all wondered what Zhang Tie had experienced.

Not only them, even those beside him were watching Zhang Tie full of curiosity, including Lan Yunxi. Such a sharing on finding the insight and experience would be beneficial to everyone's cultivation. Even though they could not realize like Zhang Tie, at least they could understand how such insight would change a person and provide a rare, beneficial experience and reference to their cultivation.

"How to say..." Zhang Tie tried to recall that feeling. Noticing that even Lan Yunxi was interested in this, Zhang Tie thought for awhile before he tried to put it in a clearer way.

"No need to put your focus on using adjectives, simply tell us about your true feeling!" That man who said just now uttered again.

Zhang Tie glanced at that man and found he looked a bit similar to Lan Yunxi; he then immediately assumed the status of that man. He should at least be Lan Yunxi's relative or elder, instead of her dad.

'Zhang Taixuan—— the Count Long Wind, Lan Yunxi's dad was the head of Zhang clan. He was so powerful and busy everyday, he would never waste time to talk with him. Even if he wanted to

marry her daughter to Zhang Tie, he didn't need to be that hurried. Although he was not Zhang Taixuan, this man looked so majestic and gentle which reminded Zhang Tie that he was definitely not an average person.

'No crap, Lan Yunxi's dad and mom are all great figures with powerful family background, how could her relative and elder be average.' Zhang Tie swore him inside. Seeing the man treating him pretty kindly, Zhang Tie also nodded at him with a friend smile.

This man's words truly reminded Zhang Tie that language and vocabulary were not important; what was important was the true insight and feeling. After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie had already understood that feeling.

"At the beginning, I felt something coming out of my heart. It seemed to be an incessant force which kept pouring out like a spring. Yes, like a spring. I felt that I became a spring myself. The spring gradually converged into a pond. The the spring flowed out of the pond and started to naturally flow among mountains. It then turned into a stream, which felt so jubilant among mountains. Not only this, I even felt pretty free. I enjoyed the scenery that I passed by. The scenery kept changing at all time, which was really impressive!"

"You say you became a spring and a stream when you practised on quincuncial piles? you felt jubilant while flowing down the mountain and enjoying scenery on the way? What the hell is that?' Those girls didn't understand this insight, which made them admirable.

Although those girls didn't understand, the 50 year-old man beside Lan Yunxi knew it as a wisp of amazement flashed across his eyes, "If that's true, it must be the 'one movement, one scenery' level!"

'One movement, one scenery?' Zhang Tie recalled and found that was similar to his experience. By the end, he felt like enjoying different scenery with each movement.

"Martial sister Xi, could you introduce this..." Zhang Tie looked at Lan Yunxi as he asked.

When Zhang Tie turned towards her, Lan Yunxi's heart truly raced. Based on Zhang Tie's character, if he called her "Yunxi" in a shameless way, she didn't even know how to explain to the 4th uncle. When she saw Zhang Tie behaving that politely, she swore him 'b*stard' inside. She could even feel that Zhang Tie was making grimace towards her inside.

"This is my 4th uncle. He's coming for you today!" After slightly recovering composure, Lan Yunxi made a brief introduction.

"Let's talk about it outside. It smells bad here!" Zhang Tie looked at Lan Yunxi's 4th uncle. The odor of the hydraulic oil started to gradually volatilize, which made people uncomfortable.

They then left the training room together.

Knowing that Zhang Tie would leave, Ma Aiyun and the other

girls could only bid farewell to Zhang Tie.

"Senior sisters, please wait a minute, thanks for your guidance to me these days. I feel that I could pass the test on fundamental movements. Please accept it now!" Zhang Tie smiled.

"Are you ready to attend the test now?" When Gu Caidie asked, all the others who were walking out of the training field stopped.

Without saying anything, Zhang Tie directly rushed to the front of the 100-m test passage. He instantly jumped onto the quincuncial piles which were extending and shrinking and started to jump on them rapidly.

Right then, there were still many people who were trying to pass the 100-m long passage of quincuncial piles which were constantly changing. In every second, someone would be shot down from the top of the piles into the water pool.

The moment Zhang Tie stood on a quincuncial pile, a high-pressure water column had shot towards him. Zhang Tie smiled and leisurely walked one step aside to evade it.

When Zhang Tie first saw this test passage on fundamental movements, Zhang Tie felt that this test was too hard; however, at this moment, the passage was like a plain road for him while each point on the top of each quincuncial pile was a geometrical plane which could be extended without any limit.

Point is zero-dimensional; moving point would form a line, which was one-dimensional; moving line would form a plane which was two-dimensional; moving plane would form body, which was three-dimensional; moving body would form a four-dimensional universal time, space and the world.

When in movement, all the solid items could be extended, all the existences would be composed of multiple factors. When you split this multiple-dimensional time and space. To the final analysis, everything could be split into one "point", which was hard to understand. It could be zero, it could be empty, it could be the root of everything in the universe.

Although this passage was still the same one, Zhang Tie changed; therefore, this passage changed in Zhang Tie's eyes. As Zhang Tie's heart changed, his cognition about this world also changed; this indicated a different level.

"One movement, one scenery" was an advanced level like seeing a plain road out of thorns and a scenery out of fire, which could not be described.

At this moment, in Zhang Tie's eyes, the numerous quincuncial piles with different lengths had become different levels of planes which were extended in front of him.

The road was under his feet. There were numerous roads, which connected one by another. No matter where they reached, there was always a place for Zhang Tie to stand on. He could even make a way out of no way. Everything that he saw on the way were just roadside scenery.

In a split second, the fierce high-pressure water columns became fine drizzles in the sky with a sort of complaint...

Including Lan Yunxi and the senior girls who were guiding Zhang Tie, their eyes all radiated gleaming light...

At this moment, Zhang Tie was like a poet. In a white suit, Zhang Tie wandered in a long alley. He held an umbrella in the fine drizzle and seemed wanting to encounter a lady with lilac fragrance...

The other guys who were gritting their teeth on the test passage were like laborers in the mud. Compared to Zhang Tie who was like a prince, they were like paupers.

After reading the end of the passage, Zhang Tie raised his eyebrows and revealed his teeth with a sexy smile...

Zhang Tie's nice image in the girls' minds broke apart at once.

'Peh, still a rogue!' Lan Yunxi swore at him inside...

Chapter 322: To be a Castle Lord

After leaving the training field, Zhang Tie felt pretty good. Knowing that he had something to deal with, Gu Caidie and the other martial girls bade farewell to Zhang Tie before they left too.

Zhang Tie's performance in the test passage had justified that he could pass the test on fundamental movements successfully. Zhang Tie didn't need to come here in the future.

According to Ma Aiyun and the other martial girls, the course of fundamental movements was the most difficult one among all the compulsory courses. Most of the people in Breaking-Heavens Department had passed the test on fundamental movements in half a year to 1 year. They had not expected that Zhang Tie could pass it in just a bit over 2 months. Although this was not the fastest, it could only be achieved by a minority of people in the Breaking-Heavens Department.

"Who's the fastest one to pass the test on fundamental movements?" Zhang Tie asked Ma Aiyun while the latter looked at Lan Yunxi with a smile. Zhang Tie then understood.

Outside the training field, they separated from each other.

"Martial sisters, your vials of medicament will arrive in 1 week. Don't forget to come for me by then!"

"We might not get enough money by then!" Gu Caidie explained, "We might not take too much from you at the beginning".

In Breaking-Heavens Department, as each one had to submit 30 gold coins as the monthly fee, most of the girls could not save much; therefore, although they intended to do this business, they felt bashful about that.

"No problem, you can take away the medicament first and sell them before paying me back!" Zhang Tie put it generously.

"That's great!"

"You can take 200 vials of medicament first. If you can not sell all of them, you can return them back to me. Just have a try. If this works, we can stick to this way in the future; if not, just take it as a joke!"

Gu Caiyun then exchanged glances with the other girls as they were all moved by Zhang Tie's words. They knew that although Zhang Tie was careless and shameless sometimes, he was very considerate. Now that Zhang Tie had presented such a condition for them, he had obviously considered their situation quite well. He almost pushed a great opportunity in front of them.

The girls were very reserved. They were not good at expressing their own emotions, especially when there were strangers present. After deeply gazing at Zhang Tie with a thank-you, the girls then left.

Lan Yunxi's 4th uncle didn't talk. Seeing that Zhang Tie had sold 200 vials of medicament in such a short while, he realized that

Zhang Tie had truly mastered the method of producing large-scale all-purpose medicaments.

After the girls left, Lan Yunxi's 4th uncle put it straightforwardly to Zhang Tie about his status and his purpose.

Zhang Taibai—Lan Yunxi's 4th uncle, a younger brother of Zhang Taixuan, the Count Long Wind, a director of Long Wind Business Group, such a status really shocked Zhang Tie.

"You mean Long Wind Business Group wants to cooperate with me?" Zhang Tie glanced at this 50 year-old man who looked noble and privileged. It was really out of his imagination that all-purpose medicament could attract the attention of such a great organization.

"Hmm, as all-purpose medicament has many applications. If you could realize mass production, we can cooperate. But if you could only produce a few, I'm afraid that you would not meet the demands of Long Wind Business Group!" Zhang Taibai smiled.

Of course, Zhang Tie knew this. For such a great organization, whose clients were great powers and countries, even thousands or tens of thousands of vials of all-purpose medicament definitely could not meet its basic demands. A business of only tens of thousands of gold coins was not worth the travel of a director of Long Wind Business Group at all.

"Wuh? If I can realize mass production, I wonder how Long Wind Business Group will cooperate with me?" When talking, they

wandered around the Breaking-Heavens Department, where it was tranquil and full of warbles and the fragrance of flowers, which made the atmosphere most suitable.

While Zhang Taibai headed with Lan Yunxi and Zhang Tie, his bodyguards were following them at a distance.

Feeling Zhang Tie's eyes glancing over her stealthily, Lan Yunxi had to pretend that nothing had happened, as she didn't want her 4th uncle to know about that "special" thing between her and Zhang Tie.

"I heard you are using a secret recipe to produce the all-purpose medicament? If you wish, the Long Wind Business Group is prepared to purchase your secret recipe!" Zhang Taibai put it straightly, "The price won't disappoint you!"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile. If it was before, he would definitely have been moved by this proposal. Previously, he only wanted to get essential-energy reiki yeast, which had reproductive ability. However, after knowing the value of the all-purpose medicament, of course, he would never do such a stupid thing by killing the goose that lays the golden eggs.

"I don't intent to sell the secret recipe!" Zhang Tie took it seriously as he didn't make any compromise to Zhang Taibai's status and the relationship between Zhang Taibai and Lan Yunxi.

This time, Zhang Tie's shred and crisp attitude caught Lan Yunxi's attention, who stared at him with amazement, 'This guy is

decisive when he's not being shameless.' Lan Yunxi mumbled inside.

"No more consideration?" Zhang Tie's direct attitude shocked Zhang Taibai a bit. Zhang Tie had refused him even without asking the price. 'This answer indicates that he either doesn't like money or has a trump card.' Zhang Taibai thought for a second. However, considering Zhang Tie's age and his behavior in the Breaking-Heavens Department recently, it would never be the first reason.

"How about taking a look at the place where I produce the all-purpose medicament?" Zhang Tie didn't answer Zhang Taibai's question directly. Instead, he proposed a suggestion which Zhang Taibai would never refuse. Zhang Taibai's main purpose was to figure out Zhang Tie's ability to produce all-purpose medicament. If Zhang Tie was really capable of mass-production of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie's value had to be appraised once again.

Lan Yunxi was also curious about where Zhang Tie produced the all-purpose medicament, so she didn't refuse this proposal either.

They soon arrived at the Poria Cocos Park.

When the girls were here, they didn't know Zhang Tie was producing all-purpose medicament here. Therefore, strictly, it was Zhang Tie's first time guiding people to visit his "plant" for producing all-purpose medicament.

Previously Zhang Taibai and Lan Yunxi thought that Zhang Tie would guide them to the lab. It was really beyond their

imagination that Zhang Tie would guide them to a warehouse in the Poria Cocos Park.

Because it was daytime, with light casting through ground glass and metal protective nets in the windows on one side of the warehouse, the entire warehouse felt clean and refreshing.

At the beginning, Zhang Taibai and Lan Yunxi didn't connect the 100 huge, tidily arranged terrines with Zhang Tie's all-purpose medicament. However, they looked around and saw nothing else but those terrines. Then they became startled.

Is that all-purpose medicament in these terrines? Not only Lan Yunxi, even Zhang Taibai was stunned. Even Zhang Taibai had not seen such a shocking scene before.

"Is...the all-purpose medicament in these terrines?" After realizing that, Zhang Taibai asked Zhang Tie, still full of doubts.

"Hmm, not now, you have to wait 2 months longer!" said Zhang Tie calmly, revealing a smile.

Zhang Taibai took a deep breath as he stared at Zhang Tie with gleaming eyes. He looked so serious. "Can I have a look?"

"As you will!"

Zhang Taibai then casually walked in front of a huge terrine and opened its lid. In a split second, a refreshing fragrance had drifted

throughout the warehouse. The moment he smelt it, he became spirited. Although the super enzyme had not been fermented well, it had already started to give off its unique fragrance.

After observing the solution in one terrine, Zhang Taibai moved to another and started to check inside seriously once again.

Noticing that Zhang Taibai had been attracted by those terrines, Lan Yunxi felt it unimaginable. Zhang Tie took a look around and found that there were only 3 people in the entire warehouse. Zhang Taibai's 2 bodyguards didn't follow them in. Instead, they were guarding outside the gate of the Poria Cocos Park. Therefore, Zhang Tie silently stretched out his hand and held Lan Yunxi's delicate hand.

The moment Lan Yunxi realized her hand was held by Zhang Tie, her face blushed at once. She attempted to shake off Zhang Tie's hand stealthily, and yet she couldn't. Therefore, she could only wait for Zhang Tie bashfully and told him by mouthing silently — "B*stard, let go of me!"

Zhang Tie smiled pleasantly as he continued to firmly hold Lan Yunxi's hand. Lan Yunxi's hand was delicate, a bit icy and fragrant. Zhang Tie just did as he pleased and kept holding her hand in this way. As his beloved girl was right in front of him, if he was not even brave enough to hold her hand, how could he marry her?

Zhang Tie was feeling pleasant too early.

As Lan Yunxi stomped directly onto his feet.

"Argh..." Zhang Tie shrieked, while Lan Yunxi hurriedly shook her hand out of his.

Zhang Taibai turned round from behind the pile of terrines, "What happened?"

They both pretended nothing had happened.

"Argh...I just remembered suddenly that 2 terrines had been well fermented. You can have a try. This thing tastes not bad!" Zhang Tie covered that painful expression with a forced smile.

Lan Yunxi couldn't help but snigger. Only Zhang Tie could pick up the hint of pleasure in her smile. "Now that junior brother Zhang Tie mentions it, we will have a try then!" she said.

"Fine, wait a minute please; I will go get some cups!" When turning round, Zhang Tie slightly gritted his teeth towards Lan Yunxi while she rolled her eyes towards him...

Zhang Tie had soon fetched some cups. He came directly to the 2 terrines that he had filled with the well-fermented super enzyme. The moment he opened one of them, the special and refreshing fragrance in the warehouse instantly increased more than 10 times.

Zhang Tie lifted two bamboo dippers out of the terrine and filled them into 2 big cups, each of which contained 300 to 400 millilitres. Zhang Tie got one cup for himself too.

"Have a try, it tastes good!" Zhang Tie gave one cup to Zhang Taibai and Lan Yunxi respectively.

Actually, Zhang Taibai and Lan Yunxi had not tasted all-purpose medicament before. With only a sniff, they both felt very comfortable. Without any hesitation, Zhang Taibai took a mouthful of it. His eyes gleamed. He then had another mouthful of it.

"Martial sister, have a try. Super enzyme is a top beauty product. It could beautify your skin and delay aging. As you are so beautiful, you have to maintain yourself well. Your husband would like that!" Zhang Tie pretended to be serious.

"Yunxi, have a try, it really tastes special!" Zhang Taibai also suggested.

Lan Yunxi also knew that a filthy mouth could not utter any decent language. After glaring at Zhang Tie, she didn't couldn't help but have a sip. In a split second, Lan Yunxi's furrowed eyebrows stretched out. She had not imagined that a villain like Zhang Tie could produce such a yummy enzyme. This might be the best drink that she had drunk since she was born.

Zhang Taibai bottomed up and licked his lips. He then looked at Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then got another cup for him while reminding him, "You might be drunk if you drink too much. Take care of it!"

"Have you been drunk?"

"Once, but it also feels very comfortable when you're drunk. When you wake up, you will feel fully energetic and as strong as a tiger!"

After having another two mouthfuls of it, Zhang Taibai watched Zhang Tie seriously as he sighed, "I finally know why you would not transfer the secret knowledge. Because nobody would see a gold mine for only a few gold coins. How much all-purpose medicament do you have in the warehouse?"

"About 11-12 tons!" Zhang Tie seriously answered, "They could be filled into more than 110,000 vials of all-purpose medicament!"

"Do you know their value?"

"Previously I didn't know, but now I know a bit!" Zhang Tie smiled as he pointed at those terrines and said in a calm way, "2 months later, their market price would vary from 600,000 to 1 million gold coins!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, even Lan Yunxi couldn't stand but glance at Zhang Tie. Born in such a great clan, of course she knew more about the value and power of gold coins. 600,000 gold coins was not a small amount of money anywhere. It could even heavily armed infantry. The status of the first place on the Hidden Dragon Wealth List was only more than 200,000 gold coins.

"How much could you produce? Do you have difficulty in production?"

Hearing this question, Zhang Tie, who had long prepared for this question, didn't tell him all the truth. Actually, Zhang Tie could produce as much as possible without any obstacle. In another word, "With sufficient raw materials, namely various fruits, I could probably produce 400-600 tons. As it will consume a lot of energy and physical strength, this amount has reached my physical limit. The two terrines of all-purpose medicament were catalyzed in a special way. I only have these two well fermented..."

"You can catalyze them as you will?"

"Theoretically, I can catalyze a few super enzymes first, but I will never do that again as this catalysis almost drove me mad and heavily destroyed my reiki!" Zhang Tie said in a frightening way, which looked like he truly had "catalyzed" the two terrines of all-purpose medicament.

Actually, "catalysis" is b*llshit. Even if he had Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie would not be able to shorten the fermenting time of essential-energy reiki yeast. He said this to stop this from happening again.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Taibai nodded. With the ability to produce at least 400 tons of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie was qualified to cooperate with Long Wind Business Group. It's a worthwhile travel, Zhang Tie is truly able to produce all-purpose medicament on a large scale.

"I think we can talk further about cooperation now!" Zhang Taibai smiled.

"I'm able to produce all-purpose medicament on a large scale while Long Wind Business Group has existing channels and markets, we have both the opponent's demands. If the conditions are suitable, I would be pleased to collaborate with Long Wind Business Group!" Zhang Tie expressed his intention in a kind way.

"We need to confirm the quality of your mass-production of all-purpose medicament. As for the first purchase, we might not order too much, only 20,000 vials!"

"No problem, you can get your products in 2 months. 6 gold coins per vial. You can return them once you find any problem with them!" Zhang Tie was very confident.

"If there's no problem with the 20,000 vials and your ability for mass-production of all-purpose medicament is verified, we will order much more in the future."

"How much?"

"At least 2 million vials a year!" Zhang Taibai pointed at Zhang Tie's warehouse, "This site is too small and could not meet the demands of Long Wind Business Group! On the premise of maintaining the quality of all-purpose medicament, we hope that your manufacturing scale could be expanded. Considering its multiple effects, in the end, the market demand of this

medicament would be an astronomical figure. Therefore, we need to prepare for mass production in advance!"

Zhang Tie smiled, "Why not build a base for producing all-purpose medicament on the Hidden Dragon Island?"

"Okay, the production base will be prepared by the Long Wind Business Group. It will be built on the Hidden Dragon Island. We will cooperate on the mass production. Long Wind Business Group will be responsible for selling the medicament, but we need to have shares!" Zhang Taibai's eyes radiated shrewd light.

"I will build the production base by myself and I will not transfer the shares. Although Long Wind Business Group can be a main dealer, you are not exclusive. I can have at most 4 main dealers. But I will not provide Long Wind Business Group with less than 2 million vials of all-purpose medicament. My supply price to you will not be higher than those to other main dealers!"

Zhang Taibai gazed at Zhang Tie with a frown. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie was that shrewd. He was not like a 16 to 17 year-old teenager at all. Instead, he was more like an experienced businessman, who cared too much on key problems and reacted so fast.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Taibai said, "A safe and highly efficient production base requires much money. Now that we've determined to cooperate with each other, we need to build the production base right now. Otherwise, the supply would not catch up and would cause the loss of so many opportunities!"

"Right, you can loan me the money. I will take the payment of medicament as the mortgage. I will use your loan and entrust you to build the production base for me. But I have the right of say, that's my medicament!" Zhang Tie pretended to be very serious. Compared to the Long Wind Business Group's concern about the quality of the mass production of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie was full of confidence and felt nothing to be concerned about.

"If you don't like that, you can wait for a while; when I sell out this batch of products, I will have money to build the production base myself. But it will take me several more months! We can talk about the cooperation by then. Given the reputation of Long Wind Business Group, the conditions that we have reached will remain unchanged!"

"You really don't want to transfer the shares of the production base?"

"Will Huaiyuan Palace transfer its shares of the plant where they produce crossbows and rune equipment?" Hearing this, Zhang Tie refuted at once.

'How could an emperor allow his opponents to sleep beside him?' Zhang Tie would definitely master the full right of mass production of all-purpose medicament. Nobody else was allowed to interrupt. He didn't want to listen to others' orders on distributing medicament. Especially for powerful cooperators like Long Wind Business Group, if they were responsible for the production and sale of all-purpose medicament, he would lose his real control over it! If Donder knew that Zhang Tie was satisfied with only a few

gold coins by being a senior employee of others when he could produce all-purpose medicament by himself, he would definitely jump from the ground and slap him sharply. In terms of tactics, he definitely could not defeat Long Wind Business Group. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't spare any chances for them at the beginning.

Although stockpiling goods before sale was not a shrewd pattern, it worked at least for rare commodities!

Zhang Taibai watched Zhang Tie expressionlessly while Zhang Tie looked straight into his eyes without any cowardice. They then stared at each other for half a minute in the warehouse in this way. Zhang Taibai's qi became stronger. Even Lan Yunxi on the side could feel the repressive, intense atmosphere in the warehouse. Zhang Tie's performance at this moment was totally different than how he was in Lan Yunxi's eyes before. Comparing Zhang Tie's shrewd, experienced and powerful look in front of her 4th uncle to the shameless guy in front of her, Lan Yunxi felt a strange feeling surging her heart.

"All-purpose medicament is a gold mine. Too many people would have a peep inside. Without the help of Long Wind Business Group, are you sure you can maintain the gold mine?" Zhang Taibai asked calmly after a long while.

"Right now because of this, for the sake of Huaiyuan Palace's Zhang clan and the long-term cooperation between us, I don't agree with Long Wind Business Group having its shares! I don't like suffering a loss or letting others interfere with my personal affairs!"

Zhang Taibai understood Zhang Tie's words at once. He then considered, 'The outcome that Zhang Tie is concerned about might also happen. The more profitable the business is, the more dangerous it would be. Zhang clan is an interesting community, under which, each one has his or her own pursuit for interest.'

"Besides me and my children, I swear that nobody else would be able to master the secret knowledge of all-purpose medicament in this world!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's second sentence, Zhang Taibai fixed his eyes on Zhang Tie for over 10 seconds. Zhang Taibai then suddenly smiled, "Now that you are sticking to it, as you will, you will be responsible for the production base. I will have someone here to talk about the details on the cooperation. Are you selling this?"

"Yes!"

"That's fine!" Zhang Taibai nodded as he suddenly shouted loudly, "Ada!"

A bodyguard of Zhang Taibai suddenly appeared at the gate of the warehouse like a spirit. Zhang Taibai pointed at that huge terrine which Zhang Tie had opened and ordered, "Take it away!" That person walked over and instantly grabbed away the huge 100 kilogram terrine.

Zhang Tie was stunned, "What...what are you doing?"

Zhang Taibai looked at Zhang Tie in a dignified way as he put his hand onto Zhang Tie's shoulder, "You told me you were selling this, no kidding in business."

"But..."

"But what..." Zhang Taibai pulled out a gold ticket and patted it onto Zhang Tie's hand, "I bought this terrine!" After saying that, before Zhang Tie made any response, he told his bodyguard, "Ada, hurry up, carry it onto the airship..."

Hearing his words, Ada disappeared from the warehouse like a spirit once again, of course, together with that huge 100 kilogram terrine.

Watching that gold ticket of 20,000 gold coins, Zhang Tie felt like crying as he had not imagined that Lan Yunxi's 4th uncle could play this trick. But his generosity really shocked Zhang Tie as he spent 20,000 gold coins simply like how Zhang Tie spent 2 gold coins. He didn't even blink his eyes by doing that. 'F*ck, it's 20,000 gold coins, 20,000 gold coins...Argh'

...

Rich big figures all seemed to be very busy all day. After leaving Zhang Tie's Poria Cocos Park, Zhang Taibai left by his airship. The moment Zhang Taibai's airship left, Lan Yunxi didn't dare to stay 1 more second in front of a lecherous guy like Zhang Tie. Without even sparing Zhang Tie a chance to utter a word, she immediately jumped onto the treetop and disappeared from Zhang Tie's vision

in the blink of an eye.

Seeing off Lan Yunxi's shadow, Zhang Tie became so depressed.

Long Wind Business Group's work efficiency was seen in the same afternoon. Only several hours after Zhang Taibai left, Long Wind Business Group had assigned a team to build the production base on the Hidden Dragon Island.

When the director of the team spread out a number of building maps for the production base in front of Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie became dumbfounded as those maps were castle's blue prints which had powerful defense abilities...

'I'm going to be a castle lord?' Now Zhang Tie became hyper...

AD. 960, Zhao Kuangyin, the first emperor of Song Dynasty applied special tactics to destroy Jingzhou, Hunan, Houshu (Chengdu today) respectively. AD. 974, he summoned Li Yu, the last emperor of South Tang Dynasty to Bianjing (Kaifeng city, Henan Province today). Li Yu was concerned that he would be detained there; therefore, he dispatched Xu Xuan there to sue for peace. The first emperor of Song Dynasty put it straight, "How could I allow my opponent sleep well on my bed?" From then on, this allusion was used to express that one's sphere of influence or interests should not be violated by others.

Chapter 323: Construction

The largest difference between Chinese castles and western castles was that western castle buildings usually had spires, while Chinese castles were always featured with flank-corner towers with extended lofty and heavy eaves.

Of course, in this age, Chinese castles were built with the same architectural materials and armed defense functions. The whole castle was composed of an exterior wall, barbican, battlements, bartizans, entrenchments, suspension bridges and steam-driven power units.

The entire castle occupied over 30,000 square meters, which included the predominant building of over 10,000 square meters and an airship port of over 20,000 square meters. The building location of the castle was at the foot of the Yunju Mountain, which neighbored the White Dragon Town. The whole castle required 460,000 gold coins which would be loaned to Zhang Tie by the bank affiliated to Long Wind Business Group. Zhang Tie entrusted the professional construction team of Long Wind Business Group to build it.

Zhang Tie needed to discuss the fundamental functions of the castle with the professional building team and posed his own requirements and opinions on this castle. Thus, the professional team chose 3 locations for Zhang Tie, and he then chose Yunju Mountain as the last location.

Additionally, he signed 2 official agreements with Long Wind Business Group. One was the Loan Agreement, while the other was

the Commissioned Construction Agreement on the Castle. After they signed the 2 agreements, on the same afternoon, the construction team of over 600 people had already arrived at the Yunju Mountain on the Hidden Dragon Island by a huge airship and were quartered there where they started the survey work with a great amount of construction instruments.

By the way, not until then did Zhang Tie know that not everybody had the right to construct buildings on the Hidden Dragon Island. Besides the permanent residents on the island, who could apply to build houses and some facilities in the towns, only the clan students of Hidden Dragon Palace were allowed to buy land and construct buildings. That was how the Hidden Dragon Island developed.

The land of over 200,000 square meters on the Yunju Mountain costed Zhang Tie more than 18000 gold coins, which was really expensive. In other places he could have even bought several hundreds of thousands of square meters of mountain forest and land, or even some mountains as a whole with this amount of money.

In this age, much land outside the city walls was not valuable, especially in some underdeveloped regions. Take Blackhot City as an example, so many black regions on the map surrounding the Blackhot City had no owners. Anyone, if powerful, could build a castle over there, even a city if they wanted.

However, at this moment, Zhang Tie was immersing himself in the pleasure of having his own castle. Therefore he didn't care about the land price at all. Additionally, recently whenever Zhang

Tie thought that he could have a castle of his own, he would become delusional and feel that everything in front of him was not real.

Zhang Tie had never imagined that the inconspicuous essential-energy reiki yeast could change his life so greatly. Thinking of the little earthworms, golden uangs and those cheapest sand-scale fish, Zhang Tie was instantly filled with awe about mother nature and its creator.

In this world, nothing was trivial and worthless. This was what enlightened Zhang Tie these days. With this enlightenment, Zhang Tie now wondered how even a humble yeast or earthworm had a special ability to change the world. What special abilities were human beings, the wisest of all creatures, granted by the creator?

Zhang Tie wondered whether each person had a super ability, which they were born with. For instance, earthworms were born with super great vitality and anti-toxic ability, golden uangs were born to be able to carry substances which were thousands of times heavier than their own weight, while essential-energy reiki yeasts were born to be able to complete the fermentation of super enzymes. Nobody taught them how to do that, but they knew how. They were their instincts.

Were human beings born to have some special ability or instinct, which could change the world? Was this instinct a unique symbol of a person who was born to be able to use it like taking breaths, and did that make human beings above the other creatures?

'People are always more advanced than small creatures like

earthworms, golden uangs and yeasts,' Zhang Tie speculated. Zhang Tie thought that if people didn't have such a special ability, this didn't conform with the universal law. Of course, great creatures should be matched with super talents.

What if people were granted with this ability? Why had he not heard about it? In this age, even in the age before the Catastrophe, most people learned talents from schools and other places. Nobody had performed any super talent which they were born with. What was the reason for this? Is it that human beings are the exceptions of the universal law or had they forgotten that they had such special talents?'

Zhang Tie had a great imagination and curiosity, but he didn't like to get into a dead end. Although he could not get the answer now, Zhang Tie didn't prepare to make blind and disorderly conjectures all day long. Instead, he just buried it in his mind like a bookmark with a question mark ——were human beings born with super talents in a book which was put back into the bookcase?

Zhang Tie found that his castle was gradually appearing on the Yunju Mountain at a rapid speed with the efforts of a great number of architectural experts.

On the 3rd day since the construction team arrived at the Yunju Mountain, under the booming sounds of a great number of locomobiles, the land of a simple airship port was cleared out. After that, the construction team paved 2 tracks by 2 railed cranes in different sizes. After that, a great batch of airships flew over there everyday and directly loaded off great loads of building materials.

When the simple airship port was finished, under the same booms of locomobiles, the foundation of the castle was completed in 4 days. After that, the construction team paved the prefabricated foundation steel components on the foundation before they poured in professional quick-drying cement concrete. Then, they started to establish the super large building blocks.

The skeleton of the entire castle was made of standard steel components, which were constantly carried over by Long Wind Business Group's large-scale airships. The team connected and fixed them before pouring them with quick-drying cement concrete or prefabricated bricks. As a result, the castle was growing like bamboo shoots in the spring after rain.

Under the constant construction, the team only took 13 days to complete its capping construction.

After completing the capping construction of its main project, a huge brown cement bulk appeared on the Yunju Mountain, which although it looked ugly, still could present the majesty of a castle.

On June 15, after the shrine burning point was ignited, Zhang Tie completed the ignition of the 13th burning point on his spine and became a will-be LV 7 fighter. As long as a huge centipede's soul fire was gathered, Zhang Tie would officially become an LV 7 fighter. As a result, Zhang Tie's battle-qi totem would also turn from a hell black spider into a fiercer centipede. Additionally, his iron-blood battle qi would be further improved.

On the same day, Zhang Tie received the notice from the Herbs Valley that his first batch of exclusive crystal vials with his own symbol had arrived.

When Zhang Tie was noticed by a staff member of Herbs Valley, he was stopped by Yang Yuankang at the gate of the training field on fundamental swordsmanship.

Compared to the training of fundamental movements, the training of fundamental swordsmanship was more abnormal and nobody could pass its test by chance.

There were only 8 moves on fundamental swordsmanship, which were splitting, chopping, raising, pricking, lifting up, short-quick poking, stirring and holding-back...

If one wanted to pass the test on fundamental swordsmanship, one had to practice each move 1 million times. Everybody was practicing on a steam-driven metal robot which could calculate how many times he had hit one point. For instance, if one pricked that robot's eyes, throat or heart, the data on the "pricking display" would roll up to a higher number.

Similarly, one stroke on the robot's neck, hands and feet, and the data on the "splitting and chopping display" would change accordingly. The robot's 4 metal arms were waving different weapons respectively at a fixed rhythm. The defense or attack of the four arms were in line with the lifting up, short-quick poking, stirring and holding-back respectively.

There was a counter with 8 columns at the bottom of each metal robot. The minimum standard for passing the test of fundamental swordsmanship was 1 million on each column.

This was tough training that could not be evaded without reaching the regulated striking points.

Previously, Zhang Tie was wondering why there was only fundamental swordsmanship in the compulsory courses of Breaking-Heavens Department, instead of fundamental saber skills and fundamental spear skills. Zhang Tie finally understood why Chinese people called swordsmanship the king of weapons, because the 8 sword skills almost covered most of the basic attacking skills of other weapons. Compared to swordsmanship, saber skills were more focused on only splitting up and chopping, while spear skills were more focused on raising and pricking.

The moment Yang Yuankang caught sight of Zhang Tie, he instantly hugged him and said, "Brother, you have to save me this time!"

Chapter 324: Sincerity

'He's ok two days ago, why does he ask for help today?'

"What happened?" Zhang Tie asked nervously as he thought that Yang Yuankang might have encountered some dangers.

"Bro, do you have more all-purpose medicament? You have to give me some more today as my happiness in the rest of life fully depends on you!" Yang Yuankang said with watery eyes.

'F*ck!' Zhang Tie swore inside, 'when do I have the ability to determine whether you are happy or not? How could your happiness be related with me?'

"I've already given your 100 vials two days ago and let you to control the delivery speed. You only need to sell 7-8 vials a day. How come you sell them off so fast?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

The day before yesterday, Zhang Tie supplied Yang Yuankang with 100 vials for 2 weeks' sale. Now, after Zhang Taibai forcefully bought away a huge terrine of well-fermented all-purpose medicament, there was only one terrine of well-fermented all-purpose medicament left useful in 2 months.

It weighed more than 100 kg, which could fill in over 1000 vials of all-purpose medicament. Besides consuming it by himself, Zhang Tie could only supply a limited amount of vials to the market, at most 20 vials a day.

"They have been grabbed away by friends in less than 1 day! Yang Yuankang said in a bashful way, "You know, we're all friends, I feel reluctant to refuse them. Therefore, I failed to control the sales volume. This time, you have to help me, Zhang Tie, I've promised to sell another 10 vials to my friend..."

"Your friend is a woman?" Judging from Yang Yuankang's face, Zhang Tie probably knew what happened.

"Yes, I've fallen in love with her for a long time. Finally, she asked me for help, if I could not do that..."

Zhang Tie understood it at once, "Fine, I will give you 20 more vials, don't forget to control the sales volume this time!"

Yang Yuankang became greatly jubilant as his face started to radiate brilliant light, "That's my brother!"

Right then, a staff in the Administration Center of Herbs Valley of Breaking-Heavens Department found Zhang Tie and told him that the exclusive vials had arrived and urged him to take them away from the Administration Center.

"You've customized a batch of exclusive vials?" Yang Yuankang was really surprised about Zhang Tie's work efficiency. Previously he thought that it would take Zhang Tie a period before customize his exclusive vials. It was really out of his imagination that Zhang Tie had already customized them.

Zhang Tie nodded as he asked Yang Yuankang, "Are you free now? Accompany me to the Herbs Valley, I will get you 20 vials of all-purpose medicament!"

"Great!" Yang Yuankang nodded immediately.

Zhang Tie then went towards the Herbs Valley together with Yang Yuankang. On the way, he inquired Yang Yuankang about the sales situation of the all-purpose medicament.

The popularity of all-purpose medicament was completely out of Zhang Tie's imagination. In Zhang Tie's opinion, the most obvious influence of all-purpose medicament was to replace LV 1 antidote. Its price was much cheaper than LV 1 antidote. By contrast, fewer people would like to buy LV 1 antidote at higher price.

However, this medicament had other functions, its price was not for common consumers. For most of cultivators who came to the Hidden Dragon Island for forming battle qi or reaching a higher level, Zhang Tie's medicament was still not cheap.

Perhaps, someone would buy 1 or 2 vials out of curiosity, it was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that over 100 vials of medicament were sold out so fast.

"Don't you know that, 90% of the all-purpose medicament had been bought away by girls in the Breaking-Heavens Department. Even thought not, they were finally gifted to girls. Girls of Breaking-Heavens Department were the largest and the ultimate

group of consumers!" Yang Yuankang poured out a secret that astounded Zhang Tie pretty much.

"Girls? What those girls need so many all-purpose medicament for?" Zhang Tie asked in astonishment, "for hairdressing?"

"Almost like that!" Saying that, Yang Yuankang also became a bit wordless, "You know that the girls of Breaking-Heavens Department need to train hard. Because of this, their hands, knees, elbows, ankles and soles coarsened. Some girls' faces even turned darker. A few days ago, a girl found that all-purpose medicament could help their coarsened skin become more watery and smooth, like have been newly generated. It could also beautify girls' skin. Soon after, all the other girls knew these effects. As a result, all-purpose medicament instantly became a best-seller..."

"Using all-purpose medicament as facial mask and skin membrane?" Zhang Tie was really dumbfounded. He admired the creativity of these women so much. They could spend everything for beautifying themselves. Although he heard from Ma Aiyun about hairdressing several days ago, he thought they were drinking it; he had never thought that they could play so many tricks with the all-purpose medicament.

"Some of them even use it to wash their hair!" Yang Yuankang added.

"Wash hair?" Zhang Tie felt those women were really unrivaled. Even though he invented the all-purpose medicament, he had not imagined that it could have so many purposes.

"After buying the all-purpose medicament, some female herbal medicine apprentices soaked all-purpose medicament together with some polygonum multiflorum and soapberry. After a few days, they could use the solution to wash their hair. It was said that by using the super enzyme as a shampoo, their hair became both black and bright and smelt very fragrant. Besides, the problem like dropping hair is also solved!"

Certainly, Zhang Tie had not imagined that the all-purpose medicament could have so many effects. Zhang Tie was also shocked inside after hearing all these news. He only had tried to ferment super enzyme with various fruits; perhaps he could also try to mix something else inside, such as, some substances that had cosmetic effect like peach blossoms or roses.

When they talked with each other, they had already arrived at the Administration Center of the Herbs Valley.

After checking Zhang Tie's clan identification plate, a staff in the Administration Center of Herbs Valley directly brought Zhang Tie into a warehouse of the Administration Center as he pointed at a pile of crates marked with Alchemists Association, "These are the 10,000 exclusive vials that you've ordered. Here is the Document on the your exclusive symbol that you've registered in the Alchemists Association!", the staff in the Administration Center passed another paper document folder to Zhang Tie.

Being not too hasty to move away the vials, Zhang Tie open the paper document folder and took a serious look.

That document was an document on the registration of exclusive symbol officially delivered by the Human Alchemists Association. With this document, from then on, Zhang Tie had become the only owner of the exclusive symbol "Manjusaka". Meanwhile, he had the right to use this exclusive symbol on his vials of medicament.

When Zhang Tie opened that document, Yang Yuankang also drew close his head to him and watched that very delicate and mystical symbol on the document.

"Manjusaka?" Yang Yuankang mumbled that word under the symbol in a low voice, "Is this your exclusive symbol?"

"Right, how do you feel?" Zhang Tie directly showed it to Yang Yuankang in a generous way.

Yang Yuankang carefully gazed at that symbol as he revealed a big smile, "Very beautiful! How to say! It is a bit mystical!"

Zhang Tie burst out laughter, "Let's have a look at the vials!"

Saying this, Zhang Tie had directly opened a crate of vials in front of him and took out of a vial from inside before took a careful look.

These vials were totally different from the ones with no symbol before as a square exclusive symbol were carved on the middle of these vials. It was a bloody, mystical blossom, under which was the Chinese character "曼殊沙华", which means 'manjusaka'. With this

symbol, the vials instantly reached a higher level.

"You're now an alchemist master!" Yang Yuankang praised, "How much is the vials that you've customized?"

"26 copper coins for each vial with no symbol, 30 copper coins for each vial with exclusive symbol!"

"Hehe, a bit more expensive than those vials with no symbol that I've bought before!"

"No crap, hurry up, help me remove them!"

"To where?"

"Poria Cocos Park!" Saying this, Zhang Tie had lifted 2 crates of vials by each hand. Seeing this, Yang Yuankang also hurriedly followed up with some crates of vials.

The vial was neither huge nor heavy. A crate could contain 500 vials with exclusive symbol. 20 crates for 10,000 vials of medicament. With the help of the workers in the Administration Center, they soon moved all the vials into the Poria Cocos Park.

With the exception of these vials of medicament, Zhang Tie also ordered a small vial filling machine.

In the Poria Cocos Park, although Yang Yuankang had long

known that it was not difficult for Zhang Tie to produce all-purpose medicament, at the first sight of the almost 100 huge terrines, Yang Yuankang was still shocked for quite a while.

With the help of the small vial filler and the help of Yang Yuankang, it took Zhang Tie less than 20 minutes to fill all the fermented super enzyme from the huge terrine into 1174 wholly new vials of all-purpose medicament in total.

Staring at the 1000-odd vials of all-purpose medicament lying in the cases in a tidy way, Yang Yuankang forcefully swallowed his saliva and mumbled, "Am I dreaming? How could I see so many vials of all-purpose medicament in front of me!"

Zhang Tie then took out 20 vials from them and handed them to Yang Yuankang, "These are all the vials that I could provide in 2 months, you could take 500 vials of them away at any time. As for the rest, I've promised to let some senior sisters to sell a part of them for me! 2 months later, I could provide you 1000 vials of all-purpose medicament months."

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Yang Yuankang nodded. Although he wanted to take all the all-purpose medicament here away, he knew that it was impossible. For all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie had his own plan. It was already very fortunate for him to be Zhang Tie's dealer. Certainly, Zhang Tie won't entrust him for the sale of all the all-purpose medicament on the Hidden Dragon Island as he didn't have the ability to do that.

"From today on, you need to watch out your safety, bro!" Yang Yuankang pointed at a vial marked with the wholly new symbol

"manjusaka", "Once this thing enters the market, manjusaka would be an official brand in the eyes of the public. Although in this way, all-purpose medicament became more expensive and more reliable, you need to know that some bad guys in the Breaking-Heavens Department or on the other places of the Hidden Dragon Island might be jealous about you!"

"Trust me, I will pay attention to that!" Zhang Tie replied. After enlightening the "One Step, One Scenery" situation, Zhang Tie felt that he had reached a greater improvement in his real strength; besides, his Iron-Body Fist had reached a higher level. Additionally, he was now a "Will-be LV 7 fighter". If he fought Zhang Qingguo now, he was confident to beat that guy who was jumping in front of him here and there to spit out blood.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Yang Yuankang friendly urged again about his safety before jubilantly took away the 20 vials of medicament in order to gift them to some girl.

'What an unpromising guy! As long as you got something good, you will gift them to your woman?' Seeing off Yang Yuankang leaving jubilantly with 20 vials of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie sniggered inside.

The moment Yang Yuankang disappeared, Zhang Tie instantly fetched a special pot-cover sized box that he had customized in a goldsmith's shop in the White Dragon Town two days ago from the lab of the Poria Cocos Park and started to be busy in a very meticulous and excited way...

...

When Lan Yunxi returned to his Phoenix-Resting Pavilion in the evening, she received the most sexy gift that she had received since she was born...

Lan Yunxi was the only person who lived in the Phoenix-Resting Pavilion. This was the privilege the number one student in the Clan's Donation List could enjoy. In recent decades, Lan Yunxi was the first female student that enjoyed this special treatment in the Hidden Dragon Palace. Previously, this privilege was usually enjoyed by male students.

As the number one student on the Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution List, she could have one pavilion and 2 exclusive servants. Therefore, there were 2 servant girls arranged for her in the Phoenix-Resting Pavilion.

"Miss, someone send a gift to you today!" The moment Lan Yunxi returned to the Phoenix-Resting Pavilion, Xiaoqing, one of his servant girl had brought her such a news.

"Burn it!" Lan Yunxi ordered in a cold way. Since entering the Hidden Dragon Palace, she had received numerous gifts. Those guys who courted her either considered that they were talented or sent her collection of poems, paintings or music books which almost made her apathetic.

One guy who was excelled at fighting skills yet with a simple head, gifted her a gorgeous, powerful gold-edge saber being blissed with several rune effects. There were rings on its back. The saber

weighed more than 80 kg.

The second day after she received the saber, Lan Yunxi ferociously tamped that guy with his saber, causing him pass out with full of bumps on his forehead. From then on, all the male students in the Breaking-Heavens Department knew that Lan Yunxi didn't like others to gift her weapon. Therefore, more people tended to gift her poems and music books.

Besides the above-mentioned guys, Lan Yunxi always saw men talking about national affairs in front of her or doing everything to please her. Some men didn't even dare to look into her eyes.

All the guys who talked about national affairs thought they were not like average people and they disdained to please her in those naive tricks. By comparison, those guys who would like to do everything to please Lan Yunxi all had good plans, which made Lan Yunxi directly throw off their gifts. As for those who were not even brave enough to look into her eyes, she thought they were not brave to send gifts to her either.

"This one is special, not like the previous ones. I cannot easily burn it. Please have a look by yourself, Miss!" Xiaoqing revealed a smile.

Lan Yunxi then glanced at that gift. It was too rustic, sexy and extremely vulgar.

On the top of the gift was a bundle of vulgar yet beautiful roses which were as large as a pot cover. Under the roses were a more

vulgar gold jewelry box, which weighed more than 10 kg. Opening the box, she saw a deep blue mattress made of velvet. On the mattress were standing 99 vials of all-purpose medicament in a tidy way, which formed a heart-shaped pattern.

On the vials were a message left to Lan Yunxi.

Taking that notepaper, Lan Yunxi read the extremely awkward words, it was a damn b*llshit doggerel.

All-purpose medicament is truly good, no matter men, women, old and young, they all need it.

Beauties with it would grow prettier year by year.

No matter how much you hate me, I will sent you my sincerity!

The signature of the doggerel was ——You know!

Reading this doggerel, Lan Yunxi's face changed every now and then. She looked both happy or furious.

"Miss, do you need me to throw these things away?" Xiaoqing observed Lan Yunxi's face carefully as she asked in a faint voice. Although these things were valuable, Lan Yunxi could also easily throw them away if she wanted as she had even thrown away priceless night-luminous pearls without a blink of her eyes.

"Who sent them here?"

"A 16-17 student from Hidden Dragon Palace with a grinning face!"

"Is it a grinning face! It's a stealthy face!" Lan Yunxi made a cold hurrumph.

"I will throw it away then..." Saying this, Xiaoqing pretended to throw them away.

"Stop..." Lan Yunxi stopped Xiaoqing while saying calmly to her with a serious look, "These flowers look really good, it's a pity to throw them off. Just keep them!"

"Yes, Miss!" Xiaoqing revealed a wisp of smile at the corner of her mouth.

...

One hour later, lying in a bathtub being covered with petals, Lan Yunxi held a vial of all-purpose medicament. Watching at the exclusive symbol, she became slightly perplexed——Manjusaka, how could that villain come out such a poetic, sad and beautiful name?

Looking at her naked body in the mirror, Lan Yunxi thought of a b*stard. Not knowing why, Lan Yunxi's cheeks gradually blushed...

Chapter 325: Being Traced

Standing on the exterior wall of the castle, Zhang Tie watched a constructor operating a railed trailer to push a huge set of steam-driven boilers from a faraway material center to the foot of the gate of castle. The rail crane slowly lifted the set of steam-driven boilers in the air.

Safety hats on heads, some constructors of Long Wind Business Group fastened some wire cables onto the hanger plate to keep the balance of the huge machine while communicating loudly with the operators of the railed crane on the high platform.

"Slowly, slowly, a bit left, right, a bit left, okay, keep lifting, keep lifting, right..."

The construction site was so boisterous. Everybody was busy doing their own work. After the main project of the castle was completed, there were a lot of follow-up projects to carry out, among which, the most important was the installation and commissioning of the steam-driven power units and various defence weapons of the castle as well as the internal and external decoration and greenery of the castle.

The contour of this castle gradually became clear, but it was really ugly. It was just a concrete lump with exposed cement and various bulky steel components which was far from good-looking.

Liu Gong, the director of the construction team of Long Wind Business Group and a steward of Long Wind Business Group

accompanied Zhang Tie to inspect the progress of the construction with safety hats on heads. Zhang Tie watched as he asked various questions.

"Is this set of steam-driven boilers the main boiler of the castle?" Looking at that huge machine being lifted in the air by the crane as he asked.

"Yes, this is the main power boiler of the castle. It's output power is 9600 horsepower. Normally, this main boiler would be used to provide power to the ground-to-air weapons and 2 crossbow cannons. Being matched with it are 2 regular power boilers with slightly less output power. With 3400 horsepower as the output power of each regular power boiler, regular power boiler was mainly applied to drive some distributed-type attacking systems and small crossbows that were going to be installed on the castle!" Realizing that Zhang Tie's question was involved with his own profession, Liu Gong replied at once.

Zhang Tie then pointed at that highest defence bartizan in the castle and asked, "Is this main power boiler going to be installed under that bartizan?"

"Yes, this main power boiler is going to be installed in the power room of the bartizan. The other 2 boilers would be installed here and there..." Liu Gong pointed at 2 places in the external castle and the internal castle respectively.

When he remembered how some steam-driven boilers exploded in the past, Zhang Tie became a bit worried. In this age, besides alchemist's bombs, the only thing that could explode would be

steam-driven boilers. However, although the power of steam-driven boilers was very amazing, strictly, it should not be called an explosion. Instead, it was just the result of fast releasing, high-pressure steam energy in an extremely short period, which was different from alchemist's bombs.

Whereas, if the boiler truly exploded, the castle would also be heavily destroyed. Zhang Tie always kept an eye on the construction of this castle. Although he still felt unreal when he touched those icy, hard and crude concrete walls of the external castle, undoubtedly, Zhang Tie had spent a lot of time and money in building this castle.

Besides 400,000-500,000 gold coins's debt, there was something else that he had put on the castle.

Because there was a word "Yun" in Lan Yunxi's name, Zhang Tie then chose the construction site of his castle in Mount Yunju. Additionally, having their own castle was a dream for each boy when they were young; this castle would be the starting point of his undertaking in the future.

"Will these boilers explode?" Zhang Tie asked seriously.

"Hehe, the steam-driven boilers which would explode are old-fashioned. This castle adopts new-fashioned water pipe steam-driven boilers with relatively sophisticated structures. Its thermal efficiency and output pressure are both higher than that of average boilers. Additionally, it has automatic protection switches on water level, temperature and pressure. We can definitely reassure you about its safety and service performance!" Liu Gong patted his

chest with full confidence.

Hearing his explanation, Zhang Tie finally became reassured.

"Now, what we need to consider is actually on the number of guardians and residents inside this castle!" Steward Ou who accompanied by Zhang Tie added, "This castle would be completed in 20 days at most. After then, we can produce all-purpose medicament here. As a result, many people would be attracted here. To support the complete defence and safety system of this castle, 70 guardians are needed in the castle on the Hidden Dragon Island at least; if on the land, the number needs to increase by one time at least due to frequent communication. I wonder about you plan?"

Zhang Tie thought for a short while before asked in a serious voice, "I wonder about your suggestion, steward Ou?"

"Of course, the fastest way is to directly employ armed guardians. We Long Wind Business Group could provide the employment service of armed guardians. Considering the long-term development, you can also directly employ clan warriors!"

"Employ clan warriors!" Zhang Tie was a bit shocked by this suggestion.

Steward Ou revealed a smile, "As you have a castle, you are qualified to employ clan warriors. As long as you could provide them good benefits, many freelance warriors would actually like to serve you, who has a bright future. Therefore, it's very difficult to

employ clan warriors!"

"I'm worried about the loyalty of these clan warriors!" Zhang Tie said.

"Their loyalty needs to be curtailed, however, if you directly purchase slaves or those self-selling slaves, as long as you show them hope, you could easily curtail their loyalty."

Since coming to the Huaiyuan Prefecture, it was Zhang Tie's first time to hear that slaves could be traded here. The term "self-selling" slave sounded fresh.

"You mean there are slaves in the Huaiyuan Prefecture? I also want to know what is a self-selling slave?" Zhang Tie became interested.

"There's no slave in the Jinyun Country as a whole, or there's no mechanism to force the production of slaves, but Jinyun Country and Huaiyuan Palace don't forbid slaves and population trading. Many countries on the Waii Sub-continent admit the existence of slavery. There're also many countries on other continents that admit the existence of slavery as population and slaves trafficking is a very significant pattern of population flow between continents and countries. The alleged self-selling slave refers to those who feel voluntary to give up and sell their own human rights by selling themselves to others as slaves. They are commonly seen in Huaiyuan Prefecture and Jinyun Country. After all, not everyone in this world could live well or make the most of their life. There is always someone who doesn't even have food to eat or to survive. If they voluntarily sell themselves for food and sustainable living, of

course we will feel pleasant to accept them!"

Hearing this explanation, Zhang Tie became silent. He remembered the content in the book General History of Human Clan that he kept reading these days. According to the book, farming slavery still existed even before the catastrophe when people considered their science, technology and civilization were the most developed.

Before the catastrophe, farming slaves existed in many countries. It was typical in some democratic countries which carried out apartheid. Those farming slaves didn't have productive materials, political rights, right of free migration or property right; sometimes, their corpses didn't belong to them either.

They were forced to work on land and stand various unfair events like economic exploitation, political oppression and discrimination on personality for their whole lives. Sometimes, in front of the bulldozers driven by powerful violent machines, their dignity could not even match a dog. In that age, everything was calculated in terms of price. After a farming slave was killed by people casually, his family could only gain 20-30 gold coins as the compensation; however, in that age, the price of many noble dogs was even as high as 1000 gold coins. Dogs that worth above 100 gold coins could be seen everywhere.

When Zhang Tie recalled the various existences of slaves before the catastrophe, he didn't feel curious about those slaves in this age.

Zhang Tie thought it through at once as he felt that reading could

truly broaden one's vision.

"Hmm...does this exist in Huaiyuan Palace?"

"Are you kidding me? If people in Huaiyuan Palace have become self-selling slaves, why would we find our Clan Affairs Pavilion and our clan? As the posterity of Huaiyuan Palace, no matter how poor we live, our clan would at least give us a hand. Any posterity of Huaiyuan Palace could easily find a job in Huaiyuan Palace to survive. Those self-selling slaves are under strict management in all Chinese countries. There's definitely no self-selling slaves from big clans. Even if there is, nobody would dare to buy them!"

"Where can I buy slaves in Huaiyuan Prefecture?"

"The largest population trading market in Huaiyuan Prefecture is in Stars Viewing City. They are under the management of Zhang clan. Average slaves and self-selling slaves worth about 50 gold coins each. Kids would be cheaper while beautiful women and male technicians would be a bit expensive. The price of slave warriors above LV 6 would be higher than 600 gold coins." Steward Ou explained.

"Is slaves trading normally seen in Huaiyuan Palace?"

"Hehe, rich people would always have some slaves."

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie made the decision at once. He smiled, "Now that Long Wind Business Group can provide

armed guardians, I will employ 80 armed guardians from Huaiyuan Palace first to run the castle. Then I will take a look in Yunzhou City!"

Steward Ou also revealed a smile, "Now that you want to employ armed guardians from Long Wind Business Group, I will bring you the agreement tomorrow!"

"Is it expensive?"

"It might be expensive for others, but for you, it's too cheap!" Steward Ou said.

Zhang Tie burst out in laughter. He really enjoyed this compliment. He found that as long as male had money, they would gain more respect.

'It really feels nice to have money!' Zhang Tie mumbled.

In the next half an hour, Zhang Tie made a round in the castle with curiosity. He inspected project progress of the castle, especially fixed his eyes on the various pipes that were to be used to connect some steam-driven power units. Finally, he came to the Black Dragon Town satisfactorily and prepared to enter the Dragon Cave to form his LV 7 battle totem——A huge centipede.

It was good weather today with bright sunshine. After knowing that his gift was not thrown away by Lan Yunxi from the Phoenix Resting Pavilion, Zhng Tie became very happy. He felt that both

his love and undertaking were developing towards a good direction. After inspecting his castle, he became more excited...

It was more populated than before in the Black Dragon Town. Zhang Tie first came to the drugstore opened by Yang Yuankang and the other senior brothers, only to find that the drugstore had been closed by noon with a plate on the door——The all-purpose medicament today has been sold out. We will open 9:00 am tomorrow and sell another 6 vials. One vial for each person. Don't jump the queue please!

Although the plate had been displayed, including the number of vials to be sold tomorrow, there were still dozens of people sitting on stools and quilts outside the store while chatting with each other.

Seeing Zhang Tie peeping inside, some of them shouted, "Brat, if you want to buy the all-purpose medicament, move to the end of the line, haven't you seen so many people waiting outside here..."

"I want to know why do you wait here for? Isn't it said that there are only 6 vials of all-purpose medicament to be sold here tomorrow?" Zhang Tie glanced at that line with a dubious expression.

"Ha, if we can't get one tomorrow, we will get one the day after tomorrow or two days later. If we wait here for 3-5 days, we will definitely get one. As long as we get one vial here at the cost of 8 gold coins, we can sell it at the price of 10 gold coins so easily. As we are all commoners on the island, we would never make money so easily by doing other jobs!" That man who stopped Zhang Tie

explained.

"Yea, I heard these all-purpose medicament is produced by an alchemist master. It only takes him a short while to produce some vials of medicament a day to survive us a year!" Another one added.

'Alchemist master, when do I become an alchemist master. I'm not even a herbal medicine apprentice.' Zhang Tie felt a bit hilarious. Message had been distorted when it came out of the Hidden Dragon Palace.

"I have another question. Who will you sell the medicament to?"

"Of course, those women on the island!" Those guys stared at Zhang Tie like looking at an idiot, "You don't know that? Although those women on the island are good at fighting, when they talked about the effect of all-purpose medicament, they always use words like skin beautifying and regeneration and anti-aging, which are nothing to do with average women. That day, I met a woman; I offered her 11 gold coins for one vial of manjusaka, she bought it without even a blink of her eyes. She even felt it was too cheap!"

"Why not ask for more gold coins!" The others started to feel regretful with him.

"But I don't know that woman is so rich..."

When they discussed about that, Zhang Tie had left from that

drugstore. 'Women, women again. How could these women act like flies sting smelly chicken eggs when they heard about something that could make them more beautiful and younger? Zhang Tie had not imagined that it was same both in and out the Breaking-Heavens Department. If it kept going like this, he was afraid that all the all-purpose medicament that he produced would be their cosmetics.

Zhang Tie could imagine how his all-purpose medicament is sold on Ma Aiyun's side. He heard that his all-purpose medicament had been sold out among the girls of Breaking-Heavens Department even before Ma Aiyun and the other senior sisters opened a drugstore in Blue Dragon Town.

Zhang Tie estimated that such a situation would last at least 1 month. Not until the latest batch of medicament was well fermented could this situation be slightly improved.

However, knowing that his medicament becoming so popular among the girls, Zhang Tie also became very thrilled as this indicated that he had more chance to contact Lan Yunxi in the future.

After leaving the drugstore, Zhang Tie casually made a round in the Black Dragon Town. With his super spiritual energy and sense, Zhang Tie instantly found something abnormal.

He felt being traced...

Chapter 326: Betrayal

Zhang Tie was a bit shocked about being traced, yet he still pretended to wander in the Black Dragon Town. After that, he saw a lane on the roadside; therefore, he flashed in.

After Zhang Tie rushed into the lane less than 20 seconds, two shadows appeared at the entrance of the lane. After exchanging glances with each other, they also rushed in the lane.

This lane was less than 2m in width. After walking forward over 30 meters, Zhang Tie turned a corner and stopped. With arms crossed and eyes narrowed, he leaned against the wall and slowed his breath. Meanwhile, he started to hear the footsteps in the lane.

Over 10 seconds later, the subtle sound of footsteps became clearer. Based on the sound of the footsteps, Zhang Tie knew that he was traced by 2 people. They both moved very swiftly.

When the sound of footsteps became closer to the corner, Zhang Tie instantly flashed out and launched an attack...

The 2 people had not imagined that Zhang Tie could attack them first, but they were obviously experts. The moment Zhang Tie punched them, they reacted to it and hurriedly counterattacked him.

With two muffled sounds, Zhang Tie sent both of them 2 m away.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that he could end the battle at once; he had not imagined that those two had such great fighting abilities.

"Sto..." Before one guy was able to say something, Zhang Tie had thrown another punch. Zhang Tie's strength was so huge that the moment they reacted to his another attack, the two guys felt having no other ways but to forcefully hold it back.

'F*ck, how can a LV 6 guy have such huge strength?' The two guys swore inside before held back his attack.

Feeling the huge strength, they were sent flying several meters away again. Like their shadow, Zhang Tie closely followed them and punched for the fourth time...

This time, Zhang Tie attacked more ferociously and swiftly. After four moves, he had forced the two people over 10 m back.

With a sound of "Qing", one guy could not stand any more. He directly pulled out his long sword from his back.

When sword qi spread in the lane like spring rain, with only one movement, Zhang Tie had left the attacking range of the sword qi and stood in the pavilion. He then started to appreciate the scenery of the "spring rain" like a tourist on the grassland.

Compared to Zhang Tie's attack before, his retreat shocked them too. The two people knew their real fighting abilities. Seeing his

partner apply the fighting skill "sword rain" and it did not even touch Zhang Tie's clothes, one guy was really stunned as he realized that he had encountered the most powerful opponent in his life.

Although "sword rain" was a defensive move, it was also aggressive like needles in cotton. Whether it could be well applied depended on the person who applied it. However, a LV 9 sword master-hand only forced him one step back. Zhang Tie's quick judgement, response and easy expression really shocked them.

Seeing Zhang Tie's gleaming eyes and the gradually rising battle-qi totem on his back, the guy who used his sword before hurriedly shouted loudly.

"Stop, we are from Long Wind Business Group!"

Hearing his explanation, Zhang Tie became slightly surprised as the rising battle-qi totem disappeared at once, "You say you are from Long Wind Business Group, show me your identification certificates!"

After exchanging glances with each other, they presented their identification plates to Zhang Tie. After checking their identification plates, Zhang Tie completely hid his qi and slightly frowned his forehead, "Why do you trace me then?"

Whoever being traced would not feel good, including Zhang Tie.

That guy who pulled out the sword had put it back into the sheath.

"As Long Wind Business Group is worrying about your safety, they arranged us to protect you stealthily!" Another guy explained with an innocent look. They had not imagined that Zhang Tie was that shrewd. Two LV 9 experts traced a LV 6 man, yet was noticed and being forced to pull out sword in only a few seconds. What a shame! What a shame!

"Protect me?" Zhang Tie felt a bit hilarious, "Do you mean I will encounter dangers on the island?"

"If you were the old Zhang Tie, you might be safe; but now, it is hard to say. These days, many alchemists had been killed on the land. It was a bit chaotic out there!" That guy who put his sword back into sheath explained.

"Many alchemists were killed on the land?" Zhang Tie was shocked, "Do you know who did this?"

"We don't know. They moved very fast and leave no clue or people alive. These days, alchemists on all continents were scared of them. The Alchemists Association had released the reward of huge amount of money for hunting them. Being concerned about your safety, the Long Wind Business Group dispatches us to protect you stealthily!" They explained everything straightforwardly.

After figuring out what happened, Zhang Tie's bad mood

disappeared at once.

"Big brothers, as I don't know about your status before, I launched the attack. Wish you didn't mind that!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile instantly, "How do I address you then?"

"After exchanging glances with each other, the guy who held the sword burst out in laughter generously, "I'm Liu Xiang, he's Zhang Haichao, Brother Zhang Tie really has great fighting skills!"

"Haha, thanks, big brother Liu. I wonder when will your task come to an end?"

"This is a long-term task. I'm afraid that it will not come to an end until you leave Hidden Dragon Island. You just do whatever you want in the island. We will not interfere with you. We hope you do not mind being traced by us stealthily as we are just following the order!" Zhang Haichao explained.

"I feel really sorry for that..."

"That's our work!" Liu Xiang smiled as he looked at Zhang Tie, "Oh, how did you notice us just now? Old Yang and I have been partners for a long time. We are very confident to not be noticed by the one we trace!"

"I have a very sharp sense. I only felt being traced on the street. As I could not identify you in the public, I have to force you out by setting a trap!"

"How smart!" Liu Xiang nodded, "Brother Zhang is only LV 6, right? But your iron-blood fist is really excellent. Old Yang and I could not even able to hold it back!"

Through a few seconds' battle, although they didn't use their full strength, they all had left a deep impression of each other.

"I'm going to the Dragon Cave to form LV 7 battle-qi totem today!" Zhang Tie explained.

"That's great!" Liu Xiang exchanged glances with Zhang Tie. After knowing that Zhang Tie had almost been LV 7, the two felt much better.

...

One minute later, Zhang Tie walked out of the lane and entered a nearby drugstore to buy a vial of night viewing medicament before heading for the Dragon Cave alone.

Walking out of the other end of the lane, Liu Xiang and Zhang Haichao also bought 1 vial of night viewing medicament respectively. They then encountered Zhang Tie at the entrance of Dragon Cave. With a distance between them and Zhang Tie, they entered the Dragon Cave together.

There were a lot of people entering the Dragon Cave every day. Soon after Zhang Tie and the two people entered, another batches

of people entered too.

...

Two hours later, in the deep, gloomy cave where few people could be seen...

When Liu Xiang and Zhang Haichao passed a underground area of tall mosses, a lot of bolts were shot out of the plants and flew directly towards the two people...

Almost the moment the bolts were shot out, Liu Xiang had charged out like a fierce tiger. With bright sword qi, a wide area of tall lotus-leaves mosses and the second wave of bolts were shattered off by Liu Xiang.

At this very moment, Zhang Haichao had jumped up from the ground like a furious eagle while wearing a pair of eccentric steel claws and launched a furious attack from the air.

Being punched by the two LV 9 experts, the group of killers had to drop off their crossbows and jumped out of that area of lotus-leaves mosses; however, almost the moment they drilled out, they had been torn off into pieces by sword qi and shadowing claws.

Seeing 5-6 corpses lying on the ground, Liu Xiang frowned, "Not right, they look a bit strange..."

"Yea, they don't bleed!" Looking at his steel claws where there

was not blood, Zhang Haichao's face also turned gloomy.

"Hurry up, go find Zhang Tie, he's in danger..." Liu Xiang's face changed at once.

When Zhang Haichao turned, a part of long sword was pierced through his chest. Looking at that part of long sword, Zhang Haichao felt that this was the last thing that he could believe. With eyes turning red, he punched backward, forcing Liu Xiang to draw out of his long sword and move 5 meters back in a split second.

Zhang Haichao then started to spit out dark blood. Liu Xiang's attack not only heavily wounded his veins, but also sharply poisoned him. Swaggering his body, he fixed his eyes on Liu Xiang, "Wh...why...do you betray Huaiyuan Palace!"

Liu Xiang just revealed a smile. With sounds of "shasha" from all directions, a great amount of bowmen surrounded him once again. At the same time, another round of bolts rain were triggered. With a roar, Zhang Haichao kept surging forward and rushed inside the bolts rain...

In a wink, he tore off 5 more people into pieces. When Zhang Haichao wanted to tore apart the 6 person by his steel claws, his body swayed. At the same time, 10 more bolts were nailed onto his body, closely after which, a sword qi flashed by. As a result, his head flew off his body and dropped onto the ground 10 m away, eyes as wide as [copper bells](#)...

"What a pity..." Cleaning the long sword in his hand, Liu Xiang

watched Zhang Haichao's headless corpse, "If not in this way, I might really not have killed you. If not kill you, in a few years, you might be promoted to LV 10 and become a powerful fighter..."

"Nothing pitiful at all!" No until then did a man in black robe walked out of the dark corner and glanced at those corpses lying on the ground in a distant way, "Just some dead bodies!"

"But since then, my status would be exposed!" Liu Xiang let out a sigh, "I've been lurked in Huaiyuan Palace for over 10 years!"

"You should appreciate that Huaiyuan Palace dispatches you here as this is a good chance for you to show your loyalty to us. Now that you've made it, everything you've done is worthwhile!"

"Hope so!" After saying this, Liu Xiang broke his own long sword and punched himself. After spitting out a mouthful of blood, he messed his hair. After that, he ran towards the path where Zhang Tie had passed in a flurried way...

At this moment, Zhang Tie finally met a huge centipede. After killed it so easily, Zhang Tie widened his eyes and watched that ball of soul fire flying towards him and entering his body. In a split second, he had formed his LV 7 battle-qi totem.

Soon after, he saw Liu Xiang running towards him in an embarrassed way...

Chinese usually use "as wide as copper bells" to express that someone widened his or her eyes when he or she was driven especially furious.

In ancient China, gates were always wooden-made, while there were a pair of copper bells on the gate. When there was a visitor, he or she would ring the copper bells to notice the people inside the gate.

Chapter 327: Who Screws Whom?

After using a vial of night vision medicament, although the night vision effect in the cave could not match his vision during the day outside the cave, Zhang Tie was still startled by Liu Xiang's pitiful state.

With bloodstain on his clothes, Liu Xiang's face had turned pale as a sheet and he rushed towards Zhang Tie in a flurried way.

"What happened?" Zhang Tie furrowed his brows as he raced towards Liu Xiang.

The moment Liu Xiang arrived in front of Zhang Tie, he directly tilted his body and fell onto the ground. Zhang Tie hurriedly held Liu Xiang's hands. Liu Xiang then spat out a mouthful of blood in a pretty miserable way.

"We... were attacked. They might target at you...hur...hurry...go..."

"Where's Zhang Haichao?"

"He's blocking their attack!"

"Are you able to move now?"

"Yea, I can. I know a hidden place. They are too powerful and

have blocked the passage to the exit. As long as we survive this period, Long Wind Business Group will definitely dispatch someone to pick us up!"

"Fine!" Zhang Tie frowned his forehead in anxiety as he helped Liu Xiang stand up, "Let's go there together!"

"Fine..."

"Where's that place?"

"Right in front of us. You help me stand and I'll guide you there. Hurry up!" Liu Xiang looked very anxious, but when he said that, a shrewd light flashed across his eyes.

It seemed that Zhang Tie trusted Liu Xiang so much that he directly put one of his hands under the latter's shoulder to support him. Under the guidance of Liu Xiang, they ran towards an underground cave.

The world in the Dragon Cave was a sophisticated three-dimensional maze which was composed of caves, tunnels, and underground space of different sizes. Rugged, weird-looking stones, mountains, subterranean rivers and lakes, various underground plants, and dangerous living beings could be seen everywhere. Magma even flowed through some areas.

Zhang Tie and Liu Xiang kept moving at a fast pace through the underground area. Zhang Tie asked Liu Xiang who had raided

them; but Liu Xiang could not explain it clearly. He only knew that those people attacked him and Zhang Haichao from behind and they used powerful crossbows. Some of them even seemed to be powerhouses.

When Liu Xiang replied, he silently observed Zhang Tie's response. Seeing that Zhang Tie was absent-minded, Liu Xiang finally recovered his composure.

After they'd run for over 10 minutes, they saw an intersection in front of them. On the left of the intersection was a cave while on its right was an underground karst cave.

"That cave in front of us, hurry in..." Liu Xiang said in a flurried way.

When they drew close to that cave, Zhang Tie slightly bent his body and prepared to enter. Meanwhile, in the darkness, with a single move, a weird black 12-cm long needle had appeared in Liu Xiang's hand silently. When Zhang Tie bent over his body, Liu Xiang had put one hand onto Zhang Tie's shoulder.

In a split second, a shrewd light flashed across Liu Xiang's eyes. The moment Liu Xiang prepared to pierce the long needle into Zhang Tie's brain, he suddenly felt cold and painful in his heart. Lowering his head, he saw Zhang Tie's hand which was once put under his armpit to support him had already held a dagger which was directly pierced into the place under his left armpit.

Like how he attacked Zhang Haichao just now. With one move,

Zhang Tie had already destroyed his heart veins. With a dubious look, he gazed at Zhang Tie while not knowing how that dagger appeared in Zhang Tie's hand.

Zhang Tie turned back and stared at him with an icy ridicule.

Liu Xiang shouted loudly as he desperately pierced that weird, long needle towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie instantly grabbed his wrist while he pulled out of his dagger from Liu Xiang's body before stabbed it into other places on Liu Xiang. In under than a second, Zhang Tie had stabbed 8 times into Liu Xiang's chest and abdomen.

"You b*stard..." Zhang Tie stabbed him constantly as he swore with gritting teeth.

Even though it was a LV 9 powerhouse, he could still not believe that he was stabbed 9 times in a split second. Liu Xiang became extremely frightened.

In sharp pains and panic, Liu Xiang uttered weird voice as he punched towards Zhang Tie, seemingly wanting to shake out of Zhang Tie's powerful claws.

"Bang..." Liu Xiang smacked onto Zhang Tie's chest; however, Zhang Tie only made a voiceless harrumph and swayed his body a bit.

Heavily wounded and in a panic, Liu Xiang's attack was not even 40% of what it would be normally. Zhang Tie directly faced it while gritting his teeth with the help of the Iron-Body Fruits that he had eaten.

After being smacked, Zhang Tie didn't even make a voice; instead, he stabbed another 7 or 8 times into Liu Xiang's body.

Liu Xiang then smacked for the second time; Zhang Tie just ignored his attack and kept stabbing another 7 or 8 times.

When Liu Xiang smacked Zhang Tie for the third time, it had been as weak as swatting mosquitoes.

Zhang Tie glared at him. While grabbing one of Liu Xiang's hand, he stabbed the latter another 7-8 times.

In the darkness, Liu Xiang spat out blood while glaring at Zhang Tie's fiery, firm eyes. He then lowered his head to look at his body which was like a broken bag being spoiled by dozens of mice. Moving his lips, he wanted to say something, yet finally uttered no voice but fell down.

Liu Xiang had not imagined that he could fight Zhang Tie like a duel between street rascals. With one hand being grabbed, he was forcefully stabbed to death. He didn't figure it out how Zhang Tie found that he was going to attack him and screwed him over first.

The whole process from Liu Xiang took out the weird black long

needles to his death only lasted about 8 seconds.

In only 8 seconds, the battle had come to an end. As a result, a LV 9 powerhouse fell like this.

"Peh!" Zhang Tie spat on Liu Xiang's dead body whose eyes were still opening. Zhang Tie then squatted to search over Liu Xiang's body swiftly. Finally, he picked up a weird black long needle from Liu Xiang's hand. After carefully listening to the surroundings, Zhang Tie glanced at that huge underground karst cave before diving into it without any hesitation.

This was Zhang Tie's first time killing a LV 9 powerhouse, however, Zhang Tie was not very happy inside as he knew that there were still some with killing intent towards him underground. 'If the opponent could even buy a LV 9 powerhouse who was dispatched by Long Wind Business Group to protect me, it must be very powerful!' Given Liu Xiang's situation, Zhang Tie knew that Zhang Haichao had probably been killed.

Although he was furious, Zhang Tie did not panic. At the critical moment, Zhang Tie was pretty calm. In a split second, he had connected several clues he'd found.

'The most important thing at present is to figure out my enemy! Besides Liu Xiang, how many other people are waiting to attack me? As Long Wind Business Group's representative is Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace, if my enemy dares to do this, they must not be weaker than the Zhang Clan. They might even be more powerful.

Although Liu Xiang, whom I killed is a scumbag, the news that he told me before entering the Dragon Cave must be true — Lately, many alchemists have been assassinated on the mainland.

No matter whether this move is related to the power that assassinated the alchemists or not, there's one point that I can verify, the message that I can realize the mass production of all-purpose medicament must have been leaked. By now, few people in the Long Wind Business Group will know that I can do that; therefore, this message shouldn't have been leaked by Long Wind Business Group. That's what I'm concerned most.'

Even the bodyguard being dispatched by Long Wind Business Group to protect Zhang Tie could be bought, Zhang Tie was concerned how many people he could trust on the Hidden Dragon Island.

'I will depend on myself then!'

After leaving where he killed Liu Xiang, Zhang Tie didn't run far away; instead, he bravely lurked on a hill in the underground karst cave 50 m away. Lowering his body, he hid himself under a lot of umbrella-shaped underground rock mushroom. Staying at a higher location, he narrowed his eyes and silently fixed his eyes on the place where Liu Xiang's body lay.

'If only I had a telescope!' Zhang Tie mumbled. Thinking of his poor utilization of the space in his Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie decided that after this tricky event was solved, he would find a chance to improve the Castle of Black Iron.

After Zhang Tie lurked there in less than 5 minutes, with sounds of clothes flying in the air, a group of people had appeared in that place.

Although they wore different clothes and looked non-uniform, they moved in conformance; additionally, many people were holding crossbows. With only one glance, Zhang Tie had confirmed that these people were on Liu Xiang's side.

If they were not on Liu Xiang's side, they would not have followed his route there so fast. Additionally, they had a clear target. Although people entering Dragon Cave might have temporary combinations, they would not move in such a high level of synergy.

Stealthy movement with high conformance; a clear target; hiding their real status and number as well as the fact that they were in the same organization. Who would believe it if they told these people were nothing to do with Liu Xiang.

The head of the group of people was a guy in black clothes.

"Crap!" At the sight of Liu Xiang's body, the leader's face turned blue at once...

Chapter 328: Collision

Lying under the rock mushroom, Zhang Tie silently watched the strange group. He really wanted to kill them all. There were 16 people over there, including that guy in black clothes.

Zhang Tie couldn't figure out the level of the man in black clothes, but he estimated that those with crossbows were at most LV 8.

If that man in black clothes was lower than LV 9, Zhang Tie was confident he'd be able to kill them all. Whereas, the only problem was that if that guy in black clothes was higher than LV 9, he would be a powerful fighter. Additionally, perhaps this batch of people were just a portion of a larger group. Their partners might be hiding in other places underground. If Zhang Tie exposed himself at this moment, it would be nothing different from committing a suicide. If they blocked Zhang Tie from escaping, when their more powerful fighters arrived there, Zhang Tie would be in a great danger.

Glancing at those guys and thinking about Liu Xiang whom he had killed, Zhang Tie started to make deductions in a split second in a very calm way.

'If Liu Xiang was assigned to screw me, it means that they don't have absolute confidence in killing me.

'If they had such a powerhouse, as long as I came into the Dragon Cave, they would have notified that powerhouse of my location to

directly kill me. They wouldn't have dealt with me in this way.

'If Liu Xiang wanted to keep me alive, it would be more interesting.

'If they wanted me alive, they must have understood the huge value of my manufacturing method of all-purpose medicament. If so, before mastering and verifying the method to produce all-purpose medicament, they won't let me die easily.

'After capturing me, they definitely won't extract my secrets in here, and they won't do it on Hidden Dragon Island; instead, they will definitely escort me to a safe place.

'As Hidden Dragon Island belongs to the Zhang Clan, with the exception of the Zhang Clan's airships and ships, no other vehicles were allowed in. Therefore, the only way they bring me away is to disguise me quickly. If I was found lost today, they would have to take me away from the Dragon Cave on the same day. If not, when Zhang Clan and Hidden Dragon Palace realize what happened, those people would be surrounded and have no chance to leave Hidden Dragon Island any more.

'However, it would be very difficult to bring a live person away from Hidden Dragon Cave. This could not be done by one person.

'If it was the second situation, although more powerful guys might move secretly, Liu Xiang made his move alone as it was the most cost-efficient method. If so, Liu Xiang was their first card, but not the only one. The following cards might be sharper.

'Since they're not afraid of irritating Huaiyuan Palace, they must have made full preparations and considered all the possibilities.

'If it was the first situation, they would only assign a LV 9 fighter here at most to deal with me, who's only LV 6-7 and formed the Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

'If it was the second situation. they would have more powerful guys to catch me; but they would not kill me at once.

'As for the first situation, I don't need to be worry about it; as for the second situation, I will have a chance to negotiate conditions with them and figure out their true purpose.'

In a split second, Zhang Tie had figured out his current situation and determined his next step at once.

As the Iron-Blood Fist was a fist cultivated by a dauntless person and Zhang Tie was born to be adventurous and dauntless, he really couldn't stand it by and just watch those guys come and go in front of his eyes.

Additionally, this was Hidden Dragon Island, the territory of Zhang Clan; it would be especially shameful if he was that timid even on the Hidden Dragon Island!

With a quick thought, a special equipment from the Castle of Black Iron had already appeared in his hand.

That was a leathered container of hidden weapons. After completing the advancement of his awakened bloodline, Zhang Tie had built such a weapon in the Items Department. Besides practicing with them in the Trouble-Reappearance Situation, Zhang Tie had not attacked anybody using them.

What was placed in the container were the extremely common hidden weapons with great power

— handbolts.

It was said that this hidden weapon originated from flying needles which was popular among some warriors or fighters before the Catastrophe. Those powerhouses could even break through thick glasses using flying needles.

Certainly, handbolts were not flying needles, at least in size. They were much larger than flying needles but similar to mini spears.

Each handbolt was 26.4 cm in length and 438 grams in weight. They were made of common steel and iron. Each handbolt was both like a mini spear and a super large flying needle. Zhang Tie made special modifications on their tails according to the laws of aerodynamics he'd learned, making them look a bit flat. In this way, these handbolts could fly faster, more stably, and more powerfully.

When Zhang Tie was LV 6, the effective shooting range of this

handbolt was 90 m. The power of this hidden weapon was similar to that of common spears that he'd used before as they could easily pierce through a huge wolf.

Because of simple design and common materials, these handbolts were excellent low-value consumables. The price of each handbolt was only 2 silver coins in the Items Department of Hidden Dragon Palace. Zhang Tie had customized 2000 bolts in palm. Now, all these handbolts were piled inside Castle of Black Iron, and were available at any time.

Being fastened on his waist, the container contained 12 handbolts. Certainly, if Zhang Tie liked, the number of handbolts could be 120, or even 1200. With the exception of Zhang Tie himself, nobody else knew that Zhang Tie was a movable arsenal with his Castle of Black Iron.

Sometimes, the container of hidden weapons were just props. Like now, after securely fastening his container, Zhang Tie instantly had 10 more handbolts in his left hand like holding a handful of chopsticks.

With gleaming eyes, Zhang Tie held one handbolt in his right hand as he silently changed his position from lying prone into a half squatting stance. In a split second, he had locked onto that leader in black clothes 50 m away.

...

"Leave a small team to clean up the dead body and stay in the

area. Any single person you see, whether from the left cave or the right cave, should be killed!" that man in black clothes said in a merciless tone, as he glanced over the surrounding people icily, "The rest of you will accompany me to get Zhang Tie. He only escaped a short while ago; he can't be far away!"

After ordering his subordinates, the man carefully looked at the trace left by Zhang Tie on the ground as he led a team towards the open area of the karst cave where they were. At this moment, Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes and forcefully shot a bolt towards the leader...

His bolt reached the man's forehead at a speed quicker than sound...

When the bolt was only 6-7 cm away from that man, Zhang Tie thought that a headshot would definitely happen; betraying his expectations, that man suddenly grabbed that bolt at an amazing speed.

Not until then did the piercing sound of the bolt drift into the ears of everyone else, shocking them.

Zhang Tie's bolt was easily caught by him. Watching that blood stain on his hand, the leader's eyes shot out gleaming light. Raising his head, he cast his sight towards that hill where Zhang Tie lurked.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie gradually stood up from underneath the rock mushroom and took a deep breath. Without any fear, he kept

fixing his eyes onto that man. It was his first time seeing his hidden weapon, which was flying faster than sound, being grabbed by a hand. Zhang Tie estimated that the leader was at least LV 10. The two people's furious gazes collided in the air, with a distance of 50 m between them.

"Zhang Tie..." That man squeezed out Zhang Tie's name with a cold expression.

Standing on the hill, Zhang Tie smirked as he stretched out a middle finger towards that man.

The corners of that man's eyes then twitched...

Before the man issued any orders, the other guys had already surged towards Zhang Tie.

If this man could grab Zhang Tie's bolt by hand when being ambushed, in face-to-face fight, no matter how many bolts he threw towards that man, it would be a waste; but, it would be different if he threw his bolts towards the others...

Zhang Tie sneered. When those enemies were closer than 30 m, he shot out the second handbolt...

'This father doesn't think that another one of you can grab my sonic-booming bolt by hand. If I saw a second one among you catch it, this father would escape away right now.'

"Bang...", one guy's head exploded like a water melon breaking.

Zhang Tie rapidly moved away to evade some bolts. While he was running, he kept throwing out his handbolts. He had thrown out 5 handbolts in 2 second, "Bang...bang...bang...bang...bang...", the front 5 people's heads were exploded consecutively 30 - 40 m away from him.

In a split second, half of those people on that man's side were cleared. Nobody could have imagined that Zhang Tie's handbolts would be that terrifying. Compared with Zhang Tie's handbolts, those guys' crossbows were really too poor.

"Retreat..." Realizing that his men could not even evade Zhang Tie's handbolts, that leader shouted furiously as he accelerated towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie then directly rushed towards him from the hill without any fear.

They then collided in the air. Seeing that man punching him, Zhang Tie soared as he also punched towards that man.

The moment their fists clashed, Zhang Tie felt an unstoppably powerful strength surging towards him. At the same time, he felt that his Iron-Blood Battle Qi had fallen into a dark mire and was torn, melted, and engulfed by a strange strength...

With only one move, the opponent's huge strength had already sent Zhang Tie fly backwards in the air.

If he hadn't cultivated any fundamental movements, Zhang Tie would have been very embarrassed. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie made some beautiful rolls backward to counteract a greater part of the opponent's strength. As a result, he landed steadily 10 m away.

Although he looked no different than before, Zhang Tie felt his throat warm blood surging upward and his qi roiling; yet the blood was swallowed back down by Zhang Tie.

Compared to Zhang Tie's embarrassing appearance, that man just descended onto the ground steadily.

"A LV 10 powerhouse fighter?" Zhang Tie watched that guy in black clothes in an extremely gloomy way. He had seen LV 9 fighters. He even had fought 2 LV 9 fighters today; however, this man in front of him felt much more powerful than those LV 9 fighters.

"Good!" That man revealed a distant smile, "If you surrender now, you can still live!"

Zhang Tie burst out a laughter. What he said next irritated the opponent so much that the latter almost spat out blood, "Are you daydreaming? So what if you're a powerful fighter? You are in the Dragon Cave of Hidden Dragon Island. It belongs to Zhang Clan. The powerhouses of Hidden Dragon Palace will arrive soon. By then, they will easily kill you like killing an ant. I urge you to surrender to me and flatter me. Perhaps then, I will save you!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, that man's face revealed his killing intent. Zhang Tie made him very uncomfortable. With a cold expression, he fixed his eyes on Zhang Tie, "Although my primary objective is to take you away from here; if I can't, I can also kill you. Personally, I think I'd prefer to kill you!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie's heart raced, 'Truly as I predicted, this guy is much trickier than Liu Xiang. I really wonder which power is willing to take me down by assigning a LV 9 fighter and a powerhouse to me. That's really a great honor.'

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie then looked at that man's back with a surprised expression.

Noticing Zhang Tie's surprised expression, that man naturally looked back; yet found nothing. However, at the same time, he felt a sharp qi reaching in front of his chest. Knowing that Zhang Tie's handbolt was unusual, he didn't dare to grab it directly by hand; instead, he jumped away while patting Zhang Tie's bolt, causing it to change its flight path.

As a result, that bolt hit a guy with crossbow 20 steps away, and penetrated through his chest, causing a shriek.

When the leader looked back at Zhang Tie, he found Zhang Tie had already dashed dozens of meters away like an arrow.

"Haha, good shot! You don't need to put on such a performance if you want to kill your man by my bolt..." Zhang Tie joked as he ran.

"You are dead!" That man angrily gritted his teeth as he immediately chased after Zhang Tie.

"Look at my bolt..." Zhang Tie shouted loudly. That man then hurriedly jumped out of the way. After changing direction twice, that man realized that Zhang Tie had not even thrown out a handbolt.

"Haha, you really are as timid as a rabbit. You actually want to catch me? Wait until your afterlife..." In a short while, Zhang Tie had run dozens of meters away again.

Being tricked by Zhang Tie twice consecutively, that man was really driven furious as he sped up to chase after Zhang Tie.

"Look out for my bolt..." Zhang Tie shouted once again.

Thinking that Zhang Tie was tricking him once again, he didn't evade at all; however, he suddenly felt a sharp qi close to his lower body. Being frightened a lot, that man realized that Zhang Tie had already shot another bolt towards the location under his left knee. He had no enough time to pat it away by then; instead, he could only change his moving direction by jumping away.

As a result, Zhang Tie's handbolt flew by his left shin. Although it didn't hit the right place, it bruised him, causing a hot pain on his shin.

In such a short while, Zhang Tie had already gotten 100 m away

in the twisting karst cave.

"I will kill you..." That man growled with bloodshot eyes as he continued chasing after Zhang Tie...

Chapter 329: Hunting

If he wasn't even brave to face the enemy, he would be a coward!

When he knew that he couldn't defeat him, if he chose to fight with gritting teeth only to be caught or killed, he would be an idiot.

With the exception of that time when he chose to sacrifice himself for his brothers in Iron-Blood Camp, he would never be that foolish on dealing with other things.

Zhang Tie was neither a coward nor an idiot. He was willing to fight, however, if he found that the opponent was far more powerful than he was and he could not get the anticipated result if he kept fighting the opponent, he would definitely turn back and escape without any hesitation, just like now!

When escaping, Zhang was actually wounded inside due to the first round of fighting with that man in black clothes.

Zhang Tie had ignited 13 surging points on his spine and officially reached LV 7; however, that person was a LV 10 powerful fighter who had ignited at least 55 surging points.

That man was truly powerful, at least for Zhang Tie. The distance of 40 surging points between him and Zhang Tie was like an abyss that Zhang Tie could not cross. This was not the right moment to fight him, even though Zhang Tie had formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi and eaten a great number of fruits.

Actually, Zhang Tie's performance had greatly shocked that man. Before seeing Zhang Tie, that man had never imagined that he could be wounded by some LV 7 kid. What was more amazing was that Zhang Tie could slip away like a loach, staying out of his grasps for so long after wounding him.

The super great endurance and speed brought by 9 Wild-Wolf Seven-Strength Fruits...

The agility and the precise choice of each step after his enlightenment from "One Movement, One Scenery"...

His physical potential after the ignition of 13 surging points and Iron-Blood Battle Qi as the powerful top battle qi was exerted to the utmost by Zhang Tie at this moment.

The underground space where the huge centipedes lived was quite cramped and gloomy; in contrast, the karst cave was relatively spacious, the height of this karst cave only varied from just over 10 m to dozens of meters. Weird-looking rigged rocks could be seen everywhere. The karst cave was twisting and winding, which was totally different from the karst cave where he hunted the hell-black spiders last time.

If the area above the karst cave where hell-black spiders lived could hold a huge city, then the size of this karst cave was as big as an animal's intestinal tract.

Zhang Tie didn't know where this karst cave would lead to; he

only felt that the icy killing intent was getting closer to him.

That man moved much faster than Zhang Tie. The incredible ability of a LV 10 fighter was awe-inspiring. If not for the handbolts, Zhang Tie might have been caught by that man already.

Each time Zhang Tie felt that man would catch him, Zhang Tie would shout loudly, "Look out for my bolt..."; however, Zhang Tie didn't really throw out a bolt sometimes, instead, he just frightened that guy. Other times, he actually threw out a handbolt. By then, that man had to change his moving direction or pat away Zhang Tie's handbolt.

In this way, Zhang could extend the distance between himself and that man at critical moments.

Zhang Tie kept running for over 20 minutes. Finally, that man found the right way to deal with Zhang Tie's trick. As long as Zhang Tie didn't turn around, that man would keep chasing after him; by comparison, the moment Zhang Tie turned around, if Zhang Tie threw out his handbolt, that man would change his moving direction and moved in the shape of a "Z" so as to evade Zhang Tie's hidden weapon.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie also started to be anxious. When he turned around, he would slow down, which slowed him about as much as that man slowed when moving in the shape of a "Z". In this way, the distance between Zhang Tie and that man gradually narrowed.

Gradually, the distance between them narrowed from 100 m to 50

m.

After running for over 20 minutes, Zhang Tie finally saw some people hunting huge centipedes in the underground karst cave.

The 3 people were dissecting a huge centipede that they've killed.

However, all Zhang Tie could only do was to shout loudly towards them, "Hurry up, escape in different directions..."

As Zhang Tie had flashed over them, the three people were still standing in the same spot. Seeing them still standing over there, Zhang Tie sighed inside as he knew that they'd lost any chance of survival.

Several seconds later, three shrill shrieks drifted into Zhang Tie's ears. Zhang Tie turned around to find 3 heads flying in the air amidst a fountain of blood.

'As that man dared to hunt me in the Dragon Cave, he would definitely not allow any witness to live, because as long as those witnesses revealed it in the public, this man will not leave Hidden Dragon Island alive. '

Zhang Tie could see that man's cruel, sinister smile as he licked his lips.

"Motherf*cker!" Zhang Tie was driven furious. Meanwhile, he threw out 2 more handbolts. By moving in a weird way, that man

patted away the last two of Zhang Tie's handbolts from the first batch.

"No more struggling, I promise you an easy death!" After patting away the 2 handbolts, that man kept speeding up.

"F*ck, you b*stard; wait, this father will teach you a lesson sooner or later!" Zhang Tie kept his head down and rushing forward.

"Is that true?" the man ridiculed, "I'm afraid that you will not live to see that day!"

Zhang Tie had soon rushed hundreds of meters away from where those three were killed, as the distance between him and the man closed to less than 30 m. At the sight of an underground lake which covered more than 6000 square meters, Zhang Tie became thrilled at once as he hurriedly dove inside.

There were plenty of water resources in the underground world. There were various creatures in the water, some of which were even more ferocious than those on land. However, since Zhang Tie entered Hidden Dragon Palace, he had not heard about any dangerous creatures in the waters of the underground space where huge centipedes lived. That was why he dared to dive into the lake without any hesitation.

The underground lake was crystal clear. When he dove inside, he could see clearly the shiny little fishes and floating waterseeds.

The moment Zhang Tie dove into the lake, the man arrived at the water's edge. Almost the moment the splatters left by Zhang Tie fell onto the water, that man's skin had turned red as he smacked onto the water with his fierce battle qi, aiming at Zhang Tie's back in the water.

When he smacked the water, his battle qi formed into a black palm that had been amplified many times.

As a result, a 10 m high splatter splashed up like something exploding out of a torpedo. Soon after he dove down 10 m, Zhang Tie felt the surrounding water became frozen while an incredible strength penetrated through the water and struck Zhang Tie on the back.

"Wua..." Zhang Tie immediately spat out a mouthful of blood in the water, tinting the surrounding water.

When one reached LV 8, many advanced battle qis would be able to hurt people without having to touch the opponent. When he was in the Iron-Blood Camp, Zhang Tie had seen Captain Reinhardt performed this using "Man's Certificate". On the training field, Captain Reinhardt released his battle qi and controlled Zhang Tie's Man's Certificate to make a several meters long ditch on the ground with sword qi, which really shocked them.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that the guy could be that horrible. If it hadn't been Zhang Tie, who had eaten a lot of Iron-Body Fruits, any normal LV 6-7 fighter would have been killed.

Through this strike, Zhang Tie knew that he was too lucky when he collided that man in the air earlier and how smart he was by choosing escape.

'If this man had not underestimated my real power, he might have killed me in the first round.'

However, at this moment, although not having lain down, Zhang Tie knew that he had been wounded and could not move as easy as before.

With the inertia of this strike, Zhang Tie dove another 20 m. It was already more than 50 m in depth. Zhang Tie soon arrived at the bottom of the water and found a hidden place to recover while gazing at the entrance of the water; meanwhile, he started to think up some countermeasures rapidly.

That man didn't follow him in. Realizing this, Zhang Tie slightly let out a sigh. At the same time, Zhang Tie also realized that that man must have learnt about how he was a yaksha in the sea. As he knew that Zhang Tie excelled at diving, he didn't dare to follow in.

Zhang Tie admitted that that guy was much trickier than he had imagined. He was powerful, fierce, and cunning. Knowing that Zhang Tie's movement ability was greatly restricted in the water, he kept striking the water, attempting to seal Zhang Tie's fate...

When he figured out the environment under water, Zhang Tie started to cry inside...

Chapter 330: Alchemist Lord

What made Zhang Tie regretful was that there were no subterranean river courses through which he could slip away. It was like a huge bowl had been put underground. Besides some weird shiny aquatic plants and fishes, it was full of icy stones at the bottom of the lake.

With eyes slightly closed, Zhang Tie started to feel the water flow. Along the flowing water, he found an undercurrent at the bottom of the lake.

'That man won't dive in, I won't come out of the water, will we just maintain this state?

'But I have advantage of time now. As long as I don't go out, when the Hidden Dragon Palace and Long Wind Business Group realize there's an abnormal situation, they will definitely send a powerhouse here.' Zhang Tie comforted himself as he felt a bit worried, not knowing what other methods those guys might apply.

After staying in the dragon cave for a long while, benefited from setting free earthworms, Zhang Tie started to feel the effect of his preliminary recovery body.

'It's also a good chance to recover myself!

'Do I need to hide in Castle of Black Iron for a while? As long as I stay in Castle of Black Iron for 2 days, it would definitely be chaotic outside. By then, that guy should have already escaped. '

An idea flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

'No, that's my final trump card for a live threatening situation. I should not expose my trump card until the last moment. As long as this trump card is exposed, it would bring me numerous troubles.'

Zhang Tie then started to recover under water...

That man on the bank was standing still with his icy, gleaming eyes narrowed and fixed on the water.

He knew that he had wounded Zhang Tie just now, but he didn't know whether Zhang Tie had died or not.

Neither of the 2 men moved.

Gradually, the lake recovered its tranquility...

10 minutes later, the man's lackeys finally arrived at here with gasps. Due to Zhang Tie's counterattack, only 8 of them were left alive.

Seeing his lackeys return, that man in black clothes asked coldly, "Have you dealt with those corpses?"

"Done!"

"Fine, Zhang Tie has been wounded by my attack. He's underwater now. I don't know whether he's dead or not; you two, go inside and check whether there's any other subterranean river course or not. If Zhang Tie is dead, get his corpse out of there!"

After glancing at the underground lake, one of them instantly walked out and dove inside the lake.

After 2 minutes, the lake was still tranquil while nobody coming out. It seemed that a terrifying monster was hiding under water. That man who had dived inside the lake seemed to have just disappeared. Seeing this, the other 7 people's faces all turned pale.

"2 more in..." The man in black robe said in a cold-blooded way.

2 of the 7 people then gritted their teeth before jumped inside...

2 more minutes later, after the splatters caused by the 2 men when they jumped inside, the lake became tranquil once again. The 2 men didn't come out either.

"You're still alive; and you have nowhere to go inside. Do you really think that I cannot force you out?" The man in black robe revealed a cold smile before ordered the rest 5 men whose faces had turned completely pale, "Prepare the crossbows and keep an eye on the water. Shoot anyone jumping out of the lake. I only need you to block him a few seconds!"

After knowing that they didn't need to go inside the lake, the rest people all let out a sigh, "Yes, sir!".

When the 5 people stood on five directions over the lake with crossbows, that man in black robe then took out of a pitch-black vial and poured all the liquid from the vial into the lake.

The moment he poured the liquid into the lake, the water inside had already started to turn black. After a few seconds, fish inside the lake started to die one by another. Finally, the water's surface was filled with floating, dead fish.

With a slight sound of "Hula" on the farthest side of the lake, a body suddenly flew out of the water. At the sight of it, the five lackeys who had long waited instantly triggered their crossbows. At the same time, the man in black robe flashed towards that place.

With a sound of "Pata", that body fell onto the bank after being shot by 5 bolts. When the man in black robe and the other guys ran over there and turned over that body, they were startled as it was their partner who had dived inside. Because it was wearing Zhang Tie's clothes, they had not recognized it.

'Too bad!' As this thought flashed across the leader's mind, another splash was heard from the other side of the water as Zhang Tie jumped out of the water and rushed away.

With a growl, that man in black robe hurriedly started to chase after Zhang Tie. As a LV 10 powerhouse, he had been tricked by Zhang Tie many times. He'd been driven completely furious and

had determined to tear Zhang Tie into pieces.

...

Ten minutes later...

With a sound of "bang", Zhang Tie smacked the black battle qi which was launched towards him in the air; however, a powerful aftershock coursed through him and causing him to spit out a mouthful of blood.

After being struck once again, Zhang Tie lost his balance and rolled down along an inclined slope.

That was a pretty narrow, long, and smooth slope of a huge underground valley. It was an intersection of two huge quartz deposits. It extended several hundred meters underground. After losing the control of his body, Zhang Tie kept rolling downward along the slope and became disoriented and dizzy.

This feeling reminded Zhang Tie of that scene that he was forced by some wild wolves to jump into the cave of Gold-eaten boas. What was different was that the man behind him was several times sharper than those b*tches.

Zhang Tie didn't stop until 3 minutes later. The moment he stopped, he felt the bone-scorching heat from the ground along with a surrounding rosy light.

There was a river of magma which was slowly flowing under this seam. With the exception of that slope, he was surrounded by high-temperature lava in three directions.

The moment Zhang Tie forcefully picked himself up from the ground, he had heard a weird ridicule, "jie...jie...jie...".

"Keep running, why stop? You're really good at choosing places. This is a good place to destroy your body!" Like a black cloud, that man jumped off the quartz on the slope and landed several meters away from Zhang Tie. He then started to stare at Zhang Tie with an alert but mocking look.

After rolling down the slope for so long, Zhang Tie had been further wounded. Besides, he was suffering from slight poisoning. As a result, he spat out another mouthful of blood.

After wiping off the blood from the corners of his mouth, Zhang Tie didn't stand up; instead, he kept half-squatting like a wolf and gazed at that man with an unyielding and icy gaze.

"I swear that if I don't die today, I will definitely tear up your family members and those people who assigned you here into pieces!" Zhang Tie pointed at him and firmly swore.

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, that man's pupils narrowed slightly as he replied in ridicule, "Do you think that you can survive today?"

After saying this, that man surged forward like a lightning bolt as he directly smacked towards Zhang Tie's head, aiming to kill Zhang Tie directly and sparing no chance to survive him...

Almost at the same time, a gleaming sword qi brightened up over Zhang Tie's waist like a lightning bolt formed by a red snake...

The battle of life or death was so transient and fierce that in less than a second, they'd already exchanged more than ten attacks...

One second later, Zhang Tie was blasted away by that man. Meanwhile, his red-snake sword drew a curving line in the air and dropped into the river of magma dozens of meters away which then slowly sunk inside...

That man in black robe touched the wound on his left shoulder and the mask on his face; he then looked at Zhang Tie who was spitting out blood and forcefully standing up once again before sighing, "As a LV 10 powerful fighter, I could have ignored most of common fighters under LV 9. I've not imagined that I could be wounded by you three times. You're the first one in the world who could wound me in face-to-face battle. I will never allow you to survive in this world. As we are both Chinese, I'll give you the chance to tell me your last words!"

Zhang Tie could feel his chest and abdomen almost being torn off due to pain. Glaring at that man whose mask had been broken by him, Zhang Tie gritted his teeth and asked, "Who are you?"

"You don't need to know who I am. If dead people actually get to

live in another world, we might have a chance to witness how we are worshipped by all the future generations!" With a wisp of ridicule full of killing intent, that man drew close to Zhang Tie one step by another, "What other trump card do you have. If you don't use it now, I'm afraid that you won't have another chance to use it!"

Zhang Tie slightly narrowed his eyes and showed no panic at all. He truly had a final trump card; however, Zhang Tie was somewhat hesitant.

'I should use this chance to escape...

'I should use this chance to escape...

'I should use this chance to escape...

'Give me a bit more time, I should use this chance to escape...'

Zhang Tie growled inside while that man kept drawing closer to him. Each of that man's step forward was oppressive and cautious which was especially owned by powerhouse.

When Zhang Tie was racking his mind to seek for the last chance of survival in this dilemma, Zhang Tie's eyes were fully filled with amazement that could be rarely seen in this world when he threw his eyes behind that man's back.

"Did you think that trick would work on me a second time and

earn another 2 seconds of life for you, did you think I would actually believe it this time? Ha...ha...unless it's an immortal, nobody can save you at this moment..." Throwing a derisive glance towards Zhang Tie, he ridiculed Zhang Tie's naive and ignorant trick.

"I've never said that I'm an immortal, but I remember that some in the Eastern Continent call me 'Alchemist Lord'!" A faint old man's voice tinged with fatigue drifted from behind the man in black robe.

Chapter 331: Identify People by Their Ears

Hearing this abrupt yet aged voice coming from behind him, the man in the black robe reacted as quickly and ferociously as a lightning bolt. Lowering his body, he turned around and punch out at the same time.

In a split second, the battle qi of the LV 10 fighter rolled up like a dragon. A huge ferocious reptile that Zhang Tie had not seen before had formed. Having been chased after by that man so long, it was Zhang Tie's first time seeing the battle qi totem of a LV 10 powerful fighter.

With a dull thunder in the air, the man had smacked his two palms onto the chest of the person behind him.

Time seemed to stop at that moment...

That man in the black robe also saw clearly who was behind him.

It was a beggar-like, old man with broken clothes and messy hair.

That man was very dumbfounded; but he was not as stunned as Zhang Tie. Because Zhang Tie knew this old man. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could encounter this old man here.

Zhang Tie saw this old man walking out of the river of magma like how people walk out of a common river.

'Someone was able to stay in magma?' Zhang Tie was really shocked.

Zhang Tie even started to wonder if it was an illusion; however, the man in the black robe's reaction told Zhang Tie that it was real, because the man in the black robe heard and saw it too. As Zhang Tie thought all this, the man's attacks connected with that old man's chest.

'What would be the result if a person was smacked by a LV 10 powerful fighter who had exerted his utmost strength?' Zhang Tie knew that if it was him, he would be killed immediately!

However, that old man didn't die; instead, he maintained his expression and his messy hairstyle. With only a glance, the man in black robe had started to shriek miserably.

Zhang Tie also slightly opened his mouth as he watched the guy who had chased after him to shriek horribly like a little girl who'd been raped.

"Argh, how could this happen; my attack was absorbed by you, what the hell are you, argh..."

When the man's hands were 2 cm away from the old man, they had been blocked and sucked in by an invisible wall...

"Nowadays, young men really don't know how to respect old..." That old man let out a sigh, "I didn't mean you any harm; yet, you

want to kill me?"

With the man's shrill cries and Zhang Tie's amazement, the LV 10 powerful fighter's arms started to turn red, they dried up, hardened, blackened, and carbonized like being immersed in magma before scattering like dried ash and fell onto the ground...

After losing his hands in a few seconds, the LV 10 powerful fighter became handicapped and spat out a mouthful of blood before falling down onto the ground with his face to the sky.

After that man fell down, the beggar-like old man moved his eyes onto Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie rubbed his eyes as forcefully swallowed his saliva and fixed his eyes onto that old man with a bitter smile, "O... old man, good to see you again..."

This old man was that same old beggar whom Zhang Tie met in the wharf and White Dragon Town several days ago. When he saw this old man in White Dragon Town, he had been thrown onto the street by some servants of Zhao Mansion and was almost beaten up. Zhang Tie even gave his purse to him at that time.

Since that day, this old man would occasionally come to the wharf to watch Zhang Tie setting free the sandscale fish. He didn't say much; like a lunatic, he usually squatted by the seaside for several hours. As long as Zhang Tie asked him about his family, the old man would be driven mad. Therefore, Zhang Tie only took him as a common, poor, old beggar. As Zhang Tie felt very pitiful about

him, sometimes, he would bring the old man some food or clothes.

It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that such an old beggar could be such a great powerhouse. Without any movement, he had already crippled a LV 10 powerhouse. Zhang Tie could not imagine how powerful such a man was.

Fixing his eyes on Zhang Tie, the old man didn't say anything as he started to look over Zhang Tie.

At the sight of the old man, Zhang Tie's heart started to race at once, 'You'd better not forget who I am at this time, if you treated me like how you treated him, I would not even have a chance to say help.'

Looking at the old man's intense gaze, Zhang Tie hurriedly wiped off the dirt and bloodstain from his face before sorting out his hair to make him look not that embarrassed. After that, he tried to relax his face before forced a smile and slowed his voice, "Don't you remember me? I'm Zhang Tie. The boy who usually set free the sandscale fish on the wharf with you. I bought you roasted fish and bamboo rice last time. Do you remember that?"

Looking at Zhang Tie's hilarious expression, the beggar-like old man revealed a wisp of smile at the corners of his mouth, "Of course I remember you. You are almost the only one who has given a favor to me in my life. You foisted your purse in my coat. It contained 2 gold coins, 38 silver coins and 17 copper coins in total. You even invited me to eat food 6 times and bought me a suit of clothes; besides, you invited me to live in hotel and take a bath..." After saying this, the old man casually kicked that dead guy lying

on the ground like trash at the side of the road. "What happened between him and you? It seemed like he wanted to kill you..."

Zhang Tie didn't know why this old man appeared here at this moment and still hadn't recovered his composure even now.

"Alas, it's hard to say!" Zhang Tie sighed as he peered at that old man's clothes which was gifted by Zhang Tie. It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that the clothes remained unchanged when the old man walked out of the magma. "I intend to officially enter LV 7 by forming my LV 7 battle-qi totem, but I couldn't have imagined that I would be screwed over by someone. If not for you, I might have..."

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the old man could understand Zhang Tie's feeling very well as he was driven infuriated at once, "There are always numerous shameless guys and villains in this world. Since he wants to kill you, I will solve your problem for you!" With a casual reply, the old man walked towards the guy lying on the ground full of killing intent, which instantly frightened Zhang Tie.

Looking at that old man raising his foot and intending to stomp that guy to death, Zhang Tie hurriedly shouted, "Wait, please..."

"What? You want to set free him?" the old man asked, somewhat discontent.

"I need to ask some questions. I want to see who's aiming for my life before killing him in case they plan to bring me more troubles in the future!"

Saying this, Zhang Tie walked over there and wanted to wake up that man. However, he could not wake him up at all. Therefore, Zhang Tie threw his helpless eyes towards that old man.

The old man then woke up the man by kicking the place under his armpits.

"Go ahead, he's not able to move now!" The old man just stood aside with arms crossed.

Zhang Tie directly tore off that man's mask.

It was a 30-40 male's face which looked narrow, long and a bit gloomy.

After waking up, that man revealed a mad, hysterical smile. He then glared at Zhang Tie and that old man while saying furiously, "Zhang Tie, I was unlucky this time, but you will get nothing from me!"

Zhang Tie ridiculed, "I'm sure someone would know your face. Do you really think that Zhang Clan would find no clues with its great ability?"

"Ha...ha..." That man burst out in crazy laughter as he spat out blood, "You can try; let's see whether Huaiyuan Palace can get any clues from me. Even if you chop off my head, I tell you, nobody would be able to identify who I am from my face..."

"Really?" Zhang Tie revealed a wisp of smile. He didn't gaze at that man's face; instead, he observed his ears very carefully like appreciating a top-rank painting, "I know organizations that act in the shadows, like yours, usually make their agents hide their true faces. Besides the most common mask, you must have made enough preparations to hide your real identity. You might have accepted cosmetic surgery a long time ago; therefore, in any case, you are not afraid of being identified!"

That man's smile turned slightly grim, "Glad you know that. Although Huaiyuan Palace is powerful, it will never know my real identity. As long as I am killed, you just wait for the revenge from my organization!"

"Do you really think that you would not be recognized by others?" A wisp of mocking flashed by Zhang Tie's eyes.

"It's said that before the catastrophe, human beings could identify one's real status by testing his or her DNA; but times have changed now. That trick won't work anymore!" That man gave a cold harrumph.

"Really pitifully, I knew a mean fat guy previously. Due to the demands of his profession and his eccentric hobbies, he used to cross dress himself. He told me that no matter whether a man had undergone cosmetic surgery, worn a mask, or changed his look with the help of cross-dressing medicament, there's one place where he could not change at all!" Zhang Tie sneered, "Do you know where it is..."

"That's impossible!" that man firmly replied with a sneer.

"Not impossible, but commoners could not imagine that at all. There's a place where people could not change!" Saying this, Zhang Tie pulled that man's ears and pinched it forcefully, "Your ears, to be exact, your auricles did not undergo cosmetic surgery along with your face. Because of its special structure, you could at most slightly change its shape; however, you could not change its structure at all unless you want a obviously defected physical feature due to surgery!"

"So what?"

"This question indicates your stupidity..." Zhang Tie let out a sigh, "Don't you know that one's auricle is composed of helix, helix tubercle, fossae helices, cristae helix, concha auriculae, tragus, antitragus and fossae triangularis auriculae. The helix is composed of 19 greater identification regions, which were further divided into 34 smaller identification zones. Compared to one's look, one's ear contains more typical personal identification features. Among the 19 greater identification regions and the 34 smaller identification zones, there are 12 identification features in overlapping regions which could reflect one's bloodline and clan heritage traits. Besides those from the same clan, no two people in the world could share the same traits of ears. Ear traits can be more specific than traits of eyes or faces!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, the man lying on the ground instantly changed his face. Even the old man who was always quiet beside Zhang Tie threw his slightly shocking glance towards Zhang Tie. He seemed to be surprised by the depth of Zhang Tie's

knowledge.

Zhang Tie didn't look at that man's expression; instead, he kept mumbling, "Identifying people by one's ears was taught by that mean fat. It was a secret knowledge which could only be mastered by that pervert. Do you know that I was forced by that fatty to gaze at customers' ears every day?"

Do you know how long it took me to be able to identify one's heritage from the moment I see them? Do you know how abnormal the training was?"

"So what? There are so many people on the Waii Sub-Continent. Do you want to check each person's ears?" that man asked, pretending to be calm.

"No need to check everyone across the Waii Sub-Continent. Actually, when I firstly came here to form battle qi, I met a young man who came in here together with our team. When someone praised Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace, I remember that that guy responded with a cold harrumph. As few people dare to speak ill of Zhang clan within the territory of Zhang clan, I then paid special attention to him; besides, after forming battle qi, I have researched his background through the relationship of Hidden Dragon Palace. What a coincidence. After looking at your ears carefully, I found the 12 clan heritage traits on your auricle are absolutely the same as his. Do you want to know which clan the young man came from..." As Zhang Tie said this, his eyes gradually became grim.

By then, the man's eyes had revealed his fear about Zhang Tie. Obviously, he had been flurried. He then shouted loudly,

"Impossible...impossible, you will never get anything from me!"

"What else could you idiots do except for screwing people and fiercely bullying those weaker than you in the way that you think's smart?" Zhang Tie was driven mad as he slapped onto that man's face; as a result, that man spat out blood as some of his teeth flew away, "Do you think this father is still cheating you, a dead man? That bastard's surnamed Zhen, and is from Zhen Clan of Heavens Frozen Town, Langye Prefecture, Jinyun Country. You douchebags all come from Zhen Clan, right? You motherf*ckers are still waiting to be worshipped by others. I really wonder how many evil things your clan has done! In only a few days, your Zhen Clan of Heavens Frozen Town will be wiped away. You dared to screw me, f*ck you..." Zhang Tie directly spat his saliva onto that man.

"No, I'm not from the Zhen Clan of Heavens Frozen Town; I'm not from the Zhen Clan of Heavens Frozen Town..." Lying on the ground, that guy shouted crazily, struggling to pick himself up. Although he denied it, his response and attitude at this moment had confirmed everything.

"Certainly, whether you are from Zhen Clan or not will be investigated. Do you think that your Zhen Clan can hide anything under the piercing gaze of Huaiyuan Palace?" Zhang Tie sneered, "Do you think that you are the smartest ones in the world? If you dare to stir up trouble with me, you have to be prepared to pay the price!"

With his eyes fixed on Zhang Tie, that guy stared at Zhang Tie in horror. His eyes were going to pop out. Not until then did he understand how tyrannous Zhang Tie was. Zhang Tie's mind was

more terrifying than his fighting skills, battle qi, and his horrible hidden weapons.

Any tiny loophole, once noticed by Zhang Tie, would be widened to the size of a mountain. Such a person was too terrible and abnormal. Not until today did that man know such a pervert existed who could identify people not by one's look, but by one's ears...

"You freak... freak, I will not let you go even if I die!" The man shrieked desperately as he spat out a mouthful of black blood. After that, he tilted his head to one side and died. Soon after he died, his body had started to corrode rapidly. In only a few minutes, even a greater part of his bones had been eroded.

Zhang Tie then pinched his nose as he moved back a few steps, "What a terrifying, corrosive poison! It was hidden in his teeth. Even his body was eroded..."

After saying this, Zhang Tie heard no response; therefore, he turned around and found the old beggar was fixing his gleaming eyes on him like how a lady-killer watched a beauty and how a dog watched a bone with meat. The old man's gleaming eyes made Zhang Tie quiver all over.

"Old man... why... why are you gazing at me?" Feeling a bit nervous, Zhang Tie asked as he was afraid that the old man became lunatic once again.

"Not bad... not bad... clearly, it seems that you would not be

easily screwed over by others!" The old man seemed very happy.

Zhang Tie then smirked, "Oh, I've not thanked you for saving my life...I want to make sure that if you were walking out of the magma just now?"

"The temperature of the red magma is only 500-600 degrees Celsius!" That old man shook his hands casually, "You will understand in the future that many things that are considered unimaginable are only considered so because people were not able to make it! As long as you make it, you will consider it normal."

Zhang Tie then thought about Castle of Black Iron which he was still confused about as he nodded.

"Oh, as I've met you so many times, what should I call you?" Zhang Tie asked politely.

"As I've said, they all call me Alchemist Lord!" The old man stared at Zhang Tie with a smile like he'd noticed a gold ingot, "Don't be so polite, you can call me master!"

"Master!" Zhang Tie then called him at his request. He then felt the appellation was a bit weird, 'Is this old man surnamed "Shi"? This name is really fitting for him.'

"Eh..." After Zhang Tie called him "master", the old man then responded seriously.

At the sight of the old man's satisfactory expression, Zhang Tie then felt something was not right. He then wanted to explain, "Argh...I didn't mean..."

When Zhang Tie was going to explain, the subordinates of the man in black robe had rushed downwards the slope in a flurried way.

"Don't make any noise..." Hearing the noise, the old man's face instantly turned grim. By only flipping his finger, he had already sent a small blue item flying towards them, like a meteor chasing after moon, at a speed much faster than Zhang Tie's handbolts. Additionally, it was quiet; in a split second, it had fallen in the middle of them after travelling a distance of over 200 m...

With a earth-shaking explosion, scorching flames and powerful blast wave swept across. Although Zhang Tie was over 200 m away, he could still feel a wave of hot wind after which was chilling in a sense.

After the explosion and the flames, none of the lackeys had been left. Gazing at that explosion and the flames, Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva, 'motherf*cker, what the hell is this old man?'

"Oh, what did you want to say to this master just now?" Looking as icy as frost just now, the old beggar turned around at this moment and asked Zhang Tie with a smile.

'Explosion...explosion...alchemist lord...alchemist lord...alchemist lord...'

Zhang Tie instantly understood what happened. Without any hesitation, he knelt down on the ground at once and kowtowed three times forcefully, "Master, it's my great honor to be your apprentice!"

Chapter 332: A Gift from Master

Certainly, there were a lot of things and people that were out of Zhang Tie's imagination, such as the Castle of Black Iron, the Bamboo woods Old Man, and this old man who was safe and sound while walking out of magma of 500-600 degrees Celsius...

Zhang Tie was always broad-minded; because he could not understand it, he would stop thinking about it for now. What counted at the moment was that Zhang Tie had found a powerful ally, which Zhang Tie had dreamed about having even in his dreams.

"Master, although we've known each other so long, I still don't know about your name." As they walked through the underground gloomy karst cave, Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity. Now that he had become his apprentice, it would be improper if he didn't know his master's real name.

"My family name is Zhao; my given name is Yuan!" The strange old man walked as he explained. After telling Zhang Tie that, he sighed, "I can't remember how many years it's been since I last used that name. As they all call me alchemist lord, few people know my real name..."

Hearing his sigh, Zhang Tie felt a bit distressed and depressed. Looking at the old man's weak frame and his messy hair, Zhang Tie then remembered how the old man strayed in Hidden Dragon Island alone before; not knowing why, he instantly felt pitiful about the old man.

Although walking in darkness and Zhang Tie didn't utter any voice, Zhao Yuan seemed knowing what Zhang Tie was thinking about; therefore, he turned around and glanced at Zhang Tie with depreciative eyes, "This master was always living a cool and splendid life. The alleged power and wealth pursued by everybody was nothing but dung and weeds. Other people would either fear me or flatter me. You're the first person who's thought I was pitiful, he...he..."

With a bashful smile, Zhang Tie immediately recalled something, "Master, are you really from Zhao Mansion of White Dragon Town?"

As Zhang Tie remembered that his master was thrown onto the street by the servants of Zhao Mansion, he then asked to verify it. Given this old man's performance and power, he should not have been thrown out by common servants. Therefore, Zhang Tie felt weird about that.

"Although this master's family name is Zhao, I'm not from Zhao Mansion of White Dragon Town..." The old man's shoulders slightly collapsed while his eyes turned depressed, "This master might be delirious sometimes and would take other's home as mine; previously, this master's home in Eastern Continent was also called Zhao Mansion; but now, I have no home anymore..."

Zhang Tie became silent. From the old man's words, he could feel many sad things. Although Zhang Tie wanted to ask, at the sight of the old man's desolate wrinkles when he mentioned Zhao Mansion and his family, Zhang Tie swallowed his words back.

The old man's words reminded Zhang Tie that the old man didn't pretend to test him before; instead, the old man was truly delirious at that time. In this way, Zhang Tie became the old man's apprentice. Although the old man was almost like a lunatic when he lost his mind; when he recovered his consciousness, he seemed to be able to remember everything that had happened to him. The old man was really sharp with irregular mixed moods.

"Master, why...why do you want me as your apprentice? Have you've long considered it before?"

"Ha...ha...if I want to do something, I would do it right away. If I want you as my apprentice, I would not have waited until now! It would not be that troublesome even if I wanted to destroy a country or a city!" The old man smiled , "Brat, I found you somewhat smart and innocent just now and had some potential to be a talent. Additionally, I owe you for the these past few days; therefore, I will take you as my apprentice as a payment..."

"You mean that you were not waiting to save me there?" Zhang Tie widened his eyes.

"Waiting to save you?"

"I thought that you know fortune-telling skills like those people on the Eastern Continent and knew that your apprentice is in trouble; therefore, you were here to save me!" Zhang Tie smirked.

"If I knew fortune-telling skills and wanted to save you, I'd only have to find who wanted to harm you and directly kill him along

with his organization and clan. Why do I need to wait here for them to kill you!" The old man threw contemptuous eyes towards Zhang Tie, "When you reach my level, one day, you will know that the most direct and simplest way is the most effective. Everything is determined on life and death situations and your wits, no need to care about the superfluous things!"

"Everything is determined on life and death situation and your mind?" Zhang Tie was a bit startled by this answer.

"As life and death situations are big events in this world, you have to pay attention to them; as one's mind is the source of free will, when you even ignore a life and death situation, you should question your own mind instead trusting everything." the old man replied.

"Master, your opinion is really good!" Zhang Tie applauded and burst out laughing, feeling pretty cool.

"If you want to consider things in this way, you have to be powerful!" The old man glanced at Zhang Tie, "If you love an emperor's wife and want her to warm your bed and give birth to a baby for you, you have to be able to be the enemy of the country and defeat that emperor; otherwise, the rude guy would definitely have his head chopped off instead of having a baby if he shouted before the gate of the imperial palace that he loves the empress"

"Master, you mean I have to improve my fighting skills?"

"Among the fighters, although you're only LV 7, you are already

excellent; but in the eyes of real powerhouses, fighters are as weak as ants. Although you are a relatively powerful ant with sharp teeth, you are still an ant. If real powerhouses want to kill you, it would be as easy as stomping an ant to death. Take this time as an example, your opponent assigned a soldier ant who's more powerful than you; as a result, they almost kill you! You are in danger at any time, that's why you need to improve your fighting skills. " After saying this, the old man glared at Zhang Tie.

"Master, who's qualified as a real powerhouse? Do you mean those fighters above LV 15?"

"You know fighters?"

Zhang Tie then scratched his head bashfully, "Previously, I didn't know it as I thought a LV 9 fighter was already a powerhouse; when I came to Hidden Dragon Island, I knew that there's a long way to go and there's a new world after LV 15!"

"That's true. The alleged powerhouses are relative. In commoners' eyes, a LV 9 fighter might be a powerhouse; however, in a LV 9 fighter's eyes, fighting masters and great fighting masters could be powerhouses; the qualifications of powerhouses are different in each one's eyes. It's okay for you to take knights as powerhouses, but in my opinion, only those who have mastered the 3-in-1 power are qualified to be called powerhouses! "The old man replied arrogantly.

"3-in-1 power?" Hearing this mysterious term, Zhang Tie's curiosity was piqued once again, "What's that power? How powerful is it?"

"The 3-in-1 power forms together with the source of human beings and the source of universe. Some knights can master this power, but not every knight can master it. 3-in-1 power is the most mysterious and supreme domain. Oh, you have to remember that you should not expose the message that you're my apprentice to the public before you become a knight!" The old man warned Zhang Tie solemnly.

"Why, Master?"

"As I can't protect you all the time, as long as the public know that you're my apprentice, in only a few days, you will definitely be killed even if Huaiyuan Palace tries to protect you..." With his shrewd eyes fixed onto Zhang Tie, the old man explained, "If my opponents know that this master has an apprentice, they would at least assign a LV 15 knight who excels at assassinations to kill you!"

'A LV 15 knight who excels at assassinations?' Zhang Tie felt as if he'd been struck by a lightning bolt. A LV 10 fighter had almost forced him to use his trump card — the Castle of Black Iron; if it was a LV 15 guy, Zhang Tie was concerned that he might not even know how he was killed.

"Master, who are your opponents?" Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva. The word "opponents" really shocked Zhang Tie as he thought inside that those who were qualified to be the old man's opponents were definitely not commoners.

"Besides numerous trivial people whom I can't remember..." The

old man shook his hand casually, "There are 2 or 3 sharp figures whom could not harm me; instead, sometimes, they make plans to find trouble from me. You don't need to know who they are for now, as it might intensify your tension if you knew who they were. If so, your cultivation and mental state would be influenced. I should tell you that if they know the relationship between you and me, they would never let you live!"

After thinking awhile, Zhang Tie asked, "Master, because of the events today, including the betrayal, when I get back, I will definitely have to explain the details of the matter to Hidden Dragon Palace and Long Wind Business Group. They will definitely assign people here for a thorough investigation. But I can't explain how that guy was killed and the explosion you killed his lackeys with. What if they asked about it?"

"It doesn't matter. Except for the thing that I have you as my apprentice, you just explain all the details to them. I was just walking out of the magma and disliked them, so I killed them!"

"But, if I do that, you'll be involved in it!"

"No problem, I will be leaving Hidden Dragon Island soon, as your level is too low, I cannot pass on my fighting skills to you. I will come back for you when you reach LV 9!" Saying this, the old man pulled out a diamond-shaped, dark-red stone which looked like a crystal and handed it to Zhang Tie, "This is a soul crystal. It contains a bit of my aura; as long as you take it, I will be able to sense your location, wherever you are!"

Zhang Tie then put it in his pocket carefully.

"Are you using night viewing medicament?"

"Yes, if not, I wouldn't see things clearly!" Zhang Tie replied honestly.

"Because I've been in the cave for several days, I found this. It seems to be something that has been disposed of by the God. As this master doesn't always carry money around with him, I will gift this thing to you!"

The old man took out of a purse-sized, silk container and threw it to Zhang Tie.

The moment Zhang Tie touched that thing, he felt ice cold. The material of the bulging silk container was a bit special. Zhang Tie wondered, "Master, what's inside?"

"It's a lotus seedpod of a fiery-flame red lotus that I picked up in the magma..."

"Fiery-flame red lotus? It sounds great," Zhang Tie mumbled.

Chapter 333: Face Life With a Smile

"The fiery-flame red lotus lives in the magma underground. It's an exotic treasure in this world. Commoners could rarely see it. Even though commoners might find it by chance, they couldn't harvest it. Even average lotus seeds could brighten one's eyes and improve one's spirit, the lotus seeds of fiery-flame red lotus living in magma have much better effects. With only a few of them, you will have a much better visual ability and gain a much better night vision abilities in darkness than night viewing medicament!" The old man smiled.

"Thanks, master!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie was pretty thrilled. It was really awesome to gain the night vision ability. It was like intensifying the effect of night viewing medicament on him. Zhang Tie knew that this item was definitely priceless as it could grant people a new ability—night vision. When he thought about it, he was very excited.

"As the lotus seed in the lotus seedpod is very hard, you can't directly eat it." The old man urged, "When you go back, remember to take out the lotus seed and soak it in liquor. Three days later, the lotus seed would be softened while the color of the liquor would turn as red as blood. By then, you can eat the lotus seed together with the liquor. This fiery-flame red lotus seed has an excellent effect. After eating it, you would feel hot and dry all over. You'd better soak your whole body in cold water in case your eyes are destroyed by the great effect of the lotus seed!"

"Master, how many lotus seeds do I need to eat before it takes effect?"

"Ten seeds is enough for each time. As the fiery-flame red lotus is an exotic treasure, its seeds have numerous effects. You could keep the remaining lotus seeds so that you might use them in the future. If you can stand it, you could also eat them all in batches!"

I'm rich. This lotus seedpod contains at least 20 seeds. That is to say, after eating 10 seeds, I have another 10 left. Zhang Tie felt very happy, My master is really excellent. This country bumpkin hasn't even heard about this gift before.

As they talked, they've already gotten close to the entrance of the Dragon Cave as a light beam threw inside.

"Remember, I will be back for you in a half year to 1 year. As the holy war is coming, dangers exist everywhere, you need to watch out for yourself!"

"Bon voyage, master!" Zhang Tie became a bit sad.

"Hehe, I wouldn't have imagined that I could have an apprentice, see you!" After touching Zhang Tie's head, Zhao Yuan smiled as he turned around and strode away and disappeared in a few footsteps like a shadow under Zhang Tie curious gaze.

"Do powerhouses always leave in this way?" Zhang Tie mumbled.

...

After exiting the Dragon Cave, Zhang Tie looked at the sunset and sniffed the air which was much fresher than that underground. Only after an afternoon, Zhang Tie had felt reborn. After being betrayed, almost assassinated, and gaining a master, Zhang Tie started to realize the importance of chance.

It's really nice to be alive!

After experiencing the whole afternoon's struggle, Zhang Tie's clothes had become ragged. Additionally, he had suffered a lot of bruises and wounds. At this moment, he looked really embarrassed, especially at the entrance of the Dragon Cave alone, which made him very attractive.

It was almost close to dusk when many people who had entered Dragon Cave to form battle qis started to exit one by another. For many people, they could not form battle qi at once like Zhang Tie. Additionally, Hell-black spiders would be more active and more hard to be dealt with at night; therefore, those who were not very powerful would come out of Dragon Cave before night fell.

"Master, that man looks so poor!" The other two people exited as one girl among them started to feel pitiful about Zhang Tie at the sight of his poor look.

"This is the result of poor fighting skills. This man looks young, he might not have formed battle qi before entering Dragon Cave. He's lucky to come back alive!" Hand in hand, the girl then left

with her master after a glance at Zhang Tie.

"Senior brother...Zhang...Zhang Tie..." Another amazing sound drifted from Zhang Tie's back. Zhang Tie turned around and saw Du Yuhan, Lv Shasha, and Qu Liangying coming out of Dragon Cave. It was Qu Liangying who called him just now. At the sight of Zhang Tie's look, all the girls were stunned, including Guo Miaolu.

"Argh, junior sisters. Are you forming battle qi here?" Zhang Tie greeted them with a smile.

"Yea, we're all LV 6 now. We're forming battle qi here. When we form our battle qi, we will be able to enter Breaking Heavens Department together like senior brother. These days, senior sister Guo takes us here to form soul fire!" Qu Liangying explained with a pair of blinking eyes fixed on Zhang Tie.

It seemed that Guo Miaolu still estranged Zhang Tie. She formed her battle qi 1 month later than Zhang Tie did. After entering Breaking Heavens Department, she didn't meet Zhang Tie. When Zhang Tie asked girls from Zhixing Department to help him last time, Guo Miaolu was not there either. Therefore, at the sight of Zhang Tie and thinking about the debt that she owed to Zhang Tie, she felt a bit embarrassed, not knowing what to say.

Guo Miaolu didn't say anything while the other girls became more intimate with Zhang Tie.

"Senior brother Zhang Tie...what's wrong with you? Why are you standing here?" Lyu Shasha asked with a bit embarrassed look. The

moment Zhang Tie moved his eyes to her, thinking of the disgusting joke that Zhang Tie had made with her, the little girl hurriedly lower her head down and silently hid behind Du Yuhang.

Seeing this, Du Yuhang brutally threw the white of her eyes towards Zhang Tie.

"Nothing serious, I just feel very lucky to be alive today; therefore, I stood here to breathe more fresh air! I almost could not get out of Dragon Cave today!" Zhang Tie said with a smile like making a joke. When Lyu Shasha raise her head and stared at Zhang Tie, he even made a grimace towards her. She then became scared and hid behind Du Yuhang once again.

"You are raving again!" Not knowing why, at the sight of Zhang Tie's joking look, Guo Miaolu would be unhappy. Therefore, after Zhang Tie joked, Guo Miaolu instantly condemned him.

"Alas, it's true!" Zhang Tie looked more exaggerated. With a bitter look, he started to tell them what happened to him this afternoon with exaggerating movements, "I was firstly raided by a LV 9 b*stard. He almost stabbed a chopstick-sized steel needle into my head. Thankfully, I was agile and stopped him..."

"Keep boasting, what's next!" Qu Liangying smiled.

"That b*stard has been killed by me. After that, a LV 10 fighter chased after me along with a great number of lackeys holding crossbows. When I hid in water after being wounded, I was forced out by their poison. Finally, I was almost smacked to death by that

guy and threw into magma...

Still being alive after being chased by LV 9 and LV 10 fighters? None of the girls at present believed it was true.

"This senior brother can't leave you alone. If I just leave you in this way, junior sister Guo would be too sad, right?" Zhang Tie joked shamelessly.

"Harrumph!" Guo Miaolu's eyebrows raised as she prepared to lose temper, however, at the sight of Zhang Tie's shameless look, not knowing why she just couldn't do it. Instead, she just replied with a cold harrumph and looked aside.

"Liar, if you were truly chased by LV 9 and LV 10 fighters, it would be a big event and you must have saved for help. How could you still joke here?" Lyu Shasha showed her head from Du Yuhan's back and rebutted Zhang Tie like a timid rabbit.

Zhang Tie then revealed a smile like nothing had happened, "As I meet junior sisters here, I am too happy; therefore, I forgot that!"

Saying this, his battle qi started to rise up like a rolling banner. It was a huge bloody banner of a huge terrifying centipede, which seemed to have felt Zhang Tie's willingness and was roaring towards the heavens. As a result, many people in the neighboring towns caught sight of it and were stunned by it!

After officially entering LV 7, Zhang Tie's battle qi totem was

more powerful and shocking visually compared to his battle qi when he was LV 6. The terrifying shadow of huge centipede in the bloody banner was as high as 20 floors. Everybody standing on the plains or mountains of the Hidden Dragon Island could see it...

Zhang Tie's battle qi totem kept waving crazily above Dragon Cave, which contained a rolling, unparalleled killing intent...

At the sight of Zhang Tie's bloody banner; those girls' expressions varified greatly: some of them were shocked, some were dubious while some were crazy about it like Qu Liangying.

However, Lyu Shasha's eyes were filled with tears. The moment Zhang Tie's battle qi totem rolled up, Lyu Shasha had understood at once that those jokes that Zhang made with them were true. Zhang Tie faced life and death situation himself while always presenting his positive side in front of them...

Du Yuhan also understood it. Glancing over Zhang Tie ragged clothes and wounds, she suddenly felt pity for him...

With shrill sound booms, the first batch of powerhouses of Long Wind Business Group on Hidden Dragon Island arrived here. When they saw Zhang Tie's embarrassed look, their faces changed at the same time...

Zhang Tie then walked in front of Lyu Shasha and helped her wipe off her tears. After that, he twisted her delicate nose, "Don't cry, this senior brother is alive; that means those who cross me have to go die..."

...

Chapter 334: Enlightenment and Response

Zhang was not heavily wounded. Therefore, after leaving Dragon Cave, he didn't go back to Hidden Dragon Palace at once; instead, with the protection of a great number of powerhouses from the Long Wind Business Group, he came to his own castle which was still in construction.

The people assigned by Long Wind Business Group to protect Zhang Tie had tried to assassinate him with outsiders. This event was severe enough to cause great waves in Huaiyuan Palace.

Therefore, the moment Zhang Tie went out of Dragon Cave, he had released his battle-qi totem, because he knew that it was just a beginning and a larger storm would arrive. Even if Long Wind Business Group wanted to end the investigation, he wouldn't agree.

Although the Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold Town in Langye Prefecture, Jinyun Country could not match Huaiyuan Palace, it was still powerful. Based on his intuition, Zhang Tie realized that the reason that the Zhen Clan dared to perform such an action must be very shocking.

As only a few people know that I have the means of mass-producing an all-purpose medicament, how could this message be exposed to the public? Why Liu Xiang, that douchebag was assigned here to protect me? Thinking of the two questions, Zhang Tie started to feel a crisis, which didn't come from outside, but from Huaiyuan Palace and the Long Wind Business Group.

Certainly, Huaiyuan Palace would not gain profits at the risk of its direct descendant. However, as it was as huge as a kingdom, there were always some traitors. It was very normal and could not be avoided in any country.

What happened today influenced Zhang Tie's mentality more than his health. After today's event, Zhang Tie realized that he had been trusting and relying on the Zhang Clan too much since he arrived at Huaiyuan Palace. Because of this, he was almost killed.

After an analysis, Zhang Tie had a clearer recognition on the positioning of Huaiyuan Palace and himself—Zhang Clan was a giant ship while he was only an average passenger on this giant ship. It was true that by taking this giant ship of terrifying magnitude he could overcome some heavy wind and waves and deep water zones safe and sound. However, there were also some bad guys and mice who were gnawing at the boards of the ship.

If I rely on that sense of safety brought by this giant ship and relax my vigilance, I might step on a place that has been eroded by mice and fall into the sea or be pushed into the sea from back like what happened today.

The best way is to build a ship for my own. When in an emergency situation, I could save myself from that ship. I could be the captain so that I could go wherever I want instead of having to follow other's orders.

After leaving Dragon Cave, Zhang Tie had thought this through after a short while. Although Zhang Tie looked unchanged, he had already made a clear decision on the next plan—it's time to

gradually turn all-purpose medicament and gold coins into his own power.

...

The group of people soon arrived at the foot of the Yunju Mountain nearby White Dragon Town from Dragon Cave. Because those girls from Zhixing Department wanted to go back to Hidden Dragon Palace, they were headed the same way as Zhang Tie.

"Junior sisters, we have to say good bye here. Hidden Dragon Island is not safe either. It will be more dangerous in the future. Someone even dared to assassinate me today, I don't know what else would happen in the future. Junior sisters will have to take care yourselves. Never think that you can be safe and sound as the descendants or relatives by marrying male members of Zhang Clan!" Before separating with those girls, Zhang Tie warned them carefully.

Sensing Zhang Tie's concern and good intent, they were all moved a bit.

"Won't you go back to Hidden Dragon Palace together with us?" Qu Liangying asked out of curiosity.

"I won't..."Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he pointed at that completed main building, "From now on, I will always live here. If you need any help, you can find me here!"

"Argh..." Watching that magnificent castle, Lyu Shasha stared at Zhang Tie and asked innocently, "You..you've got a job here? A guardian?"

As the cooperation between Zhang Tie and Long Wind Business Group was still half-confidential, before mass production of all-purpose medicament, neither of the two parties had made any declaration; instead, they both maintained silent. Therefore, by then, over 99% of people in Hidden Dragon Palace had not known that the castle that covered over 30,000 square meters on the Yunju Mountain actually belonged to Zhang Tie.

Hearing Lyu Shasha's words, Zhang Tie became a bit depressed as he rubbed his bruised and swollen face and seriously stared at Lyu Shasha who looked innocent, "Does this senior brother look like a coolie? Don't I look like rich man? Why can't I build a castle for myself?"

"Do you know how much it would take to build a castle?" Guo Miaolu stared at Zhang Tie with wide-opened eyes and asked without any confidence, "We could only spend the money that we have made on the island. Don't cheat small girls with this trick anymore. Although you can make a lot of money by selling your all-purpose medicament, you are still not able to build a castle!"

"Previously, I truly didn't know how much it would spend to build a castle, but now I know, the total amount of money for building and decorating this castle was 460,000 gold coins!" Zhang Tie smirked as he shrugged his shoulders. At that moment, he didn't even want to waste time by arguing with those little girls. "Perhaps in a few days, you would see my name in the first place of

the Hidden Dragon Wealth List!"

"Liar!" Du Yuhan twitched her mouth. In this age, 460,000 gold coins was a terrifying amount of money which weighed 11.5 tons. Even those richest senior brothers in Breaking Heavens Department only had 100,000-200,000 gold coins. Therefore, Du Yuhan thought that Zhang Tie was lying to her.

"Haha, I mean it!" Zhang Tie didn't explain. He then casually wove his hands towards those girls in a cool way to bid them farewell.

After leaving those innocent junior girls from Zhixing Department, Zhang Tie's face turned completely solemn at once. He then entered his castle in Yunju Mountain silently.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's gloomy look and the group of powerhouses from Long Wind Business Group on his side, Liu Gong, who had just seen Zhang Tie several hours ago was startled at once.

"Argh, what happened?"

"Nothing serious, I was the target of an assassination attempt." Zhang Tie replied calmly. However, his words were really shocking. "Which room is a bit tranquil, I want to sleep here tonight."

After what happened today, Zhang Tie knew that even Long

Wind Business Group and Hidden Dragon Palace were not safe for him, he only wanted to find a tranquil place so as to make a plan. With this potential sense of crisis, Zhang Tie instinctively felt that he would be safer in his own place.

"As the steel molds of cement in the hall of the castle has just been moved away this afternoon, it would be tranquil there!" LiuGong replied. At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't look as easy-going as before, instead, he looked more serious and dignified. Therefore, Liu Gong responded instantly.

"Fine, I will then take a rest in the hall."

Saying this, Zhang Tie had entered the exterior castle. After passing by 2 city walls, some bartizans and a square which was filled with various building materials and instruments. They had arrived in the hall.

After the steel mold of cement in the hall was moved away, everywhere was gray, including those pillars and walls. There were even traces of steel molds on the concrete walls. It looked pretty shabby here. However, although it wasn't completed, it had already presented its noble and magnificent look.

There were 2 rows of huge pillars in the hall, the diameter of each one was several meters. It occupied over 2000 square meters. On the top of the hall, the shape of a beautiful octagonal dome could already be recognized. The luxury here could be imagined in the near future.

As the construction workers were removing steel molds of cement here in this afternoon, there were still some racks of steel pipes and a few steel molds on the ground of the hall.

Zhang Tie casually sat on a pile of steel moulds with fists on knees. In a pretty dignified way, he closed his eyes.

Seeing this, the powerhouses from Long Wind Business Group then safeguarded around Zhang Tie and the entrance and had people light up the hall.

As Long Wind Business Group's people on Hidden Dragon Island had sent the message that Zhang Tie encountered an assassination and the man being assigned to protect him betrayed the organization, Zhang Tie then waited for Long Wind Business Group's reply—Why the people being assigned by the Business Group to protect him would assassinate him? How the news that he could mass-produce an all-purpose medicament was exposed?

It was a big event that a student in Hidden Dragon Palace encountered an assassination. A director of Hidden Dragon Palace had already hurriedly arrived here with a group of people in 10 minutes after Zhang Tie arrived here. After inquiring Zhang Tie about what happened, they then entered Dragon Cave to verify what Zhang Tie had told them.

After they left, all the towns and wharfs on Hidden Dragon Island were in a state of siege and the atmosphere of Hidden Dragon Island as a whole started to be tense at once.

2 hours later, the second group of powerhouses of Long Wind Business Group and the person in charge of this event had finally arrived at Yunju Mountain via huge airships...

Chapter 335: Sudden Changes

Benefited from his preliminary recovered body which could help him recover twice the speed in the evening, Zhang Tie felt that he was gradually recovering all over.

After hearing a series of orderly footsteps from outside the gate of the hall, Zhang Tie opened his eyes.

With a solemn expression, Zhang Taibai arrived with more than 20 bodyguards in pitch-dark armors in 2 rows. Those bodyguards walked with power and evil spirit.

The moment Zhang Tie saw Zhang Taibai, he felt that person was obviously in charge of Long Wind Business Group, and he let out a sigh, which seemed indicating that, "Thank god, you're safe!"

Zhang Taibai wore an official black tuxedo. He must be attending a campaign when he was told that Zhang Tie encountered an assassination.

"I want to talk with you alone!" Zhang Tie put it straight.

After glancing at Zhang Tie, Zhang Taibai nodded as he raised his hand to tell all the powerhouses and bodyguards of Long Wind Business Group to leave the hall except that 2 people stood back-to-back outside the gate to stop anyone else from coming in.

"This time, these people I bring you are all the Long Wind

bodyguards of Huaiyuan Palace. They are all descendants of Zhang Clan, I guarantee that they are loyal to you!" Zhang Taibai promised.

Zhang Tie just revealed a smile. From the perspective of big figures in Huaiyuan Palace, those people might not betray Huaiyuan Palace. However, after leaving Huaiyuan Palace, they would have no relationship with Huaiyuan palace. 'Even blood brothers might fight and harm each other for benefits, let alone them and I. We were just from the same big clan a long time ago. It's hard to say everybody in the big Clan has high morality. Additionally, some one doesn't even know that even if he has been taken advantage of.'

"I've been assassinated by the powerhouse assigned by Long Wind Business Group to protect me. Therefore, I become more meticulous in front those people whom I don't even know their names and have few social experience. I really don't want my talk with you be known by the public in only a couple of days!" Zhang Tie put it straight and didn't care about Zhang Taibai's embarrassed expression at all.

"What happened today?" The moment the message was told, I was in Yiyang City, I had hurriedly set out towards here.

Zhang Tie then told Zhang Taibai that how he met Liu Xiang and Zhang Haichao and how he was assassinated and chased by Liu Xiang.

"If Liu Xiang wants to cross you, what about Zhang Haichao then? How did you find that Liu Xiang was strange!" As a person in

charge of Long Wind Business Group, of course Zhang Taibai would not directly believe in Zhang Tie's words for such a big problem. Therefore, he instantly asked two questions.

"Zhang Haichao might have been killed!" Zhang Tie sighed, "It was obvious that Liu Xiang was strange. Firstly, as Liu Xiang and Zhang Haichao were staying with each other, if they were attacked at the same time, Zhang Haichao should be the one who escaped instead of Liu Xiang; if it was true that Zhang Haichao could hold back those attackers alone as was told by Liu Xiang, Liu Xiang didn't have to escape with him, the two people were able to kill them all. If the attackers were more powerful than Liu Xiang and Zhang Haichao, it would be Zhang Haichao who escaped first, instead of Liu Xiang; if the attackers were equal to Liu Xiang and Zhang Haichao on fighting strength, Liu Xiang should not come for me at that moment; if the attackers could not match Liu Xiang and Zhang Haichao on fighting strength, Liu Xiang didn't need to come for Zhang Tie at all. After realizing something was wrong, I started to be vigilant about Liu Xiang."

Frowning his forehead, Zhang Taibai slowly nodded, "You're right; but not absolute. Because there are always special situations that are out of our imaginations!"

"I know that there might be some special situations that is out of my imagination, so I just doubt that and stop moving at the beginning!" Zhang Tie smiled, "I don't know whether Long Wind Business Group have fixed procedures on dealing with such an emergency. If I were Liu Xiang, I would have warned the protege from afar so that the protege could be prepared for the incoming danger or hide himself; instead of finding the protege with a injured body and bringing him the danger before telling him to

escape together with me! However, Liu Xiang didn't send a signal; instead, he directly came here for me. This made him more dubious!"

"What else? I think you must have found something before seizing the opportunity to make the preemptive move!"

"Of course. What made me completely confirm my judgment was what he had done stealthily when we escaped!"

"What did he do when he ran away with you?"

"He had left marks that could be followed on the route. It was a very delicate and smart way of marking that commoners could not discover it at all. It was a natural marking system that combined the depths of footprints and distances between footprints and surrounding environment. He thought I could not recognize it, yet, I could!"

When Zhang Tie was working in Donder's grocery store, that Fatty had taught him a lot. At the beginning, Zhang Tie felt those knowledge was useless and stupid, such as identifying people by their ears. Whereas, after leaving Blackhot City, Zhang Tie realized that these knowledge became very useful. By comparison, those he learned at school became useless.

"Even though, it still could not indicate that Liu Xiang is a traitor!" Zhang Taibai stared at Zhang Tie, "Maybe he left those marks to Zhang Haichao and those people of Long Wind Business Group!"

"It's possible; but I prefer to think that he wanted to assassinate me compared to this minor possibility..." Zhang Tie revealed a casual smile, "with the above three dubious points, I could almost assure that he was abnormal. I prefer to surviving by myself while being condemned to have made a mistake compared to sacrifice myself for the alleged kindness which would be considered stupid!"

Whilst Zhang Tie was saying this, he took out that long needle and threw it onto Zhang Taibai's hand, "He wanted to stab this into my after-brain. Having been prepared for his attack, I directly stabbed my saber into his stomache. There's poison on the needle, you can check it..."

Taking that weird, long needle, Zhang Taibai didn't say anything; instead, his face turned completely blue, "Trust me, Long Wind Business Group will definitely give your an explanation!"

This was rightly what Zhang Tie wanted to hear. After that, Zhang Tie told him about how he escaped from their chase, except for how he acknowledged the old man as his master.

After asking Zhang Tie a few key questions, Zhang Taibai narrowed his eyes and considered for a while before signed, "Based on your description, that old man might be an alchemist master who save your life by chance. Only such a kind of people could be able to walk out of magma safe and sound and produce an explosion by hand. It's really out of my imagination that such a great powerhouse could appear in Dragon Cave. Pitifully, I don;t have a chance to visit him, alas!"

"Perhaps would appear in the future!"

"You don't know, such super powerhouses usually move very irregularly. They could travel as long as thousands of miles by foot in one day, even faster than airship. It was really lucky of you to meet him!" Zhang Taibai seemed being very pitiful for not meeting that old man. He then asked Zhang Tie, "What about the powerful fighter who chased after you? Has he exposed his real status?"

The moment Zhang Tie wanted to tell Zhang Taibai about the message that those assassins came from Zhen Clan, Heavens Cold Town, Langye Prefecture, Jinyun Country, he suddenly heard a series of footsteps from those guardians outside the hall.

"According to the Lord's order, nobody is allowed in!"

"Including me?" This was a voice of a female, which sounded a bit lofty. Hearing her voice, the guardians didn't speak any more. They then entered the hall together and walked towards Zhang Tie.

At the sight of them coming in, Zhang Tie kept silent as he became infuriated inside. He had determined to build his own "ship". Even though this castle had not been completed, it was already his. However, he could not even talk about something alone with someone. What the f*ck! How could she just enter the castle without my consent? Does she really take this place as the square?

Although Zhang Tie was irritated inside, he looked nothing had

happened; by comparison, hearing that voice, Zhang Taibai revealed a kind yet a bit embarrassed smile.

"Lady, haven't I told you to wait a minute in airship? I will come back soon after I deal with the event here!"

"I saw a castle under the airship. I thought that you've hidden young ladies here; therefore, I enter to have a look. If you really like some ladies, just tell me. I will help you marry them. I'm not a narrow-minded madam. Even if you have 8 concubines and want to marry 8 more concubines, I will have no complaint about that!" With this voice, a 30-odd beautiful lady had walked towards them accompanied by 2 female servants.

This lady was wearing a red bobtail decorated with crystals. With all sorts of jewelries, she looked extremely fascinating, charming and majestic that could never be violated. She was a state-of-art beauty.

The moment she entered, she had started to look around. When she found the hall was blazing with lights and no other female was inside, she raised her orchid finger and gave a slight smile. A 30-odd woman then looked as shy as a 10-odd maiden, "I thought you were slipping out of the ball to meet your young lover with the excuse of having something emergent to deal with. As you've applied this trick for many times before, I have not expected that this time was true. If so, I will not disturb you!"

The woman came here out of a sudden and left like nothing had happened. She really looked like a wife coming here to check whether there's a mistress here after. She was also very polite.

After saying a couple of words, she looked around before left.

At this moment, at the sight of that shadow disappearing outside the gate, Zhang Tie felt a bone-reaching chill which had frozen his mind. Zhang Tie knew that he had hit the jackpot today.

The douchebag Donder once told Zhang Tie pleasantly that according to his observations, 1 of 20 male in Blackhot City was breeding kids for other male. Donder applied his ear-identifying skill into peering at others' privacy and satisfying his curiosity.

Zhang Tie had not imagined that this secret knowledge could bring him another unexpected message today. If it was a surprise for Zhang Tie for the first time, this time, it had become a fright.

"Erm...when I receive the message from here, I was attending a dinner party with my wife. Because it was not a too long distance from there to here by airship and my wife was worried about me, therefore, she came here together with me. Women are really jealous and dubious..." Zhang Taibai explained to Zhang Tie in a slightly embarrassed way.

"Madam looks elegant and dignified. She must be from a reputed clan. I wonder which powerful clan did she come from?" After forcefully recovering his composure, Zhang Tie praised.

"Haha, you were wrong this time. My wife doesn't come from powerful clan; instead, she came from a middle-class family. 20 years ago, we encountered each other, then we got married. Oh, you've not answered me; whether that powerful fighter that

chased you exposed his real status?"

Seeing Zhang Taibai's unpredictable expression, Zhang Tie had numerous thoughts. Finally he shook his head, "That was a group of strictly organized killers. Of course they would not expose their status. Although that old man was super powerful, he didn't spare any time for them to explain where they came from at all. Therefore, I don't know what their real status was!"

"Trust me, Huaiyuan Palace would definitely figure out who tried to assassinated you!" Zhang Taibai replied calmly.

"It would be nice if we could figure out who's behind them!" Rolling his eyes, Zhang Tie said, "I was told that many pharmacists on the continent had been assassinated. Whether they were killed by the same batch of people who had tried to assassinated me?"

Frowning his forehead, Zhang Taibai thought a while before slowly nodded, "It's possible. By the way, you have to take care of yourself recently!"

"How can I take care of myself?" Zhang Tie responded with a bitter smile, "As long as we didn't arrest the man behind them, I would have to be vigilant everyday. This time, they assigned a LV 10 powerful fighter, next time, they might assign a person with higher levels. Given the limited territory of Hidden Dragon Island, unless I hide in the castle and Hidden Dragon Palace forever. If not, I would be their target the moment I go out!"

"I will assign a team of Long Wind Guardians here to protect you.

As Long Wind Guardians are all elites of Zhang Clan, they would definitely be loyal to protect you."

"Even though they are loyal to protect me, what about their fighting strength?" Zhang Tie stared at Zhang Taibai, "If they assign a knight to kill me, how could a team of Long Wind Guardians hold back the attack of a knight? If not, Long Wind Guardians would be useless! They might have a knight kill me as easy as finishing a simple task. I believe that they could afford the cost. However, Huaiyuan Palace and Long Wind Business Group could not assign a knight to protect me forever. Could Huaiyuan Palace and Long Wind Business Group afford this?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zhang Taibai became silent.

"I always treasure my life a lot. I would never put my life in any risk. Perhaps my life is not worthwhile for someone, my life is priceless for myself and my family members. If a great amount of people could not protect me in front of the real powerhouse, they would be nothing effective except for marking me as the target!"

"What do you want then?"

"It's very simple——freedom!" Zhang Tie fixed his shrewd eyes on Zhang Taibai, "I know those rules in Hidden Dragon Palace. Previously, those rules posed no influence to me; but now, before I reach LV 9, those rules are nothing different than fixing me on the Hidden Dragon Island for other's assassination. I need freedom, the freedom of accessing to Hidden Dragon Island. As long as the opponent could not figure out my schedule, it would be hard for them to have a person assassinate me!"

Zhang Taibai knew that Zhang Tie was requiring the real freedom, instead of the simple freedom of accessing to Hidden Dragon Island. Although Zhang Tie mentioned it implicitly, Zhang Taibai could not pretend to be confused. He knew that the severe loophole of Long Wind Business Group brought Zhang Tie the sense of crisis and Zhang Tie had already determined to jump out of the circle that Huaiyuan Palace had drawn for its clan descendants on Hidden Dragon Island.

"What else do you want?" Zhang Taibai watched Zhang Tie in a wholly new look.

"As long as I could steadily provide all-purpose medicament for Long Wind Business Group every year, I think it's not an excessive request for the Clan to give me 5000 clan contribution points a year. Additionally, in order to avoid from the similar event, I should have right to refuse any task or request distributed or allocated to me by Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"What if I don't agree?" Zhang Taibai looked somewhat serious.

Zhang Tie then gave him a smile, "If so, I would exterminate the cooperation with Long Wind Business Group on all-purpose medicament after I pay off the 460,000 gold coins and the interests accrued from it. Although I like money, I don't have to make money at the risk of my life. You should not make profits from my all-purpose medicament so as to reinforce the power of Zhang Clan at the risk of my life."

"What if Zhang Clan could really assign a knight to protect you?"

"If so, I could give up all the requests and our collaboration will keep going. However, the one who's assigned here must follow my order. You'd better not fetch me a lord. " Zhang Tie put it straightly.

Zhang Taibai finally sighed, "I could not make decision on critical affairs of Hidden Dragon Palace alone. I need to negotiate it with others!"

"It doesn't matter. I will recover here these days. You can notice me when you've made the final decision!"

...

When Zhang Taibai was going to leave the hall of the castle accompanied by Zhang Tie, a guardian of Zhang Taibai hurriedly passed him a slip

After skimming over the slip, Zhang Taibai's face slightly changed. He then stared at Zhang Tie with a hesitated expression.

Zhang Tie had a terrible feeling and his heart raced as he instantly grabbed Zhang Taibai's hand and asked loudly, "Is it about my family?"

"It's your older brother, Zhang Yang...he's been attacked!" Zhang Taibai replied in a grave voice.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie was driven anxious at once as he felt his scalp numb...

Chapter 336: Leaving Hidden Dragon Island

At 6:00 am, June 23rd, after one day's tense atmosphere due to curfew, the first passenger liner had been fully crowded by passengers who were leaving Hidden Dragon Island. After several hours' travel on the sea, Zhang Tie finally arrived at a wharf in Jinhai City.

After more than half a year, when he landed in this city once again. Zhang Tie felt really gloomy and irritated this time.

He landed in Hidden Dragon Island on Dec 5th last year. After half a year's practice in the Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie had become totally different.

As Zhang Tie expected, after one day's curfew and capture, Hidden Dragon Palace and Long Wind Business Group finally gained nothing at all. All those who tried to assassinate Zhang Tie seemed having been killed by the old man in the Dragon Cave. Even though everybody knew that those people who died underground had accomplices outside the Dragon Cave, nobody could find out their accomplices.

When those assassins arrived at Hidden Dragon Island, they were scattered and entered Hidden Dragon Island by teams; each team only contained a couple of people. They were so strictly organized that when any part of them was in trouble, the others would automatically leave the control of the organization. It was similar to geckos which would break their tails when they in danger.

In this case, only by arresting all the outsiders on the island and interrogating them all could Hidden Dragon Palace and Long Wind Business Group find the accomplices of those assassins.

However, even though Long Wind Business Group was that powerful to arrest all the outsiders in this island, they would not do such a stupid thing. Because there were tens of thousands of outsiders on the Hidden Dragon Island, who came from everywhere, it would be very difficult to arrest them all; additionally, it would definitely cause great turmoil.

In such a case, after one day's curfew, Hidden Dragon Island had recovered its original order. Therefore, Zhang Tie finally gained freedom that he had expected for a long time—the freedom for him to access Hidden Dragon Island.

After balancing the benefits and shortcomings between gaining large-production of all-purpose medicament and allowing Zhang Tie to access Hidden Dragon Island freely, they decisively chose the prior.

Of course, big figures always dealt with things very considerably. They had to consider the faces from all sides. They would not directly cross the red tape of Hidden Dragon Palace without any concern. Therefore, if you had access to look up the students archive under the management of that set of differential machine in Hidden Dragon Palace, you would find a new task for Zhang Tie at the bottom of Zhang Tie's personal archive.

The information was as follows:

Name: Zhang Tie!

Task Acceptance Time: June 22th, 890 of Black Iron Calendar.

Quality of the Task: Class S, appointed by Zhang Clan.

Content of the Task: As a partner of Long Wind Business Group, Zhang Tie should provide mass batches of all-purpose medicament for the latter...

Reward: 3000 clan contribution points each year.

Duration of the task: Long term...

Task guarantee measures: As this task is of supreme priority, during the period of this task, the executor could carry out the principles of uniqueness and exclusiveness as are regulated in the task guarantee items and refuse to accept other tasks.

Special remark: during the task, responding to various emergencies and guaranteeing the safety of the executor, Hidden Dragon Palace especially grants Zhang Tie with the right to access to Hidden Dragon Island for free. His own traffic tool could freely access the surrounding sea and territorial air space of Hidden Dragon Island.

...

Beside the requested clan contribution points which were only satisfied by 60%, all the other requirements from Zhang Tie had been satisfied by those big figures of Zhang Clan in terms of a simple task appointed by Zhang Clan. Additionally, nobody could find a loophole of it. Zhang Tie became pleasant while Hidden Dragon Palace's authority was also maintained.

For this, besides being amazed that those big figures were cunning, Zhang Tie really didn't know how to comment them.

By now, Zhang Tie had become the first clan member of Huaiyuan Palace who was able to freely access Hidden Dragon Island before completed all his courses in Hidden Dragon Palace.

Zhang Tie gained his freedom, the real freedom! It indicated an adjustment of the relationship between Zhang Tie and Huaiyuan Palace and Zhang Clan and that Zhang Tie determined to master his own destiny.

On the way back to Jinhai City, Zhang Tie kept retrospecting himself since he entered Hidden Dragon Cave half a year ago. During the past half year, Zhang Tie felt that he had improved rapidly—from a LV 5 warrior to a LV 7 fighter. He had already realized a round of evolution of the throwing skill and formed his Iron-Blood Battle Qi; besides, he had improved greatly on all aspects including diving skill; however, compared to these improvements, Zhang Tie felt that the great improvement that he had made was that he had recognized the road that he needed to walk on in the future with the help of Castle of Black Iron and that miraculous Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree.

The shortcut to gain privilege and social status was not to seek for a powerful reliance, but to express his own value and ability so that he could turn himself into a giant tree or a robust leg that could be relied on.

It was not wrong for Zhang Tie to decide to enter Hidden Dragon Palace. The only mistake he had made was that he lacked deep understanding about himself and his real ability. He failed to exert his ability to the utmost. He didn't realize that with the help of Castle of Black Iron and that small tree he was different from all the other people.

He didn't consider the difference between him and the other people seriously before; however, after thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie soon got the answer——his difference from others depends on how special Castle of Black Iron was and how many kinds of fruits the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree could bear.

For instance, when he was chased by that LV 10 douchebag, his own threat to that guy was his handbolts. Zhao Yuan, Zhang Tie's master told him that although his handbolts could realize sonic boom, its speed was only between 1.2 and 1.3 Mach. If he could raise the speed of his handbolts to 2 times of the sound speed, he would have killed that LV 10 powerful fighter with only one handbolt.

Like the development process of the kinetic energy weapons that were invented before the Catastrophe, high speed was the most terrifying weapon. Even though it was just a copper coin, as long as it could fly at the speed above 20 times the speed of sound, its

momentum would be extremely destructive.

It was almost impossible for others to raise their throwing speed by one time in a short period because one's strength had to increase gradually; however, for Zhang Tie, there was a shortcut for him to realize 2 times that of sound speed for his handbolts—to eat 9 huge wolf seven-strength fruits.

Sitting on the ship, Zhang Tie had determined to make his handbolts throwing skill as his trump card before he reached LV 8. By then, he would be able to explode the head of a LV 10 powerful fighter by throwing his handbolt twice or thrice that of sound speed in a split second.

...

"Dear passengers, may I have your attention, please, we will arrive at the harbor right now. Please carry your personal belongings and get off the liner to go through the gangway ladder orderly against the deck!"

On the passenger liner, the waiter inside the cabin had repeated the same words three times. After arriving at the wharf, with a slight shake of the liner, the engine of the liner powered off before the sirens sounded which indicated that passengers could get off the liner, everybody in the cabin then stood up from their seats and prepared to get off the liner in an order.

Zhang Tie kept his eyes closed since the liner moved. Not until all the passengers beside him had disembarked did Zhang Tie open his

eyes and stand up from his chair. At the end of the line, he followed them off the liner silently.

The liner was anchored at a wharf of Jinhai City. This wharf lasted several miles where anchored various ships such as passenger liners, cargo ships and fishers. In a relatively elegant place, there were two rows of white private yachts. Although Jinhai City was not as prosperous as Yiyang City, it was also a big city.

It was noon while the sun was hanging in the sky like a ball of fire. Under the scorching sun, many workers and sailors on the wharf only wore a pair of short pants, sweating all over.

Fishery was very developed in Jinhai City. There were also many ice plants. When in summer, many people would buy ice from ice plants to do small businesses. On the street outside the platform of the ticket entrance of the wharf, Zhang Tie saw many small booths on triology which sold iced fruit juice and taxis and carriages which were waiting for passengers.

Most of passengers getting off the liner would buy a cup of iced fruit juice by hand to relieve summer heat.

Eyes slightly narrowed, Zhang Tie watched those persons exiting the ticket entrance. Accomplices of those assassins might mix with them. It was impossible if the curfew on Hidden Dragon Island yesterday didn't pose stress on them. After the curfew was cancelled off, some of the assassins would definitely leave Hidden Dragon Island today; but Zhang Tie didn't know whether they were in the first passenger liner.

If not his life was much more worthwhile than those guys, Zhang Tie really wanted to pick off his mask and have a look at who among these passengers would look disappointed at the sight of him.

'According to the Fatty Donder, in this case, no matter how they look at this moment, as long as those whose pupils suddenly contracted at the sight of me, they would have known whom I am. Additionally, for those who are malicious about me, their pupils would expand and contract from time and then which reflected their true moods and feelings.

"Do you want a cup of iced mango juice? 6 copper coins a cup without ice, 1 copper coin more for some ice..." At the sight of Zhang Tie, an old man who was selling ice water with her wife in tidy clothes on the roadside yelled towards Zhang Tie.

"2 cups, with ice, please!" Zhang Tie walked towards them and said in a slightly hoarse voice.

The Mrs. then got 2 cups of iced juice for Zhang Tie rapidly.

Zhang Tie bottomed them up at once before chewed up the ice cubes and swallowed them, causing a crispy sound.

After that, Zhang Tie felt a bit cooler. He then put his hand into his pocket. In a split second, a silver coin was taken out of Castle of Black Iron. Zhang Tie then threw that silver coin into the old man's small barrel which was used to hold money, making a crispy

sound, "Keep the changes..."

"Argh, thank you. Do you want 2 more?" The old man asked passionately. As many people coming back from Hidden Dragon Island were rich, the old couple chose to sell fruit juice here.

Zhang Tie waved his hands and walked towards those taxis. Seeing Zhang Tie drop a silver coin for 2 cups of juice, a steam-driven taxi hurriedly parked towards him while a 40-odd baldheaded driver put his head out of the window, "Buddy, do you need a ride?"

After glancing at his slippery look, Zhang Tie directly pulled open the door and sat on the back seat without saying anything.

The driver then gazed at Zhang Tie's average face of about 20 years old and asked with a smile through the rearview mirror, "Where are you going, buddy?"

"Are you familiar with Jinhai City?"

"I've lived in Jinhai City over 40 years. Of course, I know it well. I'm not bragging, I know every place in Jinhai City, eating, drinking, entertainment, wherever you want!" The baldheaded driver boasted as he slowly started the car.

"I've missed my ID certificate in the Dragon Cave of Hidden Dragon Island. I was told there would be much inconvenience in Huaiyuan Prefecture if you have no legal ID certificate. Therefore,

I want to get an ID certificate. Do you know where I can get it?" Zhang Tie asked calmly.

After hearing this, the driver shrunk his neck as his hands on the steering wheel shook, "I might be sent into the prison, even be chopped off my head if I help you get an ID certificate in Huaiyuan Prefecture. I don't know about this place; you'd better find someone else!"

"I'm not from Huaiyuan Prefecture, Jinyun Country, I don't want a fake ID certificate in Huaiyuan Prefecture; I only want a certificate that could help me live in a hotel!"

Hearing this, the baldheaded driver looked better as his eyes rolled twice towards the rearview mirror, "If so, I know a place where you could get an ID certificate. But it would be a bit expensive concerning a long distance and the counseling fee; at least...at least 1 gold coin!"

Zhang Tie puffed inside, 'he really wants to rip me off by taking me as an idiot. It's just a fake ID certificate. Such ads are pasted everywhere in the railway station of Blackhot City. This industry was one of the oldest for mankind. In Donder's words, as any old prostitute who could serve you twice for a silver coin could tell you everything that you want to know.

"Here are 10 silver coins. No crap. If not, you can only get 5 silver coins." Zhang Tie glared at him and swore in a hoarse voice, "f*ck, you really think that I make money so easily? I tell you, it only takes me 2 silver coins to find a woman who will take me there. 1 gold coin? with 1 gold coin, I could get 10 fake ID certificates!"

The driver ridiculed, "You are really informed. I'm wrong. Just 10 silver coins, take it easy, brother..."

...

Half an hour later, when Zhang Tie thought that driver would take him to a gloomy corner, the taxi parked in front of a 4-floor building which was a bit obsolete.

Below that building were some average hotels, which were selling stretched noodles with seafood and teppanyaki with squid. Besides, there was a board which was so frightening.

——Holy Golden Orchid Empire's Embassy in Jinyun Country.

Sitting on a back seat in the taxi, Zhang Tie looked at that wooden plate marked "Empire", lacquer on which had severely faded away and that board marked "Wang Defu's Teppanyaki with Squid" which was polished, Zhang Tie started to doubt whether who was playing a joke here.

'Is that an empire's embassy? F*ck! Even the public toilets in Breaking Heavens Department are much more senior than it.'

Zhang Tie then slightly rubbed his jaw with his hand, 'Is that driver that audacious? How could he play such a joke with me? Or "Come on, cheat me" is written on my face?'

After noticing that Zhang Tie gradually look gloomy through the rearview mirror, the driver hurriedly explained, "You can really get an ID certificate here. I swear it is true! This is the Holy Golden Orchid Empire's Embassy in Jinyun Country. I remeber that when I came here last time, there were 2 guardians outside the gate. Where're they now? They might be taking a nap!"

When Zhang Tie almost lost his temper, another person suddenly slipped out of the stretched noodles hotel. After sucking a piece of spaghetti inside, he started to look around, "Who wants an ID certificate? Who wants an ID certificate?"

Thus, he caught sight of the taxi parking outside the gate. He then instantly ran towards here. After wiping off the soup stains over his mouth corners, he pulled open the back door in a very professional way, "Sir, do you need an ID certificate? Philip, the senior commerical counsellor of Holy Golden Orchid Empire's Embassy in Jinyun Country is glad to serve you!"

This was Zhang Tie's first time to be treated so politely by a non-Chinese ever since he was born.

Chapter 337: A Declining Empire

Zhang Tie didn't get out of the taxi; instead, he carefully glanced at Philip. He still wasn't sure if he was being teased by them.

This kind of parody in public dated back to a time before the Catastrophe. The people who took part in these pranks or special scenes would tease the 'victim' to make those who were hiding aside laugh out loudly.

Zhang Tie had read about it before. This kind of parody was very popular before the Catastrophe; however, Zhang Tie had not seen such a thing before. He had not imagined that there was someone so bored in Jinhai City.

"Listen, my time is very precious; if this is a joke, I hope it comes to an end right now. If not, there will be very serious consequences!" Gazing at Philip, Zhang Tie warned him in very adroit and standard Hebrew.

Both the baldheaded driver and Philip were slightly shocked by Zhang Tie's fluent use of Hebrew. Only a few Chinese could speak Hebrew in this age, because Chinese was almost the standard diplomatic language for many countries, especially in Hebrew-spoken regions. In many cases, it had become a symbol of nobility and high social status if one could speak Chinese very fluently.

"Sir, as a diplomat of Holy Golden Orchid Empire, I truly feel shameful about the embarrassing state of the Empire's Embassy in Jinyun Country. However, there's a reason for this. If you don't

mind, I would like several minutes of your time to explain the reason. This is a tragedy of the country. Whereas, now that your time is very precious, we can talk about this question after I deal with the ID certificate for you. How do you feel?"

Gazing at Philip's embarrassed face, Zhang Tie threw 10 silver coins to that baldheaded driver before getting off the taxi. When he took out the silver coins, Zhang Tie noticed the shrewed light in Philip's eyes.

'It's only 10 silver coins. Do you need to be that thirsty for it?' Zhang Tie sighed inside, 'It seems that this embassy is more awful than I imagined. It's definitely a wonder!'

Seeing Zhang Tie getting off the car, Philip, the senior commercial counsellor of Holy Golden Orchid Empire's Embassy in Jinyun Country, became so diligent that he instantly guided Zhang Tie into the Embassy. This Embassy was really like that illegal agency's office which relied on cheating those foreigners nearby the railway station of Blackhot City.

"How could your embassy become so awful?" Zhang Tie asked in Chinese.

"It's a long story, sir. In the past 15 years, our embassy has not been able to gain even a copper coin for our budget from our country. What's worse, we have to submit an amount of gold coins to the country. The former embassy in the capital of Jinyun Country was auctioned 7 years ago. Since then, we've moved to Huaiyuan Prefecture of Yiyang City; after that, we moved to Stars Viewing City. Finally, with the help of some kind-hearted

businessmen of the empire, we settle down here because of the cheap rent!"

When he explained, Philip looked like a dried bitter gourd.

"To tell the truth, even the center of any government-in-exile is much better than here!" Zhang Tie put it straightly.

"That's true! At least government-in-exile could gain a bit sympathy; not like us, if I leave here, I would even feel embarrassed to tell others that I am a diplomat!"

When they finished talking, Philip had already guided Zhang Tie in.

There were various photos, documents, and files in the showcases on two sides of the corridor, which might be used to make this place more imposing.

From the inside of one cheap glass showcase, Zhang Tie noticed the credentials that Holy Golden Orchid Empire had submitted to Jinyun Country, on which the seal of the state and the seal of the Foreign Affairs Ministry of Holy Golden Orchid Empire could be clearly seen.

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie really widened his eyes. He felt that it was worthwhile even to be cheated by them. 'They're really f*cking professional! It was really great for them to counterfeit a letter of credence only for a few gold coins.' Zhang Tie had not

seen such a senior document since he was born.

Noticing Zhang Tie becoming very interested in that letter of credence, Philip hurriedly started to introduce it from aside.

"Actually, there was another letter of credence submitted from the Foreign Affairs Ministry of Jinyun Country to Holy Golden Orchid Empire here. Later on, under the strict protest and negotiation of the Foreign Affairs Ministry of Jinyun Country, we passed that letter of credence back to our country. This one left was brought by the new ambassador when he took office a few years ago. We don't submit it to the Foreign Affairs Ministry of Jinyun Country; instead, we just keep it here; no matter what, no one cares about it!"

When Philip introduced that letter of credence in the showcase to Zhang Tie, a sound drifted from a door aside while a man with whiskers and a big stomach in a loose shirt yawned and walked into the room.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, that man blinked his eyes as he became spirited at once, "Yo, you got a business today, Philip. We can have a good dinner tonight!"

Philip then rubbed his face by hand in an embarrassed way and introduced that guy to Zhang Tie, "Sorry, sir, I will give you an introduction about him; this is Colonel Gucci, the military attache of our embassy!"

"Where are Belli and Ary? Shouldn't they on sentry duty outside?"

Are they working in the wharf as carriers yet again?" Colonel Gucci swore as he rubbed his stomach, "Alas, smelling that food downstairs, I want to have a drink again. Philip, do you have money? Lend me a silver coin; I want a bottle of alcohol!"

However, hearing his words, Philip just ignored that guy as he directly pulled Zhang Tie away, "I will take you to the office of ambassador Nicolay. All the ID certificates in the embassy are arranged by Mr. Nicolay. This is the main source of income of the embassy!"

After turning a corner in the corridor, Philip took Zhang Tie in front of an office. He then knocked at the door. Receiving no response, he knocked at the door once again. Still not receiving a response, Philip directly pushed open the door and entered. He woke up a thin old man who was sleeping behind a desk by shaking him. After that, he whispered near the old man's ears. Hearing this, the old man instantly sat up straight and gazed at Zhang Tie with gleaming eyes.

"Hello, I'm Nicolay, the ambassador of Holly Golden Orchid Empire in Jinyun Country. Philip told me that you want an ID certificate?"

Since he entered this 'alleged' embassy, Zhang Tie had already figured out the existing state of it. Although it sounded great, it was actually a makeshift organization which was nothing different from those poor, small, illegal agencies.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the door, Philip had already pulled over a chair for Zhang Tie. After sitting down, Zhang Tie

popped out a gold coin, which fell onto Philip's hand with a delicate arc, "Your tip!"

Philip swiftly seized that gold coin and foisted it into his own pocket. With a big smile, he replied, "Thank you, sir, your generosity really makes my effort worthwhile. It's my great honor to serve you!"

Seeing this, ambassador Nicolay's Adam's apple quivered as he forcefully swallowed his saliva and instantly jumped over here which could be rarely seen at his age. After being in front of Zhang Tie, he bent over with a big smile, "What can I do for you sir?"

Legs crossed, Zhang Tie patted his hand on the desk and instantly gained the initiative, "Tell me what kind of ID certificates you can deal with here?"

"We can deal with the official ID certificate of the citizen of Holy Golden Orchid Empire!" After saying this, Nicolay turned his head and ordered Philip, "Go make a cup of tea for this honorable sir. Use the best tea leaves that I've collected!"

Receiving the order, Philip left jubilantly.

"Is that a fake ID certificate?"

"It's real. It's absolutely a real ID certificate, with which, you could access Holy Golden Orchid Empire for free." Saying this, Nicolay became thrilled, "This is a business of our embassy!"

"Is it okay even if I'm not a citizen of Holy Golden Orchid Empire?" Zhang Tie wondered.

"It's okay. Definitely okay! Because Holy Golden Orchid Empire is an extremely open country which accepts the existence of multiple nationalities. Anyone who wants to join Holy Golden Orchid Empire will be welcomed in our country, regardless of their race, belief, or former nationality. With only a few gold coins and a simple ceremony, we will deal with the relevant procedures for you as soon as possible!"

'F*ck, this world is marvelous.' Zhang Tie mocked himself for being ignorant inside. He had not imagined there was such a bizarre country on Waii Sub-continent. Compared to this embassy, those faking ID certificates were really dwarfed.

With a cup of hot tea, Philip carefully walked over here and put it onto the teapoy in front of Zhang Tie. The moment Zhang Tie noticed that small defect on one side of the tea cup and a few "good tea" leaves which looked like straws, Zhang Tie instantly lost his appetite.

"I suddenly become a bit interested in your country. Introduce your Holy Golden Orchid Empire to me, please. Such a country really sounds attractive!"

With Nicolay and Philip's introduction, Zhang Tie started to better understand the Holy Golden Orchid Empire.

"Holy Golden Orchid country was established after the first holy war between human beings and demons. Although it's not prosperous, it is a second-class country on the continent. It has a population of over 26 million people at that moment and covered 6.8 million square meters. The country was composed of dozens of cities, small and big; it's also a member of the central state alliance of mankind on Waii Sub-Continent.

The only reason that caused Holy Golden Orchid Empire decline was the unparalleled, bizarre king of the country——Heiger VII.

What if a person who just indulged in wildest fantasy everyday became an emperor? Holy Golden Orchid Empire was the best example.

Heiger VII took the throne at the age of 16. After that, the first thing he did was to take out half of the national treasury to summon various persons who had excellent workmanship so as to build a weird aircraft which could match the plane created by mankind before the Catastrophe which could fly faster than sound...

According to his illusion, besides flying much faster than the airships of this age, this kind of aircraft could also transform into machine warriors on the ground, which could destroy everything. Heiger VII dreamed to build the only high-reaching troop in this age.

The word "high-reaching" was dubbed by Heiger VII himself. For its meaning, nobody understood it, even now. No matter what, based on Heiger VII's description, as long as Holy Golden Orchid

Empire had such a troop, the empire would be able to conquer the whole world easily.

Heiger VII's dream shocked everybody; however, due to his pursuit for his dream, this country's national treasury was used up in only 2 years.

It was said that the reason Heiger VII was very mad about flying in the air and creating that strange high-reaching troop lay in some military books about the age before the Catastrophe that he had read in the imperial library of the empire. Nobody knew which military books he read; although there were millions of books in the Imperial Library of Holy Golden Orchid Empire, few people could enter it.

Therefore, Heiger VII's dream to make a plane became a terrifying bottomless hole, which not only consumed all the national treasury of Holy Golden Orchid Empire like water flow but also caused a crazier idea.

Heiger VII was not only a mad dreamer, but also a kind man. On the second year after he took the throne, he had abolished the death penalty of Holy Golden Orchid Empire, even though many people didn't agree.

On the 3rd year after he took the throne, he performed an inspection in a drought-stricken area of Holy Golden Orchid Empire. After that, he abolished all the taxes that had been levied on average citizens since the founding of the country and added "No Tax Forever" into the "Holy Code" of the empire, which had not been done by any former emperors of Holy Golden Orchid

Empire.

On the 4th year, at the age of 20, he made a crazy decision in order to comfort the officials' fury about him and gain enough R&D expenditure so as to build the marvelous machine in his dream.

As long as the officials of the empire vowed to be loyal to the imperial household of Holy Golden Orchid Empire forever, swore to follow the "Holy Code" and paid a great amount of money in terms of their own positions, after signing an agreement and document, they would be able to change their current position into family hereditary positions.

Receiving this news, all the officials of the empire became mad...

As a result, numerous hereditary positions were sold by Heiger VII while countless wealth flew into the national treasury of the empire. After that, all the wealth was used to pursue for his exotic dream...

Heiger VII's crazy dream lasted 10 years. During that period, the Holy Golden Orchid Empire had almost been ruined by that lunatic. When everybody thought that Heiger VII would return to the normal track by giving up his terrifying dream, Heiger VII got a new dream.

Heiger VII finally woke up from that high-reaching dream; yet he immersed himself into the deep and profound Chinese culture on the Eastern Continent. He learned that there was a strange secret

fist skill on the Eastern Continent which could block 500 kg's strength with only 0.2 kg's strength and defeat powerful one with weak body. Additionally, it could be learned by both male and female. Heiger VII was fascinated by this skill. He then took a great number of followers and flew to the Eastern Continent by airship without caring about Holy Golden Orchid Empire at all.

Heiger VII planned to bring back that marvelous fist skill and let all the citizens of Holy Golden Orchid Empire master it. By then, Holy Golden Orchid Empire would easily conquer the world too.

It took him another 12 years for him to return.

When he returned, the country didn't need an emperor any more as it had run 12 years without an emperor.

After a deep reflection, Heiger VII finally woke up, enlightened and sublimed...

High-reaching, fist, power, all this was bullsh*t. Heiger VII found that only light and love were the forever truth in the universe.

"As long as we have light and love in our hearts, one day, even demons would be moved by our selfless love. I will build Holy Golden Orchid Empire into a Paradise full of love and light. As long as you have love and light, you would be the citizen of Holy Golden Orchid Empire..." Heiger VII declared when he was celebrating his birthday at the age of 40.

...

This year, Heiger VII had reached 58 years old. After ruling Holy Golden Orchid Empire over 40 years, it was really a miracle for the country to still remain complete while the capital Aulis is still in the hands of imperial household.

Thanks to the resistance of all the imperial members, the taxes of Aulis were not embezzled by that mad emperor to carry out his great undertaking of "light and love" which could move demons. That amount of money could only roughly afford the imperial army of over 20,000 imperial army and the daily expense of the imperial palace.

...

"Previously the position foreign secretary was not profitable; however, after it was bought by Hillary family, people realized that it is really profitable. At least, after selling all the real estates of the country's embassies and consulates, the Hillary family would get back their investment from this position!" Saying this, Nicolay looked very admirable and regretful.

Zhang Tie was really dumbfounded by such a bizarre emperor and such a bizarre country, 'What the f*ck...'

Chapter 338: News about Pandora

"After leaving the capital of Jinyun Country, we moved to Stars Viewing City. The slave trade was very prosperous over there. After buying some slaves, especially some female slaves, some rich people would have some special demands, such as they would like to grant some strange official status to their female slaves. Our embassy could meet their demands. Benefited from them, we could live well for a few days!" Philip sighed as his eyes were filled with infinite desire for that period.

"Strange status? What kind of status can you provide for those female slaves?" Zhang Tie asked out of curiosity.

"As long as they have money, they could let their female slaves be official citizens of Holy Golden Orchid Empire. Besides, they could buy some imperial positions for those female slaves, positions which meant nothing but gave them some reputation, such as palace consultant, palace musician, secretary of the Foreign Affairs Ministry, military officer of the art troupe of the imperial army, etc!" Philip replied, "Among these positions, the most popular one was the status sacred, holy goddess of the School of Fraternity which was founded by our emperor!"

'F*ck!' Zhang Tie understood it at once. For some nouveau riches, of course, they bought beautiful female slaves to f*ck them; for some of them, making love with beautiful female slaves felt different compared to making love with female slaves with some exotic status; they wanted to experience something different.

"You make your living from this?"

"That's it. This is the only way that all the embassies of Holy Golden Orchid Empire could make money. What else could we sell except for the status of citizen and those official positions? After selling the position of foreign secretary, our emperor even sold out the positions of ambassadors in all the embassies!" Nicolay frowned his forehead gloomily, "I spent over 100,000 gold coins to buy this official position. Whereas, the only task for all the embassies of Holy Golden Orchid Empire in other countries is to spread the theory about light and love proposed by our emperor. Anyone could be a citizen of Holy Golden Orchid Empire as long as their hearts are full of love and light!"

Zhang Tie was struck speechless by that. There were truly populations and religions in this world that were bound up in terms of pure theories, values, or standards of conduct; for instance, the Jews, who were as well known as Chinese for their excellent business acumen before the Catastrophe. There was a old saying in the Jews' Sacred Codes about themselves: 'Anyone who gives up worshipping idols is a Jew.' There was another example, in Buddhism, which was the largest religion in the world before the Catastrophe, buddhists were defined as those who could insist on the [four truths](#) of their belief.

Zhang Tie learned the above knowledge from the course "General History of Human Race" when he was in Hidden Dragon Palace. Those were all examples of the diversity greater population in terms of values and standards of conduct before the Catastrophe; however, Zhang Tie had not imagined that in a chaotic world like Black Iron Age, someone also wanted to unite people by an empty talk like "light and love".

A bizarre emperor builds a strange country with weird standards.

This was Zhang Tie's feeling at that moment.

"If you could live well in Stars Viewing City, why are you so pitiful now?"

"When the emperor knew that some embassies were helping some slaves gain the status of citizens and various other positions so as to satisfy someone's weird and abnormal requests, he had delivered an order to forbid embassies to gain the status of citizen for slaves. The emperor even said slave should not exist in a country full of light and love!" Nicolay explained while his eyes were full of tears, "My god, but I'd only got half of my investment back by that point!"

Zhang Tie sighed. Heiger VII was really worth his own novel. But Zhang Tie didn't plan to dig for further information about him then.

"I'm applying to join Holy Golden Orchid Empire. What forms do I need? Hurry up!"

The moment they heard Zhang Tie's request, Nicolay and Philip exchanged glances with each other as they became busy at once.

"Philip, call Piaster in. Let him prepare to take a photo for this gentleman along with the metal fingerprint collector. As this gentleman doesn't have much time, I will prepare the citizenship

confirmation procedure for this gentleman!"

"Yes sir! Mr. Ambassador!" Philip hurriedly ran out of the office and shouted loudly, "Piaster, you lazybones, go get your machine prepared, we have a guest!"

...

Zhang Tie thought that alleged the citizenship confirmation procedures would be very sophisticated; he couldn't have imagined that it was as simple as a joke.

Nicolay took out of a book of "Sacred Codes" from his desk and asked Zhang Tie put his hand on it. After that, Nicolay asked Zhang Tie in a very solemn way, "Do you have light and love in your heart?"

Having been told what to say, Zhang Tie answered, "Yes, I do!" Then the whole confirmation procedure was finished. Zhang Tie was really stunned by this.

After that, Zhang Tie took a photo and left the fingerprint of his right thumb on a metal mold in a confined room. Piaster was a first secretary of the embassy. However, his work was nothing different than those workers in the workshops.

Zhang Tie then left the name of his current alias: Fei Yuao (费雨傲).

After receiving 12 gold coins from Zhang Tie, Nicolay told Zhang Tie jubilantly that it would take him only 10 minutes to get his ID certificate as the citizen of Holy Golden Orchid Empire.

During this period, Philip presented Zhang Tie with a service list which looked like a menu in a hotel as he and Nicolay stood on Zhang Tie's two sides respectively and started to introduce the other services that the embassy could provide to Zhang Tie.

At this moment, Fei Yuao was only an average citizen of Holy Golden Orchid Empire; however, as long as Zhang Tie wanted, he could have a very privileged official position at once. Even if Zhang Tie wanted to be a military officer, he could freely choose any of position from ensign to admiral of the fleet.

The status of ensign was the cheapest as it only required 10 gold coins. As long as Zhang Tie submitted 10 gold coins, he would gain a military officer certificate and two sets of ceremonial dresses of military officers officially issued and allocated by the imperial army headquarter of Holy Golden Orchid Empire. But, that would take one week.

"The price of the navy marshal of Holy Golden Orchid Empire is 300,000 gold coins. With this position, besides the above official ID certificate and other marshals' reliance, you could also gain a mace made of pure gold and have the chance to lunch with Heigner VII. In Holy Golden Orchid Empire, with this status, you would be able to enter many places where are limited to upper class talents. Additionally, the military department of the empire would engage you as a lifetime counselor of the military department of the empire and the honorary president of the navy university...briefly,

you would enjoy many benefits with this status!"

Philip kept talking about the benefits of having various official positions in Holy Golden Orchid Empire while Zhang Tie became confused, "Isn't Holy Golden Orchid Empire a land-locked country? What does it establish navy for?"

"There's no regulation on forbidding the establishment of a navy in a land-locked country. No matter what, the navy department is usually a sub-department of the military department of the empire. Except for salary, fleet, and sailors, they could enjoy equal treatment like those of real military officers!" Philip explained in a smart way.

Zhang Tie then understood it. Because there was no navy in Holy Golden Orchid Empire, they set up a navy department to sell relevant official positions. In this way, they wouldn't shoulder any responsibility for that. Perhaps, there were truly some nouveau riche fools who liked the feeling of being military officers and big figures.

Following that, Philip introduced a great number of titles of imperial palace counselors of Holy Golden Orchid Empire. Noticing that Zhang Tie was not interested in those fake status, Philip hurriedly turned over 2 pages.

"How about this? It would only take you 600 gold coins a year to be authorized to use the badge of golden orchid of the imperial household of the empire and enjoy the royal naming right of the empire. These are successful cases. Take this as an example, after being named as the royal oak club of Holy Golden Orchid Empire,

this business group avoided a robbery..."

"Additionally, after being crowned as the royal club of Holy Golden Orchid Empire, this club's trading volume surged by one hundred percent..."

Zhang Tie shook his head as he thought this naming right was a bit useful; however, he didn't need this status at the present. If back in Blackhot City, those nouveau riche fools in Blackhot City would definitely be mad for royal clubs or fighting clubs of Holy Golden Orchid Empire.

After that, Philip introduced some other items, such as with only 1 gold coin, one could buy several square kilometers' remote land, the right to exploit or reclaim wasteland out of the territory of the empire. But Zhang Tie kept shaking his head.

"Sorry, if you've finished my ID certificate, please bring it to me. I'm not interested in the other items here. No more sales pitches, please!" Zhang Tie said calmly.

"One more, one more. I bet you will like it!" Seemingly not feeling that Zhang Tie would leave here with only 10-odd gold coins, Philip almost exclaimed, "As long as you are a man, you will definitely be interested in this. As long as you submit 200 gold coins, you will be qualified to attend a grand meeting in Aulis next year when you might have a chance to win the favor of Princess Pandora and become her husband!"

"What? What's the name of the princess?" Zhang Tie was

dumbfounded as the name Pandora instantly reminded Zhang Tie of those warm memories. Zhang Tie thought the princess must be another girl with the same name.

"Your Highness princess called Pandora. She's just 16 years old this year. It's told that she learned outside when she was young. She came back to Aulis last year. Princess Pandora is the only daughter of Heiger VII and the first heir to the throne of the empire. When she becomes the queen in the future, there would be one more prince in the empire."

16 years old; learned outside when she was young; came back to Aulis last year. These pieces of message made Zhang Tie's heart pound.

"Do you have a photo of Princess Pandora?"

Nicolay pulled open the sketcher as he took out of a photo and gave it to Zhang Tie, "According to the order from the Foreign Affairs Ministry of the empire, 1 month later, when Princess Pandora is 17 years old, we will publish an ad on a whole page of the each mainstream newspaper of Jinyun Country for Princess Pandora's husband-selective grand meeting!"

In the photo, Pandora's hair and pupils were still. Being different from before, she was wearing a delicate and elegant princess crown and a brilliant set of blue palace dress while her hands were crossed and put before her lower abdomen elegantly. Besides, she was holding a nice-looking gold-made cane.

Compared to that emaciated look in Blackhot City, Pandora in the photo looked more balanced while her face radiated a wisp of brilliant and healthy light, making her beautiful, elegant and deep-thinking.

At the sight of this photo, everybody would consider her as a princess.

Zhang Tie then fixed his eyes on the fourth finger of her right hand which was holding a cane and obscurely saw a black-sealed ring on it.

Thinking that scene when he put on this ring for Pandora at the railway station when he left Blackhot City, Zhang Tie instantly dropped off tears...

At the sight of Zhang Tie dropping off tears with his eyes fixed on the photo, Nicolay and Philip were really stunned.

"I'm sorry. It's my first time to see such a beautiful princess!" Zhang Tie returned the photo to Nicolay, "You mean Pandora is going to select her husband next year?"

"Yes, on her 18th birthday! Any single man who can afford to spend 200 gold coins can go there to have a try!"

"Count me in!" Zhang Tie put his hand in his coat and threw a bag of gold coins onto Nicolay's desk.

...

Over 10 minutes later, with the ID certificate of "Fei Yuao", Zhang Tie left the Embassy. Outside the gate, he called a taxi and soon disappeared in the street.

Every 3 months, the Holy Golden Orchid Empire's embassy in Jinyun Country would have the photos, names and fingerprints of the persons who had joined the emperor registered in the administration of Huaiyuan Prefecture. However, Zhang Tie was not afraid of that; because he was wearing a mask. Nobody across Waii Sub-Continent would know about his true face except for Donder.

Half an hour later, Zhang Tie settled down in a middle-class hotel at the intersection between a boisterous business district and a red-light district in Jinhai City.

The rent of the hotel was 6 silver coins a day. There was a club under the hotel while on the roof of the hotel was a legal gambling house where were crowded with numerous people all day long.

Twenty minutes after entering the hotel, Zhang Tie changed into another set of clothes, took off his mask, and left the hotel.

Nobody cared about how Zhang Tie had entered; similarly, nobody cared about how he left.

After leaving the hotel, Zhang Tie circled around the area twice.

He then walked into a boisterous region of a business district where he called a taxi and drove him to that rich men's villa area in the Longman Avenue of Jinhai City.

That was where Zhang Tie's family members lived.

Zhang Tie then rang the doorbell of the No. 76 on the Longman Avenue. After a short while, a small window opened and a 40-odd, tough man appeared in the window. At the sight of Zhang Tie, he slightly frowned his forehead.

"Whom are you looking for?"

Zhang Tie didn't know him; but he might be able to guess the man's status after his elder brother was attacked.

"I'm Zhang Tie. I was living here. Zhang Yang is my elder brother!" Zhang Tie answered calmly.

Hearing this answer, that man was pretty shocked. He then glanced over Zhang Tie carefully and spoke politely, "Please wait a second..."

In less than 30 seconds, with a series of hurried footsteps, the gate was opened while Zhang Tie's mom's haggard face appeared in front of Zhang Tie at once.

"Mom!"

"Guoguo, is that you?" Zhang Tie's mom was so excited that she instantly hugged Zhang Tie, "Shouldn't you be in Hidden Dragon Island? How did you come back? Your eldest uncle was worrying about you last night, your elder brother..." Speaking of Zhang Tie's elder brother, his mom's eyes instantly turned wet while tears kept dropping off.

"Mom, it's okay. I'm safe. I already know what happened to my elder brother. Let's talk about it later!" Zhang Tie patted her mom's back to comfort her before accompanying her into the courtyard.

There was one more ladder, a small wooden horse and some toys on the grassland of the courtyard. Seeing them, Zhang Tie took a deep breath.

Although looking calm, Zhang Tie had long developed a powerful killing intent inside and was extremely furious.

On the same day Zhang Tie was attacked, Zhang Yang was assaulted. If not some emergencies which made the attackers abort their plan, Zhang Yang might have been dead. Even so, Zhang Yang was still injured.

Those who assaulted Zhang Yang in Jinhai City were the same batch of people as those who attempted to assassinate Zhang Tie. When their plan failed, Zhang Tie was told that they committed a suicide as same as the LV 10 guy — releasing the terrifying poison in their metal teeth and turning themselves into a pond of blood, leaving nothing else.

No matter how great the background of the Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City was and what tricks they designed in Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie had determined to sweep off Zhen Clan from Heavens Cold City.

Zhang Tie realized that his biggest advantage was that Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City didn't know that he had discovered their secret.

Four truths of Buddhism refer to: the truth of human life——bitterness; the reason of bitterness——desire, fury and fool; eliminate bitterness and the ultimate target——nirvana.

Chapter 339: Ambition

Zhang Yang looked much better than Zhang Tie had imagined. He was lying on the bed with one foot wrapped in thick gauze bandages; it was held in the air by a rack on one side of the bed. There was a small bandage above his left eye. Besides not being able to easily move about, he didn't look too bad.

Zhang Yang was telling Zhang Tie what happened to him 2 days ago. Although he was the one who was abducted, he could only recall some incoherent fragments.

"It was already late by then. My coworkers at the company had already left, leaving me alone. I was checking over the day's work. However, 3 people entered the company at that time. At the beginning, I thought they were guests and was not vigilant about them. They then asked whether I was Zhang Yang. I said yes. Then, I lost consciousness..."

Zhang Yang explained shamefully. Whereas, Zhang Tie could understand his feelings. Because his elder brother was only LV 5 and had not even formed his battle qi. He was like commoners who had no ability to fight those LV 7-8 fighters at all. Therefore, it was pretty easy to knock him out when his elder brother wasn't expecting it.

"What then?"

"When I woke up, I had been taken into a vehicle by the 3 people with my limbs bound and mouth covered. The vehicle felt like it

was driving fast; but I didn't know where it was heading for. It should've been near Jinhai City. When they noticed that I was awake, they torn off the adhesive tape from my mouth and asked me a question — how is all-purpose medicament produced?" Zhang Yang forced a bitter smile, "As it was my first time to hear the name all-purpose medicament, of course I didn't know how to answer them. Therefore, they tortured me a lot. Receiving no answer, they then asked whether you had me hold onto something for you. I said no. They then covered my mouth with adhesive tape once again."

While he explained, Zhang Yang was extremely gloomy as he gazed at Zhang Tie who was sitting beside him, "I was so scared at that moment. Although they had covered my mouth with an adhesive tape, I could still clearly hear what they were talking about. After receiving no answer from me, they were negotiating about burying me. I then thought of you, Cheng'an, and our parents. I didn't know whether I would see you ever again!"

Hearing his elder brother's words, Zhang Tie said nothing; he just held Zhang Yang's hand tightly.

"When I thought that I would be buried, I heard a sudden braking sound. Then, I felt the vehicle we were in crash into another. As a result, our vehicle was knocked over. At the same time, I flew out of the vehicle due to inertia. As for what happened after that, I don't remember..."

Even if Zhang Yang didn't remember what happened next, Zhang Tie already knew about it. When those abductors drove their car on the highway of Cloud Snake Mountain in the north of Jinhai

City, some affluent kids were racing cars illegally over there. Due to a malfunction, one of those cars crashed into the vehicle of those abductors and knocked over the latter's vehicle, making it roll down the hillside which was higher than 10 m.

Luckily, Zhang Yang flew out of the window due to inertia. Although one of his legs was broken and his body what quite bruised, Zhang Yang had already got out the control of the abductors.

When those rich boys and girls parked their cars and prepared to help those people in the vehicle, they caught sight of Zhang Yang with limbs bound and mouth pasted; they immediately knew something was not right.

Therefore, those bodyguards of the rich boys and girls moved, some of which were even powerhouses. As a result, one of the abductors were killed in an instant while all the rest were caught. However, they all committed a suicide by releasing the poison hidden in their teeth.

Realizing this accident was unusual, those rich boys and girls hurriedly sent Zhang Yang to the hospital as they called the police.

That was how it went. When Zhang Tie was told what happened to Zhang Yang on Hidden Dragon Island, the latter was still in coma in the hospital.

Zhang Tie knew that his elder brother was definitely suffering because of him. The head of this movement in Zhen Clan of

Heavens Cold City was not sure whether Zhang Tie was the only person who knew about the manufacturing method of all-purpose medicament; therefore, he had contacted his accomplices in Jinhai City and decided to start the movement at the same time.

From this point, Zhang Tie realized that this organization was very huge and under strict administration. Because they needed to coordinate the two movements on both Hidden Dragon Island and in Jinhai City, they had to use at least 2 sets of crystal remote sensing equipment, which could not be easily bought by average people.

After listening to Zhang Yang's experience, Zhang Tie told Zhang Yang everything, including that he mastered the manufacturing method of all-purpose medicament and his attempted assassination.

After finding out that Zhang Tie encountered huge danger, Zhang Yang was really dumbfounded; however, compared to the assassination, Zhang Tie's current real strength and ability was more stunning.

"You're already LV 7 after entering Hidden Dragon Island for half a year? You can also produce all-purpose medicament?" Zhang Yang asked Zhang Tie doubtfully.

"Yes!" Zhang Tie nodded, "Don't tell dad and mom about what happened to me on Hidden Dragon Island; it would make them more worried!"

"I know. But are you really okay about all this? If you do this, you will have given up the opportunity to be well-known in Zhang Clan through Hidden Dragon Island. After living in Jinhai City for over half a year, I realize that our clan is definitely more powerful than the former Andaman Alliance!"

"Yay, Huaiyuan Palace is very powerful, but it might not be suitable to me to be an elite of the Clan like others aim to be!" Zhang Tie stared at Zhang Yang seriously, "I'm not completely out of Huaiyuan Palace's control. I'm still a member of Zhang Clan, but compared to others, I chose an easier way to get along with the Clan. This is good for both me and Huaiyuan Palace, otherwise, I would not have been here now!"

"I hope so!" Zhang Yang considered, "but I still feel a bit pitiful that you have to stay away from Huaiyuan Palace and become an irregular member of the Clan's system!"

"Nothing to feel pitiful about that. Where there is a loss, there is gain. Huaiyuan Palace is a huge ship, which carries so many people. Some of them cannot be easily identified which made me uncomfortable. I'm also not accustomed to letting others determine my own fate and my life direction on such a huge ship. Additionally, I don't intend to stay away from Huaiyuan Palace, nor do I want to become estranged from it. I chose this only to protect myself. They know it very well! My prospects in Huaiyuan Palace will be determined on my own ability and the value I can bring to this Clan, rather than how docile I am!"

Zhang Yang glanced over Zhang Tie and felt that Zhang Tie had changed too much over the past half year. Zhang Tie had grown

taller and more robust; his eyes were radiating sharp light. What was more important was that Zhang Tie's heart and spirit had grown more mature and powerful.

Zhang Yang felt that Zhang Tie had become powerful enough to shoulder the load of the Zhang family and had become more confident and decisive when dealing with major problems.

At the age of 17, Zhang Tie had become the pillar of this family. Seeing this, Zhang Yang was filled with a sense of comfort.

"When I was abducted and was waiting to be buried in the vehicle, I was concerned about our parents and our kids. I have always been thinking about this over the past few days. It made me scared. Now, I've been reassured at the sight of your change. You have the capability to take care of our family!" Zhang Yang smiled pleasantly.

"Don't worry, elder brother. I would definitely take revenge against them!" A cold light flashed across Zhang Tie's eyes.

"Do you know who they are?"

In order to let his family members feel reassured, Zhang Tie didn't tell Zhang Yang about those terrifying truths that he had learned; instead, he told a lie.

"Those who can do this are definitely not average ones. As they've lost so many people this time, there must be some clues. As

long as I am alive and can produce all-purpose medicament, I believe that they would find me sooner or later!"

"Oh, what's that all-purpose medicament that you're talking about?" Zhang Yang asked out of curiosity.

Zhang Tie then explained the function of all-purpose medicament. Hearing Zhang Tie's explanation, Zhang Yang's eyes almost popped out, "Isn't that super enzyme the all-purpose medicine which could cure all the diseases and strengthen one's body?"

"Almost like that!"

"When did you learn to produce this item?"

"After leaving Blackhot city, I had a chance to master some secret knowledge that cannot be mastered by others. With this secret knowledge, I was able to produce the super enzyme!"

"You say you are cooperating with Long Wind Business Group on selling it. According to my knowledge, it's very hard for average business groups to cooperate with super business groups like Long Wind Business Group and become the latter's suppliers. Additionally, Long Wind Business Group always requires a large quantity of good products. How many vials of all-purpose medicament can you produce a year?"

"More than 1 million vials!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

"What?" Zhang Yang thought he didn't hear it clearly as he instantly sat straight with eyes as large as copper bells, "How many?"

"More than 1 million vials!" Zhang Tie looked at his elder brother calmly without considering how his elder brother was shocked, "From then on, our family will have a revenue of at least several millions of gold coins a year by selling all-purpose medicament. With this amount of money, we can do whatever we want. It's even possible for you and me to build a clan that could match Huaiyuan Palace!"

"More... than... one million... vials..." Zhang Yang gazed at Zhang Tie like a dead fish. His eyes were not focused on Zhang Tie as he had been completely stunned by that astronomical number. What was even more shocking was Zhang Tie's ambition to build a clan that could match Huaiyuan Palace.

Chapter 340: Home

"Elder brother, you can never expose this figure to anyone else. Although I am cooperating with Long Wind Business Group and they also know that I can realize the mass production of all-purpose medicament, they are still dubious and uncertain about my ability to produce such a large quantity of all-purpose medicament. This is to be tested by time and mutual cooperation. Additionally, those who want to assassinate me are also fixing their eyes on us. If this message were exposed to the public, it would very troublesome!"

Looking at his elder brother's shocked expression, Zhang Tie warned him. After experiencing an assassination attempt, Zhang Tie had become more meticulous than ever.

Because all the events were caused by the all-purpose medicament, before he was able to protect himself, Zhang Tie felt that he had better be a bit low-key. For the sale of all-purpose medicament on Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie prepared to slightly slow down his productivity and gradually increase it as his power grew so as to keep away those who wanted to kill him until he could deal with them.

Previously, Zhang Tie thought that he didn't need to fear anything with the protection of Huaiyuan palace. Now, he realized that this thought was extremely naive as the biggest danger facing him might come from Huaiyuan Palace. If he was still that high-key, it would be no different than a kid running in a boisterous market with a treasure in hand.

Zhang Yang nodded. When he wanted to say something, the door was pushed open while Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law walked in with Zhang Cheng'an in her arms, who was younger than six months, "Time for dinner, Mom has made it!"

Zhang Yang then smiled at Zhang Cheng'an as he opened his arms, "Son, come here to your dad!"

The little guy was sucking on a bottle and waving his small chubby hand, intending to come for Zhang Yang; however, his mom wouldn't let him go.

"Wait until your leg is recovered. This little guy is very naughty. He will agitate your wounds!" Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law said.

Hearing this, Zhang Yang didn't insist.

Since his elder sister-in-law had entered, Zhang Tie then didn't say anything about the abduction or assassination attempts; instead, he changed the topic.

"Elder brother, when will you recover?"

"The doctor said it would probably take 1-2 months for all my wounds to recover!"

Zhang Tie then put his hand into his pocket when he utilized the space teleportation function of his Castle of Black Iron and took a vial of medicament from it. Of course, in the eyes of the others, he

was taking it out of his own pocket.

Zhang Tie then gave that vial of medicament to Zhang Yang.

"What's this?" Zhang Yang asked.

"This is a senior recovery medicament. Drink it and your wounds would soon recover!"

"Argh, that's marvelous. How much does a vial of this cost?" Having heard this for the first time, Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law walked towards him with Zhang Cheng'an; taking it from Zhang Tie's hand, she took a careful look at it.

"You might not easily buy this kind of medicament in the market now. It would cost above 600 gold coins in the market!"

It was a gift from the Gregory Clan as compensation in Blackhot City. Because Zhang Tie had experienced the marvelous effect of senior recovery medicament when in the Orphanage, Zhang Tie knew it was very precious; therefore, he'd kept this one in reserve.

When Zhang Tie attended the auction in Kalur City, the price of each vial of preliminary recovery medicament had been more than 30 gold coins while the price of each medium recovery medicament was about 200 gold coins. There was no advanced recovery medicament there at all.

The quality of the items being sold in auction was better than

almost anywhere else; however, the price there was also much higher than normal market price. When one buys products at auction, it's like buying costumes in high-end shopping malls. The same product would be sold at different prices in different places.

Although the Breaking Heavens Department sold advanced recovery medicament, they were only sold for the students of Zhang Clan. The price of each vial of senior recovery medicament there was 500 gold coins plus 80 clan contribution points, which was equal to more than 600 gold coins.

Hearing this figure, her hand shook at once as Zhang Cheng'an was grabbing towards that vial; so, she hurriedly passed it back to Zhang Yang.

600 gold coins? That amount of money was more than the whole net worth of Zhang Tie's family or Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law's family hen in Blackhot City. Although Zhang Tie's dad had worked over 30 years in the plant, all of his salaries combined were still less than this. For commoners, this was definitely a huge amount of money. Now, such a small vial of medicament was worth that huge amount of money. Of course, Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law became very nervous.

"Zhang Tie, this...this is too valuable!" Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law urged. Born in an average family, she clearly knew the meaning of 600 gold coins.

"For me, nothing could be more valuable than a family member's health. Just take it, elder sister-in-law!" Zhang Tie insisted with a smile, as directly hugged Zhang Cheng'an and kissed his tender

face, "Sorry, your uncle came back in too much of a hurry this time and forgot to get a gift for you. When you are 1 year old, your uncle will gift you something!"

Gazing at Zhang Tie, Zhang Yang was moved inside; however, he didn't say anything; instead, he directly opened the vial and downed it.

Seeing a small amount of dregs were left in the vial, Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law hurriedly took a kettle and made a cup of water. After cooling the water by blowing it, she cleansed the inside of the vial with the water and let Zhang Yang drink it.

The powerful effects of the senior recovery medicament started to work only 1 minute after Zhang Yang drank it.

"Argh, that's strange. The wounds on my legs feel itchy; it's like a lot of ants are creeping inside. It feels a bit hot!" Zhang Yang twisted on the bed.

"The wounds are healing. As wounds on bones will recover a bit slower than those bruises, after the recovery, your wounds should feel very cool and comfortable!"

...

10 minutes later, when Zhang Yang laughed loudly with Zhang Cheng'an in his hands and walked downstairs with Zhang Tie to have dinner, their mom and dad were really shocked. After

hearing the reason, the whole family enjoyed dinner together even more so than usual.

This was the first reunion dinner of the family since Zhang Tie left half year ago.

On the table, when Zhang Tie's dad asked Zhang Tie about his situation in Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie described it as a vacation which was away from any danger or hardship. Everywhere was pleasant. Zhang Tie's mom laughed a lot at that. She laughed so much that a few tears rolled down her face. His dad couldn't stand it anymore as he directly flicked Zhang Tie's forehead with a chopstick.

"Fool, you think I don't know about life on Hidden Dragon Island? Others always have to work hard in Hidden Dragon Palace; how come you only play in the sea water with junior sisters or play on weird machines and toys with senior sisters in Hidden Dragon Palace? How come those magical beasts just lie in the Dragon Cave to be killed by you as long as you release your battle qi? Do you think the Dragon Cave is like one of those ditches where kids catch loaches?"

Realizing that his dad could not be cheated that easily, Zhang Tie hurriedly smirked, "My dad is smart. But the fact was really like what your son has described. If you don't believe me, you can ask anyone on Hidden Dragon Island about me. Ask if your son saved a junior sister when he was playing in the sea or whether your son damaged those hydraulic quincuncial piles when he played with his senior sisters at the fundamental footsteps training field! I had even paid for the maintenance fee. Many people know about it!"

"Have you always been that attractive? How come so many girls surround you every day?" Zhang Tie's dad pretended to glare at him.

"I've inherited your excellent genes. That's why I'm so handsome, kind, and sincere. Of course those senior and junior sisters like me," Zhang Tie said shamelessly.

"That's it. When I was young..." Hearing Zhang Tie's praise, Zhang Tie's dad became proud. When he wanted to say something, he found Zhang Tie's mom glaring at him. Therefore, he hurriedly coughed twice before shutting up. He didn't ask Zhang Tie about his situation on Hidden Dragon Island any more.

Zhang Tie's mom was feeding her grandson some chicken soup. After that little guy grabbed his own soup spoon, she turned her head and looked at Zhang Tie, "Now that you have so many senior and junior sisters on Hidden Dragon Island, do you have a girlfriend? Bring her back home when you are free. As long as you are in love with each other, you should be engaged as soon as possible!"

It was Zhang Tie's time to cough, "Your son truly has fallen in love with a girl on the island; but I've not dealt with that. When I make it, I will bring her back home!"

"The 3 girls who came for you in Blackhot City were nice. Besides that girl called Pandora who hadn't developed well yet, the other two both looked pretty good with good family backgrounds. Alas,

what a pity..." Zhang Tie's mom then sighed.

"No need to feel pity about that. We can meet again if we want. This place is only a short flight from Blackhot City. As long as you like them, your son will marry them all in the future. How about that?"

"What do you mean by 'as long as I like them'. Most importantly, you should love your wives!"

"Okay, that's a deal. As your son likes so many girls, I will marry them all in the future; perhaps I will marry a princess. Don't be frightened then!" Zhang Tie made a grimace.

"Princess? Are you kidding me? As long as you could marry one as good as your elder sister-in-law and deliver me a grandson, I will thank the goddesses!"

"You want grandsons? That's easy. Let my elder brother and my elder sister-in-law deliver another one in a year for you!"

This time, Zhang Tie's mom knocked his forehead with a stick of chopstick while Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law's face blushed...

Chapter 341: Family Life

After supper, Zhang Tie stayed at home to chat with his family. Meanwhile, he played with that little guy who was trying to climb up everything. The atmosphere was very warm.

For Zhang Yang's abduction, Zhang Tie's parents still didn't know that it was related to Zhang Tie. Neither did they know that Zhang Tie had encountered an even greater danger than Zhang Yang on that day. As Zhang Tie didn't want them to worry about him, he just briefly described parts of the event.

At present, the Zhang family employed a servant introduced by Zhang Tie's eldest uncle. She was called Aunt Jen. She was honest, diligent, and had a clear background. Besides 56 silver coins a month, she would also be tipped for holidays and festivals. Seeing the Zhang family sitting in the parlor, Aunt Jen made sliced fruits for them.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie's mom was the last one who wanted to employ a servant. When she thought that it would cost them dozens of silver coins a month, Zhang Tie's mom was very reluctant about it.

Having been very diligent in Blackhot City for so many years, Zhang Tie's mom was not accustomed to being served by others. However, Zhang Tie's elder sister's stomach was growing larger while Zhang Tie's elder brother and dad had their own work and had little time to stay at home. Zhang Tie's mom could not take care of Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law while preparing the whole family's food; therefore, she agreed to employ a servant.

Kids at the age of half year were the most torturing. Over the past half year, Zhang Cheng'an was looked after by Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law and Zhang Tie's mom. He was quiet in the daytime; at night, when everybody fell asleep, this kid would be full of energy and he would need to pee or poop. Whereas, it could only be taken care by Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law at night. Due to long-term poor sleep, Zhang Tie thought that his elder sister-in-law looked a bit haggard.

These were the usual, trivial things in their daily lives.

Before Zhang Tie came back, Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law and Zhang Yang had been talking about employing a babysitter. They always tried to persuade Zhang Tie's mom in a roundabout way.

When Zhang Tie came back today, seeing Zhang Tie's mom being very happy, Zhang Tie's elder sister-in-law mentioned the babysitter thing once again. Surprisingly, this time, Zhang Tie's mom agreed at once. The whole family then became very joyful.

"We need to choose the babysitter very carefully. She should be careful and patient. Coincidentally, your dad and I had found your uncle's home in Xince City several days ago. Your uncle has many children and your aunt lies in bed all year round due to sickness. They have severe financial problems!" Zhang Tie's mom stared at Zhang Yang and explained, "You and Zhang Tie have an elder female cousin. She is good-looking, over 30 years old and is working as a nursery governess in a kindergarten on street. Although working very hard, she could only make over 40 silver coins a month there. If you want to employ a babysitter, you'd

better employ your cousin as we are of the same family!"

"Good idea!" Zhang Yang agreed at once, "When I am free, I will go to the Xince City to invite my uncle's family for a reunion!"

When Zhang Tie intended to ask about his grandparents' health situation, he saw a wisp of grief in his mom's eyes; therefore, he knew the answer.

After leaving Huaiyuan Prefecture 30 years, Zhang Tie knew that his grandparents must have passed away, one after another, before they came back. If not, his mom would not look that sorrowful.

"Mom, what about uncle's family members?" Zhang Tie asked then.

"Your uncle has 4 sons and 3 daughters. 2 of his daughters and 3 of his sons have married, leaving your elder female cousin and your elder male cousin at home. Your elder female cousin is a nursery governess in a kindergarten while your elder male cousin has no official job. Your aunt lies on bed all the year round. Your uncle is a postman. He has to look after his family! If you and your elder brother can, you should help them a lot!"

"Don't worry, mom, I believe my uncle's family will be well off. How could my elder brother and I not help mom's relatives when they're in trouble? After figuring out the situation over there, we will help them!" Zhang Tie comforted his mom, "Oh, what disease does aunt suffer?"

"Your aunt was working in an ice plant; due to her long exposure to cold conditions, she suffers from severe rheumatism and arthritis. She can't even walk easily now!" Zhang Tie's mom sighed.

'Rheumatism and arthritis?' Hearing this answer, Zhang Tie smiled. Although he was not sure about dealing with other diseases, he was sure that the two diseases could definitely be cured with only a few vials of all-purpose medicament. 'I will send a batch of all-purpose medicament to them for both my uncle's family and my own family.'

During the talk, Zhang Tie came to understand the details of what his dad and elder brother had been up to over the past half year.

After staying at home for a while, Zhang Tie's dad couldn't stand doing nothing anymore; so, he got a job as a material engineer of an airship manufacturing company. As he was very familiar with this job, he became passionate once again. In the latter part of the talk, Zhang Tie's dad started to talk about manufacturing airships of high spirits. In his words, this work was far more interesting than his previous job. Additionally, there were many young men in the company, who made him very energetic.

Zhang Tie then joked, "Dad, now that you like manufacturing airships so much, how about buying that company for you and let you be the boss?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, his dad almost flicked his forehead once again, "Although that company produces small airships, it

employs over 700 workers. It's total assets amount to more than 300,000 gold coins. That's 300,000 gold coins! How could you buy it so easily? Let's not say empty words!"

Zhang Tie just responded with a smile.

Zhang Yang had registered a business group and started to get involved in the food and pharmaceutical trades. After half a year's practice, he had gradually stabilized his business.

The name of Zhang Tie's business group was Jinwu (金乌) Business Group. Jinwu meant Sun, which was also a magical beast that lived on the sun in Chinese myths. In this age, Chinese always liked to name their organizations or group from allusions or stories in myths, such as Golden Roc Bank.

Additionally, "金" referred to the radical "钅" of "铁", which indicated Zhang Tie (张铁), while "金乌" referred to "阳", which indicated "Zhang Yang (张阳)". This name included the brothers' names and represented the brothers' position in the business group.

Zhang Yang racked his mind over 2 weeks before he thought this name. He was very pleased with the name. Over the past half year, he also spent a lot of time and energy in the business group. The main scope of the company was food and drug trading. He chose the 2 areas because Zhang Tie told him that the 3rd holy war between humans and demons was nigh!

Looking back at the two previous holy wars between the human

race and demons, the three most important materials were food, medicine, and weapons. In each holy war, companies or business groups in the above three industries would earn uncountable profits.

Zhang Yang bet that food and drug industries would grow increasingly important in the future and all the food and drugs would be scarce and expensive.

As would the weapons and munitions industry. However, Jinwu Business Group was not qualified to enter this industry which it required large assets and an established foundation. Therefore, he could only start from food and drugs trading.

The fish processing industry and marine creatures medicine industry were both very developed in Huaiyuan Prefecture which was located in coastal areas. This created great convenience for Jinwu Business Group to involve itself in the food and pharmaceutical industries.

Now, Jinwu Business Group was mainly trading canned fish, which had an extremely long shelf life, and a medicament made of a special actiniaria's biotoxin. The latter one could be widely applied in weapon processing to make weapons more lethal to both demons and human race.

Jinwu Business Group had already opened the market and established relations with some clients. The next step, according to Zhang Yang's plan, was for Jinwu Business Group to extend to the upper level of the industrial chain of food and drug processing. When the holy war broke out, the most powerful ones would not

purely trade the goods, but also control the resources' sources.

Zhang Yang firstly decided to purchase a cannery; then, he would organize a small fishing team. He planned to control each important link of the production of canned fish from fishing, processing, production to sales.

Time flew, everyone was enjoying the talk with their family members. It was soon 11:00 pm. Considering that Zhang Tie's dad had to go to work tomorrow, they then went back to their own bedrooms to sleep.

Before going back to his own bedroom, Zhang Tie asked his mom, "Mom, do we have any liquor?"

"Yes, it's in kitchen. Your dad bought it for making medicinal liquor. What do you want that for?"

"I want a bit!"

"Are you drinking it now?" Zhang Tie's mom looked him with a dubious expression.

"No, I am practicing a fighting skill. Before I start, I have to clean my body with liquor. It's used to lower the temperature of my body! Although I will stay at home for several days. I won't drop my cultivation!" Zhang Tie fabricated as he believed that nobody would doubt his words. As for why he would use liquor instead of alcohol, who cared; perhaps liquor was more nutritious than

alcohol.

Hearing that Zhang Tie would stay at home several days, Zhang Tie's mom revealed a smile of satisfaction at once, "The wine is in the wine cabinet, if there's not enough, I will buy some for you tomorrow!"

"1 or 2 bottles are enough!" Zhang Tie smirked. After saying good night to his family members, he went to the kitchen and got 2 average bottles of liquor which were marked 61 degrees from the wine cabinet before heading back to his own bedroom...

Chapter 342: Sowing Lotus Seeds (I)

After dying out the lamps in the bedroom, Zhang Tie stood before his window on the 3rd floor. He slightly exposed a corner of the curtain and looked at the courtyard. It was already past midnight and the lamps in the courtyard were still on. One bodyguard was sitting quietly in the corridor of the courtyard with his eyes widely opened.

On the other side of the house was another person who was also on duty. 2 other people were sleeping in the room beside the parlor on 1st floor. The above 4 people were left by Zhang Haitian, the grandpa of Zhang Tie, when he came here for Zhang Yang yesterday. They had worked for Zhang Family for over 10 years.

As Zhang Yang had experienced the abduction, with these people at home, Zhang family would feel safe.

Zhang Tie then put down the corner of the curtain and started to consider finding some bodyguards and sentries for his family members. Now that his elder brother had been abducted, it was hard to say whether similar events would happen on other family members. As the world was becoming increasingly chaotic, Zhang Tie thought that he had to pay attention to this issue.

At this moment, now that his grandpa had assigned bodyguards and sentries here, he didn't need to find others for the time being. If he went for other bodyguards and sentries at this moment, he would face two problems, namely, the loyalty of the new bodyguards and sentries that he found, and his grandpa would think that Zhang Tie's family didn't believe in him, which would

raise many doubts and misunderstandings.

Additionally, according to his elder brother, when Zhang Yang was in hospital, the intelligence department of Huaiyuan Prefecture found him and recorded the details of the abduction. Combining Zhang Yang's statement and other clues, it would not be difficult for some smart guys to conclude that Zhang Tie was the only person who had mastered the secret knowledge of producing all-purpose medicament.

Therefore, it would almost be impossible for those people to gain the secret knowledge of producing all-purpose medicament from his family members. Of course, there might be chances that someone would force him to submit the secret knowledge on producing all-purpose medicament by abducting his family members. However, unless Huaiyuan Palace had declined to the worst scenario and lost its ability to protect the Zhang Clan's posterity, this would not happen in a short period. Even though it truly happened, those people would definitely suffer a great punishment.

Therefore, whether they wanted to master the method to produce all-purpose medicament or to directly destroy this method, their main target was still Zhang Tie. After the recent events, they should be clearer about this point.

Zhang Tie realized that his number one priority should be to improve his fighting strength as soon as possible. He needed to find a way to gain seven-strength fruits so as to turn his precise throwing skill into his trump card.

After all his family members had gone to bed and he ensured that nobody would disturb him, Zhang Tie entered Castle of Black Iron.

Since he left Dragon Cave, it was Zhang Tie's first time entering the Castle of Black Iron.

Before Zhang Tie entered the Castle of Black Iron, he held 2 bottles of liquor as he expected the new fruits on the small tree.

Although the fight in Dragon Cave 3 days ago was very fierce, Zhang Tie knew that it was time for him to reap the fruits.

...

After unlocking that marvelous arch door in his mind, Zhang Tie disappeared in the bedroom at once and entered Castle of Black Iron.

After Zhang Tie requested that Heller kept the time in the Castle of Black Iron synchronized with outside, it was also night in the Castle of Black Iron now.

It was very tranquil in the Castle of Black Iron. Without clamor of the daytime, everything was like a sweet dream. What covered this space now was not a colorful, brilliant rainbow any more, but colorful clouds that covered the bright moon. With the tender light, the whole space became a fairly visible.

In the dark, each leaf of the small tree was shining. With

different shapes, those leaves were radiating lights of many different colors. As a result, hundreds of colors were shining on the small tree.

Watching that mysterious, small tree, Zhang Tie felt like he was enjoying a fabulous scene. He watched it for one minute before stopping himself from picking off fruits. With the two bottles of liquor, he entered his lab.

After turning on the lamp, the whole lab became bright.

On the table was lying that lotus seedpod of the fiery-flame lotus gifted from Zhao Yuan, Zhang Tie's master. Zhang Tie put down the bottles and found an empty glass flask from a cabinet which could hold over 1 liter of liquid.

Since he bought these flasks from Blackhot City, Zhang Tie had not used them till now. After checking the flask, Zhang Tie found its inside was even a bit dirty, which might have been like that since it left the factory.

The air in the Castle of Black Iron was refreshing, natural, and filled of various plants' reiki. There was almost no dirt or dust in the air. It was around 8 to 9 months ago when he cleaned the table of the lab. Now, it was still as clean as before. After touching it, he saw no dirt at all. If air could be sold, Zhang Tie even wanted to sell the air in cans.

Zhang Tie then held the flask and went to the stream. After cleaning it completely, he took it back into the lab.

‘If only I could install a waterpipe in the lab!’ However, Zhang Tie knew that he was unable to make something like that for the time being. It would be too boring for him to buy a water tower and water pipes and then bring them into the Castle of Black Iron.

"Welcome to the Castle of Black Iron, Castle Lord!"

While Zhang Tie was washing the flask, Heller arrived and met him at the entrance of the lab. He bowed towards Zhang Tie. At Zhang Tie's behest, Heller finally didn't add "Handsome and Magnificent" onto Zhang Tie's title. Zhang Tie knew that he could enjoy it alone, but it would be unwise for him to make others join in with him.

Zhang Tie greeted Heller and they walked into the lab together.

After entering the lab, Zhang Tie hurriedly started his work while Heller just stood aside quietly.

Each bottle contained about 500 liters of liquor. Zhang Tie then opened the lids and poured the all of the liquor into the bigger glass flask.

The total of liquor filled about 80% of the flask.

After that, Zhang Tie held that lotus seedpod which was as heavy as a piece of ironwood. He then broke it and took out the lotus seeds from inside one by another.

Each lotus seed of fiery-flame red lotus was almost as big as a glass ball[1] that Zhang Tie used to play with when he was young. The crimson seeds were as heavy as iron. Zhang Tie pinched one but couldn't break it at all. Therefore, Zhang Tie put one in mouth and bit it; however, he felt like biting a steel bead.

After trying it, Zhang Tie knew that his master was right. If he forcefully swallowed it, he would definitely excrete it in the same state as it currently was.

There was a total of 18 seeds inside the seedpod, which was a bit less than what he had expected. After soaking 10 lotus seeds inside the liquor, Zhang Tie only had 8 left. Glazing at those seeds, Zhang Tie instantly thought up an idea.

He almost jumped up——now that these were lotus seeds, why not sow them in Castle of Black Iron, then...

"Heller!" Zhang Tie instantly turned his face towards Heller who was standing beside him, "Erm, can we create magma here?"

"You finally got it, my lord. I was thinking about reminding you. It seems that it's not necessary!" Heller then revealed a smile, "Of course, you could create an environment full of magma, it was nothing different than creating a surface environment. Your seeds are from silicon-based plants, which are rarely seen. They contain a very special energy. If they were sown, they would definitely be of great use to you and the Castle of Black Iron!"

"Silicon-based plant? You mean fiery-flame red lotus is a silicon-based plant?" Zhang Tie was amazed by this term. This was his first time seeing a non-carbon-based organism since he was born. He'd thought that he might not even see a non-carbon-based organism in his whole life.

"Of course, if it's not a silicon-based plant, how could it grow in such a high-temperature environment like magma? Carbon-based organisms could never do this!"

"Can we grow fiery-flame red lotus here?"

"This is where even the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree could grow. There's no plant cannot be grown here!" Heller replied confidently.

Hearing this answer, Zhang Tie's heart almost burst out of his throat...

Chapter 343: Sowing Lotus Seeds (II)

After being told that he could sow the fiery-flame red lotus seeds in the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie became really excited. That meant he could have one more trump card and one more resource.

Zhang Tie suddenly thought of a question, "How long will it take a fiery-flame red lotus seed to become ripe?"

"All the silicon-based plants grow very slowly; it will take a seed of fiery-flame red lotus over 60 years to become ripe!"

Hearing this answer, Zhang Tie's smile froze at once; however, Heller hadn't finished what he was saying.

"But if you can input a great amount of reiki into it, you could accelerate its growth greatly and make it ripe in half a year. Based on the current reiki provision in Castle of Black Iron, if you put all the reiki into a seed of fiery-flame red lotus, you could make it ripe in about 2 years!"

Although Zhang Tie knew that the reiki in Castle of Black Iron could accelerate the growth of plants, he had not imagined that reiki could also promote the growth of fiery-flame red lotus.

"Can we create the proper underground environment for the growth of the seeds of fiery-flame red lotus?"

"Yes, castle lord, the basic energy storage that you've

accumulated in Hidden Dragon Island could allow a small area of space and terrain creation!"

Hearing Heller's reply, Zhang Tie instantly opened the management panel of Castle of Black Iron. After choosing the button "space and terrain creation" on the menu, three sub-menus appeared.

— Surface Layer

— Subterranean Layer

— Subsurface Layer

Zhang Tie chose the option "Subterranean Layer". In a split second, a three-dimensional image that included the underground area of the Castle of Black Iron had appeared in front of Zhang Tie.

After gaining the Castle of Black Iron, it was Zhang Tie's first time seeing the whole subterranean world of the Castle of Black Iron.

The whole Castle of Black Iron was a cube. The subterranean depth of Castle of Black Iron was about 800 m, the same as its length and width.

As Heller had added over 200,000 square meters of fresh water to the lake, Zhang Tie could see it in the holographic image of the subterranean structure of Castle of Black Iron. The soil and rock

layer under that fresh water lake was only dozens of meters in depth. Compared to other original places of Castle of Black Iron, it looked very thin.

"What's wrong with the thickness of the subterranean layer here?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"This is the default thickness of any new soil and subterranean layer in Castle of Black Iron. You might have not gotten enough basic energy storage to make it as thick as that of the other places!" Heller explained, "For those living on the surface, it's meaningless to provide them too thick subterranean layer! It would just be wasting basic energy!"

"Can I make the subterranean layer of this lake as deep as that of the other places?"

"You can have a try, my lord. As long as you have enough energy storage, you can extend the surface land or the subterranean layer of Castle of Black Iron as much as you can. If you have enough basic energy storage, you can even make the subterranean layer of each place in Castle of Black Iron as thick as 1 million km!"

Zhang Tie nodded as he sighed inside. 'For this function alone, the Castle of Black Iron would require limitless basic energy storage. Even though I am able to absorb all the sea water, Castle of Black Iron can easily consume all the basic energy. It seems to be a long-term job to accumulate basic energy.'

After inspecting the subterranean structure of the Castle of Black

Iron for a while, Zhang Tie directly projected his image of the karst cave and the magma environment of fiery-flame red lotus in Hidden Dragon Cave onto that three-dimensional holographic diagram. After adjusting and measuring the current basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron a few times, Zhang Tie finally got an image of that subterranean layer.

The entrance of the subterranean layer was close to the south-central part of Castle of Black Iron. It was only 100 m away from Zhang Tie. Being located in a pine wood, the entrance was a hill as high as 10 meters or so. A mountain cave extended 100 m underground like a spiral staircase from this entrance.

At the other end of the mountain cave, Zhang Tie opened an underground karst cave which was as large as about half an American Football field. There was an irregular magma lake as large as 2 basketball courts and some 2-m wide twisting ditches of magma were connected to that magma lake.

"The magma lake looks too white; it indicates a high temperature. However, seeds of fiery-flame red lotus are only suitable to grow in magma under 800 Celsius degrees!" Heller explained as he instantly adjusted the temperature on the holographic image. Then, Zhang Tie noticed that the magma turned a bit redder while the temperature stayed at 617 Celsius degrees.

After doing this, Heller nodded.

— As the completeness of your illusion on the details of the subterranean layer is lower than 8%, do you allow the system to

start the casual natural creation law to fix up the rest? After the system completes the construction, you can adjust it by hand, my lord!

— Agree or disagree?

Zhang Tie chose "Agree".

In a split second, all the obscure parts on the three-dimensional holographic image became clear and alive.

— As a new subterranean layer has been opened, it can contain minerals. Do you want to have mineral resources in the new subterranean layer, my lord?

— Yes...No!

'Minerals?' Zhang Tie was startled by this information, "Argh, if that's the case, can I form any mineral in the subterranean layer that I want? What if I get a gold mine or crystal mine here?"

"It's not that simple!" Heller shook his head, "The varieties of mineral resources that can be created in the subterranean layer of Castle of Black Iron through the space and terrain creation function are only limited to the kinds of minerals that have been absorbed and dissolved by the Pool of Chaos. Additionally, when the system forms special minerals, it will consume a lot of basic energy, merit value points and aura value points. Based on the current situation of Castle of Black Iron, we cannot afford that at

all."

After choosing "Yes", Zhang Tie found that the system could only produce pyrites and crystals of poor quality, which had been thrown into the Pool of Chaos when he attended the survival training in the Wild Wolf Valley.

After forming a narrow strip of pyrite, the basic energy storage, merit values and aura values of Castle of Black Iron had turned red.

Compared to forming a pyrite mine, crystal mine required huge amounts of merit value points and aura value points.

'F*ck!' Zhang Tie swore inside as he completely gave up the unrealistic idea of forming rare minerals in the Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie had deepened his understanding of the Castle of Black Iron. Everything that he gained here was due to karma — as a man sows, so does he reap.

This round of space and terrain creation requires the following resources:

Basic energy storage: 713698

Aura value points: 35190

Merit value points: 4822

— Do you want to create it?

— 'Yes' or 'No'

— Yes!

'This round of space and terrain creation will start in half a minute. It will take 18 seconds, during which period, you cannot leave Castle of Black Iron, my lord.'

— Count down: 30...29...28...27...26...

"I remember that when I created that spring last time, I was asked to leave Castle of Black Iron. Why not this time?" Zhang Tie asked Heller. The creation of that spring was still shocking him until now. He recalled that when he came back in Castle of Black Iron after half a minute, he saw a sweet and crystal spring, which was dreamlike.

"Because the Castle of Black Iron and Castle Lord are one. The energy fluctuation frequency, due to the creation of space and terrain in the Castle of Black Iron, would stabilize your spiritual energy. When your spiritual energy was low, it would be very dangerous for you to experience the space and terrain creation in Castle of Black Iron. If your spiritual energy resonates with the energy frequency arisen from space and terrain creation, your head might be exploded!"

"What about other living beings in the Castle of Black Iron? Won't they suffer a head explosion then?"

"No, they won't. This resonance only exists on you!"

Zhang Tie understood it. At the same time, he was extremely curious about how this round of space and terrain creation would be completed in Castle of Black Iron. He then walked out of the lab and watched that pine wood 100 m away in the south of the lab.

...

Count down: 5...4...3...2...1.

Then, the whole Castle of Black Iron became dark at once. Closely following that, the colorful fog surrounding the space of Castle of Black Iron started to brighten up. In just a few seconds, the colorful light had become so dazzling that Zhang Tie had to close his eyes while covering them with a hand.

With his eyes closed, Zhang Tie could felt that the whole space was filled with light. Meanwhile, his spiritual energy started to surge, causing his ears to ring and experience [acousmas](#).

When he felt the colorful, dazzling light had disappeared, he opened his eyes — the terrain of the pine wood 100 m away had changed while one 10-m high hill appeared over there with a pitch-black cave...

An 'acousma' is an auditory hallucination of a simple nonverbal character (like a buzzing or ringing).

Chapter 344: Rapid Moving Skill

After 18 seconds later, the creation of the space and terrain were finished; however, it took Zhang Tie quite a while to recover his senses.

With an illuminating lamp in hand, Heller was standing beside Zhang Tie and waiting for him to recover his composure.

"Just now..." Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva.

"Everything is due to the application and manifestation of energy!" Heller answered calmly.

Knowing that Heller wouldn't tell him too much about that, Zhang Tie didn't ask Heller any more. Raising his head, Zhang Tie stared at the colorful fog surrounding the whole Castle of Black Iron. Just now, all this had been created by that fog and manifested in only 18 seconds.

'There must be a great secret in the colorful fog!' Zhang Tie thought; however, he was not able to discover the secret at that moment.

Seeing Heller having prepared to be the guide, Zhang Tie didn't say anything. They directly walked into the underground cave. With lamp in hand, Heller walked in front, followed by Zhang Tie. They followed the twisting path down into the cave's depths. After a short while, Zhang Tie had already seen the red glow reflected on the walls of the cave while the air felt a bit hot.

After turning a corner, Zhang Tie caught sight of the underground karst full of magma. It was exactly as he had imagined. Stalactites were hanging down from the top of the karst cave while below them was a fiery magma lake.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not throw the fiery-flame red lotus seeds into that magma lake. Even though those seeds could grow into fiery-flame red lotuses, it would be very difficult for him to pick them up. After all, he was not as powerful as his master. Therefore, Zhang Tie dug some ditches beside the magma lake and directly threw the 8 seeds of fiery-flame red lotus into those ditches full of flowing fiery magma.

In this way, when they grew into fiery-flame red lotuses, he would stand beside the ditches and picked up those seedpods only by reaching out a little.

'Oh, although my master didn't mention it, there should be a lotus root of the fiery-flame red lotus. I really wonder how potent the effects of the lotus flower and the lotus root of fiery-flame red lotus would be.'

The depth of magma in the ditches was only between 1m to 2m, which was very suitable to the growth of lotus flower.

Flowing magma had very great density itself. Therefore, the lotus seeds slowly sank into the magma.

Watching those sinking seeds, Zhang Tie instantly thought up an

idea as he opened the basic attributes panel of the Castle of Black Iron.

Castle of Black Iron

— Length: 1 Krosa

— Width: 1 Krosa

— Aura value: 411,598

— Merit value: 71,612

— Basic energy storage: 846,520

— Special output: basic energy reiki yeast.

Now, with the increasing varieties of plants and their rapid growth in Castle of Black Iron, the aura values were increasing gradually. More than 3,000 aura values could be produced per day in Castle of Black Iron.

Recently, the merit values in the Castle of Black Iron had mainly come from the merits that he had gained through setting free sand-scale fish.

For the basic energy storage in Castle of Black Iron, although it

was over 800,000, 600,000 of them had been promised to Heller in order to know if it was Lan Yunxi's first kiss. Therefore, only 600,000 of them were reserved for Heller.

That meant Zhang Tie could only use 246,520 basic energy units of them.

After checking his available resources, Zhang Tie then opened the option "Silicon-based Living Beings and Species Management" under the function "Living Beings and Species Management". He then selected the 8 seeds of fiery-flame red lotus that he had "sown" just now on the panel one by another.

Zhang Tie then input a certain number of "aura values", "basic energy values", and "merit values" into the seeds. He input one single resource into 3 seeds, 2 resources in the other 3 seeds and 3 resources in the rest 2 seeds.

Given the marvelous effects of fiery-flame red lotuses, this was largest amount of value points - in this batch mutations and evolutions of the seeds of fiery-flame red lotus - that Zhang Tie had spent ever since he'd gotten the Castle of Black Iron. Any seed being input in aura values or basic energy values would gain at least 20,000 values of a single resource. Additionally, Zhang Tie even input almost 10,000 merit values into the seeds.

Zhang Tie selected different directions of evolution and mutation for each seed. He didn't know what those seeds really needed; he just wanted to have a try, like buying lottery. It was almost expected that he wouldn't win a prize; however, once he succeeded, he would gain a great benefit from them, just like those

mutated basic energy reiki yeast.

After doing all this, Zhang Tie and Heller returned to the surface.

"Castle Lord, the growth circle of fiery-flame red lotus is very long. If you want to see the result of this round of mutation and evolution as soon as possible, you have to input more aura value points to accelerate its growth. With more land, you will be able to grow more plants; with more plants, you will gain more aura value points."

"If I want more land, I have to have more basic energy storage first!" Zhang Tie nodded, "Don't worry about the basic energy storage, I will keep it in mind. I don't want to gain the result of this round of mutation and evolution for 10 years."

Heller the nodded, "Well, I will not disturb your cultivation, my lord. Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree has brought you a great surprise, I'm expecting for my lord to become one of the most powerful beings as soon as possible!"

After that, Heller left. According to Heller, he and the three servants also needed a sleep to maintain their vitality. As it was late in the evening, the other three servants would have already fallen asleep. Alone, Zhang Tie took a walk in the Castle of Black Iron under the moonlight.

Thinking about Heller's words, Zhang Tie's heart raced as he walked towards that small tree. In three days, the latest Leakless Fruit would become ripe tomorrow.

When he saw the latest "Fruit of Brilliance" on the other side of the small tree, Zhang Tie was not too amazed. As those people who had been killed by him in Dragon Cave were so vicious, Zhang Tie knew that they must have done a lot of evil things; therefore, it was normal for him to gain a fruit of brilliance.

'I wonder whether the LV 10 guy who committed a suicide during my questioning has contributed to this Fruit of Brilliance; if he did, the fruit of brilliance will be very nutritious. Even if he didn't, as I've killed a LV 9 guy and 10 more lackeys, this fruit will not be too disappointing either.'

'Heller's "surprise" should not be the fruit of brilliance.'

Zhang Tie then checked all the twigs on small tree very carefully. Finally, he caught sight of a fruit that he had not seen for a long time.

The fruit was pitch-dark with tadpole-like runes swimming inside while there was a cross on its surface.

'Fruit of Judgment!'

Zhang Tie became so excited that he almost jumped up as it had been so long since he had experienced its effects.

Zhang Tie couldn't wait to check the attributes of this fruit of judgment by reaching out his hand.

Heart pounding, Zhang Tie didn't know whether this fruit of judgment could update his "binding skill" or bring him a new skill; no matter what, it would definitely stimulate Zhang Tie to howl like a wolf.

— Fruit of Judgment; the fruit has become ripe. It contains a god's rune whose effect is "moving rapidly". Usage: Pick it and paste it on the place between your eyebrows; then, activate it with your spiritual energy to integrate it with your body. Notice: The fruit cannot be taken out of the Castle of Black Iron. Twelve hours after being picked off the tree, its energy and vitality will gradually decline.

'Moving rapidly? Is it a skill to increase my speed?' Having experienced the achievement of binding skill, Zhang Tie knew that he needed to integrate with this god's rune before learned the effect of this god's rune

'How did I gain a fruit of judgment this time?' Compared to his excitement, Zhang Tie was more curious about this; therefore, he continued to check the instructions on this fruit.

— Darkness would cover the mother land. Numerous lives would wail in blood sea and fiery flame; Those followers of demons betray the honor that was born within them; they enjoy pleasant feasts at the cost of the rest of mankind. Their souls have deteriorated while their bodies have become dirty. To those dauntless men who dared to wave your broadswords towards darkness, please hold fast your broadsword and end these dirty lives; please judge their evils by broadsword; according to the rule

of creation, the more judgments you've made, the more power you will gain to become a judge.

Zhang Tie really wondered how many evil things the Zhen family of Heavens Cold City had done. 'F*ck! I always thought that this treatment only came from those mulings of Sun Dynasty who do evil things in the name of celestial beings!'

After thinking that way, Zhang Tie then took a careful look at that instruction. Then, a chilly thought flashed in his mind — the Zhen family might have relations with demons?

Zhang Tie was stunned for a while; then, he shook his head, 'I've been set up with Zhen clan; therefore, I will kill them all no matter whether they have relations with demons or not.'

He then picked the fruit of brilliance and sat down on the ground with cross legs to slowly absorb the spirit of the fruit.

The spirit carried by this fruit was out of Zhang Tie's expectation. The moment the fruit entered his mouth, the spirit inside had started to enter his mind constantly and integrated with Zhang Tie's original spiritual energy.

Before eating this fruit, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy was almost 64 to 65 times greater than that of his base spiritual energy after his practice and ignition of surging points during the past half year; however, after absorbing this fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy surged and became 87-88 times that of his base energy, a one third increase.

This really surprised Zhang Tie, making him ecstatic.

After eating the fruit of brilliance, Zhang Tie picked that fruit of judgment without any hesitation and pasted it between his eyebrows while penetrating the spiritual energy that he had greatly improved just now into that fruit of judgment.

The same as the first fruit of judgment that he had experienced, after Zhang Tie triggered it with his spiritual energy, the fruit of judgment gradually became cooler. Eventually, the fruit changed into a weird rune, like water flowing into the sea, and disappeared from his hand; after that, it entered Zhang Tie's mind and connected to that "binding" rune in his mind.

At the same time, the information about the attributes of this rune also appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

God's rune skill — rapid moving skill!

Level — preliminary.

The current number/maximum stored rapid moving runes — 0/7.

The available environment of rapid moving rune — land and water.

Effect of the rapid moving skill: increase moving speed by 120% of the original moving speed.

Lasting time of a triggered rapid moving skill — 1 hour!

The condition to terminate the effect of rapid moving skill — when you exceed your physical strength by 110%, its effect would terminate.

When in battle, the effect of rapid moving skill would decline by 80%!

Rapid moving runes can be used constantly as long as your physical strength can sustain it and the runes aren't all used up.

...

The moment he finished reading them, Zhang Tie's spiritual energy had rolled in the new rune. After swallowing about 40 bases worth of his spiritual energy, the rune of the rapid moving skill suddenly radiated golden rays. With a slight quake, a rune of rapid moving skill appeared beside that god's rune like a kid's soap bubbles and started to rotate around that god's rune where it had been born.

Like having found their new partners, the swimming snake-like binding chains in the surrounding all swam towards this soap-bubble like guy and greeted it.

After this soap-bubble like thing came out, an attribute of rapid moving skill also changed:

— The current number/maximum stored rapid moving runes —
1/7.

Chapter 345: Stars Viewing City

Stars Viewing City was located in the northwest of Huaiyuan Prefecture where the largest slaves trade center of Huaiyuan Prefecture was situated.

The slave trade center in Stars Viewing City not only ranked first in Huaiyuan Prefecture, but was also very famous across the entire Waii Sub-Continent. The reason was that, besides the local slaves from Waii Sub-Continent, the slaves from other continents and some small, distant human settlements would also be transported to Huaiyuan Prefecture through overseas trade constantly and be transferred here through ports like Yiyang Port of Huaiyuan Prefecture.

Slaves were the 4th most popular trading commodity among humans in this age. According to many slave traders, the slave trade was an important system to optimize the general human resources allocation of mankind, maintain the survival of the fittest among people, and keep everyone energetic and enterprising.

Although the slave trade was not noble, its existence was necessary and reasonable to a certain degree; after all, not only slaves, each person in this age was facing the threat of demons.

The name 'Stars Viewing City' was very poetic; however, the city itself was not poetic at all. Besides the mammoth scale slave trade, it also had the biggest gambling houses, most exotic brothels, and the bloodiest fighting arena of Huaiyuan Prefecture.

Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace presented another image here.

Many people could imagine how a place with the most slaves, prostitutes, and gamblers looked. If it wasn't in Huaiyuan Prefecture, Stars Viewing City might be very chaotic; however, due to the most terrifying Hurricane Army of Huaiyuan Palace, the city was in a pretty good order.

The crime rate of this city was even a bit lower than that of Yiyang City. Its level of public security could rank in the top 3 of the 8 cities within Huaiyuan Prefecture.

As the iron fist of Huaiyuan Palace, Hurricane Army contained 420,000 people, over two thirds of which were slaves from countries on different continents. After completing the stipulated term of service or performing certain military exploits, they would gain the status of free citizen from Huaiyuan Palace.

Hurricane Army had existed for over 300 years, during which period, Huaiyuan Palace had already worked out an efficient and stable system on managing this mixed army. Under this management system, each person's fighting strength and loyalty were exerted to the utmost.

Many senior brothers served in Hurricane Army as military officers after leaving Hidden Dragon Palace.

Zhang Tie learned the general information about Stars Viewing City while he was free at home.

After staying at home for 2 days, Zhang Tie left for Stars Viewing City alone after breakfast at home.

It was a sunny day. Zhang Tie was wearing a pair of sunglasses and driving his Faerie Dragon T9 sports car which he had bought less than an hour ago on the highway from Jinhai City to Stars Viewing City.

Over the past hour, Zhang Tie had figured out a few things.

First, the price of an average car was as high as 1000 gold coins. In this age, the price of most steam-driven cars changed from 100 gold coins to 200 gold coins. The reason that cars in Blackhot City were very expensive was that there were no car manufacturers in Blackhot City; therefore, the cost of those cars being transported to Blackhot City had to include various taxes and the importation policy of Blackhot City.

Because Huaiyuan Prefecture had its own automobile industry, the price of an average steam-driven automobile was only a bit more than 100 gold coins.

The price of the sports car that Zhang Tie was driving was only a bit more than 500 gold coins, which almost ranked top among automobiles.

Second, in this age, although automobiles were driven by steam, different steam-driven units on automobiles would bring completely different driving results.

There was a set of turbine-steam driven, heat-recollection, external combustion engine installed on Faerie Dragon T9. This kind of engine was in between an internal combustion engine and common steam-driven boiler engine. Compared to common steam-driven engines, this kind of engine featured a higher heat utilization efficiency. Additionally, this engine didn't consume coal, but pure alcohol, which had a fuel value that was much lower than that of coal. Pure alcohol was several times more expensive than coal.

This heat-recollection external combustion engine driven by turbine steam contained 9 parallel pistons, which were installed on the chassis in a tilted way. With the movement of pistons, its power output was not transferred by rotating but by swaying; through an inclined shaft, its power output could then be transferred to the axel through an angle transmission device before driving the car to move forward.

Compared to automobiles with coal as fuel and common steam-driven engines as the power unit, this kind of automobile with pure alcohol as the fuel and a turbine steam-driven, heat-recollection, external combustion engine as the power unit featured a rapid start-up, which could greatly shorten the preheating start time of the steam-driven car.

However, this car also had extremely high running costs.

One kg of pure alcohol was made from 10 kgs of fermented grains; one could almost buy one ton of coal in coal-producing area like Blackhot City or hundreds of kgs of coal in other areas for that much grain. Additionally, the fuel value of alcohol as heavy as coal

was far lower than that of the latter; therefore, the price of alcohol would almost be 1000 times that of coal for the same amount of fuel value.

Due to the above factors, alcohol-driven automobiles became an expensive toy that could only be afforded by few people.

Before the Catastrophe, humans could gain alcohol through chemistry; however, as non-renewable resources like petroleum became exhausted, and after the Catastrophe, mankind could only gain alcohol through the traditional method — fermenting grains. In this age with resource shortages, many countries even forbade the production and sale of power equipment with alcohol as the fuel.

A notable exception was the Holy Golden Orchid Empire, whose crazy emperor Heiger VII dreamed about manufacturing a powerful, alcohol-driven internal combustion engine to help him fly in the sky.

It was said that alcohol truly could be used as the fuel of internal combustion engine of automobiles and planes. However, after the Catastrophe, like many other substances whose states and attributes had changed, alcohol's fuel value also became much lower; therefore, it could not meet the requirement to be the fuel of an efficient internal combustion engine.

...

The Faerie Dragon T9 was flying on the highway at the speed of

over 100 km per hour. Zhang Tie was really satisfied by the cool feeling of driving in such a convertible.

After leaving Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie felt he'd become incredibly rich.

On Hidden Dragon Island, he'd spent hundreds of thousands of gold coins to build a castle so easily and could gain dozens or hundreds of gold coins a day just by selling a few vials of all-purpose medicament. As he could make money so easily, Zhang Tie almost ignored the notion of money.

Although this car was even cheaper than that vial of senior recovery medicament that he had given to his elder brother, he was still under the admirable and jealous eyes of the people in the vehicles passing by. At this moment, Zhang Tie strongly felt that — it's really good to be rich!

After leaving Hidden Dragon Island, he could buy a cool sports car only at the cost of several hundreds of gold coins, stay in a city comfortably for one month at the cost of only a couple of gold coins, buy a nice house at the cost of several hundreds of gold coins, buy a villa at the cost of one thousand gold coins, share a grand dinner with his family members at the cost of just over 10 silver coins, and employ an average worker at the cost of dozens of silver coins...

All this made Zhang Tie enjoy the magic of money.

The Stars Viewing City that he was heading for was definitely a

place that defined the magic of money. In that place, you could even buy people at the cost of dozens of gold coins or hundreds of gold coins.

With the paper note of 20,000 gold coins that was given by Zhang Taibai for one of his well-fermented terrine of all-purpose medicament, Zhang Tie came to Stars Viewing City to buy slaves.

After experiencing one crisis, Zhang Tie realized that it was time for him to slowly change money into a power to shock others; otherwise, what was the function of money? Without money, even a few douchebags could chase him like chasing a dog; with money, he could give them a lesson with money.

After driving for one more hour, Zhang Tie found more and more billboards along the roadside, which were advertising various sexy beauties or gambling devices, available at hotels, gambling houses, and brothels.

Of course, there was also advertisements for the biggest slave trade center. He saw a line on a billboard with a background of a unique building outline — Paradise Lost, You Can Find Everything Here.

Suddenly, with the jarring, booming sound of an engine, a red sports car into the lane on the left of Zhang Tie's Faerie Dragon T9. The two cars then drove shoulder to shoulder.

Compared to the Faerie Dragon T9, which had a masculine look, that Red Rabbit sports car looked more elegant and slimmer,

whose driver was a 20-odd young beauty with short hair.

Zhang Tie exchanged glances with that beauty.

However, Zhang Tie had not imagined that the girl would throw a contemptuous glance towards him with her nose turned up...

Chapter 346: Paradise Lost

At this moment, Zhang Tie absolutely looked like some rich young master. He was wearing T-shirt and a pair of sunglasses with one arm on the door of the cab while driving the brand new car with one hand in a casual way.

That girl was also bizarre. Although looking beautiful with smoky eyes, she was wearing a blue cowboy jacket which indicated that she was a tomboy. Additionally, on her ear closest to Zhang Tie, there were more than 5 ear piercings of different colors. Obviously, she was tricky.

Raising her eyebrows, she threw an aggressive glance at Zhang Tie while pressing down the accelerator, surging ahead of Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then replied with a smile as he also pressed down on his accelerator; in a split second, the steam-driven valve of the Faerie Dragon T9 opened to release the super powerful torque of 670 Nm from the turbine steam-driven, external combustion engine. In the blink of an eye, he had long passed ahead of that Red Rabbit...

...

When Zhang Tie arrived at Stars Viewing City, he could not even see the shadow of the Red Rabbit that had been chasing after him. Zhang Tie then took a look at the oil gauge and found that he had consumed more than 90 liters of alcohol, leaving less than 1/5 in

the oil tank...

Looking around, he was impressed by the size of the city's population as all the avenues were crowded with people. 2/3 of them were Chinese while 1/3 of them were of other nationalities.

On both sides of the streets were various entertainment venues, such as "Fragrances House", "Beauties Department", "Flowers Valley", "Magical Women Palace", and "Paradise". Zhang Tie saw all sorts of brothels with branded beauties in different levels.

The whole city was so boisterous; yet, the streets were clean and in good order, which formed a sharp contrast to Zhang Tie's imagination.

When Zhang Tie caught sight of that "Paradise Lost", it was almost 2 pm.

That building complex was like a huge playground or a theme park in the city; at least the brand "Paradise Lost" on the tallest building of that building complex would cause such an association. However, this was neither a playground nor a theme park, but the well-know, biggest slave trade center.

There were some more slave trade markets like this one; but "Paradise Lost" was the most famous and biggest one; therefore, Zhang Tie chose to have a look here first.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking towards the entrance of Paradise Lost

the moment he parked his car, a number of men who were waiting outside Paradise Lost instantly surrounded Zhang Tie. With a casual look, my god! Zhang Tie saw at least 5 different nationalities based on the color of their skin, hair, and eyes.

After surrounding Zhang Tie, they started to introduce their own businesses.

"Sir, our business group has a large amount of beauties and virgins; some of them are docile, some are feisty, do you want a look?"

...

"Sir, our Heaven Stars Business Group has just purchased a large batch of conquered people, male or female, young or old. We can definitely meet your demands!

"Professional slave trafficking manager Marques is willing to serve you, sir"

...

"We are 'Curious' company. We can provide your follow-up services after you purchase slaves. As long as you hand your slaves to us, we will turn a rustic village girl into a goddess and a tiger into a kitty."

...

"Sir, I'm the Agela Kingdom's population affairs commissioner in Jinyun Country; if you want a noble and satisfactory status for your slaves, come for me. Our princess is the cheapest!"

'What Agela Kingdom?' Zhang Tie had not heard it before; but this guy's words reminded Zhang Tie of the Holy Golden Orchid Empire. He remembered that the Holy Golden Orchid Empire was good at doing such business.

Zhang Tie thought that nobody would sell statuses in Jinhai City since Holy Golden Orchid Empire moved out of the business. He had not imagined that this business would be picked up; what was more, they even improved the business by selling the status of princess. It seemed that such a trick was really profitable here.

"Can I buy the status of queen?" Zhang Tie joked.

It was really unexpected that that guy became really excited after hearing this question.

"Of course, you can, sir, Agela Kingdom is a free and romantic kingdom. Our king can make any women a queen. To tell you the truth, as of now, we have more than 20 queens. It only takes you 1200 gold coins to complete the queen coronation ceremony for the one you like. Queen of Agela Kingdom has her own jade chip and gold broach; she will wear phoenix coronet and robes of rank. Besides, she will receive the guidance of our court etiquette tutor. It only takes you 1200 gold coins to have a queen as your slave and enjoy a king's treatment!"

Hearing this answer, Zhang Tie was really startled. 'F*ck! These people really can do whatever they want. They can even coronate a queen. What the f*ck...'

"Sir, if you really need a mature and noble queen as your slave, I know where she is. She's a real queen, not that kind that you could buy!"

With such a voice, a 50-odd half-baldheaded man with swollen brown eyes in brown hair pushed away the crowd and walked towards Zhang Tie. He looked nasty and a bit shrewd. Firstly, he made a slight bow to Zhang Tie; then, he stood straight and said, "Please allow me to introduce myself. I'm Davinci, the slave trafficking agent of Stars Viewing City. It's my great pleasure to serve you!"

At the sight of this guy, Zhang Tie was really stunned, "You mean I could buy a real queen here?"

"Of course, sir, 2 months ago, a war broke out on Mianoki Peninsula while the Tadon Alliance defeated the Misa kingdom and broke through the capital of the latter. This is a war of clan vengeance that had been brewing for over 100 years. According to the rule of Clan vengeance war on Mianoki Peninsula, all the members of imperial household of Misa Kingdom would be sold as slaves by Excellency Belli, the chairman of Tadon Alliance. The former queen of Misa Kingdom is in Stars Viewing City. If you want to buy a real queen, I can arrange an exclusive auction for you!" Davinci said in a confident tone, which formed a sharp contrast with his weird look.

Zhang Tie glanced over this guy carefully. Since this guy seized the opportunity to step up and attracted his attention, Zhang Tie knew that this guy was sharper than the others.

"Davinci, I like this name. Show the way, please; I want to take a look in Paradise Lost first!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's request, Davinci instantly showed a smile as he bowed to the others elegantly, "Sorry, this sir has decided to employ me as his slave trade agent, I know what kind of services you can provide; if this sir has any demand that is suitable to you, I will bring him for you!"

Hearing Davinci's words, all the rest left.

"Sir, I will guide you in Paradise Lost first, please!"

Davinci made a gesture as he slightly bowed with a flattering smile. He then guided Zhang Tie into Paradise Lost.

"What's happening in Agela Kingdom? How could they even sell the status of queen?" Zhang Tie asked Davinci.

Before talking, Davinci looked back at that guy who called himself the Agela Kingdom's population affairs manager in Jinyun Country. After confirming that that guy could not hear their conversation, Davinci lowered his voice, "Sir, they are liars. Previously, they made and sold various fake certificates in Stars

Viewing City. After making a bit money, they bought a remote tiny island which was only 1-2 sq km on the sea 1000 km away from the land and built a kingdom, Agela, on the tiny island!

"There were only several hundreds of people in Agela Kingdom. They are all liars and liars' family members and apprentices!

"The imperial palace over there is only a small castle. With a brand, a thatched house would be Agela National University or Military Department of Agela Kingdom. They have even described a canoe as the naval army of Agela Kingdom, and 2 dogs as Special Operations Command of Agela Kingdom. The military rank of the commander of the Special Operations Command is admiral, which could be bought with 10 gold coins, excluding the uniform. They can fabricate any position and status for you over there."

'Two dogs? Special Operations Command?' Zhang Tie was so dumbfounded that even his eyes and mouth became tilted. What a wonder!

After a short while, Davinci had guided Zhang Tie into Paradise Lost. The entrance of Paradise Lost was like a hotel lobby as many people were accessing it.

Zhang Tie presumed that Davinci must have been here often as a female worker directly greeted Zhang Tie when they entered while ignoring Davinci.

"Sir, if you want to enter Paradise Lost, you need to present your ID certificate and the purchase ability proof of 500 gold coins at the

minimum!"

Saying nothing, Zhang Tie directly pulled out his Clan ID plate and that notepaper of 20,000 gold coins.

Seeing Zhang Tie taking out the 2 items, the worker immediately revealed a big smile and became much more enthusiastic, "Sir, do you need us to arrange a professional purchase guide for you?"

"No need, I've already got an agent!"

Being a bit amazed at Zhang Tie's two items, Davinci made a deep bow to Zhang Tie once again, "Please forgive me for my rudeness, I couldn't have imagined that Mr. Zhang is from Huaiyuan Palace. Huaiyuan Palace is a great clan. It's my great honor to serve you!"

This was also Zhang Tie's first time experiencing the influence of Huaiyuan Palace's clan ID plate in Huaiyuan Prefecture. When he was on Hidden Dragon Island, which was full of members of Huaiyuan Palace, this status was average; however, across Huaiyuan Prefecture, the ruling status of Huaiyuan Palace became obviously higher than commoners. With this plate, Zhang Tie seemed like a relative of a royal family in Huaiyuan Prefecture.

After Zhang Tie's status and purchase ability were confirmed, Zhang Tie and Davinci entered Paradise Lost.

There was an old saying in Stars Viewing City — if you've not been to Paradise Lost, you've not been to Stars Viewing City. After

entering Paradise Lost, Zhang Tie realized that this saying was pretty true.

Before coming here, Zhang Tie's impression of slaves were those wounded ones in shabby clothes and restless expressions standing in places like a stable. After entering Paradise Lost, Zhang Tie knew that his impression was ungrounded.

In front of Zhang Tie was a festive town. People on the streets were so happy.

Among those happy people were clowns in cosmetics, walking on stilts and riding monocycles. They were performing various shows...

Bands were playing festive tunes on the roadsides...

Girls in beautiful clothes were playing on the streets...

Soldiers were patrolling on the streets in a square matrix.

Wagoners were driving carriages...

A beautiful female waiter was walking out of the door with a cup of coffee and placed it onto the table outside the coffee shop while her hand was seized by a guest...

Blacksmiths and watchmakers were working inside their stores,

causing clatters...

Coquettish, young women in carriages were ogling men on the roadside...

Tough men were playing a 100 pound broadsword on the streets...

Kids were rolling iron rings on the roadsides...

The small town contained people of different ethnicities, from all walks of life, male or female, old or young...

This was Zhang Tie's first impression of Paradise Lost.

Zhang Tie was a bit puzzled as he looked at Davinci, "Don't you say this is the biggest slaves trade center? Where are the slaves?"

Davinci then pointed at those people, "All of them that you can see are slaves, including those beautiful girls, clowns, soldiers, wagoners, blacksmiths, musicians, the female waiter in that coffee shop, even those bosses who were checking account books inside stores and tailors. Have you seen those small badges made of enamel on their chests and breasts? The number on the badge is their price!"

Zhang Tie then took a careful look and truly found everybody had a enamel badge except for that female waiter whose hand had been grabbed by that old man.

The number on the enamel badge of that clown who was performing on tilts was 65!

"Slaves are commodities which need to be packed. These are their looks in front of their buyers after being packed!" Davinci explained, "In this age, slaves trade has been a huge industrial chain. After thousands of years' of slaves trading, those business groups have already figured out how to exploit those slaves to the utmost!

"Look at that clown!" Davinci pointed at that clown whom Zhang Tie had noticed, "That is a young man without no special talent. His original value was 50 gold coins; after being strictly managed and trained, he mastered some clown skills; then, his value became 65 gold coins!

"For that female waiter in the coffee shop, if she were in a brothel, that man might only spend dozens of gold coins for her; however, here, that man might spend hundreds of gold coins for a beautiful female waiter of a coffee shop! The same commodities have different values in different packaging; the same principle applies to slaves!"

Watching this scene, Zhang Tie was really shocked, 'This is anything but slave trade! This is selling the most mysterious and evil desire in people's heart. As long as one has money, one can buy anything here.'

In other places, no matter how rich you were, you would not be

able to buy whatever you wanted. For instance, you could not buy those beautiful girls in other places as you wanted; but here, everything was different as you could buy beautiful girls on streets as you wished.

This stimulating feeling of buying girls or female waiters on streets was definitely unparalleled. It was far cooler than the slave trade in his mind.

Paradise Lost was a supermarket for slave trade!

Watching those slaves, Zhang Tie then felt a bit sad; however, after thinking for a short while, he recovered his composure.

No matter what, even though not every slave trade center was like this, it was much better than choosing slaves in gloomy and dirty stables.

"If you want to buy women, you can take a casual look on streets; if you are not satisfied with those on streets, you can check private residences. Some women like to stay at home, which caters to the exploring desire of some guests; some talented women perform dances and sing songs in operas of the small town..." As he spoke about the women, Davinci's presented truly wretched expression.

"How much is a woman here?" Zhang Tie asked.

"An average one only costs you 50-70 gold coins; those with a better look or some talents would be a bit more expensive; some

special ones would be more expensive; the highest ever price of an unrivalled beauty here was over 60,000 gold coins!"

"I don't need unrivalled beauty. I don't care about their looks. I need loyalty; they need to do some daily jobs" Zhang Tie then calculated based on the size of his castle on Hidden Dragon Island, "I need about 30 women like this."

Chapter 347: Female Slaves

"I need 30 women; they must be loyal to me!"

Receiving this request, Davinci rolled his eyes, "There are so many women like this, I can find you 300 if you want. What else do you need?"

"They'd better not be Chinese!" As a Chinese himself, Zhang Tie hated the idea of using Chinese as slaves.

"It's okay. Generally speaking, non-Chinese slaves are always loyal to their owners in Chinese communities!" Davinci explained in an experienced way, "If you'd like, follow me, please!"

Davinci then guided Zhang Tie into the small town.

Zhang Tie walked as he watched talented and beautiful slaves. Besides those enamel badges that represented that they were slaves, there was nothing different between them and commoners when looking aspects like costumes, speech, and actions.

"Are they living in this small town?" Zhang Tie asked Davinci.

"Does it seem strange? The small town is like a clean showcase which is used to exhibit commodities. Of course, the lower quality commodities would be moved away from the showcase and be replaced with new ones! All the slaves here treasure this opportunity very much; because they know that if they get sold at

a high price here, they will not live that hard from then on; if they miss this opportunity, they would be dealt with like discounted commodities!"

"How will they be dealt with if they cannot be sold?" Zhang Tie became curious.

"Because those business groups in the slave trade will not feed them for their rest of lives, men will have to do dangerous and hard work in mines while females might be sold in low-level brothels where they'd be hard pressed to survive for 10 years. Finally, they would die due to various reasons. Generally speaking, such slaves would be sold at the price of only a couple of gold coins or a bit more than 10 gold coins."

Hearing this reply, Zhang Tie was shocked inside, 'This just shows how cruel the slave trade is! As slaves, they've already lost the ability to control their own fate.'

"Do we have such poor slaves in Paradise Lost?"

"As overdue products could not be sold at a high price, nobody would display them in the showcase; instead, they are carried to the other places of Stars Viewing City. I suggest to not go there as they are full of despair and would bring you bad luck!" Davinci persuaded aside.

"Your words have excited my interest. After leaving here, show me where those cheap slaves are!" Zhang Tie smiled. Although he could not change the current situation of slave trade, Zhang Tie

didn't think that the slave trade was noble. Although slaves were marked with different prices, Zhang Tie knew that no life was humble; even an earthworm had its own magical ability and dignity, let alone humans.

"I just want to have a look."

"No problem, as you will, after leaving Paradise Lost, I will take you to have a look over there; but I suggest you don't choose any of them!"

...

After walking in Paradise Lost several minutes, under the guidance of Davinci, Zhang Tie had already arrived at a place branded with "Karse Business Group Trade Agency".

Since Paradise Lost was a supermarket for slave trading, there must be sales agency from the manufacturers. This was what Davinci explained to Zhang Tie on the way here. Undoubtedly, Karst Business Group Trade Agency was such an agency.

"Welcome, honorable guest and my old friend Davinci!"

The moment they entered Karst Business Group Trade Agency, a swarthy guy with a marvelous handlebar moustache and in a funny and fat hat had walked towards them enthusiastically. He hugged with Davinci first before shaking hands with Zhang Tie politely.

"Tamir, Mr. Zhang comes from Huaiyuan Palace, the noblest clan among mankind. He wants to choose some docile female servants; therefore, I brought him here for you. I hope you won't disappoint him!" Davinci told this guy.

"Of course, it's the great honor of Karst Business Group to serve Mr. Zhang!" Knowing Zhang Tie's status, Tamir made a deep bow towards him.

"Erm, Davinci said your agency... is not bad and that perhaps you can meet my requirements, therefore, he brought me here!"

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed, because the moment he and Davinci entered, some young and beauties with swarthy skin had knelt down in front of them, 2 girls cleaned their shoes. After that, another 2 girls moved forward and started to massage their calves.

Zhang Tie had not enjoyed such a special treatment before; therefore, he was not accustomed to it; however, Davinci and that guy with handlebar moustache had been completely accustomed to this service. He didn't even glance at that girl kneeling down in front of him.

After briefing Zhang Tie's request to Davinci, Tamir became thrilled. 30 female slaves meant thousands of gold coins. It was not a small business for Karst Business Group.

"We have over 50 female slaves in Paradise Lost, they all have

good looks; please wait here for a minute, I will arrange them for you to choose!"

After inviting Zhang Tie and Davinci into an exotic lounge and serving them some fruit, tea, and pastries, Tamir hurriedly went out jubilantly. After Zhang Tie and Davinci sat down, the same two girls entered and knelt down in front of them like catties and started to massage their calves.

Davinci then gazed at that girl in front of him with lewd eyes while his swollen eyeballs started to scan across her breasts which were still in development.

The 2 girls both wore yarn skirts with their collars wide open, showing off their breasts. After kneeling down, they could easily expose their boobs to Davinci and Zhang Tie; additionally, they were very good at massaging. With proper rhythm and power, even though they only massaged calves, it was already very comfortable and relaxing.

Not only Davinci, even Zhang Tie had already been immersed in that massage. After being relaxed, Zhang Tie gazed at her breasts as he started to feel his mummy becoming restless.

Since leaving Blapei, Zhang Tie had not made love with women for over 7 months. Due to his rising hormones, Zhang Tie kept recalling the raptured moments between him and Hanna and those girls of Rose Association recently.

The girls kneeling down in front of them were like a mix of

Chinese and White women. They had large, black eyes, high and straight noses and smooth skin. They looked a bit brownish red and were similar to those from a tropical zone. Their hair was black, which was similar to Chinese girls; however, their heads were oval; if they were divided by the shape of skull, they should be standard white women.

Although the 2 girls didn't look as hot as Hanna and Alice; their figures were very outstanding...

Noticing that Zhang Tie was observing her, the girl's face slightly blushed.

Knowing that if he kept watching that, his mummy would definitely become stiff and raise a tent on his crotch, Zhang Tie hurriedly moved his eyes away from that girl's chests. He then took 2 big mouths of tea water and sensed a weird taste of ewe milk. Having not been accustomed to that, Zhang Tie put the cup back onto the table.

"Ha...ha..." Davinci laughed in a wretched way, "All of Varner's beautiful female slaves practice "Love Expression" since they were young. They have learned how to please men at a young age; therefore, they are very docile; if you like, you can buy one. It would only take you 100 gold coins for such a beautiful Varner virgin. How about it? Do you want a try?"

"They all come from the Varner Empire?"

"Of course, I'm afraid that only Varner women could satisfy your

requirements across Paradise Lost; therefore, I bring you here!"

Zhang Tie thought for a while and agreed.

Thanks to what he had learned in Hidden Dragon Palace during the past half year, Zhang Tie had learned about this Varner Empire from map and books.

Varner Empire was a strange hierarchical slave-owner's state. All the slaves in the country came from a social class — soutuona which was derived from the caste system of this country.

In Varner Empire, soutuona meant humble and slave. People coming from this class would be slaves generation after generation.

Varner Empire was famous for its slaves as its slaves were well known by being loyal to their owners.

After a few minutes, Tamir had entered with big smiles, "I've already arranged it, you can select them now!"

Under the guidance of Tamir, Zhang Tie and Davinci walked into the courtyard behind the Karst Business Group Agency. The moment he arrived there, Zhang Tie felt like being punched face-to-face as his face turned slightly pale.

Over 50 women were standing in rows tidily over there. Judging from their looks, their ages changed from 15 to 40 years old.

However, they were all naked with their hands covering the special place between their legs. They looked like fruits being peeled off.

In any human country, it would be a humiliation for women to display their naked body in the public, even if they were slaves.

Those women slightly quivered, their bodies being a bit stiff. With tears in eye sockets, many of them tried their best to lower their heads to cover their private places.

If it was another scene such as when he stayed with those girls of Rose Association, Zhang Tie would be very pleasant at the sight of so many girls peeling off their clothes in front of him; however, at the present, Zhang Tie felt very uncomfortable and pained at the sight of those naked women.

"Stand up straight; move away your hands and display your naked bodies..." Tamir instantly changed his smile into a solemn expression. Being scolded, those women shook heavily as they moved away their hands from their private places; meanwhile, many of them started to drop tears.

After frightening those women, Tamir turned around his head towards Zhang Tie, "You can check them now. They are all B class beauties. Their prices change from 60 gold coins to 80 gold coins; some of them are innocent virgins; each of them would cost you 80 gold coins; for the others, as long as you can find a scar or defect on their bodies, you can have 1 gold coin deducted!"

"Let...let them put on clothes!" Zhang Tie said in a low voice while trying his best to control his fury.

"What?" Tamir didn't hear it clearly as he asked out of curiosity.

"Are you motherf*cking deaf?" Being driven infuriated, Zhang Tie instantly grabbed Tamir and pulled him in front of him. With one hand on Tamir's collar, he easily lifted Tamir in the air with his eyes glaring at him as he growled, "Let them put on clothes, right now!"

Seeing Zhang Tie's sudden rage, Davinci's face turned pale while Tamir's face turned totally bloodless. Zhang Tie's sharp and powerful eyes shocked Tamir too much.

"Hurry up...hurry up...put on your clothes right now!" While his collar was grabbed, Tamir shrieked loudly. Hearing Tamir's order, all the women glanced at Zhang Tie in appreciation; after that, they turned back and hurriedly squatted down to put on their clothes.

Seeing them putting on their clothes, Zhang Tie gradually recovered his composure. He then loosened his grip on Tamir.

Davinci then glanced at Zhang Tie with strange eyes, "It's a rule for the buyer to check the bodies of those female slaves, Tamir didn't know that you don't like this!"

"Argh. Mr. Zhang doesn't like this rule. I know now. I'm really sorry for that. I promise you nothing similar will happen next time..." Although Tamir was still a bit shocked and still didn't understand why Zhang Tie lost his temper just now, considering so many weird people here, he presumed that perhaps Zhang Tie saw this as taboo; therefore, he hurriedly apologized to Zhang Tie.

In this line, the customers were gods, especially those coming from the ruling clan of Huaiyuan Prefecture like Zhang Tie. Although he'd been roared at by Zhang Tie, Tamir still retained his smile.

"Do they need to do this...every time?" Zhang Tie asked Davinci in a low voice.

"Yes, every time, until they are bought away. This batch is new here; they are not accustomed to doing it. They will adapt to it in the future..." Davinci explained calmly.

"Every time..."

Davinci noticed Zhang Tie mumbling something several times before taking out the papernote of 20,000 gold coins and patted it onto Tamir, "No need to choose, I want them all!"

...

After Zhang Tie determined to buy those female slaves, it was Davinci's turn to bargain with Tamir. According to the rule, the

compensation of the slave trade agent would be 1/10 of the difference between the offer of the seller and the turnover. The greater the difference was, the more compensation Davinci would gain.

There were 53 female slaves in total and Tamir's offer was 3756 gold coins. After a sharp bargain between Davinci and Tamir, the final turnover was 3640 gold coins. After it was done, Zhang Tie immediately threw 12 gold coins to Davinci. Davinci became so happy that he instantly broke out into a broad smile.

Actually, Zhang Tie bought 53 female slaves at the cost of 3652 gold coins.

After those female slaves followed Zhang Tie out of the Karst Business Group Trade Center, the girl that had massaged Zhang Tie's calf just now rushed out of the room and hugged another woman among those female slaves. They cried loudly at once like that they would separated forever.

"What's happening?" Zhang Tie asked Tamir.

"They are sisters. After this separation, they might never see each other in the future!" Tamir replied.

Seeing this scene, many girls started to drop tears while some girls showed their heads out of the rooms far away and looked towards here with pitiful expressions. Hearing their heart-tearing cries, even Zhang Tie felt like crying.

'Well, I will always be the good man!' Zhang Tie sighed inside. 'No matter what, I've already bought more than 50, I don't care to have one more. My castle on Hidden Dragon Island could even hold 300-500 people. I can afford their accommodations and food!'

"Oh, my castle needs some servants to take care of the flowers and grasses. Call out those little girls who received me just now, I will bring them away together!"

'With more than 50 female servants to help me ferment the enzyme and do chores, it will be great! What's next is to buy some male servants...'

Chapter 348: Square Spear Matrix

After buying 59 female slaves, Zhang Tie's following trip in Paradise Lost was smooth. Only after visiting Paradise Lost for half an hour, Zhang Tie spent another 15000 gold coins.

This time, he bought a small, square spear matrix composed of 100 LV 2 slave soldiers.

It was a standard spear matrix, which was more powerful than the spear matrix Zhang Tie had been part of when he was at school.

In Paradise Lost, if you had money, you could buy all sorts of people, including fighting force.

Although LV 2 fighters could only be cannon fodder in battle fields, Zhang Tie didn't mean to send them to battlefields; instead, he only wanted them to defend his castle on Hidden Dragon Island. Therefore, even though they had poor fighting force, they could frighten average people; what was more important, there was no mole among them.

Previously, Zhang Tie planned to employ people from Long Wind Business Group to defend his castle on Hidden Dragon Island; however, after what happened several days ago, Zhang Tie changed his mind. As at least 80 people were needed to defend the castle, Zhang Tie didn't want anyone who could leak information to the public at any given time and set him up at a critical moment.

After meeting Zhang Taibai's wife, Zhang Tie had been too scared about Long Wind Business Group; since then, he had constantly been concerned about being screwed over and betrayed. Therefore, Zhang Tie decided to only use his own followers from now on.

Zhang Tie didn't believe that those people could predict what he was going to do and had arranged their moles among these slaves.

This batch of soldiers were all from the spirits clan. For the other clans, a LV 2 soldier is only worth 120 gold coins; however, spirits soldiers had good physical strength and robust figures. What was more, they were loyal to their owners. They were born to be infantryman; therefore, they were 30 gold coins more expensive than LV 2 soldiers of other clans.

Through this trade, Zhang Tie came to understand more about the prices of the soldiers and warriors of other levels.

In Stars Viewing City, a LV 1 slave soldier was worth about 80 gold coins; a LV 2 slave soldier was worth about 120 gold coins; a LV 3 slave soldier was worth 170 gold coins; a LV 4 slave soldier was worth 260 gold coins; a LV 5 slave soldier was worth 400 gold coins and a LV 6 slave soldier was worth 600 gold coins.

For those soldiers below LV 6, as long as you could afford, those businessmen could easily prepare a division for you.

LV 6 was the highest one could get a slave soldier relatively cheaply as a LV 7 slave would be worth 1100 gold coins, a LV 8 would be worth 3500 gold coins. For LV 9 slaves, if you were lucky,

you could get one at the cost of above 10000 gold coins. Actually, you could only see LV 9 slaves at high-end auctions.

Slaves above LV 10 could be rarely seen in slave trade centers. Davinci said he saw one before; although that LV 10 guy was a slave, he was a clan warrior cultivated by a big figure. As nobody would sell a LV 10 powerful fighter and few LV 10 powerful fighters were still slaves.

Those spirits soldiers were all at about 20 years old; they had definitely accepted more military skills training than Zhang Tie had learned in school in Blackhot City. After being bought, those spirits soldiers then knelt down at once and swore to be loyal to Zhang Tie with the solemn promise of their ancestors.

Glancing over more than 100 pairs of eyes, Zhang Tie made an appointment with all the LV 2 spirits soldiers at once.

"As long as you are loyal to me and complete your tasks seriously, I swear here in the name of my ancestors, anyone among you, once reaches LV 6, could gain freedom; additionally, I will gift him 200 gold coins as my thanks for his service over the past years!"

Noticing their faces turning blush and their gleaming eyes, Zhang Tie knew that he had reached his target. Like what Donder said — it's easy to win popular support, as long as you give the people what they want.

What would a LV 2 slave soldier long for most? Freedom and gold coins. With the two items, they would have everything else. You

don't need to talk about philosophy, dreams, or relationships with them at all.

"Do you mean that?" A two meter tall slave soldier suddenly stood up as he asked with his eyes opened as big as copper bells.

"Of course I mean it. You will soon witness my power to fulfill this promise!" Zhang Tie then stared at this giant man, "What's your name?"

"I'm Lenox!"

"Well, as you are brave enough to ask such a question on behalf of everybody else, I appoint you as the head of this matrix; but you need to bear it in mind, this is the first time and the last time for you to doubt my words. If you ask such foolish question once again, I will chop off your head, am I clear?"

Saying this, Zhang Tie's killing intent instantly covered the matrix of more than 100 LV 2 spirits soldiers. Feeling this, everybody became shocked and frightened. At this moment, everybody felt that as long as Zhang Tie liked, he could easily kill them all.

Under the sharp gaze of Zhang Tie, Lenox felt cold sweat all over his back. Although being robust in figure, the fighter didn't even to look straight into Zhang Tie's eyes; instead, he lowered his head in awe, "Yes, sir!"

After this transaction, Zhang Tie left Paradise Lost with Davinci. In 24 hours, Paradise Lost would send these soldiers in Zhang Tie's castle on Hidden Dragon Island.

Although that castle was not completed yet, the completed section would be able to house the slaves.

Any customer purchasing more than 5 slaves in Paradise Lost could enjoy a free door-to-door delivery. As Zhang Tie bought 100 LV 2 spirits soldiers, Paradise Lost gifted him 100 long spears as the weapons for those soldiers.

Zhang Tie entered Paradise Lost with the papernote of 20000 gold coins; however, when he walked out of Paradise Lost, he only had less than 1000 gold coins left; instead, he got 100 LV 2 spirits soldiers and 59 female slaves from Varner Empire.

This was Zhang Tie first private force. Zhang Tie even appointed 2 heads for them.

The head of the spirits soldiers was Lenox while the head of those female slaves was Sonia — that girl who was almost separated from her younger sister. Because of Zhang Tie, a tragedy between the sisters was avoided; what if he hadn't been there? Therefore, Zhang Tie believed that Sonia would do her job well so as to gain his appreciation.

Although he spent too much this time, he felt so cool.

...

"Mr. Zhang, do you really want to take a look at the cheapest slave trade center? That place is dirty and disorderly. Slaves there are almost dead!" Davinci tried to persuade Zhang Tie once again.

"No crap!" Zhang Tie then got on the vehicle. After inserting in the key and rotating it to unlock the steering and the pedal ignition device, Zhang Tie stepped on the ignition pedal before it sprung back up; however, the engine didn't respond.

Zhang Tie then stepped down on it eight consecutive times before the car started to slightly shake and the familiar sound of the engine drifted. Then, the engine was ignited. This turbine steam-driven, thermal recollected, external combustion engine was featured by mechanical ignition and alcohol combustion, which could shorten the ignition process to a little over ten seconds.

When Zhang Tie ignited the Faerie Dragon T9, Davinci took a look around the car before opened the side door and meticulously sat in with an emotional sigh, "It's really a good car!"

Zhang Tie then gazed at the dash board of the car. Half a minute later, when the hand of steam pressure pointed at 2900 psi, Zhang Tie pushed down the hand brake and shifted in reverse; meanwhile, he stepped the accelerator and backed his car out of the parking space smoothly.

"Which way am I heading?"

Davinci sighed, "Keep forward and turn right at the second turning..."

The sports car then instantly dashed out...

...

In less than 10 minutes, Zhang Tie had already arrived at that slave trade center under the guidance of Davinci. This was really like an animal trade center outside Blackhot City. It was in a wood outside the city.

Compared to Paradise Lost, this place was in alignment with Zhang Tie's imagination — disorderly, dirty, and noisy. Under the hot sun, this place was full of weird smells that made people feel like vomiting. Besides, there were all sorts of complaints, bargaining voices, and wails.

In dirty and shabby clothes, the slaves were like animals as they were gathered in a cramped space surrounded by steel pipes and iron wires. They were looking at the surrounding people with dumb and despairing looks.

There were some extremely rough platforms which were only 1 m higher than the ground. The platforms were covered with a broken water-proof tarpaulin, on which naked female slaves were exposed and forced to display their own bodies, including their private places for auctioning themselves.

The moment Zhang Tie arrived here, he had seen a baldheaded tough guy forcefully pat a woman's butt and yelled loudly, "9 gold coins? Anyone higher? This woman has not given birth to a baby; she's only 40-odd years old. Except for that scald on her face, she has a nice figure; she's definitely docile; after turning off the light at night, she could still make you happy. Any one higher? The minimal added price each time is only 10 silver coins..."

"10 gold coins!" Zhang Tie roared...

Chapter 349: Setting the Slaves Free

People are different from each other. Even for humble slaves, when they were told that they could be free, their expressions were also different from each other.

Some of them became rapturous, some became vacant, while others became perplexed.

At this moment, on an opening of a wood beside the slave trade center, when Zhang Tie declared to the 50-odd slaves that they were free, those slaves fixed their eyes on him with various expressions.

Some slaves' faces even turned completely pale out of fear as they shook all over.

"No, no, I don't want freedom. I don't want to play this game any more..." a slave shouted loudly with his face full of fear as he glanced around at the surrounding woods in a flurried way, "I know that as long as I take a few steps away, you playboys would chase after me like hunting wild dogs. I've experienced this before. Those bowmen must be hiding nearby, right?"

Hearing this man's doubts, some others also looked panicked; they looked here and there out of fear. They seemed to have heard about similar experiences. In some places, when the playboys set slaves free, they would start a hunting game at the cost of the lives of the slaves. As they were outside the city, this place was suitable for them to play such a game.

Hearing such comment, Zhang Tie kept rolling his eyes while Davinci stared at Zhang Tie on one side, seemingly telling him 'Look, they're slaves! What did you expect?'

Although some slaves looked pretty panicked, Zhang Tie noticed that there were still some looked relatively calm. One of them only had one arm. Being about 50 years old, that man was tough and tall with stubble, making him very attractive. Zhang Tie beckoned him to the front by waving his hand. Seeing Zhang Tie's gesture, that man then strode towards him.

"You were a soldier?" Zhang Tie glanced at him and asked.

"I lost one hand on the battle field. I was a first lieutenant officer of the Macedonian Empire!" That 50-odd man answered calmly.

This man was a prisoner of war, the most common sort of slave.

"What's your name?"

"Stephen!"

Zhang Tie glanced at Davinci as the latter instantly pulled out a contract from that pile of contracts and gave it to Zhang Tie. The photo on this contract was Stephen's.

"You're free!" Zhang Tie handed the man's contract to him. After

taking his contract with the only one arm, Stephen gazed at Zhang Tie for 2 seconds as he directly foisted the contract into his mouth, forcefully chewed and swallowed it before revealing a smile...

"I will bear you in mind!"

After saying that, the man turned around and left.

"Wait a second!" Zhang Tie stopped him.

Hearing Zhang Tie's voice, that man turned back and stared at Zhang Tie with vigilance, "What, do you regret it? Or are you playboys wanting to play some trick?"

Zhang Tie then popped out a gold coin towards him after drawing a shiny arc in the air. That man seized it by hand at once.

"For your travel expenses!"

With that gold coin, the man's expression became complicated. Without saying anything, that guy just nodded towards Zhang Tie before left.

With eyes wide open, the other slaves gazed at that leaving man and the calm looking Zhang Tie.

Another slave then plucked up his courage and walked out of the crowd.

"What's your name?"

"Fite!"

...

After Fite left with his contract and a gold coin like Stephen, more slaves crowded towards Zhang Tie.

Finally, with their own contracts and gold coins, only 3 out of 50 or so slaves chose to stay.

One was an old, hunched man in his 70s. One was that woman whom Zhang Tie bought from the auction whose face had some terrifying scalds. The third one was a man in his 30s who looked thin and vacant.

After the others left, the old man sighed as he gave his contract and one gold coin back to Zhang Tie, which really shocked Zhang Tie.

"Master, please let me stay with you. I'm still useful; I can be your doorkeeper and feed horses for you; I can also pass message for you. When it's necessary, I can also kill myself if you want. Just take me as an old dog. Just keep me alive with some leftover soup and food. When I'm dead, just throw me away or chop me into pieces to feed dog or pig; I won't bring you any trouble

The old man's voice became hoarse as his miserable, frowned look slightly moved Zhang Tie. Therefore, after a deep sigh, Zhang Tie put the one gold coin back to his hand once again.

"Clean yourself and buy some good clothes. Then, you can go to Yunju Mountain on Hidden Dragon Island and be the doorkeeper of my castle. It is currently still under construction!"

The old man then knelt down and kissed Zhang Tie's shoes before leaving with that gold coin.

After the old man left, that woman also left after glancing at Zhang Tie.

Hearing the word "castle", a shiny light instantly flashed by the eyes of the thin and vacant man.

"What's wrong with you?" Zhang Tie then asked him patiently.

"You have a castle. You're rich. Therefore, you are able to do that for me. As long as you give me a hand, I... I... will follow you forever..." That man with a vacant look realized something at once as he knelt down and hugged one of Zhang Tie's feet like it was his last chance. He became so excited.

Zhang Tie then burst out laughing loudly and felt that this guy must have been kicked in the head by a donkey, "I granted you freedom just now; if I want you to do something for me, I wouldn't have to give you freedom. If you want me to do something for you,

at least show me your value!"

Feeling like he'd been struck by lightning bolt, that man opened his mouth and stayed still for a while before recovering his despaired and vacant look.

After glancing at this frustrated man, Zhang Tie shook his head and left right away. 'As each slave had his own miserable experience, I'm not God, it's impossible for me to meet anyone's requirements.'

When Zhang Tie turned back and prepared to leave, that man suddenly burst out laughter loudly.

"Phili... Gaylen... dad and mom, please forgive me. I'm too useless; I've not revenged for you for such a long time...Believe me, this time, I... I will go back and find Keehn... I will stab him even if I get torn to pieces in the process, even though he's a big muling. After that, we will reunite with each other..."

That man burst into loud sobs and condemned himself first; then, he prayed and made his determination by mumbling. He spoke Hebrew which could not be understood by most people nearby, except for Zhang Tie. When Zhang Tie heard the word "big muling", he stopped at 20 steps away and walked back.

Zhang Tie then glanced over this guy once again. "Are you from Sun Dynasty?"

Kneeling down on the ground, the man raised his red and swollen eyes and looked at Zhang Tie. He then forced a bitter smile, "Yes, I'm from Sun Dynasty; additionally, I'm a clergy who believes in the God of Brilliance piously..."

Zhang Tie then became interested about that, "How can you be so miserable today?"

"They chose me as the alternate muling; however, they preferred me to complete the sacrifice ceremony using an innocent kid's fresh blood and life. I didn't want to do that; therefore, I set that kid free; finally, I was set up by my best friend and was framed as a heretic and blasphemer. Even my family members were involved; finally, in front of me, my youngest brother was forced to finish his sacrifice ceremony to become a muling. Gaylen was only 6 years old..."

Speaking of that, that man covered his face with his hands and cried mournfully once again.

This was a common story in Sun Dynasty as it would happen many times a year. Zhang Tie had not imagined that he could meet a man from Sun Dynasty here.

"Is that Keehn? What's his current position?"

"Yes, it's him. When I escaped from Sun Dynasty, he was already a 3-star muling. Over 10 years have passed. He might be a moon-level big muling now!" Saying that, the man raised his eyes towards Zhang Tie with the last beacon of hope, "I know you're

rich; it means you can employ assassinator to kill him. If you kill him, I would like to do anything for you..."

Zhang Tie then shook his head, "Do you know how much it would cost me to employ an assassin to kill such a powerful muling and how much risk I would assume? Do you think you are that valuable to me that I would do that for you?"

The man kept silent.

"You have a chance to show me your value. You've already heard the words I said to that old man just now. You can also go to Hidden Dragon Island for me. When you have become of sufficient value to me, I will have people bring Keehn's head in front of you!"

"I will go to Hidden Dragon Island!"

Kneeling down on the ground, that man's eyes radiated gleaming light. He then stood up decisively and left here.

At that moment, Davinci cried. He finally knew that curiosity killed the cat. He even wanted to slap himself and block his ears with cement. 'I'd already turned to leave just now, why did I turn back with Zhang Tie? What the f*ck am I doing?'

Zhang Tie then gazed at Davinci with a grin...

"I didn't hear anything," Davinci explained to Zhang Tie hurriedly. After accompanying Zhang Tie for the whole afternoon,

he hadn't realised how terrifying Zhang Tie's grin was until now.

'As long as I say didn't hear anything, what happens between Huaiyuan Palace and Sun Dynasty will have nothing to do with me in the future. If I don't express my stance, I might be involved in this thing in the future; however, for Huaiyuan Palace and Sun Dynasty, I'm nothing but a bug,' Davinci thought.

"Do you know what to do now?" Zhang Tie asked Davinci.

Davinci then nodded with a bitter smile...

Chapter 350: Preparations

Sometimes, a person would not do something 100% rationally; for instance, Zhang Tie set free a great number of slaves this afternoon.

Perhaps it was out of his appreciation towards life, his pity for those slaves, or his selfish desire to earn a fruit of redemption.

Thus, Zhang Tie spent over 1,000 gold coins to set free a number of "cheap" slaves. In many people's eyes, at least in the eyes of Davinci, Zhang Tie was a spendthrift who didn't know it was very hard to make money.

Upon hearing that Zhang Tie had a castle, Davinci naturally thought it was built by Zhang Tie's clan for him. As a guy who was qualified to have a castle on Hidden Dragon Island and surnamed Zhang, undoubtedly, Zhang Tie must be a key apprentice from the leading clan of Huaiyuan Palace.

Davinci believed that he was right. Although Huaiyuan Palace was very large, few young men could buy hundreds of slaves at the price of tens of thousands of gold coins without any hesitation like Zhang Tie.

'Perhaps I should find a big backer like Zhang Tie. It wouldn't be bad to have the backing of a big clan behind me.' Davinci thought. Additionally, in Davinci's opinion, he believed that Zhang Tie was not vicious. A person who could be pitiful about those humble slaves, and was respectful to even the most humble ones, could not

be bad.

Zhang Tie drove Davinci into another street nearby Paradise Lost.

"I'm in a sophisticated environment. Many people want to kill me or don't want me to grow mature; if they knew that you are working for me, you will almost definitely die. I don't want to see you lie in a ditch of Stars Viewing City. Am I clear?" Zhang Tie told him seriously, as Davinci got out of the car.

As Zhang Tie wanted to find someone to work for him in Stars Viewing City secretly, he'd better tell him the truth in case he got involved in any conflict due to Zhang Tie's business.

Hearing Zhang Tie's warning, Davinci shrugged his shoulders as he looked aside and forcefully swallowed his saliva, "Don't worry, I will take care of it!"

"If I need you, I will have someone come here for you. If you need me, you can also come for me. Do you know where to find me?"

"Your castle on Yunju Mountain, Hidden Dragon Island!" Davinci replied in a low voice.

Zhang Tie then nodded, "There's only one castle over there. You can easily find there. As long as you don't violate the law of Huaiyuan Prefecture and become wanted by the police, I'm sure you will be safe there!"

Davinci then felt a bit better, "Hmm, you've not named your castle, right?"

"Right, I've not thought about it yet!" Zhang Tie smiled, "Well, see you then!"

Waving his hand, Zhang Tie stepped on the accelerator. With a light boom, the Faerie Dragon T9 rushed out at once.

...

2 minutes later, Zhang Tie parked outside a pioneering shop in an avenue of Stars Viewing City. He then entered the shop.

Pioneers were commonly seen everywhere in this age, even in Jinyun Country. Even though it was in the territory of a country's map, there were still many places yet to be reclaimed. These undiscovered places were as luring as gold mines waiting to be exploited.

Most of places in Huaiyuan Prefecture were populated. Cities in Huaiyuan Prefecture were situated close to each other; however, in places 800 km away from Huaiyuan Prefecture were increasingly more regions yet to be discovered. Therefore, there were still many pioneers based in Huaiyuan Prefecture.

For young men with good family backgrounds in developed areas like Huaiyuan Prefecture, wasteland reclamation became a

pastime, almost, that combined adventure, travel, and self-improvement. It was not only for gold coins.

Each shop that sold pioneering products was branded by package, long sword, gold coins, beasts, and similar themes.

Therefore, Zhang Tie parked beside such an eye-catchingly branded store.

The moment Zhang Tie entered the door, a white, attractive girl walked towards him and asked politely, "What can I do for you, sir?"

Zhang Tie then glanced over the products in the shop. The shop floor was over 1000 sq meters, filled with various commodities. It included many more commodities compared to the pioneering shops in Blackhot City. Even the weapons here were no less than common weapon stores.

"Do you have a map?"

"Yes, what kind of map do you want?"

"Maps of Stars Viewing City, Huaiyuan Prefecture, and Jinyun Country, one of each!"

"Well, we have common maps and professional waterproof maps; the latter ones are a bit more expensive. Which kind do you want?" the girl asked.

"Waterproof maps!"

The vendor took out three rolled-up, waterproof maps rapidly.

Being held in slim cylinders covered with copper shells, waterproof maps were made of a special resin. When in need, you could spread the map to check it; when you didn't need it, you just roll it back up like a tape measure. Although this kind of map was waterproof, it was not fire resistant; aluminum maps that could resist both water and fire were much more expensive.

"The price of each map of Stars Viewing City and Huaiyuan Prefecture is 3 silver coins. For the latest map of Jinyun Country, as some undiscovered areas were confirmed on it by pioneers at the end of this May, it's a bit more expensive, 18 silver coins."

"No problem, I also need a high-powered spyglass!" Zhang Tie pointed at a monocular in the counter over there.

The salesgirl then took the spyglass for Zhang Tie. After checking its power, Zhang Tie nodded.

"What else, sir?"

"What's the most popular type of armor-breaking bolts?" Zhang Tie asked.

"The most popular armor-breaking bolts are Breaking-Wind 6 Armor-Breaking Bolts without tail feathers. This kind of armor-breaking bolt was adapted to the latest small and medium-sized metal crossbows made in terms of GM760 on human weapons. With a medium-sized metal crossbow, you could penetrate through a LV 6 pangolin within 80 m. Many troops of the Hurricane Army and Jinyun Country are equipped with this kind of bolt!" the salesgirl explained very smoothly.

"Show me one, please."

The salesgirl rapidly took out a black bolt with a grim three-sided head, which looked like a poisonous snake's head, and handed it to Zhang Tie.

Holding it, Zhang Tie took a look and felt it; then, the precise data about this armor-breaking bolt appeared in Zhang Tie's mind.

Breaking-Wind 6 Armor-Breaking Bolts without tail feathers

Length: 42.7 cm.

Width of head: 3.5 cm.

Total weight: 721 grams.

With a length of over 40 cm, this bolt was made in terms of the most popular aerodynamics in this age. The body of the bolt was divided into 4 sections of different thicknesses and lengths. It

seemed to be made in terms of some strange rules as it felt very comfortable.

Weighing it in hand, Zhang Tie then glanced outside. In a split second, Zhang Tie had locked his spiritual energy onto a lamp hanging outside a shop 100 m away on the other side of the avenue. Zhang Tie then revealed a smile, 'Although this bolt is not as light as my handbolt, its destructive power is not smaller than my handbolt.'

Additionally, due to its heavier weight, its destructive power would be a bit greater. Its effective shooting range in Zhang Tie's hands was about 140 m which was almost equal to that of a small javelin.

After experiencing the assassination attempt, Zhang Tie knew that for some people, the fact that he had awakened his ancestral bloodline and customized 2000 handbolts in the Items Department of Hidden Dragon Island might not be a secret at all. If he kept killing people with his handbolts, even though he could recollect all the handbolts, the wounds on the victims would still expose a lot of information, which would undoubtedly arise others' doubts about him.

Therefore, he decided it would be better to purchase some popular weapons to hide his tracks.

Zhang Tie then ordered 2 containers of those bolts, making 48 bolts in total. For such weapons that were available in mass production, their cost would be much cheaper than that of Zhang Tie's handbolts as each kind of bolt only cost him a bit more than 1

silver coins.

After buying the armor-breaking bolts, Zhang Tie bought another two common heavy swords, a set of military slacks, and a multi-purpose backpack. After putting all the items into his backpack, Zhang Tie left this shop with his backpack.

Among all the items that Zhang Tie had bought, the most expensive were the 2 heavy swords; however, the total price of the two heavy swords was less than 5 gold coins. Each sword was even lighter than 20 kg. For a man who had used "Man's Certificate", this kind of heavy sword was really too ridiculous for Zhang Tie in terms of both size and weight.

However, it wasn't a matter of whether it was ridiculous or not, as long as it was destructive.

...

1 hour later, Zhang Tie settled down in a luxury suite on Floor 28 of Milkyway Hotel, the most luxurious hotel in Stars Viewing City.

Pushing a luggage cart, a bellboy guided Zhang Tie into his room and politely asked, "Sir, here's your room. What else can I do for you?"

Zhang Tie peered outside the window of the room and revealed a smile.

"Please bring me my backpack from the luggage cart." After saying that, Zhang Tie gave a silver coin to that bellboy as a tip, "Thanks, there's nothing else; I want to have a rest."

"Fine, sir. If you need any room service, just ring the bell here. If you want to relax or try your luck, there's a gambling house on the floor above; the dining room is on the 2nd floor..." explained the bellboy as he closed the door.

Putting down his backpack, Zhang Tie walked through the corridor to lock the door from inside before walked back.

Squatting on the ground, Zhang Tie opened the lock catch and the zipper on the backpack and took out the rectangular package of that high-power spyglass.

Zhang Tie rapidly assembled the spyglass and inserted the lens. After that, he carried the spyglass to the front window of his bedroom. He firstly adjusted the distance between the blinds to change brightness; he then drew the silk curtains. Finally, Zhang Tie placed the lens of his spyglass between two blinds and aimed at a place one kilometer away from the hotel.

After slightly adjusting the angle and focus of the spyglass, he could see clearly that place.

— Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City —

A huge sign with golden words appeared in Zhang Tie's vision.

Below that sign were some ferocious entrance guards in black uniforms. As it was only one kilometer away, Zhang Tie could even see clearly the expressions of the guard to the left of the entrance.

Zhang Tie kept his eyes fixed on that place for about an hour. He moved his eyes away until the dusk fell outside.

After leaving the window, Zhang Tie turned on the flourite lamp in the bedroom and took out of his map of Stars Viewing City...

Zhang Tie pointed at the region between the Milkway Hotel and that Zhen Clan Mansion and studied each street and ally, including each building over 10 times. After that, he put it back and took out the map of Huaiyuan Prefecture.

On the map of Huaiyuan Prefecture, Stars Viewing City only occupied a small area. Due to different scales, details being presented were different.

"Gulu... gulu..."

Right then, Zhang Tie heard his stomach sounding. Touching his stomach, Zhang Tie remembered that he'd only eaten breakfast that morning and had missed lunch.

...

Zhang Tie left the room for the dining room on the 2nd floor of the hotel. The moment he walked out of the lift, he had crashed

with a person.

"It's you?"

With colorful earrings and in a blue cowboy vest, that girl was pretty amazed at the sight of Zhang Tie. Before Zhang Tie reacted, that girl had already put her arm around his neck and kissed on his face rapidly as she said in a spoiled voice, "Hubby, why are here so late. I really miss you!"

Hearing those words, Zhang Tie realized that he'd obviously become a scapegoat. Soon after that, he saw some ferocious, tough men walking towards him...

Chapter 351: Performance

Due to Zhang Tie's personality, he would not deny what she said immediately; neither would he easily be screwed over by a girl. The moment Zhang Tie was going to explain it, one of the guys, who was walking towards him in tidy clothes like an elite, pointed at Zhang Tie with an angry expression.

"Nana, who's that brat? Are you hiding from me because of him?"

"This is my husband. This kind of tender, little man is my dish, so what?"

Raising her head, that girl called Nana threw a contemptuous glance at that man.

That man then fixed his eyes onto Nana and revealed a sudden smile, "I know, you must be annoying me on purpose! Why are you still so naive? How could you like some little kid?"

'F*ck! This dad doesn't talk and you take me as a waxwork in the exhibition hall?' Zhang Tie swore inside as he instantly put his arm around Nana's slim waist and hugged her into his own chest; meanwhile, he forcefully kissed her face and looked at that man in an aggressive way.

"Baby, who's that guy? He's so talkative; I've not heard you talk about him before. I know you only care about driving your Red Rabbit all day long! Why not tell me such an important thing?"

With a wisp of amazement and shame, that girl then responded with a smile.

"I'm sorry, honey! I just didn't want you to worry about me! I won't do it any more..."

With a sound of "Pah", Zhang Tie patted on her butt and pretended to glare at her out of fury and rudeness. "That's my girl!"

After being smacked on her butt, the girl immediately raised her eyebrows; but in a split second, she recovered her smile and buried her head onto Zhang Tie's chest as she pretended to be bashful, "Bad man, so many people are watching!"

"Heh, heh, it depends on whether you could take good care of me tonight!" Zhang Tie rubbed her butt with hand at the same time. 'It feels really great.' Zhang Tie yelled inside.

"You big, bad wolf. Don't talk about it here! We'll talk about it back in bedroom..." The girl further lowered her head as she twisted her body and moved Zhang Tie's hand away from her butt. At the same time, she forcefully pinched Zhang Tie's lower back.

"What else? Aren't you women being used to warm up beds and deliver kids? We will talk about delivering kids later. Are you wanting me to treat you like a princess or something? No crap! I will show you my power tonight!" Zhang Tie then glanced at that man, who looked about 27 years old, who had been stunned so much and behaved like a playboy, "Learn more from me, uncle. It's

Black Iron Age! Flowers delivery, wealth show, inviting girls for dinner, or pretending to care about them have become out of date!"

"You... you... you..." Being heavily insulted, that man pointed at Zhang Tie with a shaking hand and could almost not utter a sound...

Seeing their owner behaving that way, the 2 tough bodyguards beside that man walked forward and drew close to Zhang Tie.

"Mr, do you need any help?" Seeing it becoming a bit tense at the entrance of the lift, some security personnel in black uniform of the hotel had already walked towards them.

The one uttered was a baldheaded black man. He was tall, calm and polite, which forced the 2 bodyguards of the impulsive man to calm down.

Looking at the security personnel, the guy who had almost gone out of his mind called back his 2 bodyguards.

"Nana, you really disappoint me too much. How come you like such a kid..."

With this word, he ferociously glared at Zhang Tie. After that, that man waved at his bodyguards and left.

Seeing that man and his lackeys leave, the security guard who asked just now glanced at Zhang Tie and that girl called Nana; he

then immediately knew it was because of love affairs. Therefore, he left with the other security personnel.

Not until they all left did that girl who had been hugging Zhang Tie like an innocent girl started to look solemn.

"You b*stard, let me go!"

Staring at Zhang Tie, that girl forcefully patted Zhang Tie's hand off.

Zhang then sniffed forcefully 'This girl smells really good.'

"If I didn't hug you, could you've fooled him? I've not even asked you for the performance fee!"

"You've taken advantage of me so much, yet you are asking me for a performance fee?"

"I stirred up an enemy because of your casual words. I might be beaten to death the moment I go out of the hotel. That guy looks like a narrow-minded man! Beauty is dangerous!"

After staring Zhang Tie several seconds, that girl suddenly burst out a laughter, "Well, we're even. You have nice driving skills. Where did you learned those skills? We can have a match one day!"

"Sorry, I've not played such a naive game since I was 7; I'm not

interested in it! I'm on my way to dinner, make way please..." Zhang Tie directly walked towards the dining hall.

Looking at Zhang Tie, the girl called Nana became still. Watching Zhang Tie's shadow, she looked curious and interested...

...

After leisurely eating a grand supper in the dining hall, Zhang Tie returned to his room.

'It's already the 3rd day since I soaked the lotus seeds of fiery-flame red lotus into liquor. According to my master, I could eat them today.'

After arranging his personal belongings in the room, Zhang Tie carried his backpack by hand and entered Castle of Black Iron as he focused his attention onto the arch door in his mind.

...

At this moment, it was also dark in Castle of Black Iron; but it was not too late. What amazed Zhang Tie was that A'gan, Edward, and Aziz were burning a bonfire in the courtyard beside those houses. They were roasting corncobs, making the aroma fill the air.

Seeing Zhang Tie coming in, they hurriedly ran towards Zhang Tie and kissed Zhang Tie's shoes.

"Castle Lord, your loyal servant A'gan is waiting for your orders!"

"Castle Lord, your loyal servant Edward is waiting for your orders!"

"Castle Lord, your loyal servant Aziz is waiting for your orders!"

The three guys said one after another as if they'd reached an agreement in advance.

These days, Zhang Tie always entered Castle of Black Iron late at night when the 3 guys had fallen asleep; therefore, he rarely saw them. At the sight of the 3 diligent guys this time, Zhang Tie felt pretty good.

"What are you doing there?"

"My lord, we are roasting popcorns. They are very yummy!" A'gan explained honestly.

When A'gan replied, Aziz had already taken a well-roasted popcorn from the bonfire; after patting off the ash from it, he gave it to Zhang Tie in a flattery way.

Seeing their expecting eyes, Zhang Tie didn't hesitate at all; instead, he held the popcorn and peeled off its black skin and corn silk before engulfing it.

With only one mouthful, Zhang Tie became a bit still, 'Wow, this is really yummy; at least, I've not tasted such a great, yummy food before.

'Is this the taste of corn from Castle of Black Iron?' Eating it, Zhang Tie felt a bit shameful as he had not inquired about the grains production in Castle of Black Iron for a long time.

He could see the good, tidy fields, which were reclaimed by A'gan, Aziz and Edward. Various crops were growing well inside the fields.

"Nice, very yummy! You guys are doing well; you're good people and you've done nice farming work!" Zhang Tie patted their shoulders which made them quiver all over due to excitement.

"Argh, Castle Lord praised me..." A'gan was so happy that he danced with joy.

"Castle Lord patted my shoulder!" Edward looked like having hit the jackpot.

"I grew that corncob!" Aziz jumped off the ground and turned 2 somersaults in the air.

'Is that so exciting?' Zhang Tie watched his hands, 'Is my hand that magical?'

"You created them. The meaning of their existence is to please Castle Lord. Any of your praise and admiration would make them very happy as it would lubricate their souls and wisdom and indicate your greatest affirmation to our work!" Heller appeared beside Zhang Tie with a smile.

'I know,' Zhang Tie also became happy as he passed his backpack to Heller, "Put it in the equipment room, I will use it in a few days!"

"Yes, sir. Speaking of equipment room, I want to remind Castle Lord that our rooms are in short supply as all the grains warehouse have been filled; no more grain is available!"

"Argh!" Hearing this news, Zhang Tie became a bit amazed, "What should we do then?"

"There are two methods: first, I accelerate the growth of a batch of woods in Castle of Black Iron using reiki; then, I will have Edward build some rooms using the logs; but pines, parasols are not of good quality. If I accelerate their growth using reiki, it would be a waste; therefore, I hope Castle Lord could bring in some proper woods, such as blueberry, teakwood, nanmu, sanders, Korean pine, and ash trees as houses built of these woods would be more durable and better-looking!"

"What about the second method?"

"As long as Castle Lord can accumulate enough basic energy storage, you could directly form a mountain with many caves using the space and terrain creation system; that would cost you less

time!"

Hearing this method, Zhang Tie felt being a poor again; he just forced a smile, "No need to be that hurry, I will bring in some woods; for basic energy, I will increase it. You know, I've been a bit busy recently!"

"I understand, at your will, my lord!"

Zhang Tie then hurriedly ran into his lab. The color of the liquor inside the glass bottle truly had become bloody, deep red like fire...

Opening its lid, Zhang Tie forcefully sniffed that special taste from inside and felt his battle qi being ignited...

'Is this the function of the seeds of fiery-flame red lotus? That's too powerful!'

Chapter 352: Night Viewing Ability

The fiery-flame red lotus seeds in the liquor released an alluring fragrance. Lifting the bottle, Zhang Tie watched the red liquid for a while. He then gritted his teeth and started to drink it forcefully.

Curiously, the taste of the liquor had been diluted as the liquid tasted extremely bitter, instead of pungent; besides, its taste had a sort of chilliness that almost penetrated in Zhang Tie's bones.

At that moment, the seeds which were as hard as steel beads a few days ago had become crispy like Chinese chestnuts. Zhang Tie directly chewed all ten seeds and swallowed them all, causing a sound of "kacha, kacha".

Soon after he drank the bitter, icy liquid, Zhang Tie felt his stomach burning like the external combustion chamber of the steam-driven external combustion engine. At the same time, he felt his body temperature rising rapidly.

Remembering his master's warning, Zhang Tie swallowed all the liquid in the bottle very quickly; then, he yelled and rushed out of the lab.

In less than half a minute, Zhang Tie had felt his body burning; even his iron-blood battle qi had been triggered and formed a battle-qi totem of a huge centipede.

As Zhang Tie ran, he kept peeling off his clothes. Like a mad cow whose tail was burned, in a wink of eye, he had rushed 100 m away.

Yelling weirdly, he then dove into that fresh water lake inside the Castle of Black Iron naked, like a meteor, causing a 10 m higher spray.

A'gan, Aziz, and Edward were really stunned. They hurriedly collected Zhang Tie's clothes and shoes as they rushed towards that lake at the same time.

When they arrived at the lake, under the gloomy light in darkness, they saw Zhang Tie radiating a crimson light several meters below the water like a piece of red-hot iron. Meanwhile, a wisp of steam was rising above the water.

"Castle Lord, are you okay?" A'gan asked out of concern.

Heller's eyes radiated a gleaming light. After watching Zhang Tie for a while, he waved his head, "He's fine; Castle Lord has just accomplished a round of fabulous evolution!"

Hearing Heller's reply, Agan, Aziz and Edward all let out a sigh.

...

Although the others were worried about him, Zhang Tie was very cozy.

When the burning heat was absorbed by the icy lake at night, it warmed the surrounding air, which firstly drilled into his heart; after warming Zhang Tie's heart and making it feel very

comfortable, it drilled into Zhang Tie's spleen, then his kidney. After circling around his kidney twice, it went back to Zhang Tie's mind and mingled with his spiritual energy.

After his spiritual energy mingled with that weird strength for a while, Zhang Tie had a weird feeling — although the total amount of his spiritual energy didn't increase, it became more stable while that swirl of his spiritual energy in his mind felt a bit tranquil.

Out of Zhang Tie's mind, that warm energy started to penetrate into Zhang Tie eyes from inside to the outside.

When that warmth entered Zhang Tie's ocular tissue, Zhang Tie didn't feel warm anymore; but icy, but it still made his eyes very comfortable. The icy feeling came from a mysterious point inside his brain, in line with the middle place between his eyebrows.

Zhang Tie was immersed in water in this comfortable way for 3 hours.

3 hours later...

With a sound of "Huala...", Zhang Tie exposed his head out of the water and heavily panted, breathing in the Castle of Black Iron's fresh air.

At this time, Zhang Tie saw the Castle of Black Iron in a completely new light...

When he jumped into lake, it was dark in Castle of Black Iron while everything in the darkness was obscure; however, at this moment, everything in his eyes was different.

It was like the sunset scene in Castle of Black Iron. In the background of bright shadows and space that slightly radiated a golden color, everything was clearly presented in Zhang Tie's eyes, the visual effect of which was much better than that of night viewing medicament.

When he used a vial of night viewing medicament, he felt like he was wearing a layer of thick yellowish green glass; with that night viewing effect, he could clearly see an object's shape, yet he could not identify the object's colors easily. However, now, Zhang Tie could easily and clearly identify the colors of the plants in the Castle of Black Iron.

What was more, Zhang Tie found that his visual ability had become much better than before as he could see objects clearly at a longer distance.

Within the blink of an eye, Zhang Tie felt a mysterious connection between the spiritual energy in his mind and his eyes. If his spiritual energy was a lake at this moment, the water in this lake was irrigating his eyes through a fine water pipe.

Zhang Tie tried to turn off the water pipe of spiritual energy. He then opened his eyes and found everything became dark like before...

A'gan, Edward and Aziz were holding torches and watching him out of concern.

"Castle Lord, are you alright?"

Zhang Tie then turned on that water pipe of spiritual energy once again; this time, darkness disappeared and the whole space was changed into that sunset scene again. Everything then became clear in Zhang Tie's eyes...

Turned on... Turned off... Turned on... Turned off...

Clear... Obscure... Clear... Obscure...

Sunset scene... Darkness... Sunset scene... Darkness...

'That's really interesting!' Zhang Tie felt like a big bulb had been installed in his eyes that could light up the whole world. With that bulb, he could easily shift between two different visual effects. Although this night viewing effect would consume a bit of his spiritual energy, it was almost negligible to Zhang Tie. Even if Zhang Tie kept using this night viewing effect for 3 months, it would not cost him 1/5 of his total spiritual energy.

"Haha... I'm fine!" After knowing the effect of this night viewing ability, Zhang Tie was pretty jubilant. He burst into laughter and swam to the lakeside before putting on his clothes.

Because Heller and the three servants were all male, Zhang Tie

didn't feel shameful about putting on clothes in the public.

"Congratulations! Castle Lord, you've gained a new ability!" Heller said.

"You already know about that effect?" Zhang Tie asked Heller as he was putting on his T-shirt.

"I know everything in this space. The Castle of Black Iron has sensed your change, my lord."

"Fiery-flame red lotus is really nice. It's exotic!" Zhang Tie nodded.

"As a silicon-based plant in magma, fiery-flame red lotus has a great ability to bear and sense high temperature. When those fiery-flame red lotus that you've sowed in the Castle of Black Iron grow ripe, Castle Lord can eat some more seeds. Then, your night viewing ability will gradually be intensified!" Heller explained.

"Intensified?" Hearing that word, Zhang Tie became a bit still as he slowed down the movement to fasten his waist band, "I think this ability is already sharp now, you mean it can become sharper?"

"Although Castle Lord can see clearly objects' shapes in darkness, can you see their temperatures clearly? As objects would present different colors and temperatures when in different environments, you will actually be able to identify them!" Heller explained.

"I can see objects' temperatures?" After thinking for a while, Zhang Tie further asked, "What's it for?"

"He...he...commoners can identify 1 million kinds of rays and colors or so; actually, there are numerous kinds of rays and colors due to different temperatures of objects and energies in the universe. Temperature is a very important 'measure' in universe; if your eyes could see these temperatures, you would see a much more splendid scene in this world..."

"You mean people's eyes could see different temperatures, but for what?" Heller's words were out of Zhang Tie's comprehension ability.

"For instance, a man is hiding behind that big tree. Can you see that man from here, day or night?" Heller pointed at a tree over there.

"No!" Zhang Tie waved his head.

"Of course you can't; because you are watching using your normal visual ability. But if you could see temperatures, even though that man was hiding behind that big tree, you would still see him clearly. The reason lies in the difference between his body temperature and that of the big tree, which was as remarkable as a burning 10,000-year fluorite lamp!"

Zhang Tie understood it at once. He had not imagined that the seeds of fiery-flame red lotus could have such an effect. Therefore,

Zhang Tie burst out laughter.

...

Although what he did to the slaves today didn't lead to any special fruit, Zhang Tie was not too disappointed about that.

Although Zhang Tie didn't gain any fruit of redemption, he gained more than 6000 merit values by setting free slaves, which made him very satisfied.

After eating the latest Leakless Fruit, Zhang Tie left Castle of Black Iron and reappeared in the room of the hotel.

With a night viewing ability, Zhang Tie continued to observe that building through the spyglass throughout the night. He figured out the personnel arrangements of that building in the evening and kept those arrangements in mind to further improve his plan.

...

On the 2nd morning, after accomplishing this travel to Stars Viewing City, Zhang Tie returned to Jinhai City in his Faerie Dragon T9. After staying with his family members for one day in Jinhai City, Zhang Tie wore Fei Yuao's face mask once again and made his final preparations on the plan in Jinhai City in the name of Fei Yuao, which cost him his remaining 2000 gold coins or so.

Later on, Fei Yuao disappeared and Zhang Tie returned to Hidden

Dragon Island to accumulate his strength quietly and wait for the coming massacre and revenge!

Chapter 353: Jinwu Castle

July 3rd, one week after Zhang Tie returned to Hidden Dragon Island and stayed there without arising any trouble...

This day, two amazing events happened for all the clan students in Hidden Dragon Palace.

Firstly, a name Zhang Tie suddenly ranked 1st on the Hidden Dragon Wealth List in Qinyun Palace with 400,000 gold coins. This figure was even double the value of the 2nd place.

When many people in Hidden Dragon Palace were shocked by this news, the second piece of news arrived.

That castle on Yunju Mountain of Hidden Dragon Island finally hung out the banner and logo of its owner at its highest place.

When that castle was under construction, many people in Hidden Dragon Palace thought that was an agency affiliated by Huaiyuan Palace — another important base of Hidden Dragon Palace or Long Wind Business Group on the island.

It was also said that as the Zhang Clan was going to expand the territory of the Zhixing Department, the current Zhixing Department was going to move into that new castle on Yunju Mountain. From then on, the minimal standard for students to enter Hidden Dragon Palace would be above LV 6; those clan elites below LV 6 who entered Hidden Dragon Island would be transferred to that castle on Yunju Mountain.

However, when the banner of the castle of hung out on July 3rd, everybody became dumbfounded as the banner of the castle was nothing to do with Huaiyuan Palace's subordinate agencies at all. Instead, it was a strange 'private banner' which represented the status of its owner.

In Junyun Country which was predominated by Chinese people, there were strict regulations on the styles of banners for various levels of clans, organizations, and individuals. Only national agencies and army could use dragon emblems and patterns.

None of the 4 classical Chinese beasts like green Chinese dragon, white tiger, Rosefinch, and Xuanwu (a species that combines tortoise and snake) were allowed on the banners and logos of feudal princes and local clans in Jinyun Country. Based on Chinese traditions, only emperors who founded the countries or first-class regimes had the right to use the 4 classical Chinese beasts as their banners or logos.

Huaiyuan Palace's banner was Sea and Sky Long Wind Banner.

Besides, there were many other regulations, such as the bottom color of the banners of business groups and societal organizations should not be red or black, because these 2 colors were the bottom colors of the battle flag of the Chinese army. Take another example, besides following the above regulations, private banners that symbolized private territory, interests, and rights should be triangular instead of being square.

That banner rising from the highest place of that castle on Yunju Mountain was triangular and blue, on which there was a strange three-foot bird in a golden sun.

When this triangular banner rose up, its name was exposed under the gate tower — Jinwu Castle!

All the students in Hidden Dragon Palace were shocked as this castle was not a part of Huaiyuan Palace, but a private castle.

Besides the affiliated agencies of Huaiyuan Palace, the only ones that could build house on Hidden Dragon Island were some natives and students of Hidden Dragon Palace. For those natives, even some of them were rich, they could only pay 100,000 gold coins at most. They had no ability to build such a castle at all.

When they knew that the owner of Jinwu Castle was Zhang Tie, a student in Breaking Heavens Department of Hidden Dragon Palace, the Breaking Heavens Department as a whole seemed to go mad. Zhang Tie had broken the record — the first student in Breaking Heavens Department to own a castle on Hidden Dragon Island.

Some curious guys checked the records of the first places on the Hidden Dragon Wealth List and found that before Zhang Tie, the richest student in Hidden Dragon Palace only had 380,000 gold coins, they then became more thrilled. Some careful ones studied Zhang Tie's experience in Hidden Dragon Palace and found that Zhang Tie had created 4 records; instead of 1.

The first student who owned a private castle on Hidden Dragon Island since the founding of Hidden Dragon Palace...

The richest student since the founding of Hidden Dragon Palace...

The student who had formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi in the shortest period since the founding of Hidden Dragon Palace...

The first student who had produced all-purpose medicament since the founding of Hidden Dragon Palace...

In just one day, Zhang Tie had become one of the most famous people in Hidden Dragon Palace as a star student who had produced all-purpose medicament. No matter where it was and which age it was in, any rich people would become attractive, even in Hidden Dragon Palace.

On the same day, when the girls in Zhixing Department were told this news and felt it was unbelievable, they all received Zhang Tie's invitation.

— As my castle is completed, I've prepared some drinks. I now invite you for a party at sunset tomorrow!

— Zhang Tie.

All the girls who'd bet with Zhang Tie had received his invitation, including Guo Miaoli and the other girls who had

already entered Breaking Heavens Department. At the sight of the scrawls on the letters of invitation, all the girls looked pretty weird.

"It's really senior brother Zhang Tie! Only he would send such a letter of invitation..." Liu Shasha sighed as the other girls in Zhixing Department nodded.

"Will we go there then?" a naive girl asked hesitantly.

"Of course we will go there. That guy is narrow-minded. If we don't go there, he might come here to collect our debts!"

The girls then giggled.

"If we get along well with senior brother Zhang Tie, we might be helped by this richest person in the future! If so, we wouldn't have to work so hard to make money!" A girl joked.

"It's said that senior brother doesn't have a girlfriend yet. But this is a good opportunity. If anyone of you have fallen in love with him, you have to seize this chance; otherwise, it might be late!"

"As Yuhan has already given her first kiss to senior brother Zhang Tie, Yuhan should have a try!"

"No way..." Du Yuhan's face slightly blushed, "Forget about that, he was just saving me out of the sea!"

The girls were all joking with Du Yuhan except for Qu Liangying, who was just smiling. Out of a strange yet powerful instinct, Du Yuhan exchanged glances with Qu Liangying. The two girls instantly knew what that meant...

Besides the 12 girls who had bet with Zhang Tie, many others received Zhang Tie's letters of invitation too, including Zhang Tie's good friends in Zhixing Department — Zhang Keliang, Zhang Yunfei, Wei Wu, and Zhang Hongsheng, and Yang Yuankang's group who cooperated with Zhang Tie to sell the all-purpose medicament for the first time, Gu Caidie, Ma Aiyun, who taught Zhang Tie basic movements, Liu Xu, whom Zhang Tie had a drink with, and Zhang Lin, Zhu Wenqiang whom Zhang Tie got acquainted with when he was a yaksha in the sea.

After receiving Zhang Tie's invitation, Zhang Keliang, Zhang Yunfei, Wei Wu, and Zhang Hongsheng all felt warm inside. Due to different courses and tasks between Zhixing Department and Breaking Heavens Department, they'd had fewer chances to meet each other since Zhang Tie entered Breaking Heavens Department, especially after Zhang Tie became famous. After receiving Zhang Tie's invitation, they looked forward to seeing Zhang Tie's familiar and kind face again...

Everything was changing, except for the friendship between them.

When receiving Zhang Tie's invitation, Zhang Lin and Zhu Wenqiang were also very shocked. After watching the letters of invitation for quite a while, they finally accepted the fact—the

junior brother who was working as a yaksha in the sea together with them had been unusual in only a few days.

Zhang Lin and Zhu Wenqiang were not idiots. They both knew the importance to maintain the friendship between them and Zhang Tie.

Anyone who could rank 1st on any Hidden Dragon List had never been an average figure in the history of Huaiyuan Palace unless they died at a young age. Zhang Tie was only 17 years old. Anyone who was farsighted could see that Zhang Tie had a bright future.

They got acquainted with Zhang Tie together with Yang Yuankang. Recently, they were told that Yang Yuankang was living pretty well in Breaking Heavens Department. When they were still struggling for a few clan contribution points and the monthly payment of Breaking Heavens Department, Yang Yuankang had already stabilized his business on Hidden Dragon Island.

Although the relationship between Yang Yuankang and Zhang Tie could not be completely duplicated, this at least indicated that Zhang Tie had already been able to easily influence and decide the destiny and future of people around him.

Zhang Tie was definitely a reliable and powerful friend. He was the so-called good teacher and helpful friend.

Liu Xu, who got acquainted with Zhang Tie through Zhang Su, also had the same feeling. After receiving Zhang Tie's invitation,

Liu Xu felt slightly overwhelmed by the special favor. He had not imagined that Zhang Tie still remembered him at this moment. After all, they only met a few times and had a drink together.

"I wonder how senior brother Zhang Su would feel if he knew that his younger cousin had become a popular person in Hidden Dragon Palace!", a thought flashed across Liu Xu's mind.

...

"Do we need to buy an expensive gift for Zhang Tie?" Compared to others, Yang Yuankang and Zhang Feng became both excited and touched. As they all made money with the support and preferential treatment of Zhang Tie, the moment they received Zhang Tie's invitation, they had gathered together and discussed about visiting Zhang Tie's castle tomorrow.

The more money they made through Zhang Tie, the more important Zhang Tie was in their heart. Therefore, they became more careful about their relationship with Zhang Tie. The one who asked was Yang Yuankang's partner. Soon after he asked, the rest had started to discuss about that, except for Yang Yuankang who was gazing at Zhang Tie's letter of invitation seriously and silently.

Among them, Yang Yuankang was most dignified; therefore, finally they all waited for Yang Yuankang's reply.

"Do you think that Zhang Tie needs our gift?" Yang Yuankang asked. They then exchanged glances with each other and didn't say any more.

"Yuankang, what do you mean?"

"It's just a party between friends. We only need to treat him sincerely. No need to bring any gift at all. Just take yourselves to enjoy supper there. Just take your girlfriends or boyfriends there to visit the first student's castle of Hidden Dragon Palace, if you have one. I will take my girlfriend at least!" Yang Yuankang smiled.

"Erm...is this proper?"

"You will know it later on. Not everybody can enjoy this special treatment. Seize this opportunity to enjoy yourselves; if not, you will regret it!" Yang Yuankang said seriously.

After thinking about Yang Yuankang's words carefully, they all felt they was reasonable.

...

Lan Yunxi who lived in Phoenix Resting Pavilion also received a letter of invitation. Previously, she was executing a clan task away from the island; when she came back to Hidden Dragon Island, it was already June 28th.

Not until she returned did Lan Yunxi know what Zhang Tie had experienced during the period when she had been away.

Lan Yunxi knew that a LV 9 powerhouse assigned by Long Wind Business Group to protect an important figure betrayed Long Wind Business Group and Huaiyuan Palace while cooperating with an unknown power was nothing different than a terrifying earthquake in Long Wind Business Group and Huaiyuan Palace. It contained too much horrible information.

What was the background of Liu Xiang? Was he a mole assigned by another power before he joined Long Wind Business Group? Was there someone else like Liu Xiang in Long Wind Business Group and Huaiyuan Palace? Was it a coincidence or a planned arrangement to dispatch Liu Xiang to protect Zhang Tie? Wasn't it a shame for Huaiyuan Palace to let someone assassinate its student on Hidden Dragon Island? Additionally, how was the confidential message that Zhang Tie could realize large-mass production of all-purpose medicament leaked?

Each of the above questions was fatal. Lan Yunxi became really worried about that.

At the beginning, someone in Long Wind Business Group still doubted Zhang Tie's testimony that Liu Xiang betrayed Long Wind Business Group and assassinated Zhang Tie. After all, Zhang Tie was the only witness. Now, Liu Xiang had died and Zhang Tie could only provide simple evidence. In some people's eyes, these pieces of evidence were not persuasive enough.

When Long Wind Business Group started to survey Liu Xiang's background, some key figures who introduced Liu Xiang in the Business Group committed a suicide one after another. After this clue was cut off, those who doubted Zhang Tie's testimony finally

shut up.

Now, even idiots would know that Liu Xiang was not innocent. However, what was more terrifying was that Long Wind Business Group didn't know how seriously it had been infiltrated by other powers.

The Seniors Association of Huaiyuan Palace became furious while Zhang Taibai, Lan Yunxi's uncle, had been asked to accept the inquiry of Seniors Association.

At this moment, although outsiders thought Yiyang City and Huaiyuan Palace were as safe and sound as before, the sky had been covered with black clouds and a terrifying and destructive rainstorm was brewing.

However, the one who aroused this storm still asked his friends for a party in his new nest.

The moment she remembered Zhang Tie's roguish look, Lan Yunxi was be driven mad.

Chapter 354: Secret Tunnel

"Peh... peh..."

As the inside of the tunnel had not been smoothed, some areas jutted out from the edges. When Zhang Tie passed one such place, his head against the jut on the ceiling; as a result, some sandy soil dropped off, making Zhang Tie's head dirty all over. Some of the soil even entered Zhang Tie's mouth; therefore, Zhang Tie hurriedly spat it out.

Steel shovel and spade in hand, Zhang Tie moved to the end of this narrow tunnel where he had reached yesterday. With one leg half-knelt down on the ground, he then pulled down his goggles and slightly inserted his steel shovel into the hard and thick soil. As a result, a lot of earth and sand were dug out.

With his great, mammoth strength, in just a few minutes, Zhang Tie had already dug out a great amount of earth and sand and pushed another meter forward.

Seeing too much earth and sand being piled in the secret tunnel, Zhang Tie put down his steel shovel; he then held a steel spade whose handle had been cut short. With one spade, he had lifted over 10 kg of earth and sand; Zhang Tie then focused his spiritual energy on them and instantly moved them into the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron...

Zhang Tie then kept digging and removing the waste like this...

After several days' work, Zhang Tie had become very familiar with this series of movements. The earth and sand blocking the secret tunnel were soon moved away, by something akin to magic, and became the basic energy storage of Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie then moved another meter forward. After that, he switched his spade for the shovel and kept digging like a groundhog.

With the support of Zhang Tie's terrifying, mammoth strength and physique, and the Pool of Chaos in Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie dealt with the sand and earth very easily. Therefore, Zhang Tie's efficiency was very high — it only took him a couple of minutes to push one or two meters forward.

Although it was pitch dark in the secret tunnel, this was not a problem for Zhang Tie at all because he had night viewing ability.

Several hours later, Zhang Tie stopped working. He leaned his ears against the wall of the tunnel as he heard the clear sound of running water from the other side of the tunnel. Zhang Tie was so thrilled that he kept digging faster.

10 minutes later, with a sound of crash, a lot of sand and earth collapsed. At the same time, Zhang Tie drilled out of his secret tunnel and appeared in a karst cave of a subterranean river in the hinterland of Yunju Mountain.

This karst cave only covered several ten thousand square meters and was just over 10 meters in height. The inside of the cave was

twisted with various odd-looking stalactites and limestones. A five to six meter wide subterranean river bubbled through the cave.

In most cases, humans' fears originated from the unknown. Darkness was one such unknown. If one could see clearly his surroundings, one's fear would be greatly reduced.

Zhang Tie was such a case. If he didn't have the night viewing ability, he might be a bit scared in such a strange environment; however, after clearly seeing the karst cave and the subterranean river, Zhang Tie became relaxed at once.

"It seems that Liu Gong didn't lie to me. According to their geological survey, there's a huge enclosed karst cave and a subterranean river leading to the Flying Swallow Lake!" Zhang Tie mumbled.

After briefly checking this underground karst cave, Zhang Tie found it was really an enclosed space in the hinterland of a mountain. Besides the secret tunnel that he had dug, Zhang Tie didn't find any other access to this karst cave; therefore, Zhang Tie became completely reassured.

After checking this karst cave in the hinterland of Yunju Mountain, Zhang Tie investigated that subterranean river, which was only three to four meters deep. After coursing through the karst cave for a distance, it entered the hinterland of the mountain.

From his brief check of the karst cave and the subterranean river,

Zhang Tie estimated where he was and the position of Flying Swallow Lake in the outside; thus, he dove into the subterranean river without any hesitation.

The river was very crystal. With the help of his night viewing ability, Zhang Tie could still see clearly under water. Zhang Tie had a very sharp sense of the water flow; additionally, he could swim super fast and breath without any limit under water. Therefore, he had no fear when he jumped into the subterranean river.

If it was another person, even it was a powerhouse who was ten times more powerful than Zhang Tie and had good swimming skills, he wouldn't just jump into the subterranean river, because he didn't know the flowing direction and environment of the subterranean river.

What if you found that this subterranean river lasted over 1,000 km like a water pipe when you jumped in and had no chance to get out for a breath?

Although you felt the water here flew slowly and indicated no danger at all, what if, after swimming several thousand kilometers, you suddenly found this subterranean river led to a terrifying waterfall which cascaded into an abyss? What if there were subterranean whirlpools with horrible power capable of drowning you? Each of the above situations could easily kill a person.

Therefore, almost nobody dared to swim in subterranean rivers casually, even though they might have such incredible swimming skills that they could take ocean as their own swimming pool.

Compared to the ocean, the dangers in this subterranean river were unpredictable.

After swimming for a while in the subterranean river, Zhang Tie found the way in front divided into two. One seemed leading to Flying Swallow Lake while the other seemed leading to White Dragon Town.

Zhang Tie chose the way leading to Flying Swallow Lake. It was only a distance of 500 to 600 meters from there to Flying Swallow Lake. The waterway in front became increasingly narrower from five or six meters to two or three meters wide, resulting in the water's rate of flow also slowing down. The narrowest place was less than one meter in width as it was between two huge rocks; thankfully, Zhang Tie finally swam across there.

With a bright light, Zhang Tie raised his head and found that he had already left the subterranean river. Over twenty meters above him was the surface of Flying Swallowing Lake. The connection between the Subterranean River and the Flying Swallow Lake was at the bottom of the lake on the side closest to Yunju Mountain, which was even and water flow slowly out, so it wouldn't be noticed easily.

The bottom of Flying Swallow Lake was covered with verdant water weeds and stones. The connecting tunnel between the subterranean river and the Flying Swallow Lake was hidden amongst the water weeds and stones. Unless someone especially waited by the cave, nobody would notice someone swimming out of it.

A shoal of finger-long fish swam across the water weeds while the water level of the lake was glistening like jumping golden flames. Zhang Tie, who suddenly moved his head out of the water weeds scared those little fish away at once. Zhang Tie then observed the water level for a while and found a ship floating 300 meters away from him.

Looking up from the bottom, Zhang Tie could see clearly the arched belly of the ship.

It was not the right moment to expose himself by getting out of the water. After figuring out the surrounding environment, Zhang Tie made a turn like a fish and flowed back into that tunnel at the bottom of Flying Swallow Lake. When he reached that cross 500-600 m away in the upper reach, Zhang Tie thought for a while before swimming along the waterway towards White Dragon Town.

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie exposed his head out of a shiny water level. After taking two mouthfuls of fresh air, Zhang Tie raised his head and looked up as he felt the entrance of the cave was a bit weird; at that moment, a pitch-black object fell down; thankfully, Zhang Tie jumped away swiftly; otherwise, his head would have been crushed by it.

After being scared a lot, Zhang Tie watched that object carefully and found it was a bucket; Zhang Tie immediately knew where he was.

"Wanfu, you asshole, are you napping there again? Have you prepared the water in the water vat in the back garden? Xiaohe and

the other servant girls are still waiting for it. Lord's flowers need to be watered in both the morning and evening; if they were not watered on time because of you, I will break your legs. You b*stard..." A domineering voice came from above.

"Haha, Steward Zhao, how could I dare sleep here? Look, I'm drawing water from the well!" With the flattery voice, that wooden bucket then tilted and sank in the water; In a few seconds, it had been filled with water and was drawn out of the well.

"Don't think that I've not seen that. Obviously, you started to move when you saw me. You were obviously indolent in duty. I will dock half of your pay for this month!" With that icy condemnation, Steward Zhao got closer to the well.

"No, Steward Zhao, if that happens, I will be in a poor mood. Then, I will drink a lot to ease my sorrow; if so, I would hardly be able keep what I saw in the evening a few days ago a secret!"

"What do you mean?"

Wanfu then lowered his voice and became mysterious.

"As I drank too much, I went to the toilet in the night before last. However, because I was drunk and it was very dark then, I could not find the toilet; therefore, I went to the rockery in the back garden to have a pee; coincidentally, I caught sight of you and Xiaohong, the servant of madam in the mountain cave, heh...heh...Steward Zhao really had a good physique!"

"Hmm... hmm..." Steward Zhao started to cough ferociously, "Wanfu, you are too honest and diligent. How can you be left to finish so much work in the Mansion alone? Just fill the water vat in the back garden today; take a rest tomorrow. I will add 5 silver coins for you monthly compensation from then on. Don't be loaf on the job. Lord will definitely reward your hard work!"

"Thanks, Steward Zhao!"

...

Hearing that conversation, Zhang Tie swore inside as he dove into the water once again.

...

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie arrived back in the mountain cave in the hinterland of Yunju Mountain. Although nobody else would come here, Zhang Tie still covered this cave with some water weeds and a huge stone before going back to a hidden room along that secret tunnel.

This hidden room was a bit similar to that one left by Donder in Blackhot City. It covered more than 200 square meters and was connected to the upside through stairs. Additionally, there were some 10,000-year flourite lamps and some simple daily products in the hidden room. This place was used for Zhang Tie to enter meditation and cultivate his fighting skills in Jinwu Castle.

After climbing out of the secret tunnel, Zhang Tie easily moved the over 300 kilogram slab of bluestone back to its original position. He then placed a desk on the stone floor. In this way, nobody else could identify that secret tunnel at all.

There was another secret tunnel in the castle which was connected to Zhang Tie's bedroom and study room, through which, Zhang Tie could silently leave Jinwu Castle and arrived at the place close to the airship port.

That secret tunnel was built by Long Wind Business Group for Zhang Tie; however, after Liu Xiang's betrayal, Zhang Tie understood it clearly that the secret tunnel to the airport had become useless to him.

Any secret known by two people was not a secret anymore. What was more, more than two people knew of the existence of that secret tunnel such as those who attended the designing of the castle's blueprints and the construction of the secret tunnel. Therefore, those who wanted to screw over Zhang Tie must have already known about its existence.

Perhaps, at this moment, someone on Hidden Dragon Island was watching that secret tunnel through a telescope.

Of course, Zhang Tie would not make plans or keep secrets on the basis of a secret tunnel which had been exposed. Therefore, ever since he came back to Huaiyuan Palace, Zhang Tie had remained in his secret room under the guise of meditating and cultivating fighting skills for a long period of time every day; actually, in this period, Zhang Tie had silently broken through a secret tunnel

based on the information that he had received which nobody else knew except for him.

At the beginning, that engineer who was responsible for building Jinwu castle only casually mentioned the geological structure of Yunju Mountain to Zhang Tie; however, he would not have imagined that Zhang Tie had kept his words in mind and truly dug out a secret tunnel leading to the hinterland of Yunju Mountain and found a path in the subterranean river to leave this castle secretly.

Perhaps, even that engineer could not remember that he had mentioned this to Zhang Tie at this moment. After all, a person spoke a lot every day, especially in casual conversations. Nobody could remember each sentence that they had said.

Zhang Tie felt good. After circling around the hidden room and placing everything back in its original position, Zhang Tie glanced at his watch and decided to leave; at this moment, he lowered his head and found he was a bit embarrassed; therefore, he directly entered Castle of Black Iron. After changing into a set of clean clothes in Castle of Black Iron, he checked his appearance in a mirror and returned to the hidden room.

Given Zhang Tie's current look, nobody would think that he was digging hole like a groundhog these days.

'I will take a chance to investigate the situation of that household in White Dragon Town. If possible, I will buy their house under another name. That way, it would be more convenient for me to leave my castle and it would be harder for others to figure out my

trace. Damn! Smart rabbits always have three holes. I'm smarter than a rabbit!'

Thinking that, Zhang Tie had walked upside through the stairs. After passing through a 10 meter long passageway, Zhang Tie opened the alloy-made cypher lock of the hidden room before walked out of the hidden room.

...

A few minutes after Zhang Tie left the hidden room, some guys whom Zhang Tie had invited for a party had already arrived outside Jinwu Castle in advance.

"Wei Wu, are we here a bit early? Zhang Tie said to get here after the sunset. But it's still one hour away from sunset..." Walking on the mountain path of Yunju Mountain, Zhang Hongsheng raised his head and looked at that sun which was only a bit in the west and lowered his voice, "Isn't it a bit embarrassing if we arrive there too early?"

"Never mind, it would be embarrassing if we are there too late!" Wei Wu waved his hand manly, "We are Zhang Tie's earliest brothers and friends in Hidden Dragon Palace, of course we need to be there earlier. We can help him prepare for the party. I was told that Zhang Tie has invited twenty to thirty people in total. We are celebrating him moving into a new home; therefore, we need to be there a bit earlier!"

"There should be some others in the castle, he doesn't need our

help at all. I'm curious about Jinwu Castle; if we can be there a bit earlier, we can have a nosy around his castle; if we are late, Zhang Tie will be too busy to take care of us!" Zhang Yunfei smiled.

After half a year's cultivation in Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Yunfei who was delicate before had grown taller, darker, and healthier with a pair of spirited eyes. He was totally different from that person half year ago. Besides Zhang Yunfei, Wei Wu and Zhang Hongsheng also changed greatly. They would soon ignite the 8th surging point on their spine and officially became LV 6 fighters.

Hearing these words, Zhang Keiliang who always behaved like an elder brother only replied with a smile. He then raised his head and looked at the magnificent Jinwu Castle at the end of the mountain path.

In this age, every man would like to have his own castle. To have one's own castle meant the beginning of having one's own clan. Zhang Keliang had not mentioned his dream to others, which was to found his own clan and have such a castle one day.

He was not jealous about Zhang Tie's achievement; instead, he took it as a stimulant. He was proud of having Zhang Tie as his friend as he could gain a powerful, positive energy from Zhang Tie.

'I can make it one day too!' Zhang Keliang mumbled.

After being decorated, the exterior wall of Jinwu Castle was not that ugly grey concrete wall anymore; instead, it had been covered

with a special clouding granite which was a specialty of Yunju Mountain. In this way, the exterior wall became more defensive; besides, it was much more beautiful than before.

Additionally, the style of Jinwu Castle was also very unique. Compared to those classical castles which looked square, this castle featured more flexible and personalized elements.

Therefore, Jinwu Castle became the most beautiful castle on Hidden Dragon Island.

Although they had seen castles many times in Hidden Dragon Island, when they arrived at the foot of Jinwu Castle, they were really shocked by the high exterior wall of the castle and the flying eaves at the top of the bartizans which looked like they were burning in the sunshine. Gazing at it all, the group could only stand there with jaws on the ground.

On the walls, bartizans and steam-driven battery platforms, some tall Spirits Soldiers in wholly steel armor were standing guard with long spears, which made the castle more magnificent and solemn.

Outside the castle gate, 2 rows of tall Spirits soldiers were standing on both sides of the suspension bridge.

Although Jinwu Castle had just been completed, it was already established to a certain degree.

The moment Wei Wu's group moved close to the front gate of the

castle, a tall Spirits soldier in a full body armor with a long sword on his waist had already walked up to them.

"Excuse me, are you here for the party tonight?"

"Yes, we are!" Zhang Yunfei answered.

"I'm Lenox, the team leader of security guards of Jinwu Castle, may I have a look at your letters of invitation?"

When they were going to present their letters of invitation, a voice sounded behind Lenox.

"No need, Lenox, they are my friends!" With a big smile, Zhang Tie had already raced up from inside the gate of the castle.

The moment they caught sight of Zhang Tie, they all smiled while some Spirits guards outside the gate instantly stood at attention with their long spears.

Wei Wu, Zhang Keliang, and the other 2 people then punched Zhang Tie's shoulders with smile. Zhang Tie punched them back too like how they greeted with each other before; they then burst out laughing.

"Brat, you're rich now. You are the first one to have a castle in Hidden Dragon Palace. If not for your letter of invitation, I would never have believed that you could've become so rich in only half a year!" saying this, Weiwu punched Zhang Tie once again.

"Haha. God helped me develop all-purpose medicament; don't be jealous!" Zhang Tie still talked with them in the same way like before.

"All-purpose medicament is too poor in quality, I will develop something far superior when I become an alchemist" Zhang Hongsheng said loudly. After that, he even threw a contemptuous glance at Zhang Tie.

"Forget about that! Even if you become a golden-robe alchemist one day, you still won't be as rich as me!" Zhang Tie also pretended to glance at Zhang Hongsheng contemptuously. "I'm not even a herbal apprentice now, so what?"

Seeing this, everybody smiled once again. Although Zhang Tie lived in his own castle now, he was still that guy who picked navy-blue iron ores together with them.

"Are you going out?" Zhang Yunfei asked Zhang Tie.

"No, I saw you from the wall just now. Therefore, I'm here to welcome you guys. How about having a look at my Jinwu Castle before the party?"

"Please!" Zhang Keliang answered at once.

Zhang Tie then guided them in Jinwu Castle and showed them around it.

To be honest, Zhang Tie really was proud of having a castle at such a young age, even though he tried his best to be modest. At the moment, Zhang Tie found that his dream - to lie on gold coins with the accompany of a lot of beauties - had already come true so early.

Even the buildings closest to the walls of the barbican could easily hold 1800 soldiers or other people and would be very spacious to hold 600-700 people; however, only 100 Spirits soldiers were stationed in the barbican of Jinwu Castle; therefore, it looked extremely spacious here. Except for those rooms already being utilized, there were still over 300 empty rooms in different sizes.

There was a circular, broad street, a small fountain square for the performance of fighting skills and a garden between the barbican and the internal castle. The street, the fountain square and the garden were even interlinked with some winding corridors and half-overlay alleys and delicate lanes. On two sides of these alleys and lanes, there were many relatively lower buildings which were as high as 4 floors, namely lower than twenty meters.

These buildings were built in an extremely tidy and delicate way. At the sight of them, Zhang Yunfei and the other three guys remembered those shops on both sides of the business street in their own hometowns.

"What are these rooms for?" Zhang Hongsheng asked out of curiosity, "They look like stores."

"Yes, they are going to be stores. In the future, they could be public houses, hotels, or various workshops. It would be very wasteful if such a huge castle only held a few people!"

"Are you going to open some areas of Jinwu Castle to the public for commercial purpose?" Zhang Yunfei realized at once.

Zhang Tie smiled, "Why not? As Hidden Dragon Island is becoming more and more populated, the land available in the towns surrounding Dragon Cave are in short supply. I've made an investigation that in the coming years, more than 100,000 square meters of housing area need to increase every year so as to meet various commercial and service demands. Now that, why not take advantage of my current resources? This would bring me money and make Hidden Dragon Island more populated and energetic. My target is to make Jinwu Castle into a small city on Hidden Dragon Island!"

"Alas, it seems that Zhang Tie's opinion is feasible. This place is close to White Dragon Town and not far from Dragon Cave; however, it is much more tranquil than those towns surrounding Dragon Cave. Not everyone who comes to Hidden Dragon Island likes the noisy environment in the towns; if this place was really opened to the public for commercial purpose, I think it could work!" Zhang [Hongsheng](#) shouted, "Many senior brothers in Breaking Heavens Department of Hidden Dragon Palace are also opening stores and hotels to make money. Why not here?"

Wei Wu then rubbed his jaw with his hand like an experienced man as he looked at the tidy, elegant and ambient environment on both sides of the street, "How about Jinwu Commercial Area or

Jinwu Pedestrian Street? These two names sound great. Oh, are you going to sell or rent them?"

"Rent, of course!" Zhang Tie smiled. "Are you kidding me? If I want to have the most authority in Jinwu Castle, of course, I will not sell this land. If I just rent them, I will still have the right to decide their use. I don't need to find trouble for myself."

After looking around carefully, Zhang Keliang's heart started to race. Actually, not only Zhang Keliang, even Wei Wu and the other two guys had considered the source of the monthly payment in Breaking Heavens Department in the future.

Although there were many ways to make money on Hidden Dragon Island, such as making medicament and various tools, exploring and undertaking tasks with high risks and high profits; the fastest and most stable way to make money was actually the popular business route, namely, opening stores to serve people on the island.

As long as you were not too stupid, if you opened a store on Hidden Dragon Island, you could always make money. The constant flow of people on Hidden Dragon Island was the biggest assurance for your income. Therefore, the price of land and stores in the towns were also very expensive. For Wei Wu, Zhang Keliang, Zhang Yunfei, and Zhang Hongsheng, they had to struggle for a long time to buy a store on Hidden Dragon Island; however, the shortcut was right in front of them.

Receiving no response, Zhang Tie noticed their hesitated and embarrassed looks and laughed, "All right, no crap; just take where

you want, one room for each, you can do your own business respectively or cooperatively. It depends on you. Free rent for the first two years. How about it?"

Wei Wu uttered a weird sound as he instantly hugged Zhang Tie and intended to kiss Zhang Tie's face, which really frightened Zhang Tie a lot.

"F*ck, what do you want? I'm not interested in men!" Zhang Tie directly responded with a shoulder throw.

"If not this, how else can I express my excitement and pleasure?!"

"If you dare to kiss me, I will let the hundred Spirits soldiers in the Castle express their excitement and pleasure to you in the same way!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Wei Wu was so scared that he hurriedly jumped away from Zhang Tie.

Zhang Keiang, Zhang Hongsheng, and Zhang Yunfei all burst out laughing loudly.

In the internal castle, they visited the production area of all-purpose medicament, which was going to be the core area of internal castle. Watching the 1000-odd huge terrines in the stratified warehouses and those rooms that had been isolated for cleaning, mincing, mixing and canning fruits and the whole set of processing tools in the rooms, they were really stunned.

"My goddess! Are you making all-purpose medicament or pickled vegetables?" Zhang Hongsheng exclaimed.

"Almost like that. All-purpose medicament is just a super enzyme. Some processing procedures are same to that of common enzymes!" Zhang Tie explained. No matter what, he could not keep this a secret from them; for some people, they might have already known about this. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't plan to keep this as a secret from his friends.

Realizing the importance of this place, Zhang Keliang, Zhang Hongsheng, Zhang Yunfei, and Wei Wu didn't say anything, yet they were all moved inside as they knew that Zhang Tie took them as bosom buddies.

In the internal castle of Jinwu Castle, besides visiting the production area of all-purpose medicament, they also looked around Zhang Tie's bedroom. Compared to the former bedroom where Zhang Tie lived in Zhixing Department, this bedroom had been more than 200 square meters, excluding the balcony. This was really awe-inspiring. In Zhang Tie's words, there were too many empty rooms in internal castle, including more than 30 guest rooms; therefore, he chose the biggest one as the master bedroom.

During their visit, they also saw those women inside the internal castle, who were those slaves that Zhang Tie had bought. At this moment, they had put on new clothes which were essential for female servants in castle.

When choosing their costumes, Zhang Tie suddenly recalled Hanna; therefore, he let all the female servants put on costumes like how the local women would wear on beer festival in Blapei. The only difference was that the colors of their costumes were predominated by black and white.

— High-heeled leather shoes, foot-reaching skirt, corset, apron, opening collar with delicate lace and tidy puff sleeve.

Those female servants all thought that with this costume, they could work easily; meanwhile, they could also show their elegant figures; therefore, they were very happy.

For Zhang Tie, whenever he saw them in this costume, he would feel relaxed like going back to Blapei. The costumes truly made him feel warm inside.

However, after knowing that there were over fifty female servants in the internal castle in usual time, those guys' expressions completely changed. After exchanging glances with each other, they swore at Zhang Tie in unison.

"Beast!"

Zhang Tie then burst out laughing loudly...

"Oh, where are those junior sisters from Zhixing Department? Have you seen them on the way here?"

"You don't know that? For such a invitation, if they don't spend one or two hours preparing, they won't come here. Some girls have long gone to White Dragon Town to dress their hair in the early morning!"

...

An hour after Wei Wu arrived at Jinwu Castle, the girls from Zhixing Department and Breaking Heavens Department finally arrived, at the sight of them, Zhang Tie was really shocked by their incredible looks.

All of them had gotten ready carefully as each of them was beautiful and enchanting. At the sight of them, Zhang Tie revealed a sorrow look while saying, "

"You all look like fairies, are you trying to murder me by your incredible looks?!"

"Peh, liar!" Hearing Zhang Tie's words, even Guo Miaolu's face slightly blushed because of being bashful or joy, 'Although Zhang Tie was always nasty most of the time, he could really amuse girls.'

Seeing Qu Liangying pulling Gu Caidie's hands intimately and enjoying their talk, Zhang Tie touched his head, "Are you sparing two single men..."

"Caidie is my senior sister!"

"Liangying is my junior sister!"

The two girls smiled as they answered and showed the white of their eyes to Zhang Tie.

"Heh...heh...welcome to my Jinwu Castle for guidance, it's my great honor to have you here..."

Zhang Tie then made a 'welcome' gesture at the gate of the castle.

Those girls then walked in the castle with smiles on faces. At the end of the line, Liu Shasha even threw a glance at Zhang Tie when she passed him. At the same time, Zhang Tie also glanced at her and gazed at her little mouth with an obscure smile. As a result, Liu Shasha was so scared that she instantly hid behind Du Yuhan.

Zhang Tie burst out laughing loudly...

...

Soon after these girls arrived, Yang Yuankang, Zhang Lin, Zhu Wenqiang and Liu Xu also arrived while Yang Yuankang and Liu Xu even brought along their girlfriends.

Yang Yuankang's girlfriend was Zhang Zao while Liu Xu's girlfriend was Yang Meiling. They were both students of Hidden Dragon Palace.

...

Zhang Tie chose to start their party on a rooftop of the internal castle. There was a swimming pool, a small garden and a room which covered more than 300 square meters. This place was used for entertainment; therefore, it was more cozy than comfortable.

Zhang Tie provided them with a buffet, a seafood barbecue and limitless drinks. Although they were all acting a bit reserved, when they arrived at the rooftop and noticed the arrangements, they all cheered up, especially girls. Before Zhang Tie said anything, they've already ran away towards the buffet table and the grill.

As they were almost of the same age and came from Hidden Dragon Palace, they had too many things to share. A short while later, after becoming more familiar with each other, they had already begun to get along well with each other and the rooftop had been overwhelmed with cheers from everyone, the laughter of girls, and exclamations from boys...

...

An hour later, it was already totally dark outside. Starting from Wei Wu, who competed to drink the most alcohol with Guo Miaolu and threw up into the swimming pool by some boys, everybody in the party became crazy...

Seeing that all of his friends on Hidden Dragon Island was there except for Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie felt a bit regretful and sorrowful.

"What the hell is love? It makes me want to die. You motherf*cker! I can't stand it anymore!" Zhang Tie shouted loudly while shaking his head. After that, he took a bottle of liquor and downed it; then, he took another one. After a crude cut through the lid, he sent the lid of the bottle in the air. He then yelled towards those male animals who were still competing with alcohol and showing their muscles, "This alcohol emperor, Zhang Tie, is going to kill people tonight, who'd like to fight me..."

Hearing this, a number of animals charged at him with roars...

However, the boys didn't know that Zhang Tie didn't mean that he was going to compete drinking alcohol with them...

Hongsheng (洪声) means loud voice...

Chapter 355: Wolf and Eagle in the Sea

The party on the rooftop lasted for more than four hours, during which period, some boys were drunk, even many girls were intoxicated as their faces looked rosier than usual.

When they were completely indulged in, Zhang Tie took off his upper garment and shouted towards those girls from Zhixing Department, "Girls, here's your creditor, big sale from your senior brother; with one kiss, your debt would be cleared; now or never!"

The moment Zhang Tie finished, Guo Miaolu whose face had totally blushed due to drink rushed over and rapidly hugged Zhang Tie's head, with a sound of "Bo...", she forcefully kissed Zhang Tie's face...

At the sight of that, the other girls all shrieked. A great number of girls then rushed towards him. With a series of sound "Bo...", Zhang Tie's face had been marked with more than 10 red lips.

As soon as the debts were cleared, Zhang Tie was instantly thrown into the swimming pool by those girls, causing a high splash. The moment he fell into the swimming pool, Zhang Tie instantly woke.

The water in the swimming pool was maintained at about 36 degrees Celsius through a steam heat circulation system; therefore, it felt pretty comfortable inside. As the depth of the water was even less than two meters, with a slight movement of his hands, Zhang Tie had already floated back to the water level. He then

stared at those girls who were staggering back and forth due to their laughter.

"Damn, who dared to throw me into the water? You'd better not get caught by me, otherwise, I will force you to be my wife!" Zhang Tie pretended to be vicious as he splashed water towards those girls beside the swimming pool. After that, he charged at them ferociously.

Seeing this, those girls shrieked as they escaped in all directions. Many girls' skirts were even splashed wet.

Zhang Tie burst out laughing as he climbed on the land. At this moment, Zhang Tie found that most of them were completely drunk.

Wei Wu and Zhang Yunfei were lying on the grass, continuously vomiting. Among the boys, besides Yang Yuankang and Liu Xu who brought their girlfriends along, everybody else was drunk out of their minds.

It was similar with girls. Among those girls, the ones who were drunk first were Zhang Tie's generous senior sisters Ma Aiyun and Yuan Ziyi. They were straightforward; if not, they would not have dared to find Zhang Tie trouble in the training field of basic movements. When they started to compete by drinking alcohol, most of the boys could not defeat them at all. Zhang Feng and Zhang Keliang were the typical examples who were lying below the table.

"It's... it's the happiest day since I came to Hidden Dragon Island. Senior brother...come on...let's have another cup!" Li Yurou, a junior sister from Zhixing Department staggered in front of Zhang Tie. Soon after she finished saying this, she fell into the swimming pool. Seeing this, Zhang Tie hurriedly carried her out of there and summoned some female servants to take her into a bedroom.

As the master of this castle, of course, Zhang Tie should not just leave or become drunk. He told those female servants to take anyone drunk into a bedroom for a rest. He estimated that they would've recovered by the next day. No matter what, he had dozens of guest rooms which were enough to hold them.

Of course, the boys' bedrooms and girls' bedrooms were isolated. Those girls slept together in connected suites; each suite could hold a few girls. In this way, it would be easy for those girls to look after each other in case of any emergencies.

For Yang Yuankang and Liu Xu, Zhang Tie threw a key to each of them. He would not care whether they would sleep alone or with their girlfriends. Zhang Tie knew that Zhang Zao and Yang Meiling were not drunk, either. They were free to make the choice.

Zhang Tie then saw Yang Yuankang and Liu Xu leave the rooftop with their girlfriends; however, he had not imagined that they went back to the rooftop in only a few minutes.

"What happened?" Zhang Tie asked.

"I was chased out!" Yang Yuankang touched his nose and said in

an embarrassed way.

"Meiling said you are not a good person!" Liu Xu shrugged towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie then burst out laughing before he summoned a female servant to take Yang Yuankang and Liu Xu to their own bedrooms.

Gradually, people started to leave the rooftop. They came and left happily and felt pretty cool about this party.

Zhang Tie was the last one remaining on the rooftop.

In the cold breeze, Zhang Tie watched the tranquil rooftop and the stars all over the sky as he took a deep breath.

When Zhang Tie wanted to turn back and leave, he saw a girl in red skirt — Lan Yunxi was standing there.

"I thought you wouldn't come!" Zhang Tie walked towards Lan Yunxi with a big smile.

"If I was here too early, how would you've cleared the debts of your junior sisters?" Lan Yunxi showed the white of her eyes towards Zhang Tie. Soon after she moodily said that, not only Zhang Tie became slightly stunned, even Lan Yunxi paused for a moment. 'Am I jealous about those girls?'

Zhang Tie moved closer to her with a smile, "You miss me, right? If not, you wouldn't have come and you wouldn't feel jealous about those girls!"

Seeing Zhang Tie's gleaming eyes drawing closer to her, Lan Yunxi became nervous again. Actually she didn't want to be here; however, she eventually came here.

"Stop..."Lan Yunxi shrieked out of tension as she moved two steps back.

However, Zhang Tie kept walking forward like having not heard her words at all. He instantly grabbed Lan Yunxi's hands. Lan Yunxi struggled for a while, yet she failed to get out of Zhang Tie's grip. She then bit her lips and glared at Zhang Tie, "Let me go, you b*stard!"

"You like me, right?" Zhang Tie asked Lan Yunxi with gleaming eyes.

"How come?" Lan Yunxi's face slightly blushed.

"Let's take a test!"

"What test...hmm..."

Zhang Tie then instantly hugged Lan Yunxi tightly and kissed her lips. He started to suck forcefully. In a split second, Lan Yunxi's lips were broken through by Zhang Tie's tongue. Zhang Tie opened

her purely white teeth with his tongue and mingled with her fragrant tongue at once...

Since he pressed this girl under his body at the beginning, Zhang Tie had known that this girl was hot inside although looking cold. She looked like an icy tall mountain yet her inside was like a volcano which was going to erupt. Perhaps, the daily environment and those people that she had contact with in daily life made her a bit depressive. She could not easily express her desire for love and to be conquered by a man; actually she wasn't different from the other girls. In some aspects, she even had stronger desire and demand; the more she was depressive, the stronger the desire would be.

Those girls of Rose Association told Zhang Tie a rule — women were only women; they were neither goddesses nor sluts. They could be goddesses in someone's eyes or sluts in someone else's eyes, vice versa.

The moment he caught sight of Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie's heart had started to burn. He knew why Lan Yunxi was here. She was here to be conquered, physically or spiritually, nothing else.

Soon after Zhang Tie put his tongue into Lan Yunxi's mouth, he had felt a pain on his tongue as it was bit by Lan Yunxi. She wanted to protest in this way as she didn't want to be defeated so fast by Zhang Tie.

When Lan Yunxi bit Zhang Tie's tongue, they gazed at each other face to face, lips on lips, eyes to eyes. They could sense the heat from the other's breath.

Lan Yunxi tried to move her head away, yet she failed as Zhang Tie was pressing her head and neck with his left hand; at the sight of the fury and shame in Lan Yunxi's eyes and sensing the growing biting strength from her teeth, Zhang Tie felt salty from his tongue; he then knew that his tongue was bleeding...

Lan Yunxi knew it too. Under the firm gaze of Zhang Tie, Lan Yunxi only resisted for a few seconds. Then, her eyes became tender as she slowly loosened her bite and kept her eyes closed. Zhang Tie didn't do it excessively as he only kissed Lan Yunxi for a minute before left her lips.

Lan Yunxi opened her eyes and stared at Zhang Tie with a blurred and complicated look. Zhang Tie stared at her too. The two people just stared at each other without saying anything.

"Those who assassinated you in Dragon Cave have deep-rooted power. Huaiyuan Palace is not as safe as it looks. You should take care of yourself!" Lan Yunxi opened her mouth first. Then, she jumped onto to the wall of the internal castle like a red cloud to evade from the hand that Zhang Tie stretched out towards her.

Zhang Tie watched Lan Yunxi with a bit regret like watching a cloud in the skyline. He was gripping this cloud just now, however, it had floated away in a blink of eye.

"Has Huaiyuan Palace found any clues?"

"Not yet, but the Seniors Association of Huaiyuan Palace doubted

that those people were related to demons. They might be demons' pieces in human race. They were stirring up troubles on continents!"

'Demons?' This answer really shocked Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie had considered the possibility of it being like that. So, he just furrowed his brows.

Seeing Zhang Tie's considerate look, Lan Yunxi didn't say anything; instead, she drew out a notebook from her sleeve and threw it to Zhang Tie.

"What's this?"

"It's the defensive loopholes of Jinwu Castle. Your slaves are too weak and they don't have any experience in guarding and patrolling castle. There are many problems with guarding and patrolling. You've not fully exerted the function of the defensive facilities of the castle yet; in many powerhouses' eyes, your castle is no different from an empty one!"

Holding that volume, Zhang Tie felt warm inside. He knew that Lan Yunxi must have been here last night.

"How about accompanying me tonight?" Zhang Tie put it straight.

Lan Yunxi's face blushed at once as she glared at Zhang Tie and jumped off the wall...

Watching the empty wall of the internal castle, Zhang Tie felt vacant. He then opened that volume and gazed it for quite a while before putting it away.

Zhang Tie then looked at his watch; it was 11:26 pm...

He then left the rooftop...

"Where are those guests?" Zhang Tie called Sonia.

"Master, your guests have been taken to their own bedrooms!" the female servant answered politely.

"Hmm, after cleaning up the rooftop, you go to bed too. If someone comes for me, tell them I'm in the cultivation room; if it's not important, don't bother me!"

"Yes, sir!"

...

Two minutes later, Zhang Tie entered his hidden room and locked the door from inside. Before entering the secret tunnel, Zhang looked at his watch again — 11.29 pm.

Lowering his body, Zhang Tie walked along the secret tunnel. The moment he went out of the secret tunnel and arrived in the

hinterland of Yunju Mountain, Zhang Tie had used his rapid moving skill and dove into the subterranean river...

With the effect of rapid moving skill in water, Zhang Tie felt that he was covered by an invisible bubble, which didn't influence his senses underwater at all; instead, with it, Zhang Tie felt that his resistance was close to zero.

As a result, Zhang Tie raised his moving speed by one times in the subterranean river at once.

After only six or seven minutes, Zhang Tie had arrived at Iron Stones Beach which he was very familiar with. Without any hesitation, he directly entered the sea from the side of Iron Stones Beach. After identifying the general direction, Zhang Tie arrived at the bottom of sea where he opened the space tunnel that connected the sea water and the Pool of Chaos.

At the bottom of the sea water, under the bliss of rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie soon raised his moving speed to an amazing degree.

While absorbing sea water, Zhang Tie obtained a constant driving force. With the bliss of rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie's resistance in water was reduced to the minimum by that invisible bubble; with the reinforced night viewing ability, Zhang Tie could see very far at the bottom of the sea; with super powerful spiritual energy and sensitive sense towards current, Zhang Tie became more flexible than fish in water.

All this led to the miraculous speed under water.

Zhang Tie was shooting forward in the sea like a rocket or a torpedo without causing any sound. Even Zhang Tie was amazed about that speed. He felt driving his Faerie Dragon T9 under water. From the back moving scenes at the bottom of the sea, Zhang Tie could judge his moving speed — definitely over 160 km per hour, which was almost equal to the fastest speed of Faerie Dragon T9.

Zhang Tie felt like a wolf in the sea. The ocean was like a vast prairie...

After less than twenty km away from Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie had felt an ocean current beside him, the direction of which was the same as his movement — towards Jinhai City; therefore, Zhang Tie cut into the ocean current at once.

Being pushed by the ocean current, Zhang Tie felt entering an expressway as he sped up once again. He was an eagle now... as he felt flying in the ocean...

Chapter 356: On The Way

The last passenger liner leaving the wharf of Hidden Dragon Island each day was 7:00 pm, after which, passengers could only leave at 6:00 am the following morning. Unless there was a special situation causing them to leave by airship, people could only leave Hidden Dragon Island on a passenger liner.

The alleged special situations referred to the privilege for some members and agencies of the Zhang Clan to access Hidden Dragon Island by airship. Of course, Zhang Clan's airships could not be taken by commoners; additionally, the airline to Hidden Dragon Island had not been opened, therefore, it was impossible for commoners to leave the island by airship.

The airline distance between Hidden Dragon Island and Jinhai City was over 140 km. It was a four to five hour journey on a passenger liner. Perhaps there wasn't only one person who could swim over 100 km in water, such as some senior fighters, whose physique and swimming skills were exceptional.

However, nobody across Hidden Dragon Island, even Huaiyuan Prefecture, could imagine that someone could swim back to continent from Hidden Dragon Island in less than 1 hour.

Zhang Tie enjoyed moving super fast in the current. As he could hardly identify the direction he was heading in under water, every few minutes he would leave the ocean current and stick his head out of water to relocate and modify his moving direction based on the positions of stars, the positions of some reefs which were exposed above water, and beacons.

After moving under water about 40 minutes at an amazing speed, the ocean current slowed down and divided into 2 currents, one towards left, the other toward right. Then, the divided ocean currents were further divided into smaller radioactive subterranean flows and finally became disordered swirling turbulent flows and undercurrents before disappeared.

Sensing the change of the ocean current, Zhang Tie knew that he almost reached the continent based on his experiences.

Zhang Tie then exposed his head out of the water and looked forward. In pitch-dark evening, Zhang Tie could see some sparse lamplight and beacons. He knew that the harbor of Jinhai City was right in front of him.

Zhang Tie then looked at his watch again — 00:21 am, which meant it had been less than one hour since he left Jinwu Castle. After locking the references and the general direction, Zhang Tie dove in water again and swam towards a coast on the west of the wharf of Jinhai City.

...

At 00:25 am, Zhang Tie finally climbed onto a beach on the west coast of Jinhai City.

It was still less than an hour since he'd left Hidden Dragon Island.

Because it was midnight, it was pretty tranquil on the surrounding beach; besides sea waves and the rustling sound of some rows of coconut trees in the sea wind, Zhang Tie could only see some lamplight penetrating from the rooms of coastal villas along with barks.

This area was the seafront residential quarter.

Zhang Tie walked straight towards a coastal villa right in front of him, which only occupied less than 200 square meters with a small courtyard and a garage. It was only about 70 m away from the beach. A few days ago, it only took Zhang Tie 1100 gold coins to buy this coastal villa.

Of course, the name of the owner of this villa was Fei Yuao, instead of Zhang Tie. When he walked on the beach, Zhang Tie was wearing a mask.

After passing by the beach of dozens of meters in length, Zhang Tie walked on the footpath of the bank; he then walked through a coastal highway which was five to six meters in width and stepped on his own grassland in the courtyard before he arrived in front of the door to the villa.

Zhang Tie firstly checked the special traces that he left here and found they were not moved; he then dug out the key of the villa from a flowerpot beside the door. After that, he opened the door and walked in.

With a sound of "Ka...", Zhang Tie closed the door from inside.

Without turning on the lamps, he directly walked towards a washroom on the first floor. In the washroom, Zhang Tie rapidly used the soap to clean off the salty smell of sea water. After drying up, he put on the clothes that he had long prepared for tonight and came to the garage of the villa.

There was also a Faerie Dragon T9 in the garage of the villa. Being different from the first blue Faerie Dragon T9, this one was black and under the name of Fei Yuao, its number plate was "Huai G807T".

Zhang Tie opened the gate of the garage and jumped onto the car. Only after stepping down on the mechanical ignition pedal four times did he start the car. Half a minute later, when the steam pressure finger of this alcohol-fueled sport car reached the working state, Zhang Tie drove it out of the garage. After that, he parked it outside the garage; after locking the gate of the garage, he returned to the car and drove away from the villa.

When he drove away from there, Zhang Tie peered at his watch — 00:32, the effect of the first rapid moving skill had just disappeared.

Over 10 seconds later, the booming sound of the turbine steam-driven, heat recollected, external combustion engine drifted down the coastal avenue of Jinhai City...

At 00:37, Zhang Tie drove onto the highway from Jinhai City to Stars Viewing City...

Few vehicles were on the highway in the evening; additionally, with the help of his night viewing ability, it was no different to daytime. Having become very familiar with the road conditions and the vehicle, Zhang Tie accelerated to the maximal speed, 180 km per hour, in a split second...

With super high spiritual energy, Zhang Tie felt time and moving objects slowing down; additionally, he felt a weird, super powerful synergy between him and the Faerie Dragon T9, due to which, his driving intention, maneuvers, and the car's mechanical performances combined into a perfect process.

In this state, Zhang Tie clearly knew how to completely display his driving intention through special maneuvers. He clearly understood how certain mechanical performances of this car could support him to accomplish specific maneuvers.

Everything became transparent to Zhang Tie.

Although in driving, Zhang Tie felt that he was running on foot as everything was at his will.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether those people who liked to race cars also had the same feeling as him. But after thinking for a few seconds, Zhang Tie ascertained that nobody else could have such a feeling except him.

Because if those racers had the same feeling as him, it would be meaningless for them to race cars. With the same driving intention, the same perfect maneuvers and the same ability to

exert mechanical performances to the utmost based on road conditions, it would be a simple data comparison on mechanical performances of the cars. If so, racing cars would be meaningless.

Zhang Tie liked high speed movement in both water and on the land. Additionally, as he was drawing closer to Stars Viewing City, Zhang Tie's killing intent also started to boil like wildfire. A cool feeling started to rise from his heart...

After having a party with his friends on Hidden Dragon Island, he traveled hundreds of kilometers under the moonlight so as to strike his enemy. How cool it was!

...

"Nana, you must be lying to us. These snake-shaped soul-chasing curves are so difficult to pass. I was told that even the car king could only shift 6 curves and had to decelerate at the 7th curve when he was alive. How could that person pass these snake curves perfectly at the speed above 100 km/h in 20 seconds? Do you mean that someone was sharper than the former car king?"

Besides Zhang Tie, there were really some guys who came out in the evening. At this moment, some young racers were gathering on a slope beside a curve. They were talking about driving skills and that guy Nana had met here several days ago.

None of them believed Nana's words. If there was truly such an able man, they would have long heard about him.

With a "terrifying" makeup, Nana threw a contemptuous glance over them, "I know you cannot do it, but it doesn't mean that nobody can do it. Was the car king really that great? He died many years ago, yet you still mention him every day. If you are really that ambitious, you should try to surpass him like that guy I met that day. You should not take a dead man as your idol!"

"Heh...heh..." a 20-odd guy who looked embarrassed revealed an obscene smile as he gazed at Nana's boobs and butts and licked his lips, "Only you have seen that guy; of course, you can boost him as well as you can. According to you, he has been in Jinhai City for so many days; but you still don't find him. If you are really that ambitious, do you dare bet with me?"

"For what?" Nana raised her eyebrows and asked.

"I give you 2 weeks to find him. If you could find anyone who's greater than the car king on passing these curves, you will be the winner. If you cannot make it, you are the loser; then..." In pale look, that man forcefully swallowed his saliva...

"What?"

"Then, I will f*ck you for a whole night!"

"Wow..." Hearing such a rude request, the other racers yelled, some of them even whistled. Even those tomboys started to kick up a fuss.

With her eyes widely opened, Nana glared at that person ferociously, "What if you lose the bet, [shar-pei](#)?"

"I can allow you to f*ck me for the whole night!" That man revealed a wicked smile, "How about it? If you dare not, just admit that you were bragging just now. No matter what, you girls always like to 'blow'."

Shar-pei's pun aroused more yelling.

Nana's face was instantly covered with a layer of frost, "Do you want to thrust me with that thing in your crotch? Fine, I accept your bet; but if you lose it, this mother will thrust you with this thing, dare you?"

Saying that, Nana waved a riot stick towards him. At the sight of that 30-cm long riot stick in her hand, many racers felt their anuses tightening. They became scared as Nana would definitely do it based on her temperament.

Shar-pei's face also turned pale. However, looking at that delicate face under the "heavy" makeup and her plump figure that had not yet been f*cked by a man, he gritted his teeth, "Fine, that's the deal. In 2 weeks, if anyone could finish snake movements in the soul-chasing curves, you will be the winner; if not..."

"The, this mother will be f*cked by you for a whole night!" Nana also gritted her teeth.

The 2 people then clapped to settle the bet...

The moment they settled the bet, the booming sound of engine had drifted from afar on the mountain path.

All the racers then exchanged glances with each other on the roadside slope.

"What? Is anyone absent?"

"No, we're all here. Some fresh guys might join in!"

"The car came here from Jinhai City. Wow! Listen to the engine, it's super fast; Fatty, guess what kind of car it is..."

"It's Faerie Dragon T9..."

Listening to the sound of the engine, Nana's heart started to race. This was really a familiar sound.

Then, a black shadow flashed by the road under the slope where the racers gathered, causing some tree leaves and weeds fly in the air.

"Wow, at least 160, is he killing himself? It's so dark..."

"Idiot, not 160; listen to the engine carefully, it's 180..."

"Argh, look, the T9 is arriving at the soul-chasing curves; yet it hasn't decelerated..." Those racers fixed their widely opening eyes onto the moving lights of the Faerie Dragon T9 as they held their breaths.

Sitting on the car, Zhang Tie had long noticed those racers gathered on the roadside slope with their attractive lamplight of cars from afar. For Zhang Tie, he had seen these kinds of people so many times; therefore, he was not curious about them at all and directly passed by them without any hesitation.

'It seems to be constantly sudden curves in front.' Having passed by here one time before, Zhang Tie still remembered it; additionally, there was also a sign on the roadside.

Zhang Tie slightly decelerated like how a runner would do when he turned a corner. Zhang Tie didn't think too much. Based on this powerful synergy and instinct for controlling the car, he lowered his driving speed so that he could pass the curves rapidly under control.

He had been so adapted to the maneuvering skills to reverse his steering wheel constantly and rapidly to shift aside into curves when he passed curves at high speed. It was as easy as tilting his body when he ran by a corner. In the whole process, Zhang Tie maintained his back wheels' traction at a critical point so that his car could reach a critical point on both flexibility and speed.

Zhang Tie then chose the simplest and most efficient route based

on the critical points and passed through 7 curves at a constant speed before accelerating away...

...

It was pretty silent on the roadside slope at this moment...

Because it was dark, nobody could see how Zhang Tie's car passed by those curves; however, Zhang Tie's lamplight told them the driving route of the car clearly.

At that moment, everybody had an illusion — they were not lamps anymore, but a pair of huge eyes of a boa. Behind that pair of eyes, a boa swiftly twisted by the soul-chasing 7 curves in its special way...

"Those were truly snake-like movements, those were truly snake-like movements..." one guy shouted loudly.

"The best maneuvers, the best speed and the best route..." Another guy mumbled like he'd been possessed by a ghost; meanwhile, he drew the driving route of that pair of lamps.

"Jeez, how long did he take?"

"18.2 seconds!"

Everybody was shocked...

Watching the soul-chasing curves below in pale, shar-pei's bones were quivering all over. Hearing his teeth collision, everybody else turned back. At the sight of shar-pei's weird expression and Nana who was walking towards him with a grin, a riot stick in hand, all the males present clamped their legs together.

Nana's movements looked pretty sexy; but everybody started to tremble at this moment.

"Nana... ho... how about... ad... adding some oil to it?" Shar-pei revealed a smile which was even uglier than cry, "I... I will take it as a prostatic examination!"

Nana sniggered, "You're telling me that? Weren't you going to f*ck me? I will let you have a taste of how it feels to be f*cked!"

...

Half a minute later, hearing a shrill shriek from shar-pei who was lying on the back of his car and seeing Nana walking out from the back of shar-pei's car, all the other male hurriedly jumped back into their cars and dared not look at her any more. 'F*ck! This woman is too terrifying. She's the last person that I want to cause trouble with!'

When these racers arrived at Stars Viewing City, the T9 that they saw just now was long gone.

Black Faerie Dragon T9 — there were at least one or two hundred cars like this in Stars Viewing City; additionally, they had not identified its plate number, of course, they would not be able to find it.

Shar-pei is a kind of Chinese dog. It's the guy's nickname.

Chapter 357: Massacre in the Evening

Stars Viewing City was a city of light. When most people went to bed, many places in the city started to get boisterous. After entering Stars Viewing City, Zhang Tie decelerated; he could see prostitutes everywhere on the roadside who were attracting customers. Being low-key in the daytime, the red-light district and brothels recovered their vitality at this moment.

The black Faerie Dragon T9 was quietly passing through the streets like a black spirit. It passed by the uproarious Milkway Hotel and finally parked in front of a high-end restaurant 500 meters away from the Milkway Hotel to the east.

When he parked the car, Zhang Tie glanced at his watch — 02:16 am. The odometer of the Faerie Dragon T9 displayed 278 km, which was almost the distance from Jinhai City to Stars Viewing City.

The moment Zhang Tie parked the car, a waiter outside the restaurant opened the car's door for him politely. Zhang Tie got out of the car and took the parking service plate from the waiter.

"Fill the alcohol to the brim, I also need a chartered room!"

The waiter nodded. He quickly walked around the car to check if there were any scratches on it. After that, the waiter got into the car very carefully, closed the car's door, and drove Zhang Tie's car into the parking lot before filling the alcohol to the brim.

"Sir, follow me please!"

A waiter guided Zhang Tie into the restaurant.

This senior restaurant adopted the garden design. All the dining rooms were independent pavilions and chartered rooms in the garden so that guests did not disturb each other. There was some distance between those pavilions and chartered rooms. The landscape design also had guests' privacy in consideration. Besides the lamplight out of the pavilions and chartered rooms, the whole garden looked very dim. Seeing all this, Zhang Tie nodded inside.

Such a design not only met some people's requirements for a tranquil environment but was also convenient for doing something else besides eating food.

Based on his sharp auditory sense, Zhang Tie heard sounds from some pavilions which were different from eating sounds — women's giggles and light groans. This place was perfect for lovers on a date.

The waiter guided Zhang Tie into an independent, chartered room. After checking the environment there, Zhang Tie nodded inside again.

"Sir, our minimal consumption for a chartered room is 30 silver coins. If it's less than 30 silver coins, you should also pay 30 silver coins. The normal dinner time is 2 hours. If you stay here longer, you have to pay 2 more silver coins for an additional hour!"

Zhang Tie nodded.

A few minutes later, Zhang Tie ordered his food and a bottle of alcohol. Then, he sat in the chartered room leisurely for a rest.

Zhang Tie didn't order too much, which had been brought in within 10 minutes.

"Enjoy yourself, sir!"

"Can you tell me where I can select girls?" Zhang Tie revealed a Donder-like wicked smile.

Having been asked similar questions so many times, the waiter replied, "If you need such a service, you can exit the rear door of the restaurant, then, turn left; after walking 100 m, turn right; there's a mansion called Fairy Beings. You will like it!"

Zhang Tie popped out a silver coin. That waiter grabbed it at once; after that, he left with a big smile and closed the door from outside.

Zhang Tie glanced at his watch again, it was 02:24 am...

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie sat back. Glancing at the food and drinks on the table, Zhang Tie closed his eyes.

'If you want to do something big, you have to be calm!' Zhang Tie

reminded himself inside, 'At a critical moment, you have to be patient.'

After closing his eyes for a while, Zhang Tie opened them. Seeing the food and drinks in front of him, he picked up his chopsticks...

Ten minutes later, Zhang Tie stood up, took off his wind coat and hung it on a hanger beside the table.

Asking waiter where to find women — eating food, yet not opening the bottle of alcohol — leaving a wind coat — although being trivial clues, if someone really entered his chartered room after Zhang Tie left, they would definitely reach a conclusion — Zhang Tie probably had gone out to look for women; he might be back. In this way, Zhang Tie guaranteed the only possible conclusion they could reach.

After arranging everything in the room, Zhang Tie focused his spiritual energy and triggered the rune effect of rapid moving skill in his mind. After being triggered, one of the 6 god's runes of rapid moving skill radiated golden light at once. The rune reversed, upside down, and started to pour down inside Zhang Tie's body like a golden rain of light. As a result, each cell in Zhang Tie cheered up like drinking ice-cold plum syrup in summer days.

Under the bliss of rapid moving skill, Zhang Tie instantly felt he'd become pretty light while the land became a elastic huge spring. As long as he used a bit strength, he could move himself a great distance.

Effect of rapid moving skill: increase moving speed by 120% on the basis of the original moving speed; the rune effect of rapid moving skill in battle would weaken by 80%, which means that Zhang Tie could still pace up by 24% in battle.

Zhang Tie opened the window of the chartered room and looked at the high wall of the restaurant. Putting his hands on the windowsill slightly, he jumped over 4 m out of the window in a way which was much swifter than a leopard. After landing his feet on the wall, he instantly jumped off the wall and entered the endless darkness.

It was less than 600 m from here to the Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City. Based on his memory, Zhang Tie flashed across tranquil alleys in the darkness. One minute later, Zhang Tie had already arrived at the corner of the west wall of Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City. In a split second, he had jumped into the courtyard of the Mansion like a roc flapping its wings.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was wearing a black cold-resistant cap which was especially for pioneers, only exposing his gleaming, icy eyes; besides, he was wearing a set of black tights and a tactical vest of pioneers, a heavy pioneer's sword in hand.

This sword was long and sharp. It was very destructive. Additionally, its body had gone through matt treatment; therefore, it would not reflect any light in darkness.

Zhang Tie obviously had turned himself into a killer at that moment.

The Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City could never have imagined such a malefic figure would arrive here.

The courtyard of the Zhen Clan mansion of Heavens Cold City occupied several thousand square meters. In the middle of the courtyard was a 5-floor traditional Chinese building. At this moment, it was pitch-black inside the mansion, except for some sparse burning lamps.

With the effect of "One Step, One Scenery" and "Rapid Moving Skill", Zhang Tie flashed across light and darkness like a grey shadow. In a split second, he had already passed by 100 m and arrived beside a fountain in the courtyard.

In a split second, a binding chain flew out of the place between his eyebrows; meanwhile, Zhang Tie stabbed his sword into that fountain with the help of night viewing ability, causing a great amount of bloody water spray out of the fountain...

"One solved, there's another one." Zhang Tie mumbled as he flashed away in the darkness; in a few seconds, he had arrived below some high pine trees. Zhang Tie sent out one binding chain again as he jumped up from the ground...

One second later, Zhang Tie grabbed a rapid wind 6 steel-made armor-breaking bolt with no tail feather and directly penetrated through that person's heart by the sharp triangular head of his bolt and nailed him onto the trunk.

Eyes widely opened, that guy being nailed onto the trunk glared at Zhang Tie out of fear, seemingly being curious about how Zhang Tie knew where he was hiding and how Zhang Tie made him still all of a sudden. At the same time, a lot of blood spurted out of his mouth.

Before that man died, his eyes were filled with curiosity. Zhang Tie then glanced at this man's ear.

'F*ck, as I have predicted, they are the assassins!' After swearing inside, Zhang Tie slowly slid down the pine tree and directly darted towards the main building of the Zhen Clan mansion at a terrifying speed.

...

At the entrance of the main building, there was a room still with dim light, where the guards of the mansion were on night duty.

"Zhen Yi, Zhen Xiong, you need to take a round outside. Recently, we need to be especially careful; Master has delivered the order; we'd better keep trouble out of there.

The moment Zhang Tie arrived there, he had heard a sound. He then stopped outside the window of that room; although those inside the room could not see him, he could clearly hear their conversation.

An aroma of boiled meat drifted out of the room. Zhang Tie

guessed that they were eating inside.

"I don't think anything will happen in Stars Viewing City. Our Zhen Clan has been doing business here for many years, yet we've not met trouble at all. There are only bitches and slaves here; additionally we've got 2 more people outside. We've just checked it 10 minutes ago. It's pretty safe!" Zhang Tie heard a slightly lazy voice, followed by a series of chewing sound.

"It's hard to say. Some days ago, some clan members went to Hidden Dragon Island to form battle-qi, why would they come back so fast? Have they formed battle-qi in such a short period? I was told..."

"Shut up, Zhen Xiong. Have you forgotten about the master's ban? Nobody in the mansion is allowed to talk about the affairs of the Zhen Clan!" The same voice sounded, "Master is always in a bad mood these days. If he heard that you were talking about that, you would be in big trouble. Do you want to have a go in the Worm Jail of Heavens Cold City?"

Hearing this, the other two kept silent. They even stopped eating. The air in the room seemed freezing. A few seconds later, Zhang Tie heard the same man made a hollow laugh, "He... he... I was just saying. Only the three of us know about it; additionally, it's in the mansion. It's not a violation strictly; but brother Blade was right. I will watch out. Lao Yi, let's go out for another check!"

With the sound of moving chairs, someone seemed to be standing up, but before they came out, Zhang Tie had flashed in; immediately, he had released binding chains and bound them all in

a split second.

As Zhang Tie had predicted, LV 8 powerhouses were not common in any place. Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City was not so luxurious as to use a LV 8 powerhouse as a sentry. It was already a huge consumption for them to employ some LV 6 or LV 7 guys; however, those below LV 8 were nothing more than bound chicks in front of his preliminary binding chain.

Two people in the room had stood up and were going to walk out of the room; the remaining one was holding a pair of chopsticks. None of them could've imagined that they would be attacked. Eyes wide open, they gazed at Zhang Tie who was pitch-black all over; however, they could not move, or even utter any words. They all looked pretty shocked.

They didn't even know what happened to their bodies as they became stiff all of a sudden. Besides rolling their eyeballs and blinking their eyes, they could do nothing else.

Under the mask, Zhang Tie sniggered. After his spiritual energy was reinforced, the power of his binding chains also increased, causing them stiff longer. The moment the binding chains hit them, Zhang Tie knew that even the one with the most powerful spiritual energy had to wait at least 8 minutes before recovering free movement.

'This period is enough for me to do a lot of things.'

"I know you can hear me. You can choose the way to blink your

eyes as a reply to my questions. If you wish to answer my question, you can rapidly blink your eyes several times..."

The 3 people just gazed at him while nobody blinked. Zhang Tie then casually waved his sword towards the neck of the man on the chair, causing his neck spurting blood like a broken water pipe. In only a few seconds, that man had become a bloody man as he lowered his head and died on the chair.

The other two's eyes almost popped out of their heads as their eyes were full of fear.

"I ask you one more time. People who would like to answer my questions can rapidly blink your eyes several times..."

The one on the left responded a bit slowly, seemingly still being hesitated. Zhang Tie then directly penetrated through his heart with his sword...

The last one alive was Zhen Xiong...

"I'll repeat myself the last time. Anybody who would like to answer my questions can rapidly blink your eyes several times..." Zhang Tie asked leisurely.

Zhen Xiong rapidly blinked his eyes...

Chapter 358: A Bloody Night

After being told some pieces of information that he wanted, Zhang Tie stabbed Zhen Xiong to death directly. Looking at Zhen Xiong's disbelieving expression, Zhang Tie's eyes radiated an icy light, "I didn't promise to not kill you after you answered my questions!"

The blade was covered with blood beads. After wiping the blade on Zhen Xiong's clothes, Zhang Tie knelt down and took out of a bunch of keys. Then, he left the room quietly.

What Zhen Xiong had said was not absolutely true, but definitely not fully fake; at least he knew more than Zhang Tie. The key was that Zhang Tie confirmed that piece of information — When he was attacked on Hidden Dragon Island, a batch of people truly went to Huaiyuan Prefecture from Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City in the name of forming battle qi.

They only stayed in the Zhen Clan Mansion of Stars Viewing City for one day; then, they went to Hidden Dragon Island. After the assassination, they came back to the Zhen Clan Mansion in batches before leaving Stars Viewing City and Huaiyuan Prefecture immediately after...

Zhen Xiong was curious that it was not enough for them to form battle qi in such a short period at all.

Zhang Tie sniggered inside, 'Those members of the Zhen Clan were obviously there to assist those b*stards who were killed by

me. After knowing that that their plan failed, those people had to leave Hidden Dragon Island with an excuse.

'It seems that the Zhen Clan assigned two powers to act in Hidden Dragon Island, one in public, one in the dark. Those average people in the mansion only knew that power acting in public. For that power in the dark, only the master of the Zhen Clan and a minority knew it. This explained why the master delivered the order to forbid his clan members from talking about this affair.

'They even arranged hidden guards. Before this event, they rarely used hidden guards in the evening. Since that event happened, they started to be meticulous. The only reason for this is that they've done something bad.'

The moment he recalled what he and his elder brother encountered that day, Zhang Tie's killing intent boiled up like magma once again.

After slightly rotating the key, Zhang Tie quietly pushed open the gate of the main building. He flashed in and locked the gate from inside.

The main building occupied almost 2,000 square meters. Besides being available for the accommodation of clan members, this building was also the trade base of the Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City in Huaiyuan Prefecture. The Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City had many businesses such as slave trading, weapons trading with Huaiyuan Palace, and ocean transporting to name a few.

It was pitch-dark in the mansion; however, with his night viewing ability, the moment Zhang Tie entered the gate, he sensed the magnificence of the lobby.

Zhang Tie didn't go upstairs; instead, he flashed by the lobby like a shadow and moved dozens meters forward along a corridor on the left of the lobby; then, he arrived at the lounge where the other guards rested.

Of course, besides the 5 guards outside the mansion, there were more guards inside the mansion.

Almost as soon as Zhang Tie flashed in, he had crashed with a yawning man who had walked out of the washroom and was pulling on the zipper on his trousers.

Zhang Tie instantly stretched out his hand from the dark and pinched his neck; before that man could say anything, he had been killed by Zhang Tie's Iron-Blood Battle Qi and collapsed onto the ground like a piece of spaghetti.

Several meters away, Zhang Tie noticed the door of a room which was narrowly open; a slight snore drifted out from inside. He then rushed in; ten seconds later, Zhang Tie closed that door quietly, allowing no sounds to escape the room anymore.

There were some more bedrooms beside this one. Zhang Tie walked inside quietly one by one. By slightly releasing his Iron-Blood Battle Qi onto the locks, Zhang Tie opened the locks without

causing any sound...

Five minutes later, when Zhang Tie left the first floor and arrived at the second floor of the mansion, nobody alive was left on 1st floor any more. That meant all the guards of the Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City had been wipe out by Zhang Tie.

Two little 'emergencies' happened during this period.

There was one time when Zhang Tie opened a door, due to lack of lubricating oil, the door slightly creaked. As a result, a very alert guard was woken up. He instantly jumped up from the bed; however, everything stopped by then.

Although Zhang Tie was still several meters away from that guy who was ready for attack, after releasing his binding chain, he had already 'fixed' that guy. Before the other guards woke up, Zhang Tie had already swiftly sliced all of their necks.

The room became quiet at once.

The second was not an emergency strictly as those guys in a room were not sleeping at all; instead, they were gambling. Zhang Tie had heard the sounds inside the door from outside. This was actually an attack by force in the fastest way. From Zhang Tie darted into the room and sent their heads flying almost at the same time. It only took Zhang Tie less than 2 seconds.

Besides the residences of these guards on the first floor, there

were some warehouses and a basement which stored valuables. As it was not the right moment to collect the treasures in the warehouses, Zhang Tie didn't do that; instead, after clearing out all the guards on first floor, he rushed onto the second floor.

There were so many offices, conference rooms and reference rooms on the second floor, which seemed to be used for businesses. Zhang Tie searched each room on the second floor, yet found nobody at all; therefore, he rushed to the third floor.

Zhang Tie in the dark was like the king of terror as he was bloody wherever he was.

When he arrived at the third floor, he took a look around all the rooms; the soft and thick carpet silenced his footsteps. When he heard any sound of breath inside a room, he would quietly open the door with his Iron-Blood Battle Qi and walk in, killing the ones inside before he walked out.

All the members inside the mansion was male; therefore, Zhang Tie didn't feel any mental burden about killing them; since the Zhen Clan wanted to kill him and his elder brother, the resentment between him and Zhen Clan had been cemented. Additionally, the Zhen Clan acted mysteriously and viciously. According to Lan Yunxi, the powers that carried out assassinations and destructions among mankind always had deep backgrounds and probably had been bought over by demons. For such a clan, of course, Zhang Tie wouldn't feel merciful about them at all.

Zhang Tie swept over the third floor very quickly; he then arrived at the fourth floor.

The management of the mansion lived on the fourth floor and up. After taking a look around the fourth floor, Zhang Tie found nobody in most rooms; he then slightly furrowed his brows. 'Aren't those guys here today? What a coincidence!'

When Zhang Tie arrived at the outside of the last bedroom on the 4th floor, he heard some strange sound from inside; he then opened the lock and entered silently.

The room was radiating crimson light which looked a bit weird. The moment Zhang Tie entered, he had heard the sound clearly. He then passed by the parlor and opened another door; then, he was shocked...

A woman was naked, mouth clogged with a piece of cloth; her neck, feet and hands were tied onto an iron bed with iron rings while a man was moving up and down on her body; meanwhile, he was stabbing that women with a 30-cm long iron wire.

"B*tch, is that cool? Is it cool... I'm stabbing you with 2 items...is that cool...oh, right, faster...argh, narrower...this father has long since wanted to f*ck you. Did you think you were that sharp by seducing the master... argh... There's some places where you cannot go in this mansion... Some things you should not ask... You must not have imagined that you are a gift from the master. It's really much more comfortable to f*ck you than slaves..."

The man was talking in a low voice while lying on that woman's body like a wild beast who was eating...

The woman struggled due to a great pain. The iron rings had become extremely bloody; however, the woman's struggle brought greater pleasure to this man.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie swore furiously, "B*stard!"

That guy was not weak; he was at least LV 6. The moment he heard Zhang Tie's voice, he instantly popped away from that woman and flashed several meters away. At the sight of Zhang Tie in pitch black clothes and full of killing intent, his pupils contracted at once.

He was 20-odd years old and looked handsome with a bluish white face; however, he looked evil and ferocious.

From Zhang Tie's look, he knew that Zhang Tie must not be an average person and he definitely could not defeat Zhang Tie; even if he called for help, Zhang Tie would've killed him long before others arrived.

"Did someone hire you to kill me? If you leave here, I will pay you double the amount as compensation. You might not know that, my dad is..." That guy pretended to be calm; however, his head had already flown in the air while his eyes looked amazed, a single thought went through his mind, 'So fast!'

After chopping off that man's head, Zhang Tie came to one side of the girl and took out of that piece of cloth from her mouth. She glanced at that headless corpse; then, she moved her eyes on Zhang

Tie. With a miserable smile, tears rolled down her face...

Zhang Tie undid the iron rings on her neck and limbs and put her down. After checking her body rapidly, he sighed inside and stood up.

This girl would die. Although only minor wounds could be seen on her skin, the b*stard's iron wire had made her guts like a sieve ...

Zhang Tie tore off a piece of curtain and covered her naked, bloody body before left...

"There is... in study room, hidden cell, hidden cell... on the 5th floor..."

Zhang Tie stopped and turned around his head as he heard the woman uttering those words. He simply nodded and rushed out...

'Those sons of b*tches...'

Chapter 359: Attack Head On

After reaching the fifth floor, Zhang Tie finally understood why he had only met a few people on the fourth floor. It was because most of the people living on the fourth floor were attending a conference on the fifth floor.

The lamplight and human voices faintly came out of the conference room. In the corridor outside the conference room were two tough men.

By the time Zhang Tie reached the conference room on the fifth floor, he had already cleaned up the other places on the floor. This conference room was the last place with living people in the Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City.

As he waited by the corridor, Zhang Tie thought about the saying 'plans change'. He planned to break through each area of the mansion under the cover of darkness, however, the plan failed when he reached the fifth floor.

After glancing down the corridor swiftly, Zhang Tie hurriedly put his head back. Standing behind the wall at the corner of the wall, he started to calculate the distance from where he was standing to the end of this corridor.

It was longer than fifty meters, over such a distance, his binding chains were ineffective as it was greater than the maximal effective distance of the binding chains.

The corridor was the only way to get from his current position to where the two tough men stood. The corridor was brightly lit, which meant Zhang Tie could not hide himself at all. The moment he appeared, he would definitely be noticed.

Even if he darted at his fastest speed, it would still take him two seconds to be there. This period was enough for the two guards to give a warning to those inside the room.

'I don't know how many people were in there. Could there be any powerhouses above LV 10?

'There are three options for me to choose from, attack head on, give up, or stay here to wait for a better chance!'

Zhang Tie peered at his watch — 02:53 am...

Zhang Tie only considered it for a second. Then, he arranged his equipment and put his sword back in the Castle of Black Iron. He then took out some rapid-wind six steel armor-breaking bolts with no tail feathers and inserted all the armor-breaking bolts into the slots of his tactical vest. After doing all that, he took a deep breath and dashed out...

Zhang Tie chose the first option — attack head on!

Within a second, Zhang Tie moved forward more than twenty meters; at the same time, he threw out two armor-breaking bolts.

Without even having a chance to send a warning, the two guards' heads had exploded like watermelons; a red liquid sprayed out of their heads, forming two fresh flowers on the wall.

Sonic booms!

Not until after the two heads were exploded by armor-breaking bolts were air-torn sounds heard in the corridor.

With Iron-Blood Battle Qi boiling like a dragon in his body, Zhang Tie's body started to burn like a fire had been lit beneath him; almost as soon as the air-torn sounds were heard, Zhang Tie ferociously patted on the wooden door of the conference room with his hands.

Compared to the gentle Iron-Blood Battle Qi that he used to open locks earlier, now it had become unrivaled, untamed, and ferocious. After being struck, the oak door instantly shattered into wooden pieces. At the same time, with huge strength and speed, those broken wooden chips were blasted into the conference room.

This process only took Zhang Tie less than two seconds. After noticing the sounds outside the room, those people inside the room only had, at most, a second to respond.

In such a short period, most people inside the conference room had not responded before numerous shattered wooden chips had already been blasted in like hidden weapons and bolts accompanied by the ferocious Qi of Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

In a split second, a shrill shriek was heard in the conference room; meanwhile, those facing the door had been covered with shattered wooden chips and spikes in different sizes, causing great chaos in the room.

Alongside the numerous wooden chips, Zhang Tie rushed in.

In a situation like this, every second counted for Zhang Tie. At this critical moment, Zhang Tie's mind was calm once again as he started to drive his spiritual energy at full speed.

0.01 seconds after he entered the conference room, Zhang Tie had already clearly observed everything in the room. The scene was like a fixed painting in his mind.

There were eight people in the conference room; the three of them facing the door had already fallen onto the ground with blood spurting all over. Many wounds had appeared all over their bodies due to shattered wooden chips. One of the wounds was fatal as it had hit the main artery of his neck. After being cut open, the artery started to spray blood like water coming out of a faucet. That person then covered that wound with one hand.

The other two were not that heavily wounded. Their wounds were not fatal for the time being — an eye of one of them was stabbed with a toothpick-long wooden pike; he was lying on the floor with a pained expression while the other one watched on - stunned. Even with a lot of wounds on his body, he was still confused about what had happened, even now.

Besides the above three, two more people were sitting on the table. They didn't stand up; instead, they just looked a bit surprised. The other three had already stood up — one 50-odd year old man had only stood up. The one beside him stood ready to attack; the fastest one was already charging towards Zhang Tie...

In the next 0.01 seconds, Zhang Tie started his first round of attack — binding chains.

He released his binding chains so fast. Almost the moment Zhang Tie locked someone with his eyes, the binding chains had already flown out of the place between Zhang Tie's two eyebrows.

Because of what happened previously, tonight could not be settled through peaceful means, Zhang Tie was determined to win the battle at the risk of his life.

The binding chains instantly hit the eight people in the conference room. Due to the performance of the binding chains, whenever they took effect on someone, Zhang Tie would know how long their effects would last; however, if that person being struck was above LV 7, the binding chain would be ineffective to him.

The moment the binding chains flew out, Zhang Tie clearly knew the fighting strength of those people in the room. After being struck by binding chains, five of them instantly lost their ability to move; the other three were not influenced at all. That was to say, three of them were at least LV 8.

Fortunately, among the three people not influenced by the binding chains, one had been wounded — the one whose eye had been stabbed by a wooden spike. One was charging towards Zhang Tie and the third man was that 50-odd guy who was standing by the seat of the host.

Zhang Tie had completely figured out the situation in the room within the first 0.02 seconds after rushing into the room and accomplishing his first round of attack with the binding chains.

Five of the eight people completely lost their fighting strength and couldn't move at all. The shortest recovery time for one of the five fixed people was four minutes. For the remaining three people, one had lost half of his fighting strength while the other two men's fighting strengths were unknown.

After figuring out the current situation, Zhang Tie became clearer on his next objective — kill that one who had lost half of his fighting strength. For the other two, if either of them were above LV 10 and he could not solve the fight in four minutes, he had to escape. If he kept fighting a real powerhouse here for too long, he might attract the troop; if so, the situation would only get worse.

'I hope there's no LV 10 guys here,' Zhang Tie thought to himself. Then, he rushed towards that man whose eye had been wounded.

Time started to run again...

After Zhang Tie completely figured out the situation in the conference room and completed the first round of attack with

binding chains, the three people who could move didn't know that five of the eight people had lost their ability to fight and were even unable to utter a single word.

In the first second after Zhang Tie rushed into the conference room, the person charging at Zhang Tie had already punched towards Zhang Tie. Seeing that, Zhang Tie directly kicked onto that person's palm; meanwhile, he turned around and rushed towards that man with a wounded eye...

In the next second after Zhang Tie rushed in, "Qihai, watch out!" the man standing by the seat of the host shouted loudly as he charged towards Zhang Tie with a grim look on his face.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was still being aided by the rapid moving skill, ergo Zhang Tie could still move 20% quicker than usual; Zhang Tie was moving at a terrifying speed.

Receiving that man's warning, the guy with a wounded eye rolled aside before even looking at Zhang Tie clearly, ignoring the sharp pain in his eye and panic in his heart...

If it were any of others, when in such a situation, they would hardly attack that escaping guy anymore as they had to face the real powerhouse's attack. However, Zhang Tie could.

In the third second after Zhang Tie rushed in, when he faced that 50-odd man's attack with a punch, Zhang Tie threw an armor-breaking bolt at that escaping man...

A shrill shriek, a booming crash, and the air-torn sound of that armor-breaking bolt sounded in the third and the fourth second.

In the fourth second after Zhang Tie rushed in, that man rushing forwards and Zhang Tie were pushed back by each other's ferocious Qi at the same time.

When Zhang Tie was sent flying back in the air, two more armor-breaking bolts appeared in his hands...

The first LV 8 powerhouse whose hand had been kicked by Zhang Tie was instantly sent flying ten meters back and directly hit the wall of the conference room. Soon after, he recovered the boiling qi and blood in his body and prepared to launch the second round of attacks. Suddenly, his head had exploded...

In the fifth second, after landing on the ground, Zhang Tie sprung out at that 50-odd man.

In the sixth second, after two rounds of lightning fast fighting, Zhang Tie received that man's hit with his chest while he smashed his Iron-Blood Fist onto that man's lower abdomen...

Zhang Tie spat out a mouthful of blood; comparatively, that man's eyes, ears, mouth and nose spurted out blood at the same time...

"Iron-Blood Battle Qi! Who are you..." That man's hoarse voice suddenly stopped. Lowering his head, he watched his lower

abdomen with an incredulous look and found that the blade of a pitch-black sword had already fully entered his body...

'How did this happen? Weren't his hands empty just now? Where did he get the sword from? Iron-Blood Battle Qi? He's Zhang...' The 50-odd man had so many questions before his death.

In the seventh second, Zhang Tie had chopped off his head and sent it flying in the air...

The head on attack then came to an end...

Zhang Tie knelt down on the floor at once and spat out another mouthful of blood...

Chapter 360: Secret of the Zhen Clan

Kneeling down on the floor, Zhang Tie coughed out several mouths of blood and panted for about half a minute before picking himself up.

Although it was a short fight, it was the most dangerous among all the fights that Zhang Tie had experienced. Before breaking open the door of the conference room, he didn't know if there was a powerhouse above LV 10 in here. He didn't know the outcome of this battle until he finished the battle at the risk of his own life.

Fortunately, there were no powerhouses above LV 10 in the conference room. Those who could pose threats to him were two LV 8 powerhouses and one LV 9 powerhouse. It was already a high configuration with two LV 8 powerhouses and one LV 9 powerhouse in a clan mansion. In an army, only troops above regiments could enjoy such a high configuration.

Over the intense ten seconds, Zhang Tie had used all of his top fighting skills — rapid moving skill, binding skill, Iron-Blood Fist, precise throwing, space teleportation function of the Castle of Black Iron. Additionally, he had become very strike-resistant as he had eaten a lot of iron-body fruits; plus his fast recovery ability with the help of preliminary recovery body. Therefore, he was able to kill the two LV 8 guys and one LV 9 guy in a short period.

At this moment, although Zhang Tie won the fight, he had also suffered severe inner wounds as he had chosen to resist the LV 9 powerhouse's smack face to face despite the great number of iron-body fruits that he had eaten.

However, compared to the wounds that Zhang Tie had suffered, that LV 9 guy was much more miserable after being hit by Zhang Tie's unrivaled, ferocious Iron-Blood Battle Qi and Iron-Blood Fist. The fight had come to an end after Zhang Tie's fist smashed into that man's body. If that man knew that Zhang Tie was practicing Iron-Blood Fist and had already formed his Iron-Blood Battle Qi, he would have never allowed Zhang Tie's punch to touch him.

Due to his blind confidence and lack of intel on Zhang Tie, the LV 9 powerhouse lost the battle in the shortest period.

Wound for wound, life for life and gain the advantage by the terrifying power of his Iron-Blood Fist and his great strike-resistant body — that was the best way to kill that LV 9 powerhouse in the shortest period.

Zhang Tie finally succeeded.

Not until then did Zhang Tie pick up his sword and walk towards the remaining five people who were still bound.

Zhang Tie didn't explain anything; he directly ignored the shocking and fearful looks of the five people who didn't even know what had happened to their bodies. With one slash per person, Zhang Tie finished the final clean-up of the Zhen Clan Mansion in Heavens Cold City within several seconds just like killing chickens.

A dense, bloody smell drifted out of the conference room; nobody in the Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City was left alive.

As Zhang Tie had become accustomed to collecting spoils of war since he was in the Iron-Blood Camp; of course, he planned to grab such a great chance.

Zhang Tie didn't know why these b*stards held a conference here at midnight. But, obviously, those present were the management of the Zhen Clan, at least with a high status. Because Zhen Clan Mansion was also a trade base, they were definitely rich guys.

After taking a round in the conference room for a circle leisurely, Zhang Tie had collected a lot of "spoils of war" — eight purses, six rings, various high-end wristwatches, and pocket watches, etc..

Although there were a few gold coins in the purses, there were a lot of papernotes, which were worth more than 30,000 gold coins in total. Five of the six finger rings were inlaid with valuable jewelries and diamonds, while the remaining one had an eccentric but simple shape.

The eccentric one was not made of gold, neither was it laid with glamorous jewelries. Besides, there were not too many grains on it. However, three pieces of a pale blue metal, the size of little finger, were inlaid in three places of the ring. They were on the same level with the ring on the surface. If one did not observe it carefully, one might not easily notice the metal inside.

Although it looked simple, when Zhang Tie held it, he felt weird.

This ring was from that LV 9 guy's finger. Given that guy's

position in the conference room, he should be the master of this Mansion. Of course, his ring was not average.

Zhang Tie weighed that ring while the same familiar sense reappeared. It reminded Zhang Tie of that rune equipment that he had sold in the auction house of Kalur City — Ring of Vitality.

'What a great fortune!' Zhang Tie yelled inside as he injected his spiritual energy into the ring.

— Ring of Land Protection. With this ring, the wearer can survive greater attacks and possess greater strength. The attributes of this rune equipment were as follows:

— Reduce physical harm by 6%.

— Increase physical explosive power by 145 kg.

— Made by Zhang Dingfang, the rune manufacturer of Huaiyuan Palace.

'Hahaha, good item!' Taking off his mask, Zhang Tie grinned. As this item could not be exposed to the public, he directly threw this ring and the other "spoils" into the Castle of Black Iron.

For Zhang Tie, the gold coins and papernotes worth more than 30,000 gold coins really helped Zhang Tie a lot at a moment when his disposable income was running low.

Several days ago, Zhang Tie bought slaves and made preparations for this action; later on, he added some necessary items for his castle on Yunju Mountain. As a result, he'd almost used up all the money from selling all-purpose medicament.

Those vials of all-purpose medicament that Zhang Tie moved out of the Castle of Black Iron had almost all been sold out. Therefore, he could only sell a very limited number of vials each day. However, the latest all-purpose medicament had not been well-fermented yet; therefore, he'd lacked money recently. He had to wait at least twenty days before he turned the latest all-purpose medicament into gold coins, namely, late July or early August.

What was more, Zhang Tie still owed 460,000 gold coins to Long Wind Business Group for building the castle. Although the 30,000-odd gold coins were not too much for Zhang Tie, it could still relieve Zhang Tie's current problem. Actually, for more than 99% of people, they might not be able to make 30,000 gold coins over their whole lives.

After gaining more than 30,000 gold coins and a rune equipment, Zhang Tie became excited once again; even his wounds were not that painful anymore.

After circling around the conference room, Zhang Tie collected all the valuable items; he then left.

There was a door inside the conference room. Being driven by curiosity, Zhang Tie opened that door and found it led to a study

room.

When he remembered that woman downstairs said that there was a hidden room in the study room, Zhang Tie started to look for it carefully in the study room.

Except for Zhang Tie, nobody else was alive in the whole building; additionally, it was midnight. Zhang Tie didn't worry about making noises at all; therefore, he started to search the room incautiously.

Taking apart the sofa, moving away the desk, pushing away the furniture in the study, and pushing off all the books on the bookcase one row by another. When Zhang Tie pushed off the book from the bookcase next to one wall of the study room and was going to push down the bookcase, he finally saw a handle-like switch on the wall behind the books.

Zhang Tie lightly pulled the handle. As a result, the whole bookcase slid away, exposing a narrow entrance. A sword in hand and an armor-breaking bolt in another hand, Zhang Tie carefully walked in that entrance...

There was a same narrow and dim passageway inside the entrance which only allowed one person in. It felt like that in the apartment left by Donder to him. On both sides of the passageway were the walls of the building. Hidden between those walls, this passageway was really secret.

The passageway was paved with a thick carpet. Therefore, Zhang

Tie didn't make any sound as he walked on it. Green flourite lamps were hanging on the walls every several meters which made the whole passageway extremely gloomy.

Without encountering any attack, Zhang Tie walked dozens of meters and made two turns before entering a hidden room.

The area of this hidden room was less than twenty square meters. The moment Zhang Tie entered this hidden room, he had glanced at the statue on the sacrificial altar of the hidden room.

The major part of that status was a monster covered with crocodile-like scales with a unicorn on its head and a tail. In the middle of its forehead was a slim eye.

The monster was standing like a person while hugging a naked woman with miserable look; additionally, it entwined that woman tightly using its tail with its huge genital into the vagina of the woman.

This statue was pretty weird, evil, lascivious, and dark.

Staring at that statue, Zhang Tie was shocked both physically and mentally. He didn't understand its meaning, but the unicorn, the tail, and the three eyes indicated its status instantly — demon! Only evil demons looked like that!

A faint bloody smell drifted from the sacrificial altar under the statue. Smelling it, Zhang Tie then glanced at the shape of the altar

and the brown stains on the altar; he instantly imagined how a live person was killed in the dark manner in front of that statue—

Zhen Clan truly colluded with demons!

Besides this sacrificial altar and this statue, there was a cabinet beside the altar. After glancing at that statue, Zhang Tie directly walked in front of the cabinet and opened it.

At the sight of the items in the cabinet, Zhang Tie's heart started to pound ferociously at once...

Chapter 361: Sweep the Mansion

On the top of the cabinet was a pile of golden checks which were placed in the clips of the cabinet.

Zhang Tie took out a gold checks clip and found each gold check was worth 1000 gold coins; there were thirty gold checks in each clip.

'I'm rich.' Zhang Tie finally knew why some people liked to rob. Because this was a really fast way to make money; additionally, there were always surprises waiting for you.

On the top layer of the cabinet, there were eight gold checks clips, which included five clips of gold checks worth 1000 gold coins, making a subtotal of 150,000 gold coins. There were two clips of gold checks worth 5000 gold coins, making a subtotal of 210,000 gold coins, and a clip of gold checks worth 10000 gold coins, making a subtotal 260,000 gold coins. The overall value of all the gold checks was 620,000 gold coins.

It was Zhang Tie's first time seeing so many gold checks in clips. The fund provided by Long Wind Business Group to build his castle on Yunju Mountain didn't go through Zhang Tie at all.

Being extremely excited, Zhang Tie moved all the gold check clips into Castle of Black Iron.

On the second layer of the cabinet were a large number of bonds and stock certificates. Zhang Tie took them out and found those

bonds were three year investment bonds delivered by Long Wind Bank in Huaiyuan Prefecture with an annual interest of 5.8%. Those bonds almost occupied the greater part of the second layer of the cabinet.

Zhang Tie didn't count how many bonds there were as he directly moved all of them into Castle of Black Iron.

The five piles of stock certificates were non-tangible stock purchase certificates of various business groups, companies and industrial groups publicly offered by Yiyang Securities Exchange Center. Zhang Tie skimmed them over and found the issuers of the stock certificates were all industries and groups under the name of Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace, such as Deep Sea Fisheries, Yiyang Harbor, Huaiyuan Machinery Company, and Airship Navigation Company.

As it was Zhang Tie's first time seeing bonds, he didn't know about their value and how to turn them into cash; he estimated that since they were placed here, they would be at least worth 100,000 gold coins.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Tie swept them all into Castle of Black Iron too.

On the third layer of the cabinet was a nice box made of gold. Considering the material of the box, Zhang Tie realized the value of the item inside it. He then opened it and found a palm-sized porcelain vessel inside. The most attractive part on the vessel was an abstract symbol composed of some triangles being connected with each other.

Zhang Tie didn't know what this symbol meant when he was in Blackhot City; however, after staying in Huaiyuan Palace for a long time, Zhang Tie knew what it referred to — dangerous Chemical and Biological Weapon before the Catastrophe. Whereas, in this age, after a slight change, it had become a warning of universal poisonous materials.

The item in this vessel was definitely a poison. From the back of the vessel, Zhang Tie got its name — Poison of Black Sand.

Although Zhang Tie had not heard about this poison, he still put it in the Castle of Black Iron under the excuse that everything had its value, a locust also had meat.

At the bottom of the cabinet was an eccentric device composed of crystal and metal. After looking at that device carefully, Zhang Tie recognized its function. This was a crystal-driven remote sensing communication equipment, which was very expensive. It was the transmitter in this age. The only difference between this equipment and transmitter before Catastrophe was that this device could only realize remote-sensing communication through twin mirror crystals.

Although this item was very expensive, it was useless for Zhang Tie. Firstly, he didn't know how to use it; secondly, he didn't need this at all. This item might be used as a communication tool between the Zhen Clan Mansion and the home of the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City.

Zhang Tie intended to throw this item into the Pool of Chaos so as to allow Castle of Black Iron to grow one more special mineral; however, after thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie gave up this idea. He just let it lie there.

...

When he left that hidden room, Zhang Tie really felt full. What a worthwhile journey!

Those bonds and stock certificates might be the property of Zhen Clan Mansion after so many years' accumulation in investment and business. Zhang Tie didn't know about their value; however, the total value of the gold checks was more than 600,000 gold coins, which was an astronomical figure in any place.

'It's an unrivaled enjoyment to turn the enemy's property into my own,' Zhang Tie sighed with feeling, 'It's not due to how many items can you plunder, but how cool it feels when you trample on your enemy and plunder them at your will.'

Such a cool feeling was like making love, as it would make you feel like an immortal being. You would feel a part of your body, or even your whole body, burning with fire.

After returning to the study room, Zhang Tie didn't move the bookcase back; instead, he kept it exposed so that everybody could see the secrets in this room.

Zhang Tie then passed by the bloody conference room and went downstairs to the first floor.

There were some warehouses and basements on the first floor which Zhang Tie would never let go. At this moment, Zhang Tie had realized that plundering an enemy's property was incredibly enjoyable.

Zhang Tie visited the warehouses on the first floor at first with the help of force and keys.

All the items in the warehouses were sealed in crates. The moment he entered there, Zhang Tie had already smelt a fragrance.

After opening the crates, Zhang Tie saw piles of tea leaves. At the sight of these tea leaves, Zhang Tie burst out laughing. 'These items must be transported from the Eastern Continent. These tea leaves are definitely more expensive than gold in Blackhot City. It's really out my imagination that Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City are in this line of worth.'

Looking at those crates of tea leaves, Zhang Tie started the space teleportation function of the Castle of Black Iron. The moment he touched any crate, the crate would be transferred into the Castle of Black Iron in a split second. Zhang Tie's efficiency was even many times higher than that of ten skilled carriers. It only took Zhang Tie a few minutes to move away all the 200-odd crates of tea leaves in one warehouse.

Besides tea leaves, Zhang Tie saw some dyes, shark hides, and many mechanical parts in other warehouses. As Zhang Tie was not interested in these items, he didn't waste his time on them.

After cleaning up the warehouses on the first floor, Zhang Tie came to the basement of the Mansion.

The entrance of the basement was beside the lobby on the first floor. After entering the basement, Zhang Tie saw so many weapons. He then realized that the basement was where the Clan members practiced their fighting skills and placed their weapons. All the weapons here were from the weapon manufacturers under the affiliation of Huaiyuan Palace. There were various weapons here including sabers, swords, and bows, each of which was very well manufactured.

At the sight of them, Zhang Tie instantly transferred all the crates into the Castle of Black Iron without even counting them.

He took away more than fifty crates of weapons produced by Huaiyuan Palace.

Besides weapons, there were also crates of high class wine, which, similarly to tea leaves, were transported here from the Western Continent through ocean trade with symbols on the crates.

Zhang Tie teleported all the 100-odd crates of wine into the Castle of Black Iron without any hesitation.

After sweeping the basement, Zhang Tie found that nothing valuable was left and he was finally satisfied.

After exiting the basement, Zhang Tie fetched a piece of cloth and bound it onto an iron stick. After that, Zhang Tie found a barrel of dye. With the two items, Zhang Tie left the main building of the mansion.

It was already late into the night.

The four walls of the courtyard outside the main building of the mansion were snowwhite. Zhang Tie came to one wall; he then opened the barrel of dye and put his iron stick into it. After that, he left lines of scrawls on the wall.

— Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City colluded with demons; they deserved to die!

— Idiots of Huaiyuan Palace. Zhen's woman married Zhang Taibai! How come you are still confused? What a tragedy!

He then left his name below the two lines — Law Executer in the Dark.

Previously, Zhang Tie planned to write those words only once; however, after painting one wall, he couldn't help but write on the other three walls. As a result, everyone could see them clearly.

After painting the inner walls, he was still excited; seeing nobody

on the streets, he silently moved to the outside of the mansion and wrote a dazzling word "Dead". After that, he scrawled the above words " Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City colluded with demons; they deserved to die!" all over the exterior walls.

After doing all of this, Zhang Tie dropped his tools and disappeared into the night...

Zhang Tie knew that Stars Viewing City would be a mess the next morning.

Zhang Tie didn't care about the outcome of his deed. As a trivial figure, he could only do what he needed to do on the premise of surviving, as he'd done in Blackhot City. For what the Zhang Clan would face and what the Zhen Clan would do, Zhang Tie didn't care. An eye for an eye! Zhang felt not regretful about doing that.

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie flew off the external wall like a huge bird and returned to his own chartered room in the hotel as agile as a cat. Noticing that nobody had been there, Zhang Tie changed his clothes and put away his face mask. He then drank a cup of alcohol and walked out of there.

When he left his chartered room, Zhang Tie glanced at his watch — 02:17 am.

...

"Sir, are you leaving? Plus the alcohol for your favorite car, your

bill is 1 gold coin and 67 silver coins in total!"

'Your favorite car.' Hearing that, Zhang Tie's hair quivered all over. It was as awkward as someone saying 'your favorite shoes' or 'your favorite clothes' to him.

Feeling pretty good, Zhang Tie slightly grinned as he took out two gold coins and threw them to the waiter, saying, "Keep the change!"

...

At 5:11 am, Zhang Tie returned to Jinhai City...

At a bit past 6:00 am, when the sun was about to rise, Zhang Tie walked out of the underground hidden room in Jinwu Castle. He then returned to his own bedroom, throwing himself onto the bed and fell asleep at once...

When Zhang Tie fell asleep, numerous big figures in Huaiyuan Palace were really startled by the same news.

The event was exposed an hour earlier than Zhang Tie had predicted. Before dawn, a bin man on the road outside the Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City was stunned by the word "Dead" and those "slogans" on the external walls. In a few minutes, the armored vehicles of the Hurricane Army in Stars Viewing City arrived and surrounded the whole mansion...

Chapter 362: Gathering of the Elites

Sometimes, Hidden Dragon Island was too isolated a place as Zhang Tie didn't hear any news about Stars Viewing City in the whole day. Therefore, he enjoyed a tranquil day and just recovered in Jinwu Castle.

All-purpose medicament was effective to both interior and exterior wounds; however, it was a bit inferior compared preliminary recovery medicament which was more focused on healing wounds. Two vials of all-purpose medicament would be a bit more effective than one vial of preliminary recovery medicament.

However, all-purpose medicament had one advantage over the other kinds of medicament — it had no side effects no matter how much you drank. In contrast, if you drank too much of other kinds of medicament, you might suffer from an 'adverse drug reaction'.

In the same day, Zhang Tie had drunk more than twenty vials of all-purpose medicament like drinking water. Benefiting from so much all-purpose medicament and his preliminary recovery body, Zhang Tie's interior wounds were almost completely healed in one day.

It was tranquil as usual on Hidden Dragon Island on July 5th as no news came from Stars Viewing City. Zhang Tie became a bit amazed, 'It should have been revealed by now, how can it still be so tranquil here?'

If not afraid of arising others' doubts, Zhang Tie really wanted to go to Stars Viewing City to see what was going on there.

For Zhang Tie, it was like not hearing the explosion after igniting the fuse of a bomb, causing Zhang Tie to be anxious.

'Could it be that another batch of Zhen Clan members came to that Mansion after I left there and rapidly cleaned the evidence? Or, are those people lurking in Huaiyuan Palace much more powerful than I imagined and they have covered up this event after it broke out? Or Huaiyuan Palace is waiting for something...'

Zhang Tie thought too much during the daytime of July 6th...

On the evening of July 6th, after coming back from the wharf after setting free sand scales, Zhang Tie circled around Jinwu Castle to check the defense situation in Jinwu Castle. Lan Yunxi had pointed out many loopholes in the defense and patrols of Jinwu Castle for Zhang Tie. If he wanted to make Jinwu Castle impregnable, he had to fix all the loopholes. Besides raising the strength of the Spirits soldiers to a higher level in a short period, he had another shortcut — to buy another batch of slaves to be guards.

Enough people could fix the shortage in fighting strength and experience. For instance, if there were three shifts of guards on the walls of the castle around the clock, even a fly entering the castle would be noticed, let alone a person.

Zhang Tie estimated that he only needed to purchase 100 LV 2

slaves as guards at most to fix the defense loophole of the castle basically. When at war, at least 1000 guards would be used to defend a castle. Jinwu castle could at least hold another 100 to 200 guards easily.

When the sun set, Zhang Tie stood on a flat roof of the castle. Drinking alcohol, he watched the sunset glow on the horizon and mumbled inside, 'If there's still no news tomorrow, I will go to Stars Viewing City in the name of buying slaves.' With this doubt, Zhang Tie always felt a bit uncomfortable.

"Lord, supper is ready!" called Sonia, the docile and able head of female servants in the internal castle of Jinwu Castle as she appeared behind Zhang Tie.

Although this batch of female servants were not superior, they were better than average. At the moment, all the female servants wore new clothes, styled like those of the Blapei women, and looked pretty good and enchanting. Especially Sonia, who looked more mature and attractive.

"Fine!" said Zhang Tie as he peered at Sonia's plump breasts. Within a split second, he'd started to imagine like any other man, except for apologists and ascetics.

Zhang Tie then scanned his eyes over Sonia's body from her breasts to her waist and bottom. At the same time, the image of Hanna and Linda with tight buttocks and sexy legs instantly flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

'Perhaps, I should prepare that kind of working uniform for each of them.' An evil thought appeared in Zhang Tie's mind, "even if I just watch them walking in front of me with tight buttocks, it would still be very comforting.'

Under Zhang Tie's unscrupulous gaze, Sonia's face slightly blushed. She then lowered down her head bashfully and said in a quivering voice like a buzzing mosquito, "If... if Lord needs, I can arrange two people to serve you in the evening!"

'Serve me?' Zhang Tie cried as he found the coy head of female servants being very funny. Therefore, he directly patted onto her plump buttocks and smiled, "No need! Is this suit of clothes suitable? I thought about another proper suit of working uniform for you!"

"It's very suitable. Now, each of us have three suits; we're already very happy!" Sonia said.

"Never mind, the tailors on Hidden Dragon Island are not very good; when you come to a couture on the continent, you can choose another beautiful suit of working uniform for them. Oh, and cosmetics. I don't know much about cosmetics, but it seems that all of you girls like that. You can buy some proper cosmetics tomorrow and deliver them to all the girls. If you need anything else, just tell me..."

"Thanks, Lord!" Sonia replied happily with her shiny face.

"Haha... no need for thanks; the more beautiful you look, the

happier I will be!" Zhang Tie put it straight as he waved his hand casually.

When Zhang Tie prepared to leave the flat roof of the internal castle together with Sonia, a blue smoke suddenly exploded in the air. After that, it turned into a blue arrow which hung in the air for a long time. Along with this pattern were seven crisp bell chimes from the Hidden Dragon Palace at the top of the mountain.

At the sight of this, Zhang Tie was shocked inside. 'This is the urgent order to summon all the students of Hidden Dragon Island to go back to Hidden Dragon Palace. Since Zhang Tie came to Hidden Dragon Island, he had not seen this used at all. He was told that only when big event happened would Hidden Dragon Palace use this method to summon students.

"I will go to the Hidden Dragon Palace now. No time for supper!" After saying this, Zhang Tie darted outside of the castle.

Zhang Tie didn't know what happened. He only felt that it must be a big event.

Before leaving Jinwu Castle, Zhang Tie called Lenox, the head of guards in Jinwu Castle and delivered an order, "Ignite the main defense boiler of the castle and prepare for the coming emergency!"

On the way from Yunju Mountain to Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie met so many students rushing towards Hidden Dragon Palace. They asked what happened from each other; yet nobody knew.

"Zhang Tie, you're here..." When he was close to Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie met Yang Yuankang. After greeting each other, they rushed forward together.

"What happened?"

"No idea. The blue arrow order has not appeared for many years! I was in White Dragon Town just now; at the sight of the blue arrow signal, I instantly rushed towards here." Yang Yuankang frowned as the two of them kept running forward.

When they arrived at the front of the decorated archway below the Hidden Dragon Castle, two rows of fully-armored soldiers were standing over there. The whole Hidden Dragon Palace looked pretty solemn, ready for an incoming enemy. A robust military officer was standing under the decorated archway with his hand on the long sword on his waist and his gleaming eyes gazing at those arriving students.

When he went through the decorated archway of the Hidden Dragon Palace and came to the lower fort, Zhang Tie raised his head and looked at the position of the main air-defense artillery on the blockhouse of this castle. This time, Zhang Tie was shocked again as the cover of the main air-defense artillery had been opened, revealing a shiny muzzle of the steam-driven ballista tilting towards the sky like a sword pointing at the heavens.

After showing their clan plates, everybody entered Hidden Dragon Palace.

The moment Zhang Tie entered Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie saw the girls and fellows like Zhang Keliang leaving Zhixing Department with weird looks and walking towards the Middle Castle.

"Senior brother Zhang..."

"Senior brother Zhang is coming..."

"Senior brother..."

"Zhang Tie..."

At the sight of Zhang Tie, a great number of students in Zhixing Department, male and female, greeted him, which surprised the other students walking along with Zhang Tie. They glanced at Zhang Tie several times, curious as to why he was so popular in Zhixing Department.

"Where are you going?" Zhang Tie asked.

"I don't know. When we were eating supper just now, some personnel from Hidden Dragon Palace told us to gather in the Middle Fort and stay there tonight, yet they didn't tell us why," Zhang Hongsheng explained.

"Senior brother, do you know what happened?" Li Yurou asked

Zhang Tie. Hearing this, all the other junior sisters fixed their eyes on Zhang Tie. After the party with Zhang Tie in Jinwu Castle the day before yesterday, these girls had become more intimate to Zhang Tie. This time, their eyes were full of reliance, respect, and kindness.

Of course, someone among them were bashful. Every time she thought about how she kissed this douchebag that night and threw him into the swimming pool, Lyu Shasha would feel a fever on her face. Therefore, she silently moved to hide behind a girl next to her. Although that was a crazy night, she was very relaxed as she had released all the stress that had been accumulated in the half year since she came to Hidden Dragon Palace.

Zhang Tie glanced over those girls who were looking at him with different expressions. Two girls among them were silent; yet their looks made Zhang Tie's heart pound — Du Yuhan, being usually open, was a bit bashful now, while Qu Liangying, who was usually shy, looked a bit open now.

"I don't know what happened either. Just wait for their orders. If war happens, we'd better stay in the fort, it's much safer than Zhixing Department!"

Of course, forts and castles were much safer than open courtyards like the Zhixing Department.

"You're right, senior brother!"

"You'd better practice hard so as to form your battle qis as soon as

possible. The more powerful you are, the more chance you will survive in front of enemies. Perhaps, we will know the importance of this very soon!" Zhang Tie said in a solemn way.

The holy war was coming. Glancing over these young faces, Zhang Tie wondered how many among them could still stand in front of him, alive, in one or two decades.

...

Entering Breaking Heavens Department, Zhang Tie found that, not only students in Zhixing Department, even all the students in Breaking Heavens Department had moved. Zhang Tie saw many strange students one after another. All of the 700-odd students were gathering in the Fight Performance Hall of Breaking Heavens Department.

Liu Xu, Zhang Feng, Ma Aiyun, Gu Caidie all arrived. At the sight of Zhang Tie and Yang Yuankang, they all gathered there.

Besides those friends, Zhang Tie caught sight of two familiar people — Zhang Haige and Zhang Haixin, who had been doing tasks since they lost 900 gold coins to Zhang Tie. It was really out of Zhang Tie's expectations to see them back.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Zhang Haixin looked a bit ill-affected; he even responded with a cold harrumph; in contrast, Zhang Haige was much more mature than half a year ago as he nodded towards Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie also greeted him by nodding his head.

Besides the two guys, Zhang Tie saw another two guys — Zhang Qingguo, who was beaten so ferociously by Zhang Tie after he insulted Zhang Tie's dad and Gu Bai, who was taunted by Zhang Tie. What was out of Zhang Tie's imagination was that these two guys got along well with each other.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, Gu Bai looked a bit stiff while Zhang Qingguo lowered his head. They both took a detour around the crowd and disappeared from Zhang Tie's vision.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie slightly frowned his forehead as his heart slightly pounded.

"Argh, here comes senior brother Yu Xiaotian," one girl exclaimed. Zhang Tie then looked at the entrance of the Fight Performance Hall and found a twenty-or-so year old, handsome guy walk inside. He was born to be attractive. The moment he entered the Fight Performance Hall, a lot of girls peered at him with a fascinating look.

Seeing Ma Aiyun and the familiar girls were all looking over there, Zhang Tie slightly asked Liu Xu, "Who's that guy?"

"Yu Xiaotian (TL: 啸天 means soaring towards the heavens), whose nickname is Xiaotian Sword, ranks third on the Hidden Dragon Clan Fighting Strength Rank and second on the Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution Rank. He's the Mr. Right in Breaking Heavens Department. It's said that he's already LV 9. How haven't you heard about such a famous person?" Liu Xu asked out of curiosity.

Zhang Tie thought for a while and finally remembered him.

"Argh, here's senior brother Zhang Wumu!" It was Yang Yuankang's turn to yell.

A guy who was almost two times the weight and 1.5 times the height of Zhang Tie walked inside. Bare chested, he was carrying a huge and terrifying war bow and a huge and terrifying war ax which was longer than two meters. Like an armored vehicle, he walked in step by step, causing a quake on the floor. Some guys standing outside the entrance were affected and were sent flying through the air due to carelessness.

Seeing such a guy in, everybody hurriedly moved three meters away from him.

That guy called Zhang Wumu walked in the Fight Performance Hall; then, he placed his war ax onto the ground, causing a loud noise, "bang"; at the same time, the cracks on the bluestone-made floor started to radiate like a spider web.

After putting down the war ax, Zhang Wumu crossed his arms and stood there like a wall with his eyes closed.

At the sight of his war ax, Zhang Tie's pupils slightly contracted. Based on the experience of using the "Man's Certificate", Zhang Tie instantly identified that the war ax weighed at least 600 kg.

'F*ck! There's such a freak in Hidden Dragon Palace!"

"The nickname of senior brother Zhang Wumu is Fiery-Flame King Kong. He ranks second on the Hidden Dragon Clan Fighting Strength Rank and third on the Hidden Dragon Clan Contribution Rank. He's a brave warrior. His father is the master of Fubo City!" Knowing that Zhang Tie was not familiar with these people, Liu Xu decided to introduce them to Zhang Tie.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie nodded. 'These guys ranking top on Hidden Dragon Ranks are truly special; these guys are the elites of elites.'

"Why haven't I seen them before?"

"These senior brothers all possess high levelled fighting skills. They are always cultivating by themselves or executing clan tasks outside the island. Therefore, we cannot see them easily! Although senior brother Zhang Wumu is still on Hidden Dragon Palace, he has long been settled on by Hurricane Army; as soon as he leaves Hidden Dragon Palace, he will become a head in a division. He has a bright future!" Liu Xu said with an admirable tone.

Zhang Tie smacked his lips as he sighed with feeling inside, 'If not for that small tree, I would not even be a fart in front of these guys...'

In the following minutes, more and more people crowded in the Fight Performance Hall. Figures on the Hidden Dragon Ranks arrived one by another, causing bustling sounds one time by

another. A greater part of the top ten guys had arrived.

"Here comes senior sister Xi..." As someone exclaimed outside the entrance, everybody became quiet in the Fight Performance Hall...

Chapter 363: Action

Lan Yunxi had a powerful qi field. Regardless of her docile performance when she and Zhang Tie were alone, in the public, such as Hidden Dragon Palace, this woman was like a queen. The moment she arrived, all the great figures in Hidden Dragon Palace were defeated.

The reason that most people in Hidden Dragon Palace called Lan Yunxi "senior sister Xi" instead of "senior sister Yun or senior sister Yunxi" mostly lay in that everybody respected her. In their eyes, Lan Yunxi was as glamorous as the sun in the early morning, who didn't feel being oppressive at all. Therefore, they call her senior sister Xi.

At this moment, Lan Yunxi didn't wear a skirt; instead, she was wearing an amaranth armor.

On the back of her armor was a long bow of the same color while a whip-like weapon was circling her waist. It was Zhang Tie's first time seeing Lan Yunxi's weapons and armor. She looked pretty heroic. Together with her amaranth armor, snow-white, tender skin, and black hair, she looked pretty beautiful.

Zhang Tie recalled that he almost occupied the shortcut towards her soul and that raptured kiss on the flat roof of Jinwu Castle, which formed a sharp contrast to the present Lan Yunxi, Zhang Tie's saliva almost flew out.

Lan Yunxi did not enter alone as she was followed by a great

number of fully-armored soldiers and officials of Hidden Dragon Palace. Because some elites in Hidden Dragon Palace had been involved in various affairs of Zhang Clan in different degrees, it was not strange that Lan Yunxi came here with a batch of people.

Seeing her enter, all those in front of her gave a way to her. At sight of Lan Yunxi, Yu Xiaotian revealed a smile as he slightly nodded towards Lan Yunxi.

Zhang Wumu, whose eyes were always closed and arms crossed, also opened his eyes when he heard the arrival of Lan Yunxi. At this moment, his eyes were gleaming like flames. For the other members, especially the men of Hidden Dragon Palace, were all revealing adoring gazes at the sight of Lan Yunxi.

After glancing over the Fight Performance Hall casually, Zhang Tie felt pretty stressed as his rivals in love spread over there. Additionally, none of those guys were average. Except for some guys, almost half of those male guys who ranked earlier on the Hidden Dragon Ranks had adoringly gazed at Lan Yunxi.

Not only males, even females had different looks at sight of Lan Yunxi. Ma Aiyun and Gu Caidie beside Zhang Tie were totally worshipping and admiring her; in contrast, some girls looked jealous and envious — females always got jealous.

Two women standing not far from Zhang Tie slightly raised their jaws and thrusting their breasts the moment they saw Lan Yunxi coming in. They both came in two minutes ahead of Lan Yunxi. It was said they both ranked highly on the Hidden Dragon Ranks and were well-known in Breaking Heavens Department. When they

arrived just now, they even aroused some chaos. However, the moment Lan Yunxi arrived, they became dwarfed at once.

Lan Yunxi directly walked onto the high platform in Fight Performance Hall with her eyes looking steadily forward. Zhang Tie kept his eyes fixed on her. Although Lan Yunxi had caught sight of him, she moved her eyes again instantly, causing Zhang Tie to be a bit disappointed.

"Senior sister Xi is really the ideal role model for all the girls in Hidden Dragon Palace. I will become as beautiful and powerful as her in the future!" Ma Aiyun mumbled while the other girls beside her forcefully nodded their heads.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie just rubbed his face with a bitter smile.

The moment Lan Yunxi stood on the high platform, she looked like a general more than a woman. After glancing over those people at present with a solemn look, she ceased those noises and disturbance instantly.

"Gu Bai, out of ranks!" Lan Yunxi's solemn voice sounded in the Fight Performance Hall.

Hearing Lan Yunxi call Gu Bai, not only Zhang Tie, many people were surprised as they didn't even know whom Gu Bai was. As a result, they just looked around.

"Senior sister Xi, what do you look me for?"

Gu Bai walked out of the crowd with a stiff smile.

Seeing Gu Bai walking out, Lan Yunxi slightly narrowed her eyes as she ordered, "Take him away!"

Receiving this order, the two officials who looked serious instantly charged towards Gu Bai; before Gu Bai responded, they had already searched him all over including his jaw, shoulders, elbows, wrists, palms, fingers, waists, knees, and ankles by patting, twisting, pulling, or tearing. Under Zhang Tie's dumbfounded gaze, Gu Bai's bones and joints had been dislocated all over like a dismantled toy. At the same time, various vials and a dagger were discovered at once.

'Powerhouses,' a thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. It was Zhang Tie's first time seeing people dislocate a person so rapidly.

As a result, Gu Bai instantly collapsed onto the ground like a sea snake whose bones had been taken out.

Everybody was startled. After Gu Bai realized what happened, he shouted loudly out of fear, "Senior sister Xi, what are you doing?" Although his jaw had been dislocated, he could still speak.

Lan Yunxi didn't look at him at all; instead, she looked at the entrance of the Fight Performance Hall. Two officials of Hidden Dragon Palace then hurriedly walked in with two items.

"We found this set of crystal remote-sensing communication machine and this code book underground Gu Bai's courtyard in Blue Dragon Town!"

Watching the two items, everybody in Fight Performance Hall widened their eyes, "How come Gu Bai had this?"

However, at sight of the two items, Gu Bai's face turned really pale, "I... I can... can... can explain!"

Lan Yunxi gazed at him with an icy look. "Explain? Do you want to explain how you exposed the intelligence of Hidden Dragon Island and Hidden Dragon Palace to the outside? Do you know how many losses Huaiyuan Palace has suffered because of you? Do you know how many people your actions have killed? What do you want to explain? Drag him away..."

Gu Bai then was pulled out of Hidden Dragon Palace by two officials directly.

"I want to say something... I want to say something!" Gu Bai shouted loudly as he was pulled away.

"Gu Bai, student of Hidden Dragon Palace colluded with demons and sold intelligence of the Zhang Clan and Hidden Dragon Palace. On the order of the Seniors Association of the Zhang Clan, we are here to arrest Gu Bai. According to the regulations of Huaiyuan Palace, anyone who colludes with demons will be face death penalty together with all of their family members!" An official beside Lan Yunxi stood forward as he read the decree loudly.

Hearing this decree, Gu Bai almost passed out while everybody else at present was shocked inside; most people didn't know what happened, except for Zhang Tie, 'The event in Stars Viewing City finally broke out.'

After the exceptionally tranquil past two days, Huaiyuan Palace's response was completely out of Zhang Tie's imagination. Gu Bai was dug out, which meant that those big figures in Huaiyuan Palace were searching for the mole according to the clues over the past two days. Gu Bai was probably the very person who leaked Zhang Tie's intelligence about the mass-production of all-purpose medicament in Hidden Dragon Palace to the outside.

Of course, Hidden Dragon Palace summoned everybody back hurriedly was not only to arrest a rebel in the public. Zhang Tie speculated that something amazing would happen later on.

Zhang Tie was right.

"From now on, all the LV 6 junior brothers and sisters from Breaking Heavens Department have to stay in Fight Performance Hall tonight. All the students above LV 7 have the right to join a military operation organized by the Zhang Clan tonight. Anyone who'd like to join this action will gain 200 clan contribution points. If you don't want to join it, you have to stay in the Fight Performance Hall tonight too!" Lan Yunxi declared.

"Senior sister Xi, what military action it is?" the handsome Yu Xiaotian asked on behalf of everybody else at present.

"Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City, Langye Prefecture colludes with demons. They are remnants of the Three-Eye Association of demons. According to the decision of the Seniors Association of Huaiyuan Palace, we will start a clan war tonight and crush Zhen Clan to pieces! Not only Hidden Dragon Island, even the whole Huaiyuan Prefecture has been cordoned off inside tonight. Students who join the action tonight will attack Heavens Cold City with the other elites of the Zhang Clan by airships. As this action involves demons, you might meet unprecedented dangers. Therefore, only the students above LV 7 can join it voluntarily!"

The moment Lan Yunxi finished her words, Zhang Wumu had stomped onto the floor of Fight Performance Hall, causing an earthquake at once. Then, that terrifying man laughed like thunders, "Fine, count me in. I finally get a chance to kill those sons of bitches. Previously, I thought that I could not do that until I was in Hurricane Plateau. It's really out of my imagination that Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City were the remnants of Three-Eye Association of Demons. I will definitely join the massacre tonight!"

"Students who want to join this action tonight can select weapons in the armory of Fight Performance Hall now. You have ten minutes to prepare. In ten minutes' time, we will leave Hidden Dragon Island in batches. This action is very important and dangerous. Don't be reluctant. Your fates are in your own hands!"

After saying this, the gate of the armory connected to the Fight Performance Hall was opened. Lan Yunxi walked inside first. Seeing this, a great number of people also walked in the armory without any hesitation, including most of those guys who ranked earlier on the Hidden Dragon Ranks.

After exchanging glances with each other, Zhang Tie and his friends' hearts started to pound.

What was war? This was.

"Go or not?" Zhang Tie asked Liu Xu and Yang Yuankang.

"Of course, everybody should kill those b*stards of Three-Eye Association like Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City. This time, with elites there, we can definitely destroy them. If we did not go there, it would be a pity!" Liu Xu's eyes radiated gleaming light.

"Of course, we should kill those demons' lackeys!" Yang Yuankang also raised his head and said proudly.

"What about you?" Liu Xu asked Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie touched his nose. To be honest, he had killed so many guys from the Zhen Clan, Zhang Tie felt that he had committed to his responsibilities. He was not interested in these righteous affairs or honors; however, as Lan Yunxi had joined, of course he could not just hide on Hidden Dragon Island and wait for his woman to fight outside.

"Then, I will accompany you righteous men!" Zhang Tie revealed a pale smile. Yang Yuankang and Liu Xu exchanged glances with each other before bursting out laughing.

"I will be there too!" Ma Aiyun and the other girls looked very excited.

Hearing those girls' intention, Zhang Tie stared at them seriously, "You should think carefully, battle is not like competing fighting skills in Breaking Heavens Department. On battle field, blood and flesh would spread over everywhere. Can you really stand it? Someone would spit for several days after only one glance."

"Since senior sister Xi is going there, we will also go there!" Face turning a bit pale, Yuan Ziyi asked, "Aren't you going there as well?"

"Don't you know what my nickname is?" Zhang Tie smiled, "I was called flesh grinder on battle field. I killed several dozens of military officers and numerous average soldiers in a few days. I have been adapted to these scenes!"

"You are bragging!" Ma Aiyun smiled.

"This is not the time to joke. Women should not join wars!" Zhang Tie replied seriously.

Ma Aiyun and the other girls then exchanged glances with each other and became a bit hesitant.

"Zhang Tie, you go select equipment in the armory first, Liu Xu and I will go notify Zhang Zao and Meiling. We will gather

outside," Yang Yunkang told Zhang Tie before left with Liu Xu.

At this moment, many lovers were bidding farewell to each other. Some lovers even entered the armory in pairs. As Liu Xu and Yang Yuankang's girlfriends were only LV 6, they were not qualified to join the action; before they left, they hurriedly went to notify them.

Seeing that Ma Aiyun and the other girls were still hesitating, Zhang Tie directly walked into the armory of the Fight Performance Hall.

The armory had two gates. After entering the gate from the Fight Performance Hall, they chose their equipment and weapons before left from the other gate. After that, they gathered outside the armory and prepared to board the airships. As Lan Yunxi only left them ten minutes to prepare, they quickly selected their equipment and weapons.

The armory covering over 3,000 square meters was full of armor and weapons. It was enough to arm a troop of thousands of people. Of course, it could easily arm these students from Breaking Heavens Department.

Considering his sufficient physique, Zhang Tie chose an attractive, heavy, protective plate armor, which boasted super powerful defense ability and flexibility. However, it weighed more than 150 kilograms. The alloy steel on his chest, on his back, and his helmet was thicker than twenty millimeters. The armor extended to his feet. It was definitely like a humanoid tank. Anyone in such a heavy, protective plate armor was freakily

muscular guy.

Having experienced fighting in wars, Zhang Tie clearly knew that individual moving ability was definitely more important than defensive capability; the average person would definitely not choose such terrifying armor. However, it was a waste if Zhang Tie, who had freak huge strength, didn't choose such armor with high protective capabilities. Additionally, Zhang Tie felt that it would not be a bad thing in the fight with the Zhen Clan which was involved with demons. Because, Zhen Clan might have its trump card which could be very destructive.

After putting on the equipment, Zhang Tie only exposed his eyes to the public through the grim ox-horn like helmet.

The moment Zhang Tie prepared to choose a heavy sword which was similar to his "Man's Certificate", he caught sight of Ma Aiyun and the other girls entering armory, heads raising. Zhang Tie then sighed inside and just chose a 1.7 m high heavy spiked shield which weighed over 100 kg.

After that, he chose a set of heavy metal container with nine javelins inside and carried them on his back. He then walked towards Ma Aiyun and the other girls, causing a loud sound.

When those girls were putting on female tight armors, they caught sight of such a monster walking towards them. They were really startled by Zhang Tie's equipment.

"When you land and fight them, remember my current look and

follow me up. With the heavy shield, I can protect you when necessary!" Zhang Tie's voice drifted out of the air holes on the helmet in a low, muffled way.

"Zhang Tie?" Those girls' eyes almost popped out of their heads.

"Hmm!" Zhang Tie nodded, "As your fighting strength is limited, try some agile weapons and equipment; additionally, you six should not separate, try to stay in a group of three. As it's your first time on the battlefield, you should remember that when you see any enemy with their head still attached, stab one more time, regardless of the wounds and blood stains on them. Pay special attention to those who have crossbows, javelins, or put one hand behind their body."

Zhang Tie gained this knowledge on battlefields at the cost of blood and lives. After saying that, Zhang Tie turned around and left, causing a muffled sound, "Kengchi, kengchi". After exchanging glances with each other, those girls then watched the back of Zhang Tie's terrifying armor and felt warm inside.

After leaving the armory, Zhang Tie received one vial of medium recovery medicament and one vial of medium antidote potion at the entrance. He then thought inside, 'This is really a generous treatment from big clans like Huaiyuan Palace!'

Standing outside, Lan Yunxi fixed her eyes on the entrance of the armory. Having not seen Zhang Tie, she felt a bit reassured and a bit disappointed.

Right then, one guy who looked like an iron tortoise walked out of the entrance of the armory. At the beginning, Lan Yunxi didn't pay special attention to him; not until this guy passed by Lan Yunxi did she slightly quiver all over.

"I will beat your buttocks when I come back!" Zhang Tie murmured.

Lan Yuni glared at him initially. Then, she revealed a wisp of smile on her tense face — b*stard.

Several minutes later, with the arrival of some big war airships, all the students who'd joined the operation boarded on in batches. After that, those airships directly flew away from Hidden Dragon Island towards the north in the dim twilight...

Chapter 364: A Destructive Strike

Through the porthole beside him, Zhang Tie saw airships covering the sky, causing a colossal dark shadow; he felt shocked at the scale of the operation.

These actions further displayed Huaiyuan Palace's power to Zhang Tie.

After forming a matrix in the air, two groups of airships covered thousands square meters in the air.

Thankfully, it was evening. If such a swarm of airships passed by in the daytime, the wide area of black shadow would bring an extreme sense of fear to people on the ground.

They boarded the war airships which were built for Huaiyuan Prefecture's troop last year. They were as long as 400 m and weighed more than 300 tons. They could navigate 4500 km at a speed of 160 km/h one time. Therefore, they were qualified to be known as the kings of the skies.

Being different from the cigar-shaped airships that Zhang Tie took before, the triangular shape of the war airships looked extremely like a ray in the sea while its huge body afforded it a super large capacity.

At this moment, sitting in the airship, Zhang Tie was watching the elites of Huaiyuan Palace on the other side of the passenger compartment. He felt as if he were sitting in the passenger cabin of

a giant passenger liner.

In flight, it was so stable that passengers couldn't feel it was flying rapidly at all.

Soon after Zhang Tie boarded, all the students of Hidden Dragon Palace had found out the cause of this action and the details of action. Zhang Tie's puzzlement finally was clarified.

The whole action benefited from the environmental sanitation worker in Stars Viewing City who had discovered what happened to Zhen Clan Mansion of Heavens Cold City before dawn, allowing big figures in Huaiyuan Palace to make necessary preparations before this event was exposed to the public.

For Huaiyuan Palace, the alleged remedy was to cover what happened in Zhen Clan Mansion in a short period so as to spare time for Huaiyuan Palace to implement the action and let the sleeping dogs lie.

Before dawn, those earth-shattering words on the exterior wall and the gate of Zhen Clan Mansion had been cleaned up. All the personnel who knew what happened in the Mansion had been isolated temporarily in case they leaked the news; those who had established partnerships with the Mansion had also been controlled as soon as possible. Since the morning after the event in the Zhen Clan Mansion, some elites of Huaiyuan Palace had stood outside the gate of the Mansion in the uniform of guards of the Mansion after changing their appearance.

Looking from outside, everything inside Zhen Clan Mansion was as normal as usual. Even those business partners of the Zhen Clan accessed the Mansion and dealt with their daily deliveries as usual.

Nobody across Stars Viewing City had noticed the abnormal situation in Zhen Clan Mansion during the next day after the event happened; in the same day, elites of Huaiyuan Palace had figured out the Zhen Clan's arrangements with Huaiyuan Palace and the Long Wind Business Group according to the clues left in the Mansion and the words left by Zhang Tie.

When he found that weird statue being worshipped in the hidden room of the Mansion, Zhang Tie didn't know what it represented, he only felt it was related to demons; however, that statue had caused a great earthquake in Huaiyuan Palace.

This was the first time that the Three-Eye Association of demons had reappeared since the second holy war between human beings and demons. It was much more severe than what Zhang Tie had imagined. Historically, any country or clan found to be involved with demons would be cleaned, causing the death of hundreds of millions of living beings.

Huaiyuan Palace as a whole started to jump like a barbarous ox whose bottom had been slashed.

Zhang Taibai's wife had been arrested and interrogated secretly last night.

The Zhen Clan's moles in Huaiyuan Palace and Long Wind

Business Group had also been arrested when the students from Breaking Heavens Department left Hidden Dragon Island this morning.

Until the students were up in the air, this action was still an operation that was only known by a minority. Only after the clan elites boarded on the airships and had lost contact with outside could they gain details about this action.

The same thing happened in Hidden Dragon Palace, all the students who knew that the Zhang Clan was going to raid Heavens Cold City tonight were in airships or forbidden from leaving Heavens Breaking Department. The clan did this to ensure their safety and the secrecy of the operation.

As this action was related to demons, the clan should be very careful about it. The Seniors Association of Huanyuan Palace were not sure whether demons or demons' lackeys were hiding in Huaiyuan Prefecture and whether the action would arise other chain reactions or not. If a powerhouse above LV 15 was hiding on Hidden Dragon Island and started a war, it would be a devastating blow for the future of Hidden Dragon Palace.

Therefore, after most of the students from Breaking Heavens Palace left Hidden Dragon Island by airships, a senior from Seniors Association of the Zhang Clan had already brought a batch of powerhouses to Hidden Dragon Island.

After covering up what happened in the Zhen Clan Mansion in Stars Viewing City for two days, Huaiyuan Palace chose to raid the nest of the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City with its clan elites after

travelling a thousand miles and determined to destroy it.

By then Zhang Tie understood how smart those big figures in Huaiyuan Palace were. Their tactic was always as swift and ferocious as a lightning bolt.

In the airship, a strange senior military officer of Huaiyuan Prefecture was talking about the situation in Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City and the operation.

"As the Zhen Clan has settled in Heavens Cold City for over 100 years, it is a local power in Langye Prefecture. Its deep-rooted power has already spread throughout most of Heavens Cold City. After more than 100 years' development, the total population of the Zhen Clan, including its direct line of descent, branch families, and various relatives, has reached 110,000 people. The city guard army of Heavens Cold City includes over 45,000 people, among which, almost all the military officers are part of the direct lines and branch families of the Zhen Clan. Besides the city guard army of Heavens Cold City, Zhen Clan has another clan army composed of about 3,000 clan elites — Black Armor Army. Our task is to destroy a fort base of Black Armor Army outside Heavens Cold City!"

When the senior military officer mentioned Black Armor Army, he pointed at the Bluestone Pass Fort to the northeast of Heavens Cold City on the map with his pen.

"Bluestone Pass Fort is a station of Black Armor Army and the portal of Heavens Cold City in the northeast. It's precipitous on terrain. About 1,500 members of Black Armor Army defend here.

They are very powerful. After clearing out the guards there, we will control the northeast portal of Heavens Cold City! Thereafter, the Zhen Clan will have no way to retreat. With the help of our airship and mobile enforcement troop, we can destroy and occupy the Zhen Clan's other forts and passes. We need to eliminate them all. No member of the Zhen Clan is allowed to escape!"

"Sir, what if someone in the forts surrenders, will... we take them as prisoners?" a girl who'd joined the operation asked. She then felt the others all looking at her; therefore, her voice gradually slowed down.

After gazing at that girl for a while, the military officer slowly said, "Black Armor Army is an armed force composed of the students of Zhen Clan. As we've confirmed that Zhen Clan is colluding with demons and is a member of demons' Three-Eye Association, we will deal with them according to the order of Seniors Association and the universal rule of human race on this kind of clan. None of them should be kept alive; even if they surrender, keep killing them to eliminate any further dangers!"

Hearing this, not only the girl who asked this question, even the faces of Ma Aiyun and the other girls beside Zhang Tie turned slightly pale.

"The only troop that we can allow to surrender are those average soldiers of the city guard army of Heavens Cold City who have put down their weapons and surrendered at their own discretion. For others, we should kill them all, including the direct lines and branch families of the Zhen Clan and those who dare to attack us!" that military officer continued to explain icily.

Then, he slowly glanced over all the members in the airship, "There's one point that you should understand that this is a war between demons and their lackeys. If you are merciful and pitiful to any one of them, you might cause hundreds, even thousands, of innocent people to die. If you leave the lackeys of demons alive, anyone among you might die in the future. The decree of the existence of Three-Eye Association is to coordinate demons to eliminate human race or turn them into docile slaves! If we kill them, we are saving innocent people and striving for our right to live freely."

The airship then became silent...

The only pitiful thing for Zhang Tie was that he was not assigned in the same group with Lan Yunxi. At this moment, Lan Yunxi was in another airship. According to the operation's plan, Lan Yunxi was not going to raid the other fort bases of the Zhen Clan like Zhang Tie's group but probably be assigned to destroy the nest of the Zhen Clan.

Zhang Tie patted Ma Aiyun's shoulder to comfort her. Then, he closed his eyes. He imagined two abacuses in his mind and started to practice mental arithmetic by abacus so as to slowly enhance and recover his spiritual energy.

After sweeping away the Zhen Clan Mansion that night, as he predicted, he gained another Fruit of Brilliance which increased his spiritual energy by more than forty times. It was a big harvest. After eating that fruit, Zhang Tie obviously sensed that his mental arithmetic by abacus had reached a limit as he touched an invisible

film. Zhang Tie really expected to tear off the film and checked what was behind it. Faintly, Zhang Tie felt it was a very important bottleneck for his cultivation.

...

Six hours after they boarded the airships, they ate some rations to supplement their physical strength, followed by another long boring wait.

After almost a full night's flight, the airships finally parted and headed for their own tasks. At this moment, everybody had been woken up to prepare for the upcoming war.

The contour of a city with sparse lamplights faintly appeared below the clouds.

Zhang Tie's airship directly sped up towards the northeast of this city...

Several minutes later, a war airship floating above the thin clouds dropped the first white phosphorous gel combustion bomb of 500 kg into a fort in the mountain range...

Then, the 2nd, the 3rd, the 4th...

As a result, white light flashed one by another in the fort; white light flashed across the other places almost at the same time, causing great chaos across the land.

Flames started to spread across the land, making it bright all over. In a split second, the forts below became a sea of flames...

Chapter 365: Unrivaled Fighter

It was pretty a long time to wait until the flames in Bluestone Pass Fort were put out. Although it was only a little over twenty minutes, it felt as long as the period from Hidden Dragon Island to here by airships for them, especially those who had not joined any real wars.

For castles and forts which were mainly made of stones, steel bars, or cement, white phosphorous gel combustion bombs were not used for the purpose of destroying the targeted building structures but to kill live people and destroy some facilities on land.

After being detonated, white phosphorous gel combustion bombs could hardly be put out; additionally, they would stick to the surfaces of objects in large areas and continued to burn. Their burning temperature was as high as 1000 degrees Celsius, under which temperature, as long as it's stuck with gel, most of steam-driven defense facilities would be destroyed.

It's needless to say what would happen if they were stuck to human bodies or something combustible.

From the beginning to the end, the air-defense turret in Bluestone Pass Fort only launched their ballista two times before being ineffective in front of white phosphorous gel combustion bombs. Additionally, the two bolts lost their power when they were still far away from the bottom of the airship. As a result, they just fell off after drawing a parabola in the air.

Soon after being attacked by white phosphorous gel combustion bombs, the steam pipes of the castle or fort would be damaged or meet mechanical obstacles. As a result, the pressure on the turret would drop off, causing the air-defense ballista an adornment.

In this age, the most effective weapon against an airship was another airship. Pitifully, even after the airships of Huaiyuan Palace completed the first round of attack, the airships of Zhen Clan still didn't start a counterattack yet.

This was the advantage of raiding — it never spared any chance for the opponent to counterattack.

After the flames below gradually put out and the air-defense armed force of the fort was disarmed, Zhang Tie's airship started to descend and hovered over a hundred meters above Bluestone Fort. At the same time, they started to fire the ballistas on the airship so as to clean off as many obstacles as possible for the students before they landed.

The small-caliber rapid fire steam-driven ballista was pretty powerful when shooting downwards. After being shot out, the bolts carried a great inertia which could easily penetrate through two men in armor. Any bolt could easily break one's foot or hand.

The terrifying war airship was like an eagle hunting its prey. It constantly launched attacks towards the targets below; as a result, some soldiers who had reluctantly gathered under the attack of combustion bombs were soon shot over by the steam bolts.

"Open airborne hatch cover No.1 to No...."

"Put down the wire cable..."

"Prepare for fire suppression and cover..."

"Fighters ready for airborne landing..."

The commanders on the airships were shouting loudly. In only a few seconds, fighters had readied themselves for airborne landing. Because of the low height and requirements on high speed and efficiency, no parachutes were used; instead, a wire cable was used to slide down. By pulling the speed control pulley, everybody could slide onto land in a few seconds.

They then stood at the entrance of the airborne landing cabin; meanwhile, a chilly wind blew in from the entrance of the airborne landing cabin and constant clear sounds of 'Ding, ding, dang, dang' drifted from the armor plate at the bottom of the airships while being struck by bolts. Although the guards in the forts below had suffered a blow, they still maintained some fighting strength.

At this moment, only about 1000 guards were left alive below. Some were moving in all directions; some were reorganizing themselves to launch counterattack. With only air attack, unless dropping powerful alchemical bombs, they could not completely destroy the fort.

The senior military officer who was interpreting about this

action just now glanced over them and asked, "Who will go first?"

The one going down first would definitely be the main target of the guards below. The first one would face a great danger even on the wire cable.

However, the reason that Seniors Association of Zhang Clan allowed clan students of Hidden Dragon Palace to join this war was hoping that most clan students of Hidden Dragon Palace could experience a war by themselves as a very important force of Hidden Dragon Palace.

Huaiyuan Palace had not carried out such a large-scale operation for over two decades.

Hearing that military officer's words, before the others stood out, Zhang Tie, whose blood had been boiling, had jumped out and grabbed the speed control pulley on the wire cable.

The moment he grabbed the speed control pulley by his left hand and jumped out of the cabin, Zhang Tie had figured out the situation below; at this moment, the first rays of the morning sun had just radiated from the skyline.

Zhang Tie then pulled out one javelin from his back and instantly penetrated through one guy who was aiming at the airship with a crossbow.

Zhang Tie moved very fast, so was the speed control pulley on

the wire cable. He dropped more than ten meters every second. Before he touched the ground, he had already thrown away all nine javelins in the heavy metal container.

After Zhang Tie cleaned his javelin container, the sounds clashing the bottom of the airship also became sparse. Those being more careful would hear the sonic boom after Zhang Tie threw out each javelin.

With nine consecutive sonic booms, the nine guys who posed greatest threats to their airborne landing had been cleaned by Zhang Tie. Watching Zhang Tie's back, a bright light flashed across the senior military officer in the airship.

"One team down every three seconds, come on!" that military officer shouted. Watching Zhang Tie jumping down, the other male students of Huaiyuan Palace all became very dauntless. In a split second, six more people had jumped down the wire cable.

After killing nine dangerous bowmen, Zhang Tie had become the very target of the other bowmen. Thankfully, he descended very fast while the airship was moving above the Bluestone Fort. As a result, most bolts had passed by Zhang Tie's side, except for one bolt which directly flew towards Zhang Tie's forehead and was blocked by Zhang Tie's heavy spike shield.

Although the bolt was blocked, it still made Zhang Tie's arm numb.

Zhang Tie took a chance to peer downwards and saw a long-face

military officer who was more than 30 years old in black armor aiming at him with a crossbow. That man's glare then collided with Zhang Tie's from a hundred meters away.

A great number of soldiers in black armor, long spears in hands, were rushing towards the estimated arrival place of Zhang Tie while someone shouted, "Kill him, kill him. If you kill one enemy tonight, you will gain one rank higher and a hundred gold coins!"

That long-face military officer in the far kept shooting at him. However, out of everybody's imagination, Zhang Tie forcefully swayed the wire cable and loosened his grip when he was still 30-odd m away from land; he then jumped straight down like a meteor.

Nobody could've imagined that Zhang Tie would dare to jump off from such a height in heavy armor, including those military officers and the succeeding students from Hidden Dragon Palace.

If not for the iron-body fruits that he'd eaten and the deep sea pressure that had granted him such a high endurance, Zhang Tie wouldn't have dared to jump off with the equipment of several hundred kilograms from such a height either. This was already his limit of endurance.

Not having imagined that Zhang Tie would jump off from that height, the long-face military officer's second bolt flew past Zhang Tie, 33.3 cm above his head. Seeing this, those soldiers who had been rushing towards Zhang Tie's estimated arrival place also turned around in a flurried way.

Zhang Tie had triggered his rapid moving skill in air.

With a sound of "Bang", Zhang Tie pounded onto land like a shell. At the same time, he waved his shield, causing five soldiers of Black Armor Army to be heavily injured and fly back through the air while sprouting blood.

Soon after that, Zhang Tie sprang up like a lightning bolt once again and rushed towards that long-face military officer. During this process, twenty or so soldiers of Black Armor Army who were rushing towards Zhang Tie were smashed by Zhang Tie's shield and sent flying in the air.

Looking from upside down, Zhang Tie was a madly darting ox while those soldiers of Black Armor Army were as weak as scarecrows and were overwhelmed.

With great physical strength and the bliss of God's rune's effect, Zhang Tie's speed was still amazing even though he was in heavy armor.

Seeing Zhang Tie being that terrifying and directly rushing towards him, that long-face military officer finally became flurried as he shot out the third bolt towards Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie threw out his shield. The rotating heavy spike shield of over a hundred kilograms then cut some soldiers of Black Armor Army into halves before collided with the third bolt shot out by that long-faced military officer.

After throwing out the shield, Zhang Tie sped up once again. Before the long-faced military officer shot out the forth bolt, Zhang Tie had already charged towards him.

"Kill!" Zhang Tie's voice thundered as he shot out his punch.

Zhang Tie's voice was as loud as a thunder that all the other battle cries were covered. As a result, some soldiers of Black Armor Army who were a bit closer to Zhang Tie felt their heads humming as they slowed down.

At the same time, many people in the fort looked towards Zhang Tie.

That long-face officer faced Zhang Tie's punch with his own punch...

However, with only one punch...

That long-face military's body had been broken into pieces like a porcelain dropping off from dozens of floors high and turned into a rain of blood.

"Argh, battalion commander was killed..." Many soldiers of Black Armor Army became flurried...

Behind Zhang Tie, a hundred meter high battle qi totem of a huge

centipede rose up from the burning bloody waves at once and looked down at those soldiers in the fort, full of killing intent. It was like a monster who was going to eat as it covered the whole fort at once. At the sight of Zhang Tie's terrifying performance and immortal battle qi totem, many people were startled. As a result, the remaining soldiers of Black Armor Army across the fort were dwarfed...

"Unrivaled fighter, unrivaled fighter..." Standing in the airship, at the sight of Zhang Tie's excellent performance, that senior military officer was so excited that he shouted loudly, "Who is he? Who is he? Why I've not heard about him before?"

Seeing Zhang Tie in his steel and iron armor, Ma Aiyun and the other students who knew Zhang Tie felt their minds go blank; Zhang Tie was simply a killing machine on the battle field, so ferocious that he seemed like a stranger to them...

Chapter 366: Invitation

As more and more students landed from the airships, the Black Armor Army finally started to collapse.

The first batch of people, who followed after Zhang Tie, were all powerful fighters above LV 7 from Hidden Dragon Palace.

The soldiers of Black Armor Army were elites among the guards in Heavens Cold City; their ability almost matched that of the Iron-Blood Camp's in Norman Empire in Zhang Tie's opinion. However, except for only a minority of military officers who could fight the powerhouses from Hidden Dragon Palace for a while, the average soldiers were all easily defeated by the elites of Hidden Dragon Place.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, the only thing praiseworthy about the soldiers of Black Armor Army was their desperate fighting spirit. For this troop composed of clan members who would never surrender unless their clan ordered them to put down their weapons. This was also the reason why all the clan forces in this age were reliable — nobody would betray their own clan and family.

...

After all the male students from Hidden Dragon Palace had landed, the elites of the regular army of the Zhang Clan also started to slide down in batches. The female students from Hidden Dragon Palace were at the end of the line.

Although Zhang Tie only fought a bit longer than twenty minutes, his heavy chain protective plate armor that radiated metallic luster before had been covered with blood stains like being scooped out of a blood pond. The color of the outside of the armor had become terrifying crimson. Even Zhang Tie had lost count of how many people he had killed. Finally, he could see no enemies around him at all; even if there were enemies, they tried to stay away from him.

...

As more and more reinforcements came down from the airship, Zhang Tie slowed down his killing speed. Instead, he just wandered around the fort and collected his heavy javelins from the bodies of those who'd been nailed to the ground by him.

In a short while, Zhang Tie had collected seven of the nine heavy javelins.

When Zhang Tie came to the eighth javelin, a red-eyed military officer in black armor jumped out of the cloister in the fort and slashed towards Zhang Tie's neck ferociously and swiftly.

"Who are you?"

This military officer was very young; he was only about twenty years old, a bit elder than Zhang Tie. With a handsome face, his fighting strength was between LV 6 and LV 7. He was also very brave. When he attacked Zhang Tie, a battle qi totem of huge black

spider appeared behind him, displaying his fighting strength.

If given more time, this young military officer might have a bright future and would rise to LV 7 soon. If he met someone else, he might have killed that one, however, he'd met Zhang Tie which meant everything would come to an end.

Zhang Tie had exerted the power of the Iron-Blood Fist, which ranked first among the secret fighting skills of the royal household of the Norman Empire in the Waii Sub-Continent, to a terrifying extent.

Zhang Tie didn't even glance at him, instead, he just kicked out sharply, ferociously, and directly. His assailant shot him over twenty meters away like a bolt, causing him hit onto the hard wall of the fort. As a result, he was broken into pieces and turned into a pool of blood and flesh before he could even utter a miserable shriek.

Zhang Tie didn't feel pity for any of the Zhen Clan members at all. He had sworn to uproot the Zhen Clan. Of course, he would not let this man live.

After killing him, Zhang Tie pulled out the eighth heavy javelin from a corpse that had been using a heavy crossbow and wiped off the blood stains on his clothes. He then walked towards Ma Aiyun and the other girls.

The six female students had also killed some average soldiers of Black Armor Army. However, in Zhang Tie's eyes, perhaps due to

being influenced by the miserable, bloody atmosphere or because it was their first time in a war of such a scale, those senior sisters could only exert half of their fighting strength at most.

The six female students were divided into two groups, three in each group as suggested by Zhang Tie. They were fighting more than ten soldiers about five to six meters apart.

At the sight of their pale faces due to fear and exhaustion, Zhang Tie slightly shook his head; war was really not suitable for women!

Carrying his heavy shield and javelin container, Zhang Tie leisurely picked up a long spear and a grim flail of more than 100 kg from two dead bodies and walked at a steady pace.

Seeing that Gu Caidie and the other two girls were a bit tense while fighting three guys in black armor, Zhang Tie instantly threw out the long spear and penetrated through the 3 guys like a kebab, sending them flying back at the same time. Benefitting from that, those girls breathed a sigh of relief.

Zhang Tie waved the heavy, three-headed flail and caused a weird ripple in the air. After being accelerated, the spiked steel heads of the flail had a terrifying impact force which could even match that of a steam punching machine. Simply by waving it horizontally, Zhang Tie had easily broken the helmets and armors of four soldiers of Black Armor Army, causing their necks to sprout out blood along with their brains and pieces of flesh.

With another horizontal sweep, together with the sounds of

broken armors and bones as well as miserable shrieks, another three guys twisted with their weapons and fell down like cornstalks being destroyed by hurricane.

In less than two seconds after Zhang Tie came close to those girls, all their enemies had been cleared away. Seeing this, the girls became startled.

Zhang Tie then walked towards the remaining soldiers of Black Armor Army who were besieging the group of Gu Caidie. Seeing Zhang Tie walking towards them, those guys then shouted loudly with frightened looks; they turned around to escape. However, after running a few steps, they were caught up by a fighter of the elite troop of Hidden Dragon Palace. One slash, one down; in a wink, they all became corpses.

Seeing that the remaining opponents had been surrounded and the situation would be resolved in a short while, Zhang Tie stopped.

From when the first combustion bomb was dropped down until the end of the war, the warfare in Bluestone Pass Fort only lasted less than one hour.

Seeing Zhang Tie walking towards them in bloody armor, although knowing who was inside, those girls were all scared as they moved back subconsciously and fixed their eyes onto Zhang Tie.

Zhang Tie revealed a bitter smile as he picked off his helmet.

After seeing Zhang Tie's familiar face, those girls looked a bit better. At the same time, the group of Ma Aiyun hurriedly moved close to him. Considering the thick blood stains on the ground, they became very cautious as they drew close to Zhang Tie.

"Sen... senior brother!" They even stammered at sight of Zhang Tie.

"Are you all right, senior sisters?"

"Fine!" Ma Aiyun tried to recover his composure. As she was holding her sword too forcefully, her fingers had even become blue, the same to the other girls.

"Zhang Tie, you're injured?!" Yuan Ziyi pointed at a location on Zhang Tie's shoulder and shouted out of surprise.

"Argh? Where?" Zhang Tie started to check himself.

"It's... it's on your shoulder!"

Zhang Tie then touched it and picked off a piece of organ from the connection between his left shoulder and his left arm and casually threw it onto the ground, "I'm not injured, it might be a piece of flesh from one of my opponents!"

A piece of flesh? Hearing this and seeing said piece of flesh lying on the ground, one girl couldn't stand it at once as she turned around and started to vomit. The rest of girls all looked worse for

wear. They couldn't stomach looking at it any more.

Zhang Tie knew the reason that those big figures allowed these girls to join this action — they would probably face more cruel battles in the future, as they were more powerful than average women, they should at least witness and adapt to this bloody environment even though the clan didn't expect them to be the main fighting force on battlefields.

"Zhang Tie..." Liu Xu and Yang Yuankang both walked over with their weapons dripping with blood. Seeing the blood stains all over Zhang Tie's armor, they looked at Zhang Tie in a way which was a bit different than usual.

"Thank god, we're all right!" Zhang Tie smiled, "Don't look at me that way, I've told you that I became accustomed to life on the battlefield when I was in the Iron-Blood Camp of the Norman Empire before!"

"You were in the Iron-Blood Camp of Norman Empire? Are you interested in joining our Breaking-Sun Army after leaving Hidden Dragon Palace?" Saying that, the senior military officer who was explaining and assigning tasks for them on the airship was walking towards them with some elites of the regular troop of Hidden Dragon Palace; he fixed his eagle-like sharp, gleaming eyes onto Zhang Tie like discovering a gold ingot.

He was wearing a violet golden, flowing cloud armor which was usually worn by lieutenant generals in Jinyun Country. However, there was no military rank and badge of any troop. They only knew that this guy must be a high military officer in Zhang Clan;

however, they didn't know which position he held.

"Sir!"

Seeing him walking towards them, those students, including Zhang Tie, hurriedly bowed towards him as a military etiquette.

"How about that?" continued the officer, with his eyes fixed on Zhang Tie.

Chapter 367: Zhang Tie's Ambition

Liu Xu and Yang Yuankang were admiring Zhang Tie so much as many elite students in Hidden Dragon Palace with high talents or fighting strength were selected by agencies or departments under the affiliation of the Zhang Clan when they were still in Hidden Dragon Palace.

This was not rarely seen in Hidden Dragon Palace, yet not everybody could enjoy such a good treatment. Most of the guys selected by agencies or departments under the affiliation of the Zhang Clan were elite students above LV 8 who were going to leave Hidden Dragon Palace. Few students were selected at LV 7 like Zhang Tie.

It was really out of his friends' imaginations that Zhang Tie would be selected by a senior military officer of Breaking-Sun Army on the battle in Bluestone Pass Fort.

Compared to Hurricane Army, which was mainly composed of slaves, Breaking-Sun Army was the real powerful armed force composed of excellent students and Zhang descendants of Huaiyuan Palace. It was many students' dream to be a military officer of Breaking-Sun Army.

Zhang Tie's heart pounded; however, he recovered composure at once, "Mr... may I know your position in Breaking-Sun Army?"

That senior military officer was not angered by Zhang Tie's hesitation and question; instead, he glanced at Zhang Tie with

admiration before introducing himself. "I'm Yang Shaoguang, the major general of Division 306, an air assault troop of Breaking-Sun Army!" After glancing at Zhang Tie, he added, "If you want, I can appoint you as a regimental commander!"

Regimental commander? According to the military establishment of Jinyun Country, this position could lead at least 2000 soldiers. Its military rank was lieutenant colonel which was only two ranks lower than general.

Many students from Hidden Dragon Palace might not be able to be a military officer in the army even if they reached LV 9. Even though they were appointed as military officers, most of them could only start from major. Due to the specialty of its establishment and fighting tasks, the position of division commander, that could be said to be equal to a colonel in other places, was equivalent to a major general in the Breaking-Sun Army. Many people dreamed about being a lieutenant colonel in the air assault army; most didn't have a chance at all.

To be honest, if Zhang Tie was still like before, he might have accepted this position; however, Zhang Tie had just got out of the shackle of the system of Huaiyuan Palace, how could he go back to the past condition so easily and follow others' orders? He would not even accept being a division commander, let alone a regimental commander.

'The holy war between the human race and demons is coming, lackeys of demons such as the Zhen Clan have exposed themselves, indicating the coming chaotic world. I must rely on myself instead of others.

'But how can I improve my fighting strength? It comes from that small tree in Castle of Black Iron and my master whose nickname is Alchemist Lord and is known across Eastern Continent. If I have to follow others' orders at LV 9, I don't feel it is an interesting life! I don't dream of being a senior fighter! Regimental commander? As long as I have money, this father can buy thousands of slaves and also be a regimental commander!'

The above thoughts flashed across Zhang Tie's mind. After some consideration, Zhang Tie told Yang Shaoguang sincerely, "I appreciate that you like me; but I don't plan to join any troop temporarily. When I am qualified to leave Hidden Dragon Island after reaching LV 9, I will have a lot of things to deal with. My dream is to be an alchemist; LV 9 is just the minimal threshold in the world of alchemists. I will not easily give up on my dream!"

"You hope to become an alchemist?" Yang Shaoguang widened his eyes at once with a bit amazement and pity.

"Yes! I set this target before I entered Hidden Dragon Palace!" Zhang Tie nodded.

Hearing Zhang Tie's ambition, Zhang Tie's friends all stared at Zhang Tie with amazed looks. This was Zhang Tie's first time telling others about his lifelong goal. Of course, this target sounded like a poor brat in a mountain village dreaming to be a king. It was too distant and unrealistic.

Alchemists were the top professionals in the Black Iron Age and

also the most terrifying. Many people didn't even have a chance to meet an alchemist in their whole lives.

If they had an alchemist backing them, this battle would have ended in a completely different way; as long as they dropped a destructive alchemical bomb from an airship, what left for them was only to clean the battle field!

After gazing at Zhang Tie for several seconds, Yang Shaoguang realized that Zhang Tie's determination was as firm as steel and iron.

"I also came from Hidden Dragon Palace. According to my knowledge, there are always some students who dream to be alchemist after leaving Hidden Dragon Palace each year. However, none of them have realized their dream in the past past. Young man, I hope you can realize your dream!"

Knowing Zhang Tie's choice, although feeling a bit pitiful, Yang Shaoguang didn't push the matter; instead, he encouraged Zhang Tie before leaving to guide his soldiers who were cleaning the battlefield. After walking two steps, he turned around, "You are Zhang Tie, right? If you change your mind, you can come to me at any time. Breaking-Sun Army will welcome you forever!"

Zhang Tie nodded.

"You just gave it up?" Yang Yuankang stared at Zhang Tie out of amazement, "Do you know what does it means to enter Breaking-Sun Army?"

Zhang Tie shrugged as he replied casually, "I have my own ambition. Compared to becoming a military officer or a general, don't you think that becoming an alchemist would be much cooler?"

"Alchemist is a d*mn cool profession, however, the chances of becoming an alchemist are almost as likely winning the lottery. Many people do not realize this dream even in their whole lives. Some senior brothers in Hidden Dragon Palace also had such thoughts before; however, none of them succeed! I was told that it was very difficult to enter the threshold of this profession." Liu Xu also shook his head.

Zhang Tie touched his nose, "I will try my best. If I don't have such a talent, at least I will not regret not trying!"

"I believe you can. If you truly succeed one day, many people will rely on you!" Yang Yuankang burst out laughing.

...

After the battle, the morning sun had just risen up from the horizon in the far and driven away the last wisp of darkness over the land.

Now, people had already started to clean the battle field in Bluestone Pass Fort. Of course, Zhang Tie didn't need to worry about that. Looking at the smoking Heavens Cold City in the far, Zhang Tie became slightly worried about Lan Yunxi's safety, "How

about Heavens Cold City now?"

"They might have finished as well! It's said that super powerhouses of Zhang Clan are assigned there. Additionally, our people have the advantages of numbers and fighting strength!" Liu Xu answered.

"But there are tens of thousands of people in Heavens Cold City. It's hard to suppress them with only a few powerhouses." Zhang Tie slightly frowned.

Having experience in an army, Zhang Tie knew very clearly that as long as a troop's morale was plucked up, a couple of super powerhouses could hardly suppress them. Although Huaiyuan Palace assigned over 4,000 clan soldiers there, Zhang Tie was still worried about them.

"Big figures should have considered such a big event. I wonder about their strategy in Heavens Cold City!" Yang Yuankang said.

'I hope they've made arrangements.' Zhang Tie comforted himself inside. Not being a big figure of the Zhang Clan, Zhang Tie could hardly find out all the details of this operation; however, Zhang Tie was still a bit worried.

This assault towards Bluestone Pass Fort was really successful, but was not challenging at all. However, when Zhang Tie thought about those killers and the LV 10 guys from the Zhen Clan whom he encountered in Dragon Cave, he knew that the Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City would not be easily destroyed. What was more,

this clan colluded with demons. They should have trump cards and preparations to counterattack.

...

At this moment, battle calls and black smokes spread throughout Heavens Cold City.

Above the two great battalions of City Guard Army in Heavens Cold City, some huge war airships locked the exit of the battalions and built a barrier with a fire wall around the battalions; meanwhile, they shot down batches of soldiers rushing out of the battalions with steam bolts in a terrifying fast speed from the airships.

Some of the air-defenses of the city had long been destroyed. A batch of elites of Huaiyuan Palace occupied the gates in the south and the west of Heavens Cold City. A great number of clan powerhouses and elites were charging towards the inner city of Heavens Cold City, where the Zhen Clan's nest was located.

...

"The Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City colluded with demons. They are the remnants of the demons' Three-Eye Association. By the order of Count Changfeng of Jinyun Country, the Zhang Clan of Huaiyuan Palace are here to exterminate the Zhen Clan!

"Attention! All soldiers and citizens in Heavens Cold City that

collude with Zhen Clan and fight us will be seen as enemies of the human race and will be killed. Except for members of the Zhen Clan, anyone who puts down their weapons and doesn't resist will be seen as innocent and your lives and property will be preserved...

"All those stir up trouble at this time will be killed!"

...

A loud sound rolled over the city from an airship above the highest place of Heavens Cold City. Following which, more than one million soldiers and citizens in the city were shocked so much that their faces even turned pale...

Chapter 368: A Sudden Change at Dawn

Heavens Cold City suffered a sudden assault. As a result, all the common households had closed their doors tightly. Even stores had been closed. Some brave guys peaked outside through windows; however, at the sight of those war airships firing downwards, they all hid back while drawing in their breath.

At this moment, those who were still on the streets were all elites from Huaiyuan Palace or Zhen Clan of Heavens Cold City.

Fights could be seen everywhere in the city. However, the most ferocious place was in the inner city of Heavens Cold City where the nest of Zhen Clan was located in.

The inner city of Heavens Cold City covered 1 square km, which was like an imperial palace being surrounded by courtyard walls and prohibitions. It was guarded by the Zhen Clan's elite troops. Besides a portion of their forces that were arranged in Bluestone Pass Fort, most of the strength of the Black Armor Army was gathered here.

At the beginning of the assault, Huaiyuan Palace's war airships had destroyed the air-defense battery and the peripheral inner city walls.

Huaiyuan Palace assigned 4000 people to Heavens Cold City, including its elite troop and some elite students from Hidden Dragon Palace. They completed airborne landing in the shortest period. After that, they broke through two inner city walls in an

overwhelming manner and drew close to the core of the inner city of the Zhen Clan.

The core of Zhen's inner city was the shrine of Zhen Clan, the residence of the central and branch figures of Zhen Clan and the center of authority from where the Zhen Clan ruled Heavens Cold City. This architectural complex occupied about 135000 square meters. After the elite students from Hidden Dragon Palace completed the assault in Bluestone Pass Fort, the elite troop of Huaiyuan Palace also rushed towards the nest of Zhen Clan.

...

Lan Yunxi who ranked first on Hidden Dragon Fighting Strength List really displayed her terrifying power as the "No. 1 Senior Sister" in Hidden Dragon Palace. In amaranth war armor, Lan Yunxi held a exotic long whip. As a result, no enemy could draw within 15 m of her.

Before Lan Yunxi broke through the last defensive line, a row of soldiers in black armor on the high wall aimed their crossbows towards Lan Yunxi who rushed ahead at the order of a military officer.

Seeing this, Lan Yunxi sharply slashed her long whip in the air like a flame, cutting 5 soldiers in black armor in half.

Facing the rain of bolts, Lan Yunxi contracted her long whip. She then swayed it in front of her and formed a defensive circle. Even a drop of water couldn't break in, let alone those bolts, which were

finally shattered and dropped to the ground.

Lan Yunxi flashed forward like a lightning bolt and reached the foot of the wall in a split second. She slashed her long whip over the row of bowmen on the high wall like cutting wheat straws by sickle, leaving terrifying wounds on them. Finally, they all fell off the wall and died.

Even though Zhang Tie was here at that moment, at sight of Lan Yunxi's ferocious move, he also took a deep breath.

Lan Yunxi then flew onto the wall. Shortly after, the soldiers in black armor uttered miserable shrieks and fell off the wall. In a few seconds, the top of the wall which had a length of dozens meters had been cleared by Lan Yunxi...

On the other side, the elite troop of Huaiyuan Palace also faced a rain of bolts when they drew close to the same wall of the core area of the Zhen Clen.

Seeing the bolts rain, Zhang Wumu, who was holding a huge ax was driven furious. After waving his huge axe to chop off all the bolts, he put down his huge ax and undid his terrifying crossbow from his back.

"B*stards, you dare to play archery in front of this grandpa..." Zhang Wumu shouted loudly like roaring tiger.

Soon after his roar, he had triggered his bolts with a speed

equivalent to a strike of lightning. 4 bolts each time, he triggered 6 times in 1 second, namely 24 bolts. Almost nobody could clearly see how he moved. In a split second, before the 3 rows of bowmen triggered their 2nd bolt from dozens of meters away, they had been shot by shell-like bolts. With shrill shrieks, they covered the terrifying bloody holes on their bodies and were sent flying backwards in the air.

Zhang Wumu's bolts were so powerful that all those who stood in a line had been penetrated through by 1 bolt like a sugarcoated haws on a stick. As long as the bolt touched their bodies, it would make a bloody hole like the rim of a bowl.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Wumu had collapsed the crossbow matrix on the high wall. In contrast, Yu Xiaotian in white had flashed onto the high wall not far from him...

In a twinkling, a sword light appeared on the high wall which looked like a bright crescent. Along with fresh air, the bright crescent just flew across the high wall, causing enemies fall down one after the other while covering their throats. Anyone, common soldiers or military officers, attacking or defending would be killed instantly by Yu Xiaotian's sword...

Seeing Yu Xiaotian jumping onto the high wall first, Zhang Wumu swore inside. After putting his powerful crossbow on his back, Zhang Wumu then lifted his huge ax and rushed towards a gate under the high wall. Being still not there yet, he had raised high his huge ax and threw his terrifying huge ax towards that gate after swirling it in the air, breaking the wind and causing a weird roar.

Despite being covered with copper nails, the thick gate with delicate adornments was shattered in a split second, causing miserable wails from behind. Zhang Wumu rushed through the gate first...

A large number of soldiers from Huaiyuan Palace followed him in...

In a split second, the last barrier of the core area of Zhen's inner city was broken through.

"Those who are not Zhen's clansmen can survive when you kneel down on the ground!" Someone shouted loudly.

...

A senior, some military officers and a batch of powerful fighters were observing the proceeding of the warfare below through that huge crystal optical imaging equipment at the bottom of the airship above the inner city of Heavens Cold City.

"These clan students who ranked high on Hidden Dragon Fighting Strength List are really superb. After being further guided, they could definitely lead an army in the future!" A senior military officer in the same amaranth flowing-cloud armor nodded as he watched the proceedings below.

"How many fighters above LV 10 in the Zhen clan?" The senior

asked a military officer on his side as he watched the proceeding below.

"According to our intelligence and the testimony of some Zhen clan moles in Huaiyuan Prefecture, the Zhen Clan have about 12-15 fighters above LV 10. Zhen Quan, the former master of Zhen Clan might have become a knight!" That military officer replied seriously.

"Zhen Quan? I know him. When he was young, he was also an excellent figure in Jinyun Country. It's really out of my imagination that he is a member of Three-Year Association. Hopefully, he is a knight so that I could fight him." The senior waved his hand and let out a sigh. After that, he recovered composure, "Zhang Yi, you can go down now. If those fighters above LV 10 in the Zhen Clan are still hiding there, they would have no chance to come out anymore. Don't let those babies suffer any losses. They are the pillars of our clan in the future. It's already enough for them!"

"Yes, sir!" A tough man cringed. He then waved his hand and jumped off the airship followed by 10 more powerful fighters.

They just jumped off from hundreds meters high like meteors. When they were close to the land, they started to release their battle qis which swayed like dragons dancing in the air. After that, they struck against the land while in the air to buffer their descending speed before landed safely.

...

When they landed, they saw Zhang Wumu was beat forcefully and sent flying back in the air by a person who suddenly appeared in front of him; at the same time, all the figures ranking earlier on Hidden Dragon Fighting Strength List including Lan Yunxi and Yu Xiaotian were held back by a powerhouse in black clothes and gloomy face respectively.

The moment these powerhouses appeared, those elite students from Hidden Dragon Palace were dwarfed.

Yu Xiaotian stabbed towards that person's chest with his longsword. However, that person didn't even care about it, instead, he directly rushed forward and slashed towards Yu Xiaotian.

Yu Xiaotian then abandoned his sword and flew backward. Whereas that person kept chasing after him although being stabbed by Yu Xiaotian's longsword. Amazingly, that person didn't bleed at all.

By comparison, that person who held back Lan Yunxi was more powerful. After 3 rounds of fight, that person had already forced Lan Yunxi 10 m away. After 2 more moves, he had already broken through the long whip's defense of Lan Yunxi; meanwhile, he stretched out his weird pitch-dark palm towards Lan Yunxi's breasts.

"Watch out, senior sister Xi. These guys are all powerful fighters and don't feel pain!" A student from Hidden Dragon Palace looking

pretty awkward shouted loudly towards her from several meters away.

After slightly clashing against his punch, Lan Yunxi had flashed 10 m away along with his attacking force in a split second. Meanwhile, her long whip automatically returned and twisted around her waist like an intelligent animal. Lan Yunxi then undid her amaranth mimi crossbow from her back.

The crossbow was so small that it looked like a prop for kids. It was only as long as 22 cm. At sight of it, anyone else would doubt about its destructive power.

Lan Yunxi then pulled open her bow and aimed at that person as fast as a lightning bolt...

That man then rushed towards Lan Yunxi. In a wink, he had been 3 m away from her when she had just pulled out her bow.

The moment he found that he was aimed, his face had changed. He then started to retreat in a strange way by flashing left and right so as to evade from Lan Yunxi's attack. In a twinkling, he had been more than 40 meters away.

At this moment, Lan Yunxi triggered her mini crossbow...

Almost when Lan Yunxi triggered her mini bow, that person had already uttered a miserable shriek. All of a sudden, he had become a ball of flame and been burned into ashes in a second.

This shocked everybody else. However, Lan Yunxi didn't stop, instead, she pulled open her mini bow again and shot out for the second time...

That man in black clothes chasing after Yu Xiaotian also turned into a humanoid torch and became ashes in a second. Yu Xiaotian turned around and glanced at Lan Yunxi. He found Lan Yunxi looked pale as she was shooting out her third bolt. As a result, that man in black clothes chasing after Zhang Wumu turned into the third torch and became a pile of ashes in a second.

"Nice shot!" Zhang Yi sighed with feeling as he and the other powerhouses from Huaiyuan Palace blocked all the powerhouses above LV 10 of the Zhen Clan and took the advantage at once.

After shooting out three bolts, Lan Yunxi's face had turned pretty pale as she swaggered all over. Not only Yu Xiaotian and Zhang Wumu who hurriedly rushed towards her, all those famous figures on the Hidden Dragon Fighting Strength List were trying to protect her.

The moment Yu Xiaotian supported her using his hand, Lan Yunxi glanced at him without any feeling. He then moved his hand back as he sighed inside.

"Senior sister Xi, are you okay?" One person asked.

Lan Yunxi took a deep breath as she tried to stand still and waved her head, "I'm okay..."

At this moment, all the students from Hidden Dragon Palace were looking at Lan Yunxi with admiring and aweful expressions. The real fighting strength that Lan Yunxi displayed just now made everybody else give up their ambition to rank top on Hidden Dragon Fighting Strength List.

Zhang Wumu just fixed his eyes on Lan Yunxi with mixed feelings inside. 'Is this the power of the "Breaking-Sun" bolt, the most powerful ancestral bloodline in the Zhang Clan? Although my "Penetrating Through Cloud" bolt is also one of the most excellent ancestral bloodlines in archery, it is much weaker than the "Breaking-Sun" bolt...Why, why such a top ancestral blood line favors a woman, instead of me?'

In front of the others, Lan Yunxi took out of that vial of all-purpose medicament marked with "Manjusaka" and bottomed it up.

After drinking it, she only took a short rest, then, her face looked a bit better. Everybody realized that the three bolts had consumed her a lot of physical strength. Although she had recovered, her fighting strength had declined. Therefore, some elite students from Hidden Dragon Palace stayed beside her voluntarily as her guards.

Holding that vial of medicament, Lan Yunxi gradually recovered her vitality. When she thought of Zhang Tie, she felt especially warm inside.

...

As the last powerhouse above LV 10 in the Zhen Clan was killed, this battle in the core area of the inner city of Heavens Cold City had been settled. As a result, the inner city of Heavens Cold City was surrounded by the elites and powerhouses of Huaiyuan Palace, leaving the remnants of the Zhen Clan inside around the shrine of the Zhen Clan.

The inside the Zhen Shrine was filled with a terrifying atmosphere. Therefore, nobody dared to launch an attack. Instead, they all stopped 50 m away from the shrine.

...

"Forefather, if you don't counterattack, the Zhen Clan will be eliminated today!" A Middle-aged man was forcefully kowtowing and shouting exhaustively outside the gate of the Zhen Shrine while the other remnants were crying surround the round stages outside the shrine.

"Even if I counterattack, the Zhen Clan will still be eliminated today!"

Along with this powerful, aging voice, the shrine's gate was opened from inside. An old man with silver hair walked out of there. After glancing over his descendants kneeling down outside, he raised his head and watched the airship above the inner city. "I wonder which senior of Huaiyuan Palace comes, can we have a talk?"

"After departing from each other in Xiajing City 4 decades ago, I've not imagined that I could meet you again, brother Zhen. Alas, what a pity!"

A voice sounded around the Zhen Shrine from the airship above. It was so normal that everybody could hear it clearly like he was beside each other them.

Along with this voice, a person walked out of the airship in the air and walked downstairs one step by another like there were truly stairs.

All the members of Huaiyuan Palace had their spirits raised as they watched the clan senior walking downstairs from the airship. By contrast, all the remnants of the Zhen Clan turned pale, some of which even quiver all over.

Although they dared to face Huaiyuan Palace, when they faced the powerful oppression of the senior of Huaiyuan Palace, all the people in Zhen Clan were scared.

"It's brother Muen!" At sight of that senior of Huaiyuan Palace, Zhen Quan also sighed, "The 100-year undertaking of the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City will be destroyed today. What a pity!"

"If you've long known about this? Why did you do that?" Zhang Muen watched Zhenquan and said calmly.

"Losers are always in the wrong! As the third Holy War between humans and demons is coming, everything became chaotic. Of course, we want to have a try. Pitifully, the Zhen Clan is unlucky and lost the battle! Huaiyuan Palace has four knights, why can't the Zhen Clan have 9 knights in the future!" Zhen Quan revealed a smile even at this moment.

"As you are just lackeys of demons. It's meaningless for the Zhen Clan to have 9 knights!"

"I don't agree with you, brother Muen. Before the Catastrophe, humans were ruled by demons. In that age, many people knew the existence of demons, even many Chinese were cooperating with demons and became the agents of demons and ruled the Chinese for countless treasures and great honors. It's nothing bad even if we live like that before the Catastrophe! To be honest, no matter how this world changes, there would always be poor and rich, masters and slaves, rulers and servants. All the rules remain unchanged."

"The Chinese still exist now and are very honorable. Some noble Chinese clans have lasted for over 1000 years and become the leaders of human race. What about those Chinese traitors who cooperate with demons? Where are their clan now?" Zhang Muen asked.

After being silent for a while, Zhen Quan said, "After death, I will not care about others!"

"That's why the Zhen Clan has to die today!"

"There are still tens of thousands soldiers in Heavens Cold City. I can gift them to Huaiyuan Palace together with Heavens Cold City for the lives of these remnants. I guarantee, after we Zhen Clan leave Heavens Cold City, we will definitely change our names in a remote area and live in seclusion forever!"

Zhang Muen shook his head. "If you commit a suicide now, I promise that I will keep your bodies complete and bury you all. As the Zhen Clan colluded with demons and went against Huaiyuan Palace, you should have long been eliminated! If I wanted to forgive you, Huaiyuan Palace wouldn't. If Huaiyuan Palace wanted to forgive you, the gold wouldn't..."

"The Zhen Clan has tens of thousands soldiers in Heavens Cold City, we could still fight you. Do you think you can easily destroy the troop of tens of thousands soldiers with these people, even if they are all powerhouses?"

Zhang Muen revealed a smile, "We've already occupied Overcloud Pass and Bluestone Pass. Two city gates of Heavens Cold City are also in my hand. I'm afraid that the 40,000 elite cavalries of Taishi Clan in Langye Prefecture might have passed Overcloud Pass and entered Heavens Cold City at this moment. Zhen Clan's troop in Heavens City could be solved sooner or later. I was told that brother Zhen Quan had been promoted to be a knight. I wonder if you have enlightened the 3-in-1 power. If brother Zhen Quan wants a fight, I want to face him!"

"It turns out that Huaiyuan Palace has already occupied Heavens Cold City and cooperated with the Taishi Clan. What a good plan!

What a good strategy!" Zhen Quan let out a deep sigh as he looked in the sky.

"Thanks, whether you want to commit a suicide or have the last fight, brother Zhen Quan?"

"I've already known your real fighting strength, brother Muen. Even if I want to fight to death, I still have no chance to win. I have the last question. How does Huaiyuan Palace find our arrangement in Huaiyuan Prefecture? If I don't find out, I will be regretful even after death!"

Hearing this question, the senior of Huaiyuan Palace became a bit hesitant. 'If not for that that "Dark Law Executer", I'm afraid that Huaiyuan Palace would still be in the dark. However, who on earth is the "Dark Law Executer"? Is he one person or a group of people? Huaiyuan Palace is still confused about this even now. What Huaiyuan Palace only confirms about the Dark Law Executer is that this man or one of these people have formed Iron-Blood Battle Qi.'

Huaiyuan Palace was still looking for the "Dark Law Executer".

Of course, as a senior of Huaiyuan Palace, he would not tell Zhen Quan about this fact. Therefore, Zhang Muen became silent.

Seeing this, Zhen Quan thought of another reason.

"I know, but Heavens Cold City belongs to the Zhen Clan. It's

built by the Zhen Clan after generations. Nobody can take it away. Even though the Zhen Clan is going to die today, Heavens Cold City should be buried together with us. How come it be taken away by others!" Saying this, Zhen Quan revealed a wisp of a grim and crazy smile.

Hearing this, Zhang Muen became vigilant as his face slightly turned, "What do you mean?"

Looking gradually made, Zhen Quan took out of a twisting pitch-dark silkworm from his sleeve. Being as wide as a kid's arm, it was dozens times bigger than common silkworms

The moment he took it out of his sleeve, that silkworm had started to twist, uttering a very harsh sound. It was as sharp as drawing a piece of glass on the wall, causing people to be irritated instantly.

The moment the senior caught sight of that twisting and screaming worm, Zhang Muen's face had completely changed. Being driven furious at once, he roared, "All the members from Huaiyuan Palace withdraw from Heavens Cold City right now!"

"Let the Heavens Cold City of the Zhen Clan be the gift to welcome the demons' army into Waii Sub-Continent! Hahaha..." With crazy laughs, he broke the worm by hand.

The moment the worm was broken, all the remnants of Zhen Clan popped out their eyes as they started to roll on the ground, uttering miserable shrieks. At the same time, numerous miserable

shrieks could be heard everywhere across Heavens Cold City, making it a hell-like execution platform.

With a growl, Zhang Muen rushed towards Zhen Quan. With just a punch which radiating red light, Zhen Shrine and those remnants of the Zhen Clan who were rolling over the ground miserably had been broken in pieces.

Zhen Quan jumped up and evaded Zhang Muen's terrifying smack. At the same time, he pulled out his longsword and started a fight with Zhang Muen...

...

After Zhang Muen delivered the order, none of the elite powerhouses of Huaiyuan Palace in the inner city of Heavens Cold City asked why. Instead, they directly left the inner city of Heavens Cold City as soon as possible. Nobody dared to delay.

Followed by the other elite students from Hidden Dragon Palace, Lan Yunxi also left there rapidly. Few people knew what that worm was, but everybody knew that the senior of Zhang Clan would never deliver such an order if not facing an extreme situation.

Soon after the powerhouses of Huaiyuan Palace left that core area, the powerful qi had spread from the location of the Zhen Shrine to all directions, causing an earthquake. As a result, the houses and all buildings behind them started to collapse consecutively. All those with a slower response had been injured.

The fight between two knights was really destructive. When they rushed out of the inner city of Heavens Cold City, the complete core area of inner city had been totally ruined, closely followed by constantly booming sounds.

...

Zhang Tie, who was in Bluestone Pass Fort had also noticed the abnormal situation in Heavens Cold City. Even though it was dozens of miles away, Zhang Tie could still see the two battle qis rising into the sky like two columns of light reaching towards the sky...

Chapter 369: The Event in Heavens Cold City

For years to come, people would still consider what the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City, Jinyun Country of Waii Sub-Continent did on July 7th, 890 of Black Iron Calendar as the symbolic event of the arrival of the Third Holy War between humans and demons by many people.

The arrival of the previous 2 holy wars between humans and demons were both symbolized by human cities being destroyed or occupied by demons. However, the event in Heavens Cold City was not launched by the demons themselves, but Heavens Cold City still collapsed. Although it was demons' lackeys and remnants of Three-Eye Association, this event still started the Third Holy War.

According to the public information, before the event in Heavens Cold City, there were in total, a population of over 1.3 million in Heavens Cold City. After that event, although with the efforts and rescue from all parties, less than 30,000 people survived. From then on, Heavens Cold City had deteriorated into a ghost city.

The event in Heavens Cold City was a tragedy of the human race. If you wanted to find something positive from this tragedy of 1 million casualties, you might find that those who were still puzzled about holy war became clear-minded at once after that.

This event was like thunder on a sunny day as it woke up many people who were still not well prepared for the coming holy war. After the information that was only known by a minority of people was released to the public, most of the average people had more time to prepare for the coming drastic change.

It wasn't only commoners who were stunned. Even those who had prepared for the coming holy war had been shocked by this event. especially for the later. After knowing the details of the event in Heavens Cold City, everybody knew that the Third Holy War would be unprecedented.

The reason that big figures made this judgment was that worm in Zhen Clan which caused the event in Heavens Cold City.

The worm being broken was not common. It was the terrifying living being of the demons——puppet worm.

This kind of worm appeared late into the Second Holy War. Because of its appearance, the Second Holy War lasted another 15 years. Billions of people died directly or indirectly because of this kind of worm. Some human historians even asserted that if puppet worm appeared five decades earlier or if the demons realized mass-production of puppet worms, the human race might have disappeared today.

Puppet worms didn't have powerful fighting strength or lethality but they were terrifying due to the following 2 reasons.

First, a mature puppet worm was like a terrifying queen ant or queen bee as it could lay hundreds of thousands of eggs a day. Their eggs were very small as they were only several times larger than common colibacillosis, namely 15-30 microns. People couldn't see them with the naked eye. We could only see them through a microscope.

Additionally, eggs of puppet worms had super terrifying survival capability and environmental adaptability like some powerful bacteria——Under -50 °C, their eggs could survive for half a year; under 120°C, their eggs could survive longer than 48 hours. Most common pesticides and sterilization drugs were ineffective against their eggs.

Once the egg entered the human body, it could reach people's brain through blood circulation. After that, it started to grow and incubate in people's brain. When it matured in people's brain, its host would die. As a result, the host's body would become a walking dead under the control of that parent puppet worm. The host would then have no self-awareness, sense of pain or feelings, and liked to kill and swallow the blood and flesh of all the living beings, even more ferocious than wild beasts.

Even wild beasts had spirituality. The one acting as the host of eggs of a puppet worm was not even a man at all. It was only a zombie with people's skin, blood, and flesh.

Towards the end of the Second Holy War, demons had built tens of millions of puppet armies in only a few years through a few puppet worms which brought a huge catastrophe to the whole human world.

It could be said that each puppet worm cultivated by demons had killed many people.

For the human race, the puppet worm was an almost unrivaled

living being. After paying a great price for that, people started to know the properties of this terrifying living being.

Eggs of puppet worm were very powerful, they were hardly discovered and eliminated. However, they had a weakness—all the eggs relied on the existence of the parent puppet worm very much. Since their birth, each puppet worm had established a mysterious, permanent contact with the parent puppet worm.

Although puppet worms could survive many harsh conditions, even after incubation, as long as they left the parent puppet worm about 200 km or longer, they would die without exception. All the eggs relied on the parent puppet worm.

Although the parent puppet worm could control numerous brains hosted by its eggs, it could not protect itself as it was very weak and needed other puppet worms' protection, without which, even a dog could kill it by eating it, let alone a person.

Furthermore, it took eggs 4 years to turn a host into a zombie. During this period, if the parent puppet worm suddenly died, all the eggs would complete incubation in an extremely short period. Eggs that complete incubation in this way would be out of the control of the parent puppet worm. Instead, they started to attack and destroy any living beings, including those who were hosted by eggs from a different parent puppet worm.

This destructive attack was like revenge for the death of the parent puppet worm. They were driven mad and became irresistible within the effective distance from the place where the parent puppet worm died.

Although Zhang Quan just broke a parent puppet worm, actually, he killed all the people who were being hosted by the eggs of that parent puppet worm.

According to the survey and analysis of this event, when the Zhen Clan ruled Heavens Cold City, the Zhen Clan threw the eggs of the parent puppet worm into the running water supply system in Heavens Cold City, letting them easily enter mouths of about 1 million people, including soldiers and common citizens and find their own hosts. Knowing such a grim means they used, everybody was shocked.

What made someone more frightened and surprised was not puppet worms themselves, but the fact that puppet worm was in the Zhen Clan's hand.

A puppet worm was not a cheap cabbage as it was extremely precious for the demons. In the Second Holy War, only very few demon armies were provided with one puppet worm, which could only be managed by the colonel of the army. However, the Zhen Clan had one. What did this mean?

The Zhen Clan was a member of Three-Eye Association, the remnants of demons while Three-Eye Association was the peripheral force of demons among the human race. However, the extremely precious puppet worm appeared in the hand of the peripheral force of demons. What about demons themselves? How many puppet worms did they truly have? Whether demons had cultivated more powerful puppet worms? How many remnants of Three-Eye Association like the Zhen Clan were hiding across the

Waii Sub-Continent?

These were the most important questions.

For smart guys who knew the details of this event, now that demons' lackeys had started to throw the eggs of a parent puppet worm in Heavens Cold City, the Third Holy War would break out in less than 4 years based on the time that eggs of parent puppet worms need to incubate.

Actually, it should be faster as people didn't know how long ago the Zhen Clan threw the eggs of the parent puppet worm into Heavens Cold City. If the Zhen Clan had just thrown them into the water supply system of Heavens Cold City yesterday, the Third Holy War would break out in 4 years. But if they had thrown them inside 1 year or 2 years ago, less time was left.

If not the arrival of Third Holy War, the Zhen Clan would never dare to change so many people into zombies controlled by a parent puppet worm. If they dared to do that, the Zhen Clan would become the public enemy of the human race and be eliminated at once.

Only at the beginning of the holy war or after it started did Zhen Clan dare to do such a merciless thing in Heavens Cold City with demons as its reliance.

Therefore, when those eggs in Heavens Cold City would complete their incubation if their parent puppet worm was not killed was very important.

Certainly, as the participant and witness of the event in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie gradually knew about the above information. However, after receiving the first order, all the clan fighters and elites of Huaiyuan Palace in Bluestone Pass Fort felt strange.

The order was delivered from the airship—all the elites of Huaiyuan Palace in Bluestone Pass Fort should chop off all the heads of the Zhen clan's soldiers as fast as possible. What a bloody yet puzzling order!

When they executed this order, many people were confused, including Zhang Tie. But when the greater part of the corpses' heads were chopped off and the rest corpses whose heads had not been chopped off started to stand up by twisting their bodies, all the girls present were scared and started to cry...

Chapter 370: Demon-Killing Javelin Lord

In the following days, Zhang Tie felt like he was entering a dark, disgusting nightmare realm. What torture!

After July 7th, the elites of the Zhang Clan from Huaiyuan Prefecture and the Unrivaled Cavalries of the Taishi Clan from Langye Prefecture withdrew 15 km away from Heavens Cold City and surrounded Heavens Cold City firmly. Any demonized people running out of Heavens Cold City would be struck down by the troops.

Those demonized people included males, females, the young and the old. Most of them were commoners before the event, therefore, their fighting strength was limited. Even though some of them had fighting skills, they couldn't match the troops of the Zhang Clan and the Taishi Clan at all.

Before killing these demonized people, Zhang Tie was struggling inside. The first wave of demonized people came rushing towards him from inside Heavens Cold City and were wearing commoners' clothes.

However, these people's eyes...They looked pretty grim while uttering a strange and meaningless sound. With various weapons in hands such as wooden sticks and kitchen knives, more than 400 demonized people rushed out of Heavens Cold City.

"These residents in Heavens Cold City had been killed by demons and the Zhen Clan. They weren't human anymore. They are just

demonized creatures and zombies. They had been controlled by puppet worms in their heads!"

A military officer of Huaiyuan Palace shouted hoarsely. After that, he shot out one bolt and broke the head of a demonized zombie rushing out of Heavens Cold City.

When that demonized zombie's head was broken, his brains sprayed in all directions. Zhang Tie then found a disgusting half-palm sized, pink, smooth demon which looked like an octopus with many tentacles.

When it dropped onto the ground, it started to creep like an octopus going ashore.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie grit his teeth out of fury and started his massacre from then on.

For girls from Hidden Dragon Palace, more than 90% of them could only persist for several hours. They then withdrew from this place, leaving male students here.

For most of them, they would not hesitate at all no matter how cruel the fight was and how ferocious the enemy was. However, facing those commoner's bodies which had been controlled by puppet worms, many of them could hardly accept it.

Zhang Tie didn't know how had he carried on these days. When he chopped off the head of a 7-year old girl, Zhang Tie seemed to

hear something break in his heart.

From then on, Zhang Tie became as firm as iron inside and totally turned himself into a machine that reaped the lives of demonized zombies.

On July 8th, some columns of black smoke rose into the sky outside Heavens Cold City. They were collecting the corpses of the demonized zombies and burning them. From then on, the black smoke columns didn't disappear for a long time.

On July 9th, the airships and clan members of the Lan Clan, Ou Clan, Dantai(澹台, a Chinese surname), Wang Clan and Li Clan arrived at Heavens Cold City consecutively. They were 5 of the 6 clans that ruled Jinyun Country.

After they arrived at Heavens Cold City, they encamped 15 km away from Heavens Cold City and joined the clean-up of the zombies running out of Heavens Cold City.

On July 10th, more airships arrived at Heavens Cold City. By then, the sky nearby Heavens Cold City was covered with airships of various countries and powers on the continent. They were here to get first-hand information about the event in Heavens Cold City.

On the same day, although big figures didn't want to release the news of the coming Holy War, the event in Heavens Cold City finally spread out and shocked the whole Eastern Continent.

On July 11th, after knowing about the event in Heavens Cold City, more and more people arrived at Heavens Cold City, including representatives from small clans, wandering warriors, journalists from some famous media outlets, tipsters and those who wanted to make money here.

For some, Heavens Cold City was a dangerous dead city. However, the wealth in this city still existed. All the wealth in Zhen Clan or those powerful households were still in Heavens Cold City. As long as one was fearless enough, he could go in there and find them.

Although many people came here for wealth, nobody was brave enough to go inside. At this moment, there were at least 1 million zombies in Heavens Cold City. Meanwhile, tens of thousands elites from 6 influential clans of Jinyun Country and 40,000 unrivaled cavalries were surrounding the city firmly. Nobody was courageous enough to enter.

At this time, Heavens Cold City was like an alluring prey. Before those ferocious lions ate their fill and left, no wolfhounds dared to draw close. Instead, they could only wander around the prey. Those left by lions might be a grand feast for the wolfhounds.

...

On July 13th...

On the 6th morning, since he came to Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie woke up after a nice sleep last night. He had not slept for

consecutive 3 days. After pulling open his sleeping bag, Zhang Tie walked out of the tent.

As Zhang Tie slept in clothes last night, he got up directly.

As the sun had just come out, the moment he walked out of the tent, Zhang Tie could see the columns of black smoke in the distance. Although he was far away from, as he was on a plain, Zhang Tie could still smell the slightly scorched odor from those burning corpses in the breeze.

After cleaning up at the riverside, Zhang Tie then started to gnaw his compressed high-heat dried meat and drank water. His mind then gradually recovered from the numbness due to the 3-day endless massacre.

All the provisions for elites and soldiers of Huaiyuan Palace were transported from Huaiyuan Prefecture by Huaiyuan Palace's airships because all the food close to Heavens Cold City made people scared.

Although based on the experience in the Second Holy War, after the death of the parent puppet worm, except for the eggs that had been incubated in a host's brain, all the other eggs that had no hosts would die. However, after hundreds of years, nobody could guarantee this remained unchanged just like nobody could have imagined that the Zhen Clan had a parent puppet worm one week ago.

The refugee camp of Heavens Cold City was at the riverside,

which occupied hundreds of thousands square meters. Now, the riverside had been covered with new tents.

From July 7th to now, there were still living people escaping the city. The number of live people escaping Heavens Cold City together with the troops of the Zhang Clan and the Taishi Clan was the most. In the following days, although they were still trying their best to rescue the living and had assigned small batches of elite troops inside the city to search for people as well as cleaned out the demonized zombies near the city gates several times, the number of living being rescued decreased gradually.

Yesterday, Zhang Tie fought throughout the day near the north gate and killed those demonized near the north gate of Heavens Cold City. However, he only saved 5 live people. Gradually, it became increasingly hopeless for people to survive inside.

...

Those in the refugee camp looked numb and dull. Although it was morning, the refugee camp reminded you of the dawn. There was no joy in the refugee camp. It was filled with low sobs and nightmare-like screams. Although they had escaped from Heavens Cold City, they had not recovered. Even while they slept, they would still always wake up with a start due to small sounds.

"Argh, stay away from me, stay away from me, don't eat me..."

The door of a tent in front was suddenly opened while the disheveled man ran out of it. He directly rushed towards Zhang Tie

madly followed by some people, "Stop him, he got sick again!"

When he ran in front of Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie stretched out his hand and lifted him up like he was grabbing a chicken. After that, he lightly patted the back of that man's neck, causing him pass out.

Those people chasing after that man were in doctors' working uniform. They were assigned from Huaiyuan Prefecture and Langye Prefecture to cure people in the refugee camp.

At the sight of Zhang Tie, those doctors became a bit scared as Zhang Tie was in a field combat suit covered with an invisible iron-blood killing qi after several days of killing.

After these days of killing, Zhang Tie didn't remember how many demonized people he had killed, at least 2000. Like those soldiers who had experienced fights many times, Zhang Tie's killing qi due to committing massacres was also an invisible threat to others.

"Argh, thanks, thanks!" Those doctors hurriedly appreciated Zhang Tie.

"It was a pleasure!" Zhang Tie replied calmly.

Realizing that Zhang Tie was easy-going, those doctors let out a deep sigh. Two male doctors directly took the man from Zhang Tie's hands. An elder doctor rapidly checked whether that man was still alive. At that moment, even if Zhang Tie killed him, nobody would blame Zhang Tie.

After checking that man's situation, the doctor found that he just passed out. He then became reassured as he ordered the other two younger doctors. "This man has been stimulated too much spiritually, feed him more vermilion soul-easing powders today. Carry him back into the tent first!"

"Yes, sir!" The other two younger doctors then carried the man back into the tent.

"Alas, what a pitiful man..." The elder doctor sighed deeply as he followed them back into the tent.

Similar things happened numerous times in the refugee camp these days. Although many people had escaped Heavens Cold City, they were stimulated severely spiritually and were driven mad. Furthermore, some people who could not accept the fact that all of their relatives had died chose to commit suicide. One or two refugees would commit suicide in the refugee camp every day.

Walking in the refugee camp and glancing over those refugees who looked numb and rueful, Zhang Tie was filled with mixed feelings inside.

These days, as long as he was free, Zhang Tie would come to have a look at the refugee camp. After glancing over those numb and resentful faces, he then walked towards the battlefield and killed every demonized person he saw.

Even Zhang Tie didn't know how could he become like this.

Perhaps, he did this for a bit of comfort and to search for something meaningful.

Zhang Tie gave all the warm dried beef and rations that he received today to some kids who were gazing at him and desiring his food with fearful looks.

At this time, most of the female students from Hidden Dragon Palace were doing various jobs in the refugee camp so as to normally run the refugee camp.

Zhang Tie caught sight of Yuan Ziyi. She was very lively in Hidden Dragon Island, however, she now looked a bit haggard and sad due to the affairs in the refugee camp these days. She was delivering dried rations and disinfectant to those people in the refugee camp. A lot of people were lining up in front of her for the items looking like they had lost their souls.

"Only so little today? We've got some dried meat yesterday, where's it today? How could this make us full?" One guy shouted loudly with the dried rations in hand, arising the others' attention at once.

"Latest materials are still under collection in Langye Prefecture. They are on the way now. The road near Overcloud Pass is not convenient for the transport vehicles to pass. These items were transported by airships, therefore, they are limited in quantity!" Yuan Ziyi explained patiently. Having experienced so much these days, this fiery girl also became patient.

"I don't care, I want two packs!" Saying that he directly took one more item away in front of Yuan Ziyi.

"One pack for one person!" Yuan Ziyi grabbed that man's hand and continued to explain patiently.

"If not for you, how could Heavens Cold City become like this? Heavens Cold City was good before; however, after your arrival, it was ruined; therefore, you need to be responsible for what happened in Heavens Cold City!"

Given that Yuan Ziyi was a young girl, that man became rude instantly as he pointed at Yuan Ziyi's nose and swore. "Little girl, I tell you, this father had numerous wealth in Heavens Cold City. I dressed and ate well every day. If not for you, how could I lose everything? Do you think that you could drive me away with such little things? No way! You should compensate every copper coin that I lost in Heavens Cold City! This father has determined to take two packs today. You owe me! Let go, if not, I will teach you how to do..."

Yuan Ziyi was so angry that she quivered all over. Working so hard in refugee camp every day, she was still sworn in this way, Yuan Ziyi had never suffered this since she was born. Therefore, tears started to fill her eyes.

With a cold look, Zhang Tie then walked over there. He patted the man's shoulder first. When that guy looked around, Zhang Tie slapped his face directly, causing some of his teeth to go flying out at once along with a clear sound "Pah".

"Argh, help, they're killing me..." That man shouted loudly.

Zhang Tie then smacked him with the back of his hand, causing another tooth to come flying out. The man wanted to continue to scream, however, at sight of Zhang Tie's distant look and killing qi all over, he forcefully swallowed his words back.

Zhang Tie then stared at his hand. Seeing this, that man hurriedly put down the other pack. However, seeing Zhang Tie's eyes were still fixed on his hand, the man hurriedly put down his own pack.

"Senior sister, keep working, no need to shed tears for such a person. There are so many bastards like him in this world. No everybody in the refugee camp is pitiful. I heard this man wanted us to compensate his wealth to him, I will send him back to Heavens Cold City and return his wealth back to him right now!" After saying this, Zhang Tie smiled at Yuan Ziyi before directly holding the man's neck and dragged him out of the refugee camp like dragging a dog. The surrounding people gave way to Zhang Tie automatically.

The refugee camp was next to the station and defense line of the troops that surrounded Heavens Cold City. Zhang Tie dragged the man and walked towards Heavens Cold City after passing by the defense line easily. With his neck being held, the man could do nothing but pant. Seeing Zhang Tie dragging a person, nobody asked him what for, no matter the Zhang's troop or Taishi's unrivaled cavalries. Neither did they glance at that guy at all. After these days, Zhang Tie's performance in Heavens Cold City had won

many people's respect.

Even though they didn't know Zhang Tie's name, many of them had remembered Zhang Tie's face and knew that the master of this face had killed and saved the most people in Heavens Cold City these days.

On the battlefield, those who were powerful and liked to save others at the risk of their own lives would certainly gain the respect from their comrades in arms. Since Zhang Tie's javelin throwing skill was too attractive and shocking, he became unique among all the Zhang Clan's powerhouses who excelled at using crossbows. Therefore, Zhang Tie, as a young powerhouse in Hidden Dragon Palace was pretty well-known among the Taishi Clan's unrivaled cavalries. He started to be considered on the same level as Zhang Wumu and became the most powerful man next to Lan Yunxi.

Like that of the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City, the Taishi Clan in Langye Prefecture also had tens of thousands of soldiers and was a local power. Of course, young elites like Zhang Tie who would probably become an influential figure in Zhang Clan were more important in the Taishi Clan's eyes. Although the Zhang Clan only had 8 cities, the comprehensive strength of Yiyang City alone was at least more powerful than the sum of 10 common cities. Therefore, a clan's power could not be simply judged by the number of cities it owned.

The comprehensive strength of a clan with 4 knights was at least 100 times greater than that of a local power which only occupied a remote city. Therefore, only after a few days, not only common

soldiers, even the greater part of military officers in the unrivaled cavalries of Taishi Clan had been able to recognize Zhang Tie.

After passing by the defense line of the Zhang Clan and Taishi Clan, although being still 10 more km away from Heavens Cold City on the plain in the daytime, they could still see a couple demonized people wandering in the wild. The closer they were to Heavens Cold City, the more demonized people they would see.

Seeing those demonized people in the distance, the man's face turned completely pale.

Right then, a team of 100 unrivaled cavalries of Taishi Clan rushed out of their station. It seemed that they were going to complete their daily task——cleaning the wandering demonized people in the wild. When they passed by Zhang Tie, the head glanced at Zhang Tie. With a voice "Yi?", he raised his head while all the other unrivaled cavalries stopped several meters away from Zhang Tie, indicating their excellent riding skills and fighting strength.

Zhang Tie looked at them. Although being several meters away from him, the warhorses in armor which were pacing in their places seemed being startled by something. With a low neigh in unison, they moved several steps back at the same time, almost causing the cavalries to fall down. The military officer was stunned inside, 'What a heavy killing qi! Even the warhorses are scared. How many demonized people has he killed to form such a heavy killing qi.'

"Zhang Tie..." That military officer directly called his name. He

then peered at that person in Zhang Tie's hand and pointed at him, "Who's he..."

Zhang Tie then revealed a smile, 'This military officer looks familiar. I have seen him several days ago. We even fought together and killed many demonized people.'

"This guy wants us to compensate him for his numerous wealth in Heavens Cold City. He even said that we arouse the event in Heavens Cold City and blamed us. I'm taking him into Heavens Cold City and gathering his numerous wealth for him. Now that elder brothers are going to execute your task there, as you are riding horses, you would be faster. Just take him to Heavens Cold City for me and show him whether his numerous wealth was still there or not. By the way, take him to have a look at the running water supply system for our innocence!" Zhang Tie smiled.

Hearing these words, a gleaming light flashed in his eyes as he also smiled, "We should do that!"

"Sorry to trouble you, elder brothers!" Saying this, Zhang Tie casually threw that person of more than 100 kg towards that military officer.

After taking over the man, the military officer directly smacked that person and let him pass out. He then put that guy on his warhorse and laughed out loud, "Brother Zhang Tie is really straightforward. As you've called me elder brother, just tell me if you need my help from then on; I will never hesitate!" After saying this, that military officer shouted towards the other cavalries behind him, "Brothers, this man called us elder brothers is the

most excellent young powerhouse in Huaiyuan Palace, the very demon-killing javelin lord we have mentioned and heard these days. As he called us elder brothers, dare you pull out your sabers for him?"

"We do!"

"We do!"

"We Do!"

All the cavalries pulled out of their sabers and raised them above heads.

Feeling this guy was not average, Zhang Tie stared at this 30-odd military officer deeply and clenched one hand into the other in front of his chest before asked solemnly, "What should I call you, elder brother?"

"I'm Taishi Ci!" That man replied in a righteous way.

"I will invite elder brother Taishi and the other elder brothers for a drink tonight, how about that?"

"Fine!" Taishi Ci also pulled out of his saber and waved above his head, "Brothers, go forward and kill our enemies now, after coming back at night, we will drink with brother Zhang, hahaha, [jia](#)..."

100 cavalries then waved their sabers and passed by Zhang Tie. They then rushed towards Heavens Cold City. Zhang Tie could still hear them singing forcefully, "enemies' heads, brothers' drink, sexy women and galloping horse..."

'That's what heroes do!' Zhang Tie nodded inside.

Not until [Taishi Ci](#) and his cavalries disappeared from Zhang Tie's vision did Zhang Tie return to the refugee camp. Zhang Tie didn't even ask the name of that guy who was destined to not come back alive. Anyone who dared to say that Huaiyuan Palace aroused the event in Heavens Cold City and puzzled the others might easily lead to a chaos, which was a death penalty. As more than 1 million people had died in Heavens Cold City, why would such a person still be alive?

Even Zhang Tie had not discovered that what he did now was totally different from that before. If it was before, he would never make a decision on one's fate so easily.

Through numb killings these days, at the cost of the lives of over 1 million innocent people in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie gradually figured out that there was only one way to ensure the survival of himself, his relatives, and friends in this world while fighting with the demons and their lackeys—you have to be more powerful and more merciless than demons.

What was the Holy War? It was a war on who was more powerful and merciless!

When Zhang Tie came back to the refugee camp, he saw some senior brothers from Hidden Dragon Palace who were patrolling and maintaining order in the refugee camp caught some guys who sneaked into the camp. They bound those guys and were escorting them out of the camp.

At sight of one of those guys being bound, Zhang Tie became stunned as he rubbed his eyes, "Zerom? What the hell!"

With his mouth being clogged by a piece of cloth, Zerom looked pretty embarrassed. When he caught sight of Zhang Tie, he widened his eyes at once and started to twist all over...

jia, 驾, Chinese always say this to their horses to gallop them.

Taishi Ci, 太史慈, Taishi (太史) is a Chinese surname, Ci is a given name.

Chapter 371: An Old Friend

Zerom's struggles irritated one of the students from Hidden Dragon Palace who was escorting him.

Therefore, he knocked onto Zerom's head with the handle of his long sword.

At sight of this, Zhang Tie sped up and stopped him, "Wait, senior brothers..."

"Argh, junior brother Zhang Tie!" The two students immediately revealed smiles at the sight of Zhang Tie coming towards them.

As the two students had assaulted Bluestone Pass together with Zhang Tie several days ago, they had a deep impression of Zhang Tie. Additionally, as Zhang Tie was growing famous as the demon-killing javelin lord, not to mention that Zhang Tie was already well-known when he was in Hidden Dragon Palace and because of his all-purpose medicament, he was ranked first on the Hidden Dragon Wealth List.

Hidden Dragon Palace was the place where the clan elites of Huaiyuan Palace cultivated themselves. Nobody in Hidden Dragon Palace was an idiot. They all knew the importance of human relationships. Therefore, they were very polite to Zhang Tie and didn't look like senior brothers at all.

At sight of Zhang Tie, Zerom looked a bit excited. After recovering his composure, he threw his glances towards his

partners to appease them.

"Senior brothers, may I inquire as to what these people have done?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Due to the event in Heavens Cold City, many peripheral forces and those who dream of money want to sneak into the refugee camp. When they get a chance, they would further slip into Heavens Cold City. We've caught a lot of people like these guys!"

Hearing his words, Zhang Tie finally let out a sigh. They truly had caught a lot of people like that these days. Most of them were looking for money in Heavens Cold City. Whereas, as they were not bad guys, after being caught, they would only be punished by doing hard labor or a few days.

Zhang Tie smiled. Without making any explanation, he directly took off the piece of cloth from Zerom's mouth in front of 2 senior brothers.

"Zhang Tie..." Zerom called Zhang Tie's name at once. After that, he peered at his partners who were also bound.

The 2 senior brothers then exchanged glances with each other and became a bit surprised, "You know them, junior brother?"

"They are my friends. Can you let me deal with them?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Haha, now that they are your friends, they are yours now. It's not a big deal, just deal with them at your will, junior brother!"

"Thanks, senior brothers!"

"You're welcome, junior brother!"

The 2 students from Hidden Dragon Palace then directly undid their ropes. After chatting with Zhang Tie for awhile, they finally left.

There were 3 more people that were caught together with Zerom. After being set free, they all hurriedly moved their arms to relax themselves. At the same time, the other 3 guys started to glance over Zhang Tie out of curiosity.

"Why are you here?" Zhang Tie and Zerom exchanged glances with each other and asked the same question in Hebrew in unison. They then burst out laughing at the same time.

"It's not convenient to talk here, come with me!" Zhang Tie looked at them and brought them into his own tent.

Zerom and the other 3 guys didn't speak; instead, they just followed Zhang Tie and his arrangement.

Zhang Tie's tent was not large and would be a bit crowded with 5 people living in. However, it's okay for 5 of them to sit inside and talk.

After entering the tent, they evidently looked relaxed. After looking at the heavy chain-type armor plate and the symbol on it, one partner of Zerom's eyes brightened up at once as he said in Chinese, "怀远堂(Huaiyuan Palace)!"

Zhang Tie smiled as he let them sit down.

Zerom's partners included a thin old man, a tall and muscled tough man and a 40-odd-year-old guy with short brown hair who looked shrewd, who could speak Chinese.

Because Zhang Tie didn't know Zerom could speak Chinese, he directly chatted with them in Hebrew in case of trouble.

"Mr. Zerom, why are you here?"

Zerom revealed a smile, "I'm not a teacher now. Soon after you left Blackhot City together with Iron-Blood Camp, I had resigned and left Blackhot City. After that, I traveled to Armes, a mercenary empire in the Blackson Human Race Corridor. A few days later, I joined Thor Mercenary Group. This time, we are here in Jinyun Country for 2 tasks. Oh, how about you? Why are you here?"

'Since Zerom left Blackhot City shortly after me, it indicates that he didn't know what happened to me since then.' Therefore, Zhang Tie briefly talked about what happened to him after Blackhot City. Hearing Zhang Tie's experiences, not only Zerom, even the other 3 partners of him kept sighing with feeling.

Zhang Tie's experience was really legendary; Rendering meritorious service on the battlefield for Iron-Blood Camp; Fought the secret police in Norman Empire; Having a warrant issued by the Norman Empire; being picked up to Jinyun Country by Huaiyuan Palace; being involved in the event in Heavens Cold City. Given his current look, Zhang Tie seemed living a well-off life. Zerom then recalled that teenager in the survival training in Wild Wolf Valley one year ago and became thrilled inside as he felt that fate was really marvelous.

"You are in Huaiyuan Palace now?" Zerom asked.

"Yes, I was here to attend the action of assaulting Heavens Cold City arranged by Huaiyuan Palace!"

After exchanging glances with the other 3 guys, Zerom looked hesitated.

At sight of Zerom's look, Zhang Tie had known that they needed his help.

"What can I do for you?" Zhang Tie asked straightforwardly.

"Can you take us to Heavens Cold City. As Heavens Cold City has been surrounded by some big clan's forces in Jinyun Country, we can not even enter by airship. Commoners like us could hardly enter! Zerom took a deep breath as he looked at Zhang Tie seriously.

"How long will you stay in Heavens Cold City?"

"Only a few hours if it's smooth. We know a batch of city guards of Zhen Clan has been controlled by puppet worms, we need to a couple of demonized guards!"

"Do you need to take them away?"

"No need!" Zerom waved his head as he pointed at a thin old man and introduced him to Zhang Tie. "This is professor Simon. He's a demon biologist and the chief legal examiner and coroner in Thor Mercenary Group. We only need to hand the demonized guards to him and let him finish the anatomy. After gaining the information that we need, we will leave."

Hearing Zerom's explanation, Zhang Tie understood at once. During this period, many demonized guards had been taken away by the 6 clans of Jinyun Country and various foreign powers. Zhang Tie had also participated in a task of capturing demonized guards. Commoners could not figure out the function of those demonized guards at all. However, those powers could gather quite a bit of useful information from a demonized guard.

The most important information was when the eggs of the parent puppet worm started to live in the host's brain.

Because the city guards of the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City were the most powerful force of the Zhen Clan. Additionally, they always stayed in Heavens Cold City which meant that they would

not cause eggs to die due to being a long distance away from the parent puppet worm. Instead, eggs could grow well in their brains. Therefore, by studying these specimens, they could confirm when the Zhen Clan had started to place the eggs of the parent puppet worm in the water supply system of Heavens Cold City.

As long as they confirmed this time, they would be able to deduce lots of information. For those big powers, this time was of great significance and was the basis for big figures to make major decisions about the Holy War in the future.

Huaiyuan Palace had also taken away more than 40 demonized guards from Heavens Cold City, many of which were even senior military officers in the city guards of Heavens Cold City. After getting these specimens, Huaiyuan Palace handed them to professionals from Huaiyuan Palace for anatomy. After that, they would be burned directly.

"How many of you want to go there, only 4 of you or are there more?" The moment he confirmed their target, Zhang Tie didn't waste time as he asked straightforwardly.

"We have some more partners, but they are in the airship. Therefore only 4 will be going!"

"Well, wait for me for a moment, I will prepare something for you." After saying this, Zhang Tie stood up, "What weapons do you need? It's very dangerous in Heavens Cold City now!"

"I need a longsword!" Zerom replied.

"I need a war ax of 50-100 kg!" The tall tough man said.

"Give me a long spear. I want them to stay away from me!" The one with short brown hair answered.

"For me?" Professor Simon shrugged his shoulder and gave a bitter smile. "I have no fighting strength. Just give me a lighter one!"

Hearing their requests and glancing at them, Zhang Tie turned around. After opening the tent, he walked out...

Chapter 372: A Tough Task

The moment Zhang Tie left the tent, the other 3 guys had thrown weird glances towards Zerom.

"Zerom, I never would have imagined that you could have such a student! You didn't mention it before!" That tough man said.

"But I didn't even know that he was here Jordan." Zerom shrugged his shoulder. "You heard that just now. When I left Blackhot City, he was in kalur. Several minutes ago, I still thought that he was in the Iron-Horn Army of the Norman Empire. I would never have guessed that I could meet him here."

"This teenager is not weak!" Narrowing his eyes, professor Simon added, "I smelt something related to death from him!"

"This set of heavy chain-type plate armor is nice. Zezeze, this is the best heavy chain-type plate armor produced by Huaiyuan Palace in Jinyun Country. Except for its heavyweight, this is definitely a non-rune equipment that combines defensive capability and flexibility in the perfect way. Battleax Mercenary Army tried to counterfeit such a batch of heavy chain-type plate armor for its middle-and senior-level officers. However, their fake goods could never match this original although at almost the same cost. They finally stopped that plan..."

As the man in short brown hair said that, he touched the chain-type movable metal protective covering over Zhang Tie's armor which was tightly connected; meanwhile his eyes gleamed,

"Zerom, your student might have a high position in Huaiyuan palace now. Otherwise, he couldn't get such expensive equipment. It is worth at least 100 gold coins. With him, we could easily finish our task in Heavens Cold City! Oh, what about his current fighting strength? I've been observing him but I failed to figure it out!"

"I don't know either. When I left Blackhot City last year, he was LV 4. I think he might be LV 5 now!" After thinking for awhile, Zerom added, "This youngster is cultivating Iron-Blood Fist and had formed [Iron-Blood Hidden Strength](#) easily. He's the most excellent student that I've taught!"

"LV 5? He might have formed [Iron-Blood Converted Strength](#) but he's 18 years old at most! Jordan said.

"Perhaps!" Zerom nodded with feelings, "I didn't know that he was a descendant of Count Long Wind. His parents were all commoners in Blackhot City and didn't look special at all!"

"Many clan's ancestral bloodlines and special genes could be expressed through atavistic heredity. His ancestor is Count Long Wind, who should be at least LV 15. Only very powerful knights would be conferred with titles of nobility. In such clans, some descendants might probably have talents in cultivation." Professor Simon concluded in an authoritative way.

"We can also ask him about all-purpose medicament. I was told that all-purpose medicament had appeared in Huaiyuan Prefecture. He must know more than us about that. Our boss paid high attention to this matter. Before we set out, he even especially ordered us to contact the alchemist who could produce all-purpose

medicament in Huaiyuan Prefecture even though we failed the task in Heavens Cold City!"

Zerom nodded as he started to frown. After the event in Heavens Cold City broke out, prices of medicament started to surge across Blackson Human Race Corridor. Many people started to stockpile all kinds of medicament. As a result, the source and supply of medicament became tense at once.

Now, not only Thor Mercenary Army, even super-powerful mercenary armies such as Battleax, Hugessnake, Green Highland and the Steel & Iron Alliance in Armes had started to be short of various medicament. They were all thinking about a solution. If all-purpose medicament that appeared in Huaiyuan Prefecture was really more effective than preliminary antidote potion as was said, it would help Armes a lot.

Within the territory of Armes, poisonous substances exist almost everywhere. Therefore, people there need a lot of preliminary antidote potion each year. But due to the shortage of supply of various medicament, preliminary antidote potion was in short supply. For the lack of the other medicament, they might find other solutions. For Armes which was located in the long Snake God Mountain and was surrounded by endless smog and marshes. As long as preliminary antidote potion was in short supply, it meant many people would die every day due to various reasons.

All-purpose medicament was like a bright light in the darkness. For all the mercenary armies in Armes, a medicament that was more effective than preliminary antidote potion and could substitute the other medicament was definitely like a heavy rain

after a long drought.

For those mercenaries who lived in Armes and lived using their sabers and swords, all-purpose medicament was definitely the best choice! More than 98% of functions that common mercenaries needed in preliminary antidote potion or low-rank medicament were contained in such a vial of medicament such as detoxification, curing wounds, intensifying spiritual energy, accelerating the recovery of wounds, improving various physical functions and curing various diseases, including chronic diseases without any side effect.

Therefore, before they set out for Jinyun Country, the boss of Thor Mercenary Army emphasized that they had to contact the alchemist who produced this all-purpose medicament. It would be better if the alchemist could provide a batch of the all-purpose medicament for Thor Mercenary Army every year.

The news that all-purpose medicament appeared in Huaiyuan Prefecture was passed from Jinyun Country to Armes by pioneers. When it reached Armes, the message had become obscure. Therefore, hearing this news, everybody there thought it must be an alchemist who could produce all-purpose medicament and probably be a well-known senior alchemist. Because only a well-known senior alchemist might solve the problem that had puzzled the world of alchemist for hundreds of years.

The news of all-purpose medicament influenced Armes more than any other places. In a few days after Armes received the news of all-purpose medicament, the event in Heavens Cold City broke out. Therefore, the boss of Thor Mercenary Army assigned some

reliable fighters to Jinyun Country.

At that moment, Zerom only joined Thor Mercenary Army for a short period. But his shrewd brain and fighting strength had won the favor of the management of Thor Mercenary Army. Therefore, he also came here as a director of the mission while the other director of this mission was in the airship.

It was really a surprise for Zerom to meet Zhang Tie here. If he could complete the mission in Heavens Cold City in such a dangerous situation, his position in Thor Mercenary Army would be greatly improved and consolidated. However, thinking of that mission on all-purpose medicament, Zerom became a bit worried.

As long as they came to Huaiyuan Prefecture, Zerom was confident to contact with the alchemist who could produce all-purpose medicament. Although Thor Mercenary Army was trivial in Jinyun Country, after all, it had more than 60,000 mercenaries which meant it was an influential power in Armes and the northern region of Blackson Human Race Corridor. Therefore, that alchemist could not refuse to meet them.

However, to tell the truth, Zerom lacked confidence in establishing a trading relationship with that alchemist and persuading him to provide a lot of vials of the all-purpose medicament for Thor Mercenary Army each year. Even though Thor Mercenary Army had been prepared for a very high purchasing price, Zerom was still not sure whether he could make that. After all, it was all-purpose medicament, not stones in mining pits. If medicament could be easily produced on a mass scale, Armes and the whole Blackson Human Race Corridor would not

lack medicament at all.

Additionally, it was said that the other mercenary armies in Armes also assigned people in Jinyun Country with the same goal as Thor. This increased the difficulty of that task for Zerom.

"Could he really realize mass-production of all-purpose medicament?" Thinking of that tough mission, Zerom asked professor Simon.

"It's possible. But I don't know the exact possibility!" Simon shook his head. "Theoretically, an all-purpose medicament is a super enzyme. According to the forming principle of an enzyme, its fermenting process could realize mass-production. However, as I have no relevant intelligence, I'm confused about the producing process of all-purpose medicament in Huaiyuan Prefecture. It might require something special and precious. Therefore, it depends."

"Hopefully, the God of mercenaries could bring some good luck to Thor!" Zerom revealed a bitter smile. "We will finish the task in Heavens Cold City first, then, we will think about the all-purpose medicament!"

"As you say! Now, various medicament started to be in short supply. Only in a couple of days, the prices of various medicament in the market in Armes had risen by at least 20%. Some medicament were even in even shorter supply. We're not the only party that's focused on procuring the all-purpose medicament. Even if that alchemist could realize mass-production of the all-purpose medicament, it's still difficult for us to gain more shares

than our opponents."

For the second mission, old Simon became a bit pessimistic. The influence of Thor Mercenary Army was well reflected here near Heavens Cold City. A mercenary army of fewer than 100,000 people was only a trivial group for many big powers and figures; even though they were here, they were not even qualified to enter Heavens Cold City to have a look, not to mention others...

...

Iron-Blood Hidden Strength. With no movement physically, the fighter could hold back the opponent's attack through inner strength; however, if the opponent covered the point where the fighter released his hidden strength, the latter would not be able to release his hidden strength.

Iron-Blood Converted Strength. Like Iron-Blood Hidden Strength, with no movement physically, the fighter could hold back the opponent's attack through inner strength; however, being different from Iron-Blood Hidden Strength, even if the opponent covered the point where the fighter released his hidden strength, the latter could still release his hidden strength facing the opponent's attack; however, through displacement of skeletons, the fighter could take preemptive while changing the direction of his strength.

Chapter 373: A Bloody City

Zhang Tie came back in only 5 minutes with four suits of field fighting clothes like that he was wearing. Meanwhile, he was carrying the weapons of the 4 people—a dagger, a longsword, a long spear and a double-edge huge axe of more than 50 kg in one hand.

"These clothes were chosen in line with your frames. Put them on and take your weapons. Then, we can set out!"

Zerom and his partners were so surprised as they hadn't imagined that Zhang Tie could deal with these things in such an efficient way. Without any hesitation, they then took their own clothes and started to change them as soon as possible.

After professor Simon took off his pants, Zhang Tie found a leather toolkit over this emaciated old man's calf, which contained various tools like a lance and small hooks. With these items, he could almost finish surgeries. Zhang Tie then knew that his senior brothers must not have meant to search him judging from his emaciated look. Therefore, they didn't notice the toolkit over his calf.

When they were changing clothes, Zerom introduced his other 2 partners to Zhang Tie. "The taller guy is Jordan, as a squadron leader of Thor Mercenary Army, he's LV 8 and the one with the highest fighting strength among us. According to the military establishment of Armes, Jordan is a captain."

Although mercenary armies were different than regular armies on establishment, it was still clearly divided into fighting units. In Armes, mercenary armies could be divided into team, corp, squad, detachment, group, league and column, which almost equal to that of class, platoon, company, camp, regiment, brigade and division respectively in many human countries' armies.

Zerom came here with the other 8 people as a standard team in a mercenary army. However, except for professor Simon, the other 8 were all above LV 6. Such a team was qualified to be called "luxury" in a mercenary army.

"The guy with brown short hair is Shrek, the only one among us who can speak Chinese. LV 7, a senior scout in Thor Mercenary Army. He has a deep insight and is very agile. He's excel at spying and street battle in city.

Gazing at this "luxury" team, Zhang Tie didn't have any special feeling. By comparison, when he was in Blackhot City, he and his elder brother both dreamed of being LV 6 fighters. However, Zhang Tie abruptly found that he didn't awe those fighters below LV 10 anymore.

In Zhang Tie's eyes, except for some LV 9 guys who might bring him some trouble, most of the fighters were nothing different than soldiers below LV 5 as Zhang Tie could solve them with only one javelin or a punch.

After these days of fighting against demonized people, Zhang Tie had been able to apply his Iron-Blood Fist in a much more eye-catching way. Gradually, he could use his Iron-Blood Fist as

unrivaled as that used by the first emperor of the Norman Empire which shocked the Blackson Human Race Corridor.

After a short while, the 4 guys had put on their field combat clothes. Additionally, they had put on the hat being connected to the field combat coat and had pulled down the respirator which was filled with soft activated carbon. The respirator could filter fresh air, resist coldness and hide their faces, only exposing their eyes.

After that, they took their own weapons.

"Is this okay?" Zerom asked carefully.

"No problem. Some elites of Hurricane Army are still surrounding Heavens Cold City. As the soldiers of Hurricane Army are from everywhere, including all human races, if you just follow me, nobody would ask anything." Zhang Tie answered confidently.

Zerom then nodded, "Thor Mercenary Army owes you!"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile. "Due to various reasons, big figures don't want to expose too much information to commoners about the coming holy war. However, I feel that the more people know about it in advance, the better. After they know about it, at least they would not be easily pushed to the frontline to be fodder ashes. If not, they might even not know how they were killed!"

"Your thinking is very special!" Professor Simon glanced at Zhang

Tie, "Few people in a big clan would consider it this way."

Zhang Tie shrugged. "Perhaps it's because I lived at the bottom of society. I know more about commoners. In holy wars, if the frontline was broken, it would be very dangerous. Rich and powerful people would then escape by airships, leaving those innocent commoners to be killed by demons. Those commoners won't even have a chance to escape. I feel this is unfair. If commoners could know more about this in advance, they would have more time to prepare for escape."

"Members in Thor Mercenary Army are all dauntless, instead of cowards who only think about escape. If there's a chance, I will kill those abominable demons with my ax!" Weighing his axe, Jordan said in a low voice.

"Although you are fighters, you also have family members and friends, who were not all fighters. If you were told that demons' army would launch an attack towards Armes 1 year later, would you lead your family members and friends to fight together with you in Armes? If you know that Blackson Human Race Corridor might be covered by demons in 2 years, would you lead your family members and friends to escape to a safe place first? If you know that the holy war would break out in half a year, would you let your family members stockpile food and drinks?"

Jordan then became quiet. Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zerom nodded inside as he seemed seeing the same diligent and tough teenager in the survival training in Wild Wolf Valley and the handsome boy who didn't slash towards his opponent who had already lain on the duel platform. During the past 1 year, many

things and people had changed. However, that teenager was still kind inside.

‘Kerlin might also be proud of having such a student if he knew that!’ Zerom mumbled inside.

The other guys in the tent started to consider Zhang Tie’s questions.

Zhang Tie didn’t talk any more, instead, he carried that heavy metal container of 9 bolts inside which had been used to kill so many people these days and opened the tent, "Let’s go!"

The other 4 people then followed him out.

After being several hundred meters away from the camp, they came to the wild, from where they could already see Heavens Cold City in the distance. On the way from the camp to here, although many people had noticed the 4 people after Zhang Tie, nobody asked about them.

"This place is 15 km away from Heavens Cold City. It would take a long time to get there if we just walk like this. How fast is your marching speed?" Zhang Tie asked professor Simon considering his age.

"Although I’m not a fighter, at least I’m a LV 5 soldier. I can keep jogging there for 1 hour!" Professor Simon said proudly.

"That's fine. Follow me then. In order to save time, I will choose a route with fewer demonized people! Remember, unless you chop off their heads or break their whole body or head in to pieces by destroying their brain tissues can you kill them!"

Zhang Tie reminded them once again. Everybody else then nodded. After that, with Zhang Tie's guidance, they started to jog towards Heavens Cold City.

On the way, they met many other teams, the sizes of which varied from 3-5 people, dozens of people to over 100 people. They came from everywhere. Some of them were the unrivaled cavalries from Taishi Clan, some were elite troops from Huaiyuan Palace, some were some healthy adolescents recruited from the refugee camp. They scattered outside Heavens Cold City to hunt those demonized people that ran out of the city then collect, burn or bury them.

After encountering so many teams, Zerom's group started to understand that without Zhang Tie, they could hardly get close to Heavens Cold City even if they were not arrested in the refugee camp.

At this time, Zhang Tie's heavy metal container of 9 bolts on his back had almost become his symbol on the battlefield as anyone who caught sight of Zhang Tie dared not to find trouble for him. Instead, many teams even exclaimed out of excitement when they saw him.

"Mie Mo Shen Mo (灭魔神矛)..."

"Mie Mo Shen Mo..."

Except for Shrek, none of Zerom's group spoke Chinese. Therefore, when they saw a team yelling towards them, they were even a bit nervous and thought they might have trouble. However, after seeing this several times, they started to understand that they were exclaiming towards Zhang Tie.

"Shrek, what are they yelling?" Jordon asked behind Zhang Tie while panting.

"They were yelling a slogan!" Shrek then looked at Zhang Tie calmly, "That slogan means marvelous demon-killing javelins. They might be yelling towards Zhang Tie!"

"Is that a praise or honor for Chinese?" Jordan asked surprisingly.

Shrek didn't know how to answer about this question. Because of the cultural difference between Chinese and them, it's hard to explain. In Chinese, the word "魔" and "神" always contained dozens of meanings, such as "魔" referred to demon, ghost, evil, darkness, villain, malice, inhumanity or difficulty in comprehend while "神" referred to marvel, holiness, deity, creator, fantasy, wonder even one's spiritual awareness.

In Hebrew-spoken regions, if a fighter was received an honor, it would be very significant. Because people could never gain any honor without any performance. Additionally, according to the

conventions in this age, like being conferred with a title of nobility, a fighter has to gain his honor through fighting with demons. Additionally, honors always had fixed patterns, were always composed of the place where one made a meritorious deed plus his performance or feature (noun). Observably, they were not yelling an honor, neither a eulogy; it should be something between two of them that only existed under Chinese cultural background.

When Shrek scratched his head. Zhang Tie who was ahead of them opened his mouth. "That's not an honor, neither an official and holy eulogy. You can take it as an appreciation and praise, just like some of your nicknames!"

"Like I am called Steel Ax in Thor Mercenary Army, right?" Jordan asked out of curiosity.

"Just like that!"

"However, only a few people in Thor Mercenary Army know me. Nobody knows my nickname on the outside. But it seems that so many people know your nickname!" Jordan became a bit depressed and admirable.

'This tough man is cute." Zhang Tie then revealed a smile, "That's because your nickname is not loud enough or special. If you try harder and go to the extremes when you use your axe on the battlefield such as speed, I will give you a nickname then. I'm sure that more people would know you by then!"

"Argh? What nickname?"

"Black Cyclone!" Zhang Tie joked.

It was really out of Zhang Tie's imagination that Jordan became spirited after thinking for a while seriously, "Fine, that's it, Black Cyclone sounds cooler than Steel Ax. "Shrek, Zerom, you can call me Black Cyclone from then on!"

...

1 hour later, they had successfully arrived in the suburban area of Heavens Cold City after only meeting 10 more common demonized people. Before Zhang Tie moved, Jordan who wanted to show his qualification as "Black Cyclone" had chopped them all into pieces in a split second.

When they arrived at the suburban area of Heavens Cold City, everything became different.

It was already past 9 am when the sun had already risen up. The temperature over the land was gradually increasing, causing a terrifying, suffocating and disgusting stink to drift from inside Heavens Cold City. When they were about 1 km away from the city, Zerom and the other guys' faces instantly turned pale when they smelt this.

Although they were nothing strange about this odor in the morning breeze, they had not met such a heavy odor before.

Even Zhang Tie who didn't pull down his breathing mask on the way here had also pulled it down at this moment in order to ease its stimulation.

"How many people were killed here?" Professor Simon turned and asked.

"They are not human, they are demonized, people. From July 7th to now, we've killed at least 100,000 demonized people within 1 km of the four city gates!" Zhang Tie answered in a low voice. "Now, there are still over 1 million demonized people in Heavens Cold City. We can hardly clean their corpses. Our men only controlled a part of regions near the four city gates. After killing them, we will maintain the city gates so that living could still escape out of there!"

As long as the over 1 million demonized people continued under the guidance of the parent puppet worm, they could easily shock 2 common human armies. Additionally, as Langye Prefecture was relatively remote, all the local forces only contained less than 400,000 soldiers, how could they fight an over 1 million strong demonized army.

This also indicated that the Zhen Clan was very vicious. If the Zhen Clan aroused trouble when the holy war broke out, the whole Langye Prefecture would deteriorate heavily in a few days. Langye Prefecture was in the northwest of Jinyun Country and there were no powerful forces and clans within 1000 km of the surroundings. Nobody would know what the Zhen Clan could do in Langye Prefecture with over 1 million demonized people

In the Second Holy War, the most powerful parent puppet worm controlled by demons could even control over 3 million demonized people at the same time.

At this moment, unless assigning more than 2 corps from 1000 km away and prepared to pay for a high price, they could only surround Heavens Cold City and annihilate those demonized people in Heavens Cold City with small teams. They could only weaken the force and reduce the number of those demonized people in Heavens Cold City. Thankfully, demonized people could not deliver babies. Otherwise, it would much more troublesome.

When they were outside a city gate of Heavens Cold City, they would meet some corpses with each step forward. All of them were demonized, over 90% of them had been chopped or cut into pieces. Many corpses had started to rot and grubby—where's hell? Right here!

Although the guys from Thor Mercenary Army had been used to death and blood, they all started to vomit after only 100 steps forward.

Except for Zhang Tie as he had long experienced this period. He also contributed a part to this scene. Those whose heads were still linked to their necks yet had exploded were mostly the work of his javelins. Glancing over corpses, Zhang Tie looked a bit sorrowful while icy flame gleamed in his eyes.

These corpses were once people like him!

God-damned demons!

Zhang Tie had made 2 targets silently since he was born.

First, he determined to be an alchemist in the auction house in Kalur.

Second, he made it to Heavens Cold City. Several days ago, standing in a gate tower in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie looked at the abstruse night sky. He then determined that he would never close his eyes until he killed 1 million demons and lackeys of Three-Eye Association and covered Heavens Cold City with those corpses.

From then on, watching all this, Zhang Tie didn't vomit anymore. Instead, his eyes were filled with grief while a cold flame was burning in his heart...

Having almost vomited everything that he had eaten, bending his body, Zerom watched Zhang Tie's back as straight as usual and felt that Zhang Tie was like a steel statue which contained a foreboding and hard strength that should not belong to this age.

'Although this teenager looks the same as before in some aspects, he's different in some places.' A thought flashed through Zerom's mind.

Zhang Tie just waited there for them calmly. When they finished vomiting and stood up, their eyes had turned red and tearful. Zhang Tie then nodded, "Let's go, you will be fine after that. There

are more corpses than that inside. But it is more dangerous inside!"

The 4 people then continued to follow Zhang Tie and walked over to the hell-like place. They soon came to the south gate of Heavens Cold City where they watched a rapid fight.

A batch of people in the same uniform as them was killing some demonized people gathering over the passage in the city gate. After that, they pulled away those corpses and cleaned up the passage.

Zhang Tie then walked over there and casually stamped a pink worm two

"Zhang Tie", one of them walked towards him. Seeing this, Zerom and the other 3 guys shut up.

"What's up? Is anyone alive out of there?" Zhang Tie asked as he watched Liu Xu.

"None!" Liu Xu waved his head while his half-covered face didn't look good obviously, "It's been almost 1 week. Fewer people could escape out of there. These are..."

Liu Xu then turned his eyes to Zerom's group.

"Some of my old friends. After hearing the event in Heavens Cold City, they want to have a look inside. Therefore I'm taking them here." Zhang Tie put it straightly and didn't mean to cover the status of Zerom's group at all.

Liu Xu then moved his eyes from them like having not seen them at all. Thus, he lowered his voice and moved closer to Zhang Tie, "I heard our clan seniors were negotiating with some big figures from other clans on dealing with the event in Heavens Cold City. There are always powerhouses lurking in some sensitive places in the inner city and some banks in the outer city. There are also some guerrillas. Take care of yourself!"

Zhang Tie understood Liu Xu's good intentions. He also knew what Liu Xu was hinting about. Therefore, he slightly patted on his shoulder, "Don't worry, they are just figuring out something inside. They would leave in several hours after having a look near the camps of the original city guards!"

"That's fine, watch out!" Liu Xu understood it instantly.

Zhang Tie then nodded before guided Zerom and the other 3 into Heavens Cold City through the bloody passage...

Chapter 374: Battle

Each of Zhang Tie's nine javelins in the metal container on his back was close to 130 centimeters in length. Besides being used for throwing, the metal javelins could also be used as short spears in close combat.

At this moment, noticing that more than twenty demons were rushing towards the five people, Zhang Tie waved his spears, one in each hand. In a wink, he had made ten heads explode.

Zhang Tie moved so swiftly and directly. Facing those demonized people, he only made one movement——prick!

Each time he pricked, his short spear would cause a low, wind-breaking sound, "Sss, sss", which suggested his terrifying speed at close quarters. However, to respond to the power of his short spear moves, the heads of the demonized people being pricked all exploded like broken watermelons, sprouting brains backwards.

Although those being killed were demonized people, judging from their looks and clothes these demonized people were all once commoners in Heavens Cold City, including common businessmen, citizens, students, housewives, the old and the young.

The demonized man that Zhang Tie had just exploded was around forty years old and was still wearing a postman's clothes, with a visible yellow Chinese character, "邮", on the left breast of his blue uniform. Below that character for "mail", Zhang Tie

peered at his official identification photo and his name——[Gu Anming\(谷安明\)](#).

Compared to that official identification photo, Gu Anming didn't look like how he looked one week ago any more. Instead, his bulging eyes were filled with a bloody, killing intent. His face looked grim and twisted and a fishy, stinky liquid was flowing out of the corners of his mouth. Gritting his teeth with fury and evil, he was charging at Zhang Tie while waving his limbs. As was expected, he exploded from the impact of Zhang Tie's short spear before he drew too close.

After Zhang Tie made Gu Anming's head explode, the remaining demonized people in his group cried out with jarring screams. Hearing this, Zhang Tie changed his facial expression immediately as he pricked another head swiftly and told Zerom's group, "They are calling their partners, we have to get out of here as soon as possible!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's warning, Jordan swung his huge ax and chopped off two demonized people's heads, sending them flying in the air. Zerom and Shrek also each killed one respectively. After that, they followed Zhang Tie and rushed into an alley on the side.

While being protected by them in the middle, Professor Simon started to pant. After running less than 100 meters, Zhang Tie saw an opening rice store. He then ran inside at once.

Followed by the other four guys, the moment Jordan went to shut the door, he was stopped by Zhang Tie, "No need!"

"What if those demonized people rush inside?"

"No problem. If we close it, we might arouse their attention. Follow me upstairs, and be quiet!"

Hearing the screams and disorderly footsteps from outside, they hurriedly followed Zhang Tie up to the second floor of the rice store.

They were in a small warehouse where someone had lived before. It seemed that chaos had happened here as things were strewn everywhere. Many rice bags were broken. There were even some blood stains on the floor. However, nobody was inside. The moment Zhang Tie had come upstairs, he pulled closed the curtain there. Standing close to the windowsill, he made a gesture to tell the others to be quiet. Therefore, everybody slowed their breathing.

Shrek was on high alert above the entrance of the stairs and watched the gate downstairs. If any demonized people rushed inside, he would find out first.

The screams of demonized people were drawing closer and closer. It was really noisy in the alley on one side of the rice store and on the other side from the street outside. Hundreds of demonized people rushed by, followed sparsely by many more. From the source of the sound, they knew that those demonized people were rushing towards the place where they'd fought just now.

Professor, Jordan, Zerom and Shrek all changed their facial expressions slightly. If they had stayed half a minute longer there, they would have been surrounded by the demonized people. Although normal demonized people had the same fighting strength as a commoner person's, they were all painless and dauntless. If Zhang Tie's group were to be surrounded by them, nobody knew what would happen.

They had been in Heavens Cold City for over two hours, during which period they had experienced six fights. As a result, they gradually came to understand how terrifying those demonized people were.

Like piranhas or army ants, as long as they locked onto their target, those demonized people would all attack together. Unless they were all killed, they would never stop. When being surrounded by demonized people, as long as one was troubled by a demonized person for over 2 seconds, more of them would take the chance and crowd up. In two seconds...four seconds...six seconds...eight seconds...they would gather until they covered you and gnawed you, leaving nothing at all. Any powerful fighter would be frightened facing such an attack.

With a sound downstairs, a demonized person walked in. Seeing this, Shrek made a gesture towards them to tell them to hold their breaths.

Jordan then clenched his ax...

Zerom narrowed his eyes as he changed the position of his long sword...

Professor Simon seemed to be praying as he drew something on his chest...

Zhang Tie gazed at the foot of the stairs...

Over ten seconds later, the sound downstairs drew farther away, while the screams outside also faded. Several minutes later, after those noises disappeared, everybody finally let out a breath.

Shrek then jumped from his position at the stairs and walked towards the other people, throwing himself onto a rice bag. Zerom watched outside carefully from the windowsill. "Those demonized people have gone, only leaving a couple of them wandering in the alley!" he said.

"Professor Simon, why didn't they call their partners the moment they saw us instead of doing that when they only had one or two left?" Shrek asked.

"After losing the guidance of their parent puppet worm, all the demonized people have poor organization. They are not even as smart as spiders or ants. When they caught sight of us, they took us as their food and target. We made them excited, just like how those stupid animals are when they notice their food and mates. Of course, they would not share their food with others!"

Hearing Professor Simon's explanation, Jordan quivered all over. "Professor Simon, could you change the metaphor. We are their food, but what motherf*cking mates? Who wants to hug those guys in a bed?"

Professor Simon then revealed a smile in an embarrassed way. Ignoring Jordan's qualms, he said "Only when they've confirmed that they have no chance of eating us would they then send an SOS to their own kind!"

"Before coming to Heavens Cold City, I even thought they could speak. It's really out of my imagination that they could only scream!"

"Language is a very advanced function in the human brain. It requires a very high level of intelligence. Although those puppet worms can control one's actions by living in their brains, they cannot control people's language function. The reason lies in the very low intelligence of puppet worms themselves. They cannot deal with the sophisticated functions of the language area in human brains, not to mention comprehending human language, logic and contents or exchange by language!"

While they were talking in low voices, Zhang Tie was furrowing among the things in the room. He found some dried fruits and passed them to the other people, saying, "Eat some first to regain your physical strength. We might face more battles like this later on!"

When they entered Heavens Cold City, it meant they'd entered the battle field. Of course, Zhang Tie would seize any chance to

recover his physical strength and spiritual energy, and maintained them in their optimum states. This was a battle field survival skill that he'd learned in Iron-Blood Camp. Besides fighting on the battle field, they needed more strength to persist.

"How long from here to the nearest camp of the former city guards?" Zerom asked Zhang Tie after a short thought.

Zhang Tie pointed at a direction outside the window, "We need to pass two streets. It's about 1000 meters away from here. Now, only a few demonized city guards are wandering in the city, while 90% of the rest of the demonized city guards are gathering around the inner city of Heavens Cold City, where the parent puppet worm was killed..."

"I don't think we can continue like this. It's too dangerous, especially for Professor Simon!" Zerom said as he drew on the floor with his long sword. "How about this? We will find a place within this region to settle down Professor Simon first. Then two of us stay with Professor Simon to protect him while the other two go outside to catch two demonized city guards. The advantage of this method is that we could reduce our chance of exposure. Additionally, those going outside could get out of danger with their own fighting strength more quickly..."

谷 "Gu" is a Chinese surname; 安明 "Anming" means safe and bright. In this story, his name illustrates a sharp contrast to his current situation.

Chapter 375: Military Camp

The moment Zerom posed the plan, everybody else agreed. If they stayed together, it truly would be too eye-catching for those demonized people; additionally, their efficiency would also decline.

"How about Shrek and I go out and catch two demonized city guards?" Zhang Tie nodded as he said, "Zerom and Jordan are responsible for protecting Professor Simon. If any accidents occur and evacuation becomes necessary, each group can leave Heavens Cold City separately. We can then gather near the south gate of Heavens Cold City!"

"I agree!"

"I agree!"

"Me too!"

Everybody nodded. Professor Simon needed to be protected. Therefore, it was safe for him to stay with a powerhouse and a clear guy; Zhang Tie was familiar with Heavens Cold City, Shrek was a senior scout who was good at spying and urban warfare. Therefore, it was proper for the two people to catch demonized people to bring back.

"Professor Simon, which parts of the demonized people do you need, only their heads?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Although their heads are the most important part, you'd better bring back their complete bodies. As puppet worms can influence one's internal organs, we can get more precise information through a complete study of their organs.

"I understand!"

...

After the discussion, they took a short rest in the warehouse before leaving.

A couple of demonized people were still wandering in the alley outside. The moment Zhang Tie walked out of the door of the rice store, he killed them with his javelins before they made any sound.

As they had all been fighting the demonized people in close combat until now, it was Zhang Tie's first time showing his javelin throwing talent to them. Zerom and the other three guys heard the sonic booms when Zhang Tie threw out his javelins!

None of them had imagined that Zhang Tie's javelin throwing skill had reached the level of causing a sonic boom. Therefore, they were amazed, especially Zerom. Although he knew Zhang Tie well, it was still out of his imagination that Zhang Tie could realize this in only one year after leaving Blackhot City.

Most people who excelled at throwing javelins would at least

reach LV 8 before they could create a sonic boom because sonic booms required great, explosive physical strength. Take Captain Kerlin as an example, he was able to create a sonic boom in the middle and late period of LV 8.

"Zhang Tie, what's your level now?" Zerom asked Zhang Tie as he ran.

"Just reached LV 7!"

Considering the sonic booms they heard, Zerom and the other three guys was not surprised about that answer. They were all thinking that Zhang Tie might have learned some secret knowledge after he returned to his Zhang Clan. In some big clans with long histories, it was not difficult for a person at Zhang Tie's age to reach LV 7.

Zhang Tie didn't give any explanation either; instead, he rapidly collected his javelins from the dead bodies and led them towards a camp of former city guards in the distance.

As there were too many demonized people on the main streets, Zhang Tie especially chose side alleys. Sometimes, he directly entered the buildings on his side and ran on the roofs of the buildings in cases when there were too many demonized people. Even though they were very carefully, it was unavoidable that they still met four teams of demonized people hundreds of meters away.

After learning from the former experiences, they all moved very fast in these battles, leaving no time for those demonized people to

utter any scream.

Zhang Tie noticed that after Shrek killed those demonized people, he immediately took their purses. Zhang Tie didn't say any word about that as mercenaries were good at doing that kind of thing.

The places with great wealth in Heavens Cold City were within the inner city and in the Heavens Cold City Bank opened by the Zhen Clan. Both places had been under the watchful gaze of powerhouses from Huaiyuan Palace. However, people could still find much wealth from the other places in the city.

...

With a jarring scream uttered by a demonized person from afar, all the surrounding demonized people rushed over there. As a result, the streets became instantly empty.

In a room, Zhang Tie and Zerom's men heard the disorder footsteps from outside.

"This is a good chance. Someone else must have attracted those demonized people. We can directly rush over there. Ready..."

Zhang Tie also became more vigilant; when the footsteps had gone far away, Zhang Tie sped up followed by Jordan, who directly hefted Professor Simon on his shoulder. Zerom and Shrek were at the back of the team.

Zhang Tie targeted at a hotel with more than ten floors two hundred meters away.

This was the longest distance for them to run in a breath since they entered Heavens Cold City. It only took them a bit more than 10 seconds to get there.

Ahead of the team, Zhang Tie rushed before the gate of the hotel and caught sight of 4 demonized waiters of the hotel wandering out of the lobby. Of course, the four demonized people also saw Zhang Tie. Before they uttered any voice, Zhang Tie had already exploded their heads with 4 javelins.

Closely after that, all of them rushed into the lobby. As being not chased after on the way here, Jordan heavily panted, "F*ck, I couldn't have imagined that we could run so freely in Heavens Cold City!"

"Douchebag, hurry up, put me down!" Professor Simon swore.

Jordan hurriedly put him down.

...

Two minutes later, after killing seven or eight more demonized people in the hotel, they arrived at a conference room at the top of the hotel.

Standing in the conference room, they were able to see the military camp hundreds of meters away and some demonized people in the uniforms of former city guards wandering outside the camp.

"Nice spot, we will choose here then!" Zerom looked around before nodded.

"Fine, if we don't come back in two hours, we must have encountered some accident or special situation. You should then evacuate without us!" Zhang Tie told Zerom.

"Okay! Take care of yourselves!" Zerom nodded.

After reaching an agreement on the details, Zhang Tie and Shrek walked downstairs and left from the rear door. Before separation, they even exchanged glances with each other. After that, they chose a direction respectively and ran towards the military camp.

Shrek chose an alley while Zhang Tie directly dashed through the streets. Shrek thought that Zhang Tie would choose the roofs of those low buildings; however, it was really out of his imagination that Zhang Tie would choose that way. Therefore, he was stunned. 'What a crazy guy! Isn't he afraid of being surrounded by demonized people?'

Of course, Zhang Tie was not afraid of that. Because he didn't think any of the demonized people inside Heavens Cold City could catch up with him and block him. With his physical strength, he could keep running for a whole day in Heavens Cold City like this,

regardless of the quantity of those demonized people.

Now that most of demonized people above LV 10 in Heavens Cold City had been cleared by the powerhouses of the 6 clans, the remaining demonized people above LV 10 were staying near the inner city of Heavens Cold City. Few of them wandered outside. Even though Zhang Tie had met one of them, he was still confident that he could escape with the bliss of his rapid moving skill.

When he left the hotel, Zhang Tie triggered his rapid moving skill; therefore, he moved even faster on the streets.

As he expected, after a few footsteps, Zhang Tie was noticed by some wandering demonized people on the streets. They then chased after Zhang Tie; however, Zhang Tie just ignored them. As a result, more and more demonized people noticed Zhang Tie and started to follow him. In less than 200 m, Zhang Tie had been followed up by hundreds of demonized people.

As common demonized people ran almost as fast as commoners, they were gradually lagged behind by Zhang Tie.

For Zhang Tie, with high speed movement, he could keep out of range of all the attacks and harassment of demonized people in Heavens Cold City. Unless he stopped, he would never be surrounded by demonized people.

Even though more and more demonized people were chasing after him, the distance between them and Zhang Tie was also expanding. As long as Zhang Tie changed a route or made a turn,

many of the demonized people following him would lose their target and start to wander in the streets again.

Zhang Tie chose to stay close to that military camp's perimeter. After only several minutes, he had already gotten rid of the demonized people chasing after him. After circling around the military camp, Zhang Tie jumped off the three meter high wall in the east.

The whole camp was ruined by the battle airships of Huaiyuan Palace as a quarter of the ground and a fifth of the buildings in the camp had been attacked by white-phosphorous gel combustion bombs while metal bolts shot by the small-caliber, rapid-fire ballista from the battle airships of Huaiyuan Palace spread everywhere; many of them even burrowed deep into the soil.

Along with those traces left by the war were those incomplete corpses. As those corpses were left a week earlier, nobody cleaned them up; therefore, it was pretty disgusting. Nobody would like to see them at all.

At this time, the whole camp, which once housed over 10,000 city guards, had become a completely empty zone. Besides some demonized people wandering around like ghosts on the large training field, nobody else was alive, except for Zhang Tie.

At sight of Zhang Tie, the couple of demonized people rushed towards Zhang Tie at once...

Chapter 376: Double-Carp Swords

Three demonized city guards were rushing towards Zhang Tie. They all looked pretty disgusting, with the skin of two of them heavily burned. Besides that, one of them had lost an eye, and one's hair and scalp was burned off. The last one had a bolt in the right side of his chest, while disgusting puss was flowing out of the festering wound. Due to their stink, a lot of flies were circling around them.

With only one glance at them, Zhang Tie had given up his plan to bring them back to Professor Simon. They were really disgusting!

With one javelin, Zhang Tie slashed their heads into pieces as fast as he could, like swatting flies. After that, he started to search the military camp. As he didn't see Shrek inside the camp, Zhang Tie thought that he must've been targeting the demonized city guards wandering outside the military camp.

This was a very large military camp, which covered about 500,000 square meters, including the training field. Many buildings inside the camp had been burned, leaving behind the most common barracks, some training facilities, warehouses, canteens and so on.

According to the habits of demonized people, some of them preferred to wander where their hosts used to stay. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't believe that there were only three demonized people inside such a large military camp. Although he couldn't see any on the training field, he might meet some demonized people somewhere else.

Zhang Tie ran directly towards the nearest barracks.

The door to the barracks was half closed. When he arrived, Zhang Tie kicked it open at once. After peeping inside, he found no demonized people at all. It was chaotic and nothing could be seen on the bunk beds except for dust.

Zhang Tie kept kicking open the doors of seven more barracks and found no demonized city guards inside at all. Then Zhang Tie came to the gate of a building with four floors.

That building was very magnificent. Its exterior was covered with delicate marble bricks. There was also a noticeable copper plate on the wall outside, reading, 'Brigade of City Guards III Headquarters, Heavens Cold City'.

There were two empty sentry booths outside the gate of the building. Some military vehicles and light wheeled infantry chariots were parked in the parking lot beside the building. Those vehicles were crowded together in a disorderly way and the scene was lifeless. One chariot had even run into a parterre beside the building. After crashing into the parapet guardrail, it tilted over the parterre and was damaged greatly.

Everything there seemed to reveal how chaotic it was when the airships of Huaiyuan Palace had assaulted this military camp one week ago.

Zhang Tie didn't intend to go inside. But then he suddenly heard

sounds from upstairs and changed his mind, deciding to search inside.

After entering the building, the sounds became louder. The sounds, "bang, bang, bang" were drifting down from upstairs every second. With a javelin in hand, Zhang Tie silently went to the stairs of the building before he rushed upstairs.

Like other similar buildings, the stairs were in the middle. On both sides of each floor were corridors, and lining the corridors were rooms and offices. At a glance, the design was indicative of military camps.

Nobody was in the corridors on the second and third floors, so the sound had come from the fourth floor, which was more luxurious than the lower floors as it had dark red carpet on the floor. The moment Zhang Tie came to the fourth floor, he caught sight of a man in military uniform at the end of the corridor on the left, who was thumping on a closed door with his fist.

As that man had his back to Zhang Tie, the latter could not clearly see his face. Therefore, Zhang Tie could not judge whether or not the man was a demonized person.

All the rooms and offices on this floor were opened, with papers scattered all over the floor, except for the room at the end of the corridor on the left.

Zhang Tie took a look around and found nobody else on this floor. He walked towards the man in military uniform and stopped

ten meters away from him.

He coughed, "Ahem..."

Zhang Tie's cough was extraordinarily loud in the empty corridor. The moment the man heard this, he turned around.

Bloody eyes, a grim and twisted face, and mucus dripping from the corners of its mouth; all this indicated that it was a demonized city guard. What made Zhang Tie excited was that it was a second lieutenant.

Zhang Tie then let out a sigh, 'Thankfully, this one doesn't look that disgusting.'

The demonized person then charged at Zhang Tie, intending to punch his face. It moved very swiftly, equal to the fighting strength of a level six fighter. Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he faced its attack head on, like how a tough guy would bully a toddler, he ended the fight in the blink of an eye.

Catching its wrist in one hand, Zhang Tie pushed the demonized person's head with his other hand. Then, with a "Kacha" sound, he rotated its head 360 degrees and immediately broke its neck like breaking off corn cobs. As a result, the puppet's head was bent backwards over 180 degrees and lolled down its back while the top of its head was facing the floor.

No blood was spilled during the whole process.

Zhang Tie then loosened his grip, letting that demonized second lieutenant fall onto the floor like mud.

However, Zhang Tie hadn't expected that the puppet wouldn't die immediately. Instead it lay on the floor, its limbs still twitching slightly like a machine that was out of control. Meanwhile, its bloody eyes gazed at itself, intending to control its own body once again.

Although, Zhang Tie had long known that demonized people had a very strong physical endurance, he had not imagined that the puppet could still try to stand up at that moment.

"Motherf*cker!" Zhang Tie swore as he immediately raised his foot and stomped on its limbs to break them. After that, the puppet didn't move any more. However, its bloody eyes were still gazing at Zhang Tie. Thankfully, Zhang Tie's psychological endurance was great and he didn't care about this "staring salute".

Previously, Zhang Tie had intended to catch it, However, at the sight of the metal plate on the door, Zhang Tie changed his mind.

The plate read, 'Brigade Commander's Office'.

He thought to take a look inside, as there could be some good items there. A thought flashed across Zhang Tie's mind, 'No matter what, they are Zhen Clan's items. Just take them.'

It seemed that this was an important place as it had a reinforced metal protective door. At that moment it was obviously locked, otherwise the demonized man would not have thumped on it for so long, leaving only a dent in it.

"Pah, pah, pah..." Zhang Tie patted the door's surroundings. From the muffled resonance, Zhang Tie knew that it was a heavy door.

Zhang Tie then took a deep breath and moved one step back. After that, he ferociously kicked its lock with the "Elephant Stomp" movement of Iron-Blood Fist.

With a crisp sound, "Bang," the whole door, along with its frame, changed shape greatly, leaving a crack of space between the door and its frame about two fists wide.

After another "Elephant Stomp", with a boom, the door fell down together with its door frame.

Soon after that, fine plaster and cement blocks dropped from the ceiling and covered Zhang Tie's head and face.

"Peh...peh...peh..." Zhang Tie kept spitting out of the cement and plaster as he patted off the dust in his hair. After that, he walked into the office.

'It'll be a great loss if I find nothing inside.'

He came to an outer room of the office, which was more than thirty square meters big. There were some filing cabinets, a sofa set and a desk close to the door. Some maps were hanging on the wall. It seemed to be the office of a secretariat or an adviser. After a glance, Zhang Tie could see nothing valuable. Therefore, he didn't search it any more than that.

There was a dark red door on the right wall, which was half covered. Stepping on the thick carpet, Zhang Tie walked over there and pushed open the door.

Compared to the room outside, the room behind the door was like an office of a brigade commander. It covered more than 100 square meters. The moment he walked inside, he saw a huge sand model of the city on a table in the middle of the room, and two nice, crisscrossed, gleaming long swords on the wall facing the door.

"Ze...ze...Zhen clan is really rich!" Zhang Tie sighed with feeling as he touched the two one meter high crystal columns, each of which weighed hundreds of kilograms.

The two crystal columns on both sides of the door looked pretty good. They were transparent all over. Additionally, a steamed-bun sized pyramid energy shadow had formed in their cores. The moment Zhang Tie drew close to them, he felt the powerful energy effects of the two super "crystal generators".

Such large pyramid crystals were close to at least level six. Zhang Tie had not seen such large pyramid crystals before. The value of the two items was definitely worth more than 10,000 gold coins.

After confirming that nobody was in the room, Zhang Tie teleported the two huge pyramid crystals into Castle of Black Iron without any hesitation.

This was really a worthwhile trip for Zhang Tie.

The brigade commander's office had been arranged in an ambient way. Other than the two huge "crystal generators", there were some oak bookcases which were filled with books. At the sight of the bookcases and the books inside, Zhang Tie's eyes gleamed. Without a second thought, he collected all of them into his study room in Castle of Black Iron.

As his study room in Castle of Black Iron was still empty, he would not waste the precious books on those bookcases. Until now, Zhang Tie still remembered his experience while in the Grant family's Private Library in Prague. In this day and age, books were also a very important treasure.

When he was in Zhen's Mansion, Zhang Tie had the chance to move all the books from the Mansion into Castle of Black Iron. However, due to an emergency he'd had no time to collect every book. Additionally, he was afraid of exposing himself to the Zhang Clan. By contrast, he didn't need to consider any of that at this moment.

Besides bookcases, there was also a wine cabinet in the office, which was filled with various types of alcohol. However, Zhang Tie wasn't interested in drinking them as he was not sure what was

inside of the bottles.

Many elite weapons were hanging on a wall. There were also two sets of nice looking armor. However, Zhang Tie didn't touch them either.

On one side of the desk, Zhang Tie found a safe which was completely open, leaving nothing inside. It seemed that someone had taken the items away in a frenzy. Only god knew who had those items now.

After that, Zhang Tie checked the last thing in the office—the desk.

Zhang Tie came to the desk and pulled out the drawer at the bottom. As only some documents had been left inside, Zhang Tie turned them over randomly before pushing the drawer closed.

Some boxes of cigars and some delicate boxes of medicament were lying in the drawer on the second layer. Zhang Tie picked up one box of medicament and found some sexy women on the package, who had alluring, slim eyes and half-exposed boobs. There were 3 lines of Chinese characters on the package:

'Beauties Groan Every Night.'

'Tone Your Kidney and Nourish Your Body. With One Piece, You Will be a Real Man Overnight.'

'Secret Medicament from Qionglou Pavilion of Taixia in the Eastern Continent.'

"F*ck!" Zhang Tie swore as he pressed the drawer back in.

When he pulled open the drawer on the third layer, he found some medals and an exquisite box made of silver and gold, which was about thirty square centimeters wide and more than 10 centimeters high.

Zhang Tie took the box out of the drawer and opened it.

A belt, made of gold and silver diamond-shaped pieces of metal, was lying inside. At the sight of this belt, Zhang Tie widened his eyes in amazement——No Way!

Zhang Tie screamed inside, "No Way", repetitively as this belt's design and its brilliant, noble and slim buckle made him excited.

It was too familiar for Zhang Tie. This was obviously another Red-Snake Sword. Additionally, compared to the Red-Snake Sword that he'd gained in Iron-Horn Army, this one looked better and more advanced.

Zhang Tie then pressed the bead in the middle of the buckle. With an extremely low sound, "Tsa", two fish shot out at the same time.

Zhang Tie took one of the two fish. Feeling the fine, anti-slip

scales and the heavy texture on the fish, Zhang Tie instantly recalled the same feeling from when he'd held the Red-Snake Sword.

Holding the handle of this slim, golden fish, Zhang Tie noticed the small Chinese characters on its back——'Golden Carp of Double-Carp Swords'

Zhang Tie slightly release his Iron-Blood Battle Qi.

A sword ray instantly sprouted out of the golden carp's mouth and stretched six meters away. Amid the sword light, Zhang Tie seemed to see a flexible golden carp. Just as when he'd used the Red-Snake Sword before, when he pushed it with his sword qi, the secret grains on the blades cast a vivid pattern in the air.

Zhang Tie took the other fish sword in his left hand. At the same time, he slightly released his Iron-Blood Battle Qi to push out the sword light from the mouth of this other fish. The thin sword blade also reached six meters away. The only difference was that the projection in the air from this sword was a silver carp.

Zhang Tie waved his hands at the same time. In a split second, the room was filled with crisscrossing sword light. Like performing a magic trick, Zhang Tie unleashed golden and silver carps from his hands, making them swim six meters ahead of him in the air.

As he was not accustomed to the two weapons and the effective distance of the weapons was a bit long, the two weapons collided

with each other every now and then with a splash. Due to an unsteady gesture from his left hand, the silver carp swam over the middle of the wine cabinet, instantly creating a clean cut through the bottles inside. As a result, all the items inside the wine cabinet shattered.

"Hahahaha," Zhang Tie burst out in laughter. The double-carp swords were definitely one level higher than the Red-Snake Sword that he'd used before. The two swords were greater in various ways, including effective distance, sharpness and craftsmanship.

Zhang Tie guessed that the weapons had probably been gifted to the master of this office. Zhang Tie sighed with feeling. 'This gift is really much better than those weapons in the warehouse of the Iron-Horn Army.'

Zhang Tie had been shocked when he'd gained the rare Red-Snake Sword before. However, he had not imagined that he could gain another set of swords of the same quality just one year later.

Was this his destiny?

Zhen's assassin had made him lose his Red-Snake Sword in Dragon Cave. However, now he'd gained a much better set of Double-Carp Swords within Zhen's territory. This must have been predestined.

Zhang Tie then instantly tied his Double-Carp Swords to his waist. Being covered by his field combat clothes, nobody would know that Zhang Tie had changed his sword belt.

By then, Zhang Tie was satisfied.

After another glance around the office, the corners of Zhang Tie's mouth were raised as he left the room.

When he went back through the door of the outer office, Zhang Tie grabbed the demonized person who's bloody eyes were popping out and was still intending to pick itself up. Zhang Tie then rushed downstairs with it in hand, like he'd caught a small chick, and rushed outside of the camp.

...

Ten minutes later, after shaking off the demonized puppets chasing him by taking a circular detour, Zhang Tie returned to the hotel where Professor Simon and the other two guys were.

Less than two minutes after Zhang Tie returned, Shrek also came back with a demonized puppet in hand.

"Well, they are mine now. Please spare me two hours. You can leave now!" said Professor Simon

After placing the two demonized puppets onto the desk of the conference room in the hotel, qi instantly covered Professor Simon as he chased the other people out of his working place like a chef who was ready to cook two fat fish.

Zhang Tie, Shrek, Zerom and Jordan were then chased out of the conference room by Professor Simon as well.

At the entrance of the conference room, Shrek put his arm around Jordan's neck and murmured something to him. Jordan then forcefully swallowed his saliva and nodded.

"Zerom, it's enough if you accompany Professor Simon here. Jordan and I want to make an inspection round inside the hotel to eliminate the other demonized puppets here!" said Shrek as he winked.

Because he was clever, of course Zerom knew what they were really going to do, but he only exhorted them, "Watch out, don't bring in those demonized puppets from outside the hotel!"

"No problem!" Shrek responded with a big smile. Then he glanced at Zhang Tie. "How about inspecting the hotel together with us?"

"No need. Just do what you want. Except for money and some valuable items, don't take any items that are too conspicuous with you. Otherwise you will have trouble!" Zhang Tie warned.

Considering the fact the hotel's star rating wasn't too low, there would probably be a lot of money and some valuable items inside the hotel, or left behind from the guests. Whether they could find these things depended on their luck.

Shrek and Jordan then walked away jubilantly.

"Aren't you going?" Zerom asked Zhang Tie with a smile.

"I have many chances to make money like this, so I'm not in much of a hurry!" said Zhang Tie, having just made a fortune.

"I almost forgot that. You can come here whenever you want!" Zerom patted his head.

"Oh, have you gotten a message from Captain Kerlin? Has he left Blackhot City too?"

Zerom shook his head. "I contacted him a month ago. He was still in the No.7 National Middle School. You might not know yet, but that guy has bought a house near Bright Avenue!"

"Bought a house?"

"As a man who wants to protect and be responsible for a woman, of course he needs to prepare a fixed house in Blackhot City!" Zerom mocked, "That guy is rude and rarely falls in love with any women. But since he's fallen in love with a woman like Miss Daina from your school, he would not leave Blackhot City unless he saw no chance of surviving! In order to buy a house there, that guy almost robbed non-stop these past few years..."

'Miss Daina.' After hearing this familiar and beautiful name, Zhang Tie became slightly absent-minded...

Two hours later, Shrek and Jordan came back red faced with items fully covering their waists. At this time, Professor Simon also walked out of the conference room as he wiped off the blood stains on hands.

At the sight of Professor Simon's slightly pale and frightened face, Zhang Tie was slightly shocked inside.

Professor Simon trembled, his voice hoarse, "I...I have to go back to Armes...right now!"

...

Chapter 377: Ahead of Time

When the 5 people went back to the refugee camp, it was almost 2 pm.

Zerom and his men changed their clothes in Zhang Tie's tent; Zhang Tie then saw them off.

"No matter what, Thor Mercenary Army owes you!" the emaciated Professor Simon said as he embraced Zhang Tie to bid him farewell. Although they'd only stayed with each other for one morning, they had become brothers-in-arms.

"Come to Armes when you are free. I will introduce the hottest girl to you!" Jordan said as he gave a bear hug to Zhang Tie, "Thanks for that nickname, Black Cyclone, I like that!"

"You can bring me fortune!" Shrek also hugged Zhang Tie and sighed with feelings, "Now, Heavens Cold City is like a vault; to be honest, I don't even want to leave!"

Zerom also hugged Zhang Tie, "Take care of yourself!"

"You too!" Zhang Tie replied.

"We planned to go to Huaiyuan Prefecture; however, we have to give up on it; Professor Simon said we had to notify the headquarters of Thor Mercenary Army and let them prepare for the coming war!" Zerom appeared to be slightly disappointed.

"Why were you going to Huaiyuan Prefecture?" Zhang Tie was slightly stunned by this.

"Hmm, I heard an alchemist in Huaiyuan Prefecture had produced all-purpose medicament. After the event in Heavens Cold City, the various medicaments are in short supply. However, Armes is covered with poisonous things. As long as the antidote is in short supply, it will cause many bad chain reactions. Previously, we intended to seek a solution in Huaiyuan Prefecture; but now..." Zerom waved his head helplessly. As they only had one airship, they had to go back to notice Armes first about the more emergent information.

"How many vials of all-purpose medicament do you need?"

"At least 4,000 vials! Zerom replied. The trading volume of 4,000 vials of medicament was huge wherever it was, especially for a mercenary army.

If Thor Mercenary Army was under the control of Zerom, Zhang Tie would directly promise him by selling or gifting him the all-purpose medicament. Zhang Tie's life philosophy was influenced by his dad and his mom as he firmly insisted on repaying one's help. When he attended survival training in Wild Wolf Valley, Zerom and Captain Kerlin saved him in the cave. Of course, as repayment, Zhang Tie would gift his all-purpose medicament to him without any hesitation.

However, Thor Mercenary Army was not under Zerom's control.

As a member who was thought highly of by the management of the mercenary army, he was nothing different than a staff member in a business group. He was not even a shareholder. Therefore, Zhang Tie needed to consider it carefully. If he repaid his thanks to Thor Mercenary Army, it be not proper; instead, he needed to repay his thanks to Zerom and let Thor Mercenary Army know about Zerom's significance in the Army, which would be advantageous for Zerom's development in the mercenary army.

Many thoughts flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

Zhang Tie smiled and pretended to take out of something from the vials container in his tactical vest; actually, he was taking out of 2 vials of all-purpose medicament from Castle of Black Iron and gave them to Zerom.

"Do you mean this?"

At the sight of the two vials of medicament in Zhang Tie's hands, Zerom, Simon, Shrek, and Jordan were stunned.

Under the sunlight, the crystal vials were radiating rainbow-like brilliance, which made the greenish yet golden medicament pretty mysterious. The unique symbol of Manjusaka on the vials instantly attracted their eyes.

"Argh, Manjusaka, I heard it was the symbol of the all-purpose medicament..." Shrek screamed before Zerom spoke.

"Zhang Tie, where do you get this from?"

"Why wouldn't members of the Zhang Clan have such good items from Huaiyuan Prefecture?" Zhang Tie casually answered.

Staring at the two vials of all-purpose medicament, Zerom's eyes gleamed, "I was told that very little of such medicament could flow out of Huaiyuan Prefecture. Nobody in Armes has even seen it. We just heard about its marvelous functions. Can it really replace preliminary antidote potions?"

"If you only used to detoxify, you would find it was more effective than preliminary antidote potion. Some of my friends have tried it, this thing could easily detoxify the toxin of a huge centipede!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Professor Simon took one and started to gaze at it carefully. He seemed wanting to open it; however, he felt embarrassed to do that; ergo, he glanced at Zhang Tie, asking for Zhang Tie's agreement.

"Just open it, these 2 vials of all-purpose medicament are yours!"

Hearing this, Professor Simon instantly opened the clasp of the vial and moved it closer to his nose and sniffed. Soon after that, he looked very energetic. Seeing this, Jordan and Shrek also drew close.

"Argh, how come it smells so good..." Jordan shouted.

"Is this the smell of a super enzyme?" Professor Simon became a bit stunned.

"What, Professor? Shrek asked.

"Alas, I also wanted to be an alchemist when I was young. I studied some knowledge as a herbal apprentice and tried to make a super enzyme; pitifully, I failed it. I even wasted several years on this. At the sight of this vial of all-purpose medicament, I recalled what happened before..." Professor Simon waved his head in a nostalgic look.

Zerom then looked at Zhang Tie full of inquiries and desires, which could be easily felt.

"When you go to Huaiyuan Prefecture next time, you can go to Jinwu Company in Jinhai City. You could get all-purpose medicament there!" Zhang Tie told Zerom.

"Jinwu Company?" Hearing this, Zerom became a bit surprised. Companies were usually small trading organizations; the greater ones would be called commercial associations or business groups. He had not heard a company called Jinwu Company in Jinhai City of Huaiyuan Prefecture could sell all-purpose medicament. Zerom felt it was unbelievable, "Is Jinwu Company selling this?"

"If it were anyone else, they would not be able to buy all-purpose medicament from Jinwu Company even for a high price, but if it's you, you will definitely buy it from Jinwu Company. They can get all-purpose medicament for you through special channels!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, not only Zerom understood, even Professor Simon, Shrek and Jordan had understood who then glanced at Zerom with amazed looks. 'When did Zerom become so welcome? No matter whether Zhang Tie was bragging or not, it was very significant for Thor Mercenary Army that Zerom can get all-purpose medicament from Huaiyuan Prefecture.'

Zerom glanced at Zhang Tie and felt moved inside. Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Zerom finally confirmed that this teenager might have grown too powerful, so much so that even Zerom felt strange about him.

People didn't need to explain somethings.

Zerom then embraced Zhang Tie once again, "Take care of yourself, I hope to see you again!"

"You too!"

Zerom, Shrek, Jordan and Professor Simon finally departed Zhang Tie. Seeing them disappearing in the distance, Zhang Tie stood still in the wild for a while. He then took a deep breath and looked at the scorching sun before he returned to the refugee camp.

It was a sunny day; however, Zhang Tie felt chilly inside.

Watching their backs, Zhang Tie wondered if he would see them

again; perhaps, this was the last time they would see each other.

Last year, Donder told him that the third holy war between human race and demons would break out in five to twenty years. So, according to Donder, the holy war would break out in 4 years; however, based on the information that Professor Simon gained through study and analysis of the demonized puppets, Zhang Tie knew that it would break out much earlier than estimated.

Zhang Tie only had one year to prepare for the coming war, instead of four years. Based on the analysis of Professor Simon, the puppet worms had lived in their hosts' brains for over 36 months. If not for the event, those puppet worms would've incubated for another six months to one year...

This was very important and frightening information, which meant that demons and their lackeys in Three-Eye Association planned to launch the war and plunge the whole continent into great chaos next year, next August at the latest — as was predicted by Professor Simon.

The world had become chaotic. What happened in Heavens Cold City was just the beginning; in the future, more and more places would become a hell like Heavens Cold City.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether the complete collapse and exposure of the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City would let demons and Three-Eye Association's some plans shift to earlier dates. Now that Professor Simon could gain the information through anatomy and analysis of the puppets, Zhang Tie believed that those big clans in Jinyun Country and the other countries and powers which took

away not only one demonized puppet from Heavens Cold City could also work it out.

As long as they started to accelerate their defense towards the 3rd holy war, actually, they were forcing Three-Eye Association and demons to launch the war. Therefore, Zhang Tie and most of the other average people would have less time to prepare for it!

No war would start when both parties were well prepared for it. Wars were always competitions on speed.

Thinking of this shocking information, Zhang Tie walked in the refugee camp with a low mood. Seeing those extremely sorrowful and numb looks, Zhang Tie's heart gradually became cold.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was like a man running on the prairie; seeing the horizon in the distance, he thought that he could somewhere brilliant if he kept running like that; however, all of a sudden, that man found that the horizon was merely a mirage. Actually, he stood on the edge of an abyss and had no road ahead.

...

At this time, a red leather football rolled towards Zhang Tie and hit his foot, causing him to look around.

A sunny boy of 5 years old or so was running towards him, "Elder brother, can you kick the football back to me?"

At the sight of the little boy's smiling face, Zhang Tie became stunned. After circling around the refugee camp for several days, it was Zhang Tie's first time to see such a happy smile. It was like a ray of sun light among the black clouds.

Zhang Tie didn't react until the little kid repeated what he said. Zhang Tie then slightly picked the football by his foot into the air and held it by hand. After that, Zhang Tie walked towards that little boy and squatted, patted his little head, and passed the football to him, "Are you alone? Where's your dad?"

"My dad is catching bad guys in Heavens Cold City!" The little boy answered in a spirited way. "He's a police officer in Heavens Cold City. My dad also has the same uniform as yours. But my dad's uniform is blue!"

"Your dad is catching bad guys in Heavens Cold City?" Zhang Tie failed to understand it at once, Are there any bad guys there at this moment... No, is there anybody alive in Heavens Cold City?"

"Yes, my mom told me that my dad is very great. He has caught a lot of thieves before. We are camping outside; after my dad catches all the bad guys in Heavens Cold City, we will go back home!"

'Camping?' Zhang Tie looked around at the refugee camp filled with tents. Before he wanted to say something, he saw a 30-odd woman running towards him in a flurried way, "Argh, sorry, sorry, did [Xiaoxing's](#) football hit you?"

The little boy turned around and told his mom, "Mom, I'm talking about dad with this elder brother!"

"Ah, Xiaoxing, go play over there, don't trouble this elder brother. Haven't I told you to not trouble others when you play?"

"But I was asking whether this elder brother had seen my dad or not. My dad also has a uniform almost the same as that of this elder brother. This elder brother is also in the police!" The little boy said innocently before asked Zhang Tie, "Elder brother, you are a police officer, right?"

"Ah...yes...yes!" Zhang Tie smiled.

"Are you catching bad guys too?"

"Almost that. But you dad is much sharper. I've not caught any thieves yet!"

"Are you catching bad guys in Heavens Cold City every day? Have you seen my dad there? How about him now? My mom said my dad would write a letter to me in a few days!"

The little boy didn't see it; however, when he asked this, his mom who was squatting behind him started crying tears instantly. The woman stared at Zhang Tie with an imploring look.

"What's your dad's name?" Zhang Tie asked patiently.

"My dad is Fang Weiqiang!"

"Oh, I met him before. When I went to Heavens Cold City last time, I saw him catch a lot of thieves! He's great!"

"Really?" The little boy became excited at once, "When you see him next time, can you tell him that Xingxing misses him so much? It's really interesting to live in tents here, I want to play together with him!"

"No problem!" Zhang Tie nodded.

Hearing Zhang Tie's promise, the little boy threw his football onto the ground and kicked it away. After that, he chuckled and chased after his leather football.

The woman hurriedly wiped off his tears as she stood up and thanked Zhang Tie.

For this mother's consideration, Zhang Tie could only let out a deep sigh, "He will find out about it sooner or later!"

"Just let him remain happy temporarily. He's still young now; I don't want him to know that he has lost his dad at such an age!" The woman looked firm and painful.

Zhang Tie then glanced at her, "I'm Zhang Tie. I live in the camp

of Huaiyuan Palace, if you need my help, come find me!"

"Thanks..." The woman dropped off her tears once again.

...

Zhang Tie then left the refugee camp. The woman had given him a lesson just now. From what happened to her and her kid, Zhang Tie learned that no matter how tough the road ahead was, one had to survive on. You might not decide what was going to happen; however, you should at least fix your own attitude.

'Even a kid could treat living in refugee camp as a camping trip and found pleasure among it, why wouldn't I treat the tough and unpredictable future as a gamble of my life?

'Although the future didn't look bright, at least I have taken the preemptive move due to all-purpose medicament. The sudden shortage of medicament materials indicates that the proportion of my all-purpose medicament becomes heavier in the market. What does this mean? It means more money and more chances to gain resources. Then, I will be more influential. Of course, more unpredictable dangers will come towards me.'

Zhang Tie returned to his base and found two officers of Hidden Dragon Palace waiting for him outside his tent.

"Are you Zhang Tie? The seniors of the Zhang Clan want to see you!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie's heart pounded. "Seniors of the Zhang Clan have summoned me? What's that for?"

"Elder brothers, what's up?" Zhang Tie asked politely, 'Could it be that I screwed up by leading outsiders in Heavens Cold City? No way! How could such a trivial thing arise the attention of the seniors of Zhang Clan.'

"We don't know either. Just follow us there!" the two officers also replied very politely, which made Zhang Tie recover his composure at once.

He then followed the two officers towards the flagship airship in the far...

Xiaoxing, 小星, which means his parents hope him as sparkling as stars in the darkness. Xingxing, 星星, is his pet name, which means cute stars.

Chapter 378: Never Lower My Head

The airship parked on the ground was like a giant building dozens of stories high. Thick steel wires were pulled taut from the body of the airship and were firmly nailed onto the wood piles on the ground like those ropes nailed to the ground to hold the tents. If not fixed to the ground, such a colossal thing would cause a very dangerous accident when facing heavy winds.

To park a huge airship on the ground was as technical as parking a huge ship in the harbor. Zhang Tie learned how to park a huge airship recently. Looking at that airship which brought him a great sense of oppression, Zhang Tie was thinking about something in his mind—

'I've not entered Castle of Black Iron to eat fruits for many days. I wonder whether new fruits have grown on the small tree after killing so many demonized puppets over the past few days. Hopefully I can get another Trouble-Reappearance Fruit; then, I'd be able to try driving a fury-wind airship in the trouble-reappearance space.'

The huge airship was parked on a wide, sandy area; many people were accessing the hatch door at the end of the airship. It had observably become a temporary headquarters of Huaiyuan Palace in Heavens Cold City. Personnel only! Two rows of fully armored soldiers from Huaiyuan Palace were standing outside the hatch door. Without permission, no students from Hidden Dragon Palace were allowed to access the airship.

Under the guidance of the two officers, Zhang Tie smoothly

entered this huge airship and came to the outside of a room on the second floor of the airship.

After lightly knocking at the door, the two officers said respectfully outside the door, "Senior, Zhang Tie has arrived!"

"Let him in!" a tender voice said from inside the door.

An officer pushed open the door and made a gesture to let Zhang Tie in. Zhang Tie then entered the room with various questions filling his mind.

The room was arranged in an elegant and simple way. An old man in plain robes was sitting on his knees and making a kettle of fragrant tea water. He looked both attentive and pious, all of his movement made Zhang Tie very comfortable.

Zhang Tie looked at his bloody clothes, then looked around the surrounding environment in the room. He instantly felt like a plate of dog meat served in a top-class cocktail party, which formed a sharp contrast.

Zhang Tie scratched his head, not knowing whether to walk forward to destroy the nice ambience or just stand still. To be honest, it was Zhang Tie's first time seeing a senior of Huaiyuan Palace. These seniors not only had a terrifyingly great amount of power, but also had a say in Huaiyuan Palace. What was more, this man should be Zhang Tie's great-grandfather.

Of course, Zhang Tie became nervous in front of him.

"Come here, take a seat!" The senior was very kind. He seemed to understand what Zhang Tie was thinking about now. Raising his hand, he beckoned Zhang Tie. "Be at home; people are the noblest creature in the universe; items might not match a man, yet a man is qualified to match all the items!"

'Items might not match a man, yet a man is qualified to match all the items?' Zhang Tie was shocked by this meaningful line. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't hesitate anymore; instead, he walked straight into the room and sat on his knees like that senior before the teapot.

"Have a try!" The senior pushed a cup of tea in front of Zhang Tie.

The moment the cup of tea was pushed in front of Zhang Tie, Zhang Tie smelt a special odor, which was extremely delicate with a refreshing and rigorous moisture. He then thought about the scene in the mountain after the early spring rain.

Zhang Tie downed the whole cup of tea, but was shocked; he tasted nothing at all. The tea only tasted a bit sweet, nothing else.

"How do you feel?" the senior asked Zhang Tie full of expectation.

"It would be better with a bit of sugar in it!" Zhang Tie answered honestly.

Hearing this reply, the senior's eyelids quivered; he then watched his cup with the same kind of tea water for a short while before sighed, "Didn't you taste such tea before? It's 'Wild Spring', the top-class tea in Eastern Continent. How come you want some sugar with it?"

"I have not tasted any tea like this before; I only tasted tea leaves before!" Zhang Tie said with an embarrassed look.

Thinking about Zhang Tie's life in Blackhot City, the senior shook his head as he took his teacup and smelt the fragrance of the tea inside. After that, he took a sip carefully and asked Zhang Tie straightforwardly, "You took outsiders into Heavens Cold City today, correct?"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie's heart raced instantly. The old man continued sipping his tea; however, Zhang Tie felt that this old man immediately became taller and unshackable like a mountain, which caused him difficulty breathing.

This was purely a spiritual feeling. It was an all-round overwhelming state from qi field, spirit, ability, will and other aspects.

At this moment, Zhang Tie felt like a trivial ant. No matter how high he jumped, he would always be an ant. In contrast, this old man was a mountain which was hard to pass or compete with. Zhang Tie even felt that on a whim the old man on the opposite could destroy him both spiritually and physically.

After only a few seconds, Zhang Tie had realized that he was losing control of his body under such a terrifying suppression. He was now in an extremely powerful force field both physically and spiritually. The force field was like mercury spilling over the ground. It penetrated into his body without any obstacle and could even impede his nerve center and brain from sending orders to his body.

Under such suppression, Zhang Tie's straight back started to bend towards the ground slowly. At this moment, each of his cells seemed to be forcing him to lower his head with the instinct to kneel down and give up completely.

The senior was still sipping his tea leisurely with his attention on the teacup. He didn't glance at Zhang Tie at all.

'Is this a knight's force? Is this the 3-in-1 force mentioned by Master?' Zhang Tie was shocked too much inside. Although he was clear-minded, he felt helpless as he could only see his body slowly bending towards the floor. His head was closer to the beige floor which he was kneeling on; at the same time, the wooden grains on the floor became larger and clearer.

'No, I will not surrender to this... even if I die...' Zhang Tie screamed inside out of fury. Meanwhile, the veins on his forehead started to bulge. With full of his spirit and strength, he wanted to take back control of his own body...

Zhang Tie then saw some images in his mind: that teenager who

was abducted by Huck and Snade and stomped onto the ground... Glaze throwing a contemptuous sneer towards him... the seven wild wolves who almost killed him... the hidden bolt covered with blue frost which was shot towards him after he walked down from the duel platform... those undead of Black-Feathers Army of the Sun Dynasty who wanted to tear him to pieces... Major Franca's wolf-like eyes...and the assassination attempt executed by that Zhen douchebag in Dragon Cave...

'No... no, I won't...' Zhang Tie's eyes turned red at once.

The spiritual energy in his mind was boiling up...

Zhang Tie's blood started to boil...

Every one of his muscles started to tense as hard as steel and iron...

When Zhang Tie's forehead was only one egg's distance away from the ground, Zhang Tie's hands which were put on his knees finally became fists.

The sweat over his forehead started to drip onto the floor one blob after another. Because of the narrow distance, Zhang Tie could almost hear the sound of his sweat dripping onto the ground.

Zhang Tie finally controlled his head; after that, he started to raise his head and straighten up his back gradually. Although it was a simple movement, it caused a sound of "Kakakaka" over

Zhang Tie's muscles and skeletons like forcefully opening those fixtures on the metal processing platform which had been rusted for a long time

It took Zhang Tie two minutes to completely raise his head and straighten his back.

However, after such a short while, Zhang Tie was fully covered in sweat like he'd just climbed out of water. His combat uniform had become completely drenched. He felt even more tired than after fighting a whole day in Heavens Cold City.

Not until Zhang Tie raised his head and straightened up his body did the senior raise his head and peer at him with a shrewd light.

Zhang Tie panted. Even after drinking a cup of tea, he still felt his throat becoming hoarse. He then stared at that person opposite him, "Yes, I took four people into Heavens Cold City today!"

"Don't you know about the order?" The senior gazed at Zhang Tie as he put down his tea cup. At the same time, his kind gaze turned into sharp-bolts and shot directly into Zhang Tie's mind, "Why do you think you are an exception?"

Chapter 379: If Not an Ant, Be a Chinese Dragon

Facing the sharp stare of the senior, Zhang Tie replied without any fear, "I just did what I should do!"

"What you should do?" A forbidding sneer appeared on the senior's face. "Don't you know that Huaiyuan Palace is enforcing military laws here? You think that's what you should do, but you might lose your life according to the military laws. Since its founding, Huaiyuan Palace has been strictly complying with the clan regulations left by Lord Huaiyuan for hundreds of years. Even an heir who once violated the clan regulations was abolished and imprisoned for the rest of his life by the clan. Do you think that you are unaffected by clan regulations just because of your all-purpose medicament? Do you think that Huaiyuan Palace won't kill you?"

"I'm just a small figure. I don't think I am great. If I violate any clan regulations, of course Huaiyuan Palace could kill me!" Zhang Tie raised his head. "But as a man, I have to do something!"

"Oh? You still have an excuse for your actions?" The senior turned his furious look into a smile. "Is your excuse more important than clan regulations? Tell me about your reason. Do they deserve what you did to them?"

"One of them saved my life before. I have to return the favour. This is the first reason!"

"What about the second reason?"

Zhang Tie kept silent for a short while before he continued with a lower, yet firmer tone, "The information that was gained at the cost of over a million common people's lives doesn't belong to a single individual, the six influential clans in Jinyun Country or their privileged lords. Nobody is qualified to hold this information personally. If the news about the holy war was locked, more average people would become cannon fodder as they wouldn't be able to prepare!"

"You really think so?" The senior of Huaiyuan Palace narrowed his eyes slightly.

"Yes!" Zhang Tie replied with a louder voice as he puffed up his chest. "In the last few days, many powerful people have already gained the information they wanted from Heavens Cold City. I don't think those big figures and influential clans in Central States Union are the only ones who have the right to know that the holy war will arrive next year, or even in six months. Why don't other people have any right to know about this information, which is so closely related to their lives?"

The senior fixed his eyes onto Zhang Tie's face. His sharp gaze almost shot through Zhang Tie's eyes and entered his mind. "Do you want to know why? Because only these people and clans can deal the greatest damage to the demons and keep more people alive. Because of their great combined power and organizational ability, they are qualified to know more information than commoners!"

"Therefore commoners are destined to die?"

With an extremely solemn face, the senior replied, "Have you seen how ants cross a river when it has flooded? Ants cannot swim, so all they can do is hug each other in a ball with tens of thousands of them and roll over the river. During this process, many of the ants on the outer sphere are flushed away by the flood, leaving those in the core alive. This holy war is akin to ants crossing a river. In the end, some ants would be flushed away by flood. However, some would survive. Sacrifice is unavoidable. While we cannot make sure that every ant will cross the river, we have to believe that only those ants who are powerful enough to unite can decide the future of the ants!"

Zhang Tie knew he was right. When the holy war arrived, most of commoners who were not powerful enough to unite with each other would not organize effective counterattacks towards the demons at all. Instead, they would only think about escape, escape and escape...

'At this moment, the big figures and I don't think the same. They pay more attention to the ants who can unite with each other. However, I want those commoners who cannot unite with each other, who are doomed to be flushed away by the floods, to make preparations ahead of the floods, even just a bit. They might not be able to roll over the river like other ants, but at least they could have a chance to find a leaf for themselves.

'Is anybody wrong? Nobody is wrong. Each person has his or her own stance. Although my idea is almost perfect, I could actually only help a few "ants". A Thor Mercenary Army of only tens of

thousands of people was nothing compared to those big powers. I was just trying my best to help them in case of regret.'

Before coming to Huaiyuan Palace, his family members in Blackhot City were those ants, doomed to be flushed away by this flood in the eyes of those big figures.

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie smiled with self-mockery. Until then he didn't realize that although he was rich and more privileged than before, it was impossible for him to become a person like Lan Yunxi or the elites from other clans, because he could not think like them at all. His life experiences at the bottom of Blackhot City had been deeply impressed in his soul. Deep in his mind, there was a small figure, a poor guy, a flesh bag in the Iron Thorns Fighting Club, who would always do something at the sight of someone like him encountering unfairness or doomed to be cannon fodder.

Donder told him that according to a discovery made by human psychologists before the Catastrophe, everybody was actually trying to do one thing—to make their personality formed in childhood more complete.

'I can hardly understand the "good intentions" of the big figures. Instead, I only want to do something to make me and my friends feel better. I am both resigned to the coming adversities and rebellious. I expect this world to be a paradise where "everyone is equal". Does this expectation come from the small figure in my soul?'

"You didn't have to attend this action. Nobody has forced you to do that. But you came voluntarily in response to the summons of

the clan. Additionally, you are very brave on the battle field. I appreciate it very much!" Seeing Zhang Tie stay silent for a while, the senior sipped a mouthful of tea and continued, "As it's your first mistake taking people inside the city privately, I will punish you according to the military laws of Huaiyuan Palace in the name of playing favoritism. Your clan contribution points for this action will be fully deducted. Furthermore, you should accept one hundred whips. Do you agree?"

"A country has its national laws, similarly, a clan has its regulations. As I have violated the regulations of Huaiyuan Palace, I accept the punishment voluntarily!" Zhang Tie said in a low voice.

"Hmm. There's another thing that you need to know. Someone of the Zhen clan once worked in the Alchemists Association of Jinyun Country. The quantity of vials that you ordered from Alchemists Association was too large and had attracted his attention. Therefore, the Zhen clan arranged for someone to assassinate you on Hidden Dragon Island. Additionally, the Zhen clan are members of the Three-Eye Association, which was developed by demons among the human race. After they heard that you can realize mass-production of all-purpose medicament, the other clans and members in Three-Eye Association probably already knew about it too. Therefore, you are in a very dangerous situation right now!"

"Three-Eye Association wants to kill me?" Zhang Tie was shocked by this information. He thought that he had solved the problem after sweeping then Zhen Clan. However, he had not imagined that Zhen's attack on him might only be the beginning, as Three-Eye Association was backing the Zhen Clan and might still be watching him at this moment.

"Based on Three-Eye Association's style, when we are on the verge of the third holy war, they will eliminate anyone who can reinforce the overall strength of the human race and help the human race to fight demons. Recently many alchemists have been assassinated, and a senior clan of the Carlo Federal Alchemists Association was swept. According to our investigations, these actions were done by Three-Eye Association. As you are much more valuable than a common senior alchemist, Three-Eye Association will definitely try to find a way to get rid of you!"

"Thanks for your warning, senior. I will take care of myself!"

"After the Zhen Clan's real status is exposed, Three-Eye Association will be in the thick of the storm. They might be lurking for a while more. Therefore, you should still be safe for a short period of time. If you agree, our clan can assign powerhouses to protect you!"

"I think the best protection is to disappear. I prefer if nobody can find me, or if Three-Eye Association just thinks that getting rid of me is not worth the trouble. I will deal with it myself!" Zhang Tie considered for a short while before he refused the senior's help.

One minute later, Zhang Tie left the senior's room with a calm look.

To tell the truth, the Zhang Clan's punishment to him for bringing outsiders into Heavens Cold City was fair. Zhang Tie wasn't grateful or resentful towards the Zhang Clan for the

punishment. Instead, he thought he deserved the punishment. However, through this he felt an invisible chasm between him and those big figures, which also existed between him and Huaiyuan Palace.

This chasm was not caused by interest disputes, but purely the differences in values and world views. The big figures' distant attitude towards small figures and average people from the event in Heavens Cold City made Zhang Tie very uncomfortable.

If the Central States Alliance or Huaiyuan Palace could make a detailed announcement about the coming holy war, they'd spare time for commoners to prepare and they might be able to save the lives of hundreds of millions of people. However, Zhang Tie knew that he was dreaming.

When he left the senior's room, Zhang Tie recalled the faces of his friends still in Blackhot City and Bulapei—Barley, Owen, Doug, Hista, Bagdad, Leit, Alice, Beverly, Hanna, girls of Rose Association and...Miss Daina.

Zhang Tie knew that these people were the "ants" that would be flushed away by the flood. During the long holy war, their lives had become trivial. If they could survive the holy war it meant they were lucky. However, if not it was nothing strange. Even though the holy war was coming, nobody felt it was necessary to notice them at all.

This made Zhang Tie uncomfortable and furious.

After that, Zhang Tie saw Lan Yunxi in the airship. A few days before, Zhang Tie had heard that Lan Yunxi forcefully triggered her ancestral bloodline and killed three powerhouses of the Zhen clan who were above level 10 when she assaulted Heavens Cold City. Because of this, her primordial qi was heavily weakened. She needed to recuperate for a period. Therefore, she left the battle field from then on.

Zhang Tie had seen many people to inquire about her whereabouts, yet nobody knew where she had gone. He even thought that Lan Yunxi had returned to Huaiyuan Palace for recuperation. Therefore, Zhang Tie was a bit amazed at the sight of Lan Yunxi in the airship.

She was followed by a man, who was over twenty years old. With sword-like eyebrows and sparkling eyes, the man was as white as jade. He was robust and tall in a blue silk warrior's robe. A long sword was hanging at his waist. What a handsome guy! Walking together with Lan Yunxi, the man was not overwhelmed by Lan Yunxi's qi field at all. Instead, he kept laughing and jesting with Lan Yunxi.

Zhang Tie passed by them calmly without even glancing at them.

When she brushed past Zhang Tie's shoulder, Lan Yunxi peered at him and slightly bit her lip instead of saying anything. In contrast, the man completely ignored Zhang Tie.

"Younger sister Xi, here's the Jade Marrow Primordial Qi Recovery Ointment. I had my man bring this from Shantai Family in Qinghua Mountain by airship. I hope it can help you recuperate

as soon as possible."

After he'd walked two steps away from them, Zhang Tie heard the man's voice. He then clenched his fist and felt jealous inside.

...

Five minutes later, Zhang Tie accepted his punishment in the open square of the camp of Hidden Dragon Palace, which aroused the attention of many people.

"Zhang Tie, student of Hidden Dragon Palace, brought outsiders into Heavens Cold City privately by playing favoritism. As punishment, all the clan contribution points that he gained through joining the action of assaulting Heavens Cold City were cancelled. Additionally, he will suffer one-hundred whips!" A military inspector of Huaiyuan Palace declared Zhang Tie "guilty" after glancing over the onlookers. He then ordered a soldier to execute the punishment on Zhang Tie.

Hearing this, all the onlookers exchanged glances with each other. Zhang Tie's performance in Heavens Cold City in the last few days was very outstanding, which brought him a good reputation. However, it was really beyond everyone's imagination that he could suffer such a punishment. Therefore, everybody just watched silently.

A two meter high pile of wood was fixed on the ground in front of Zhang Tie. An iron chain was fixed on the wood pile which was used to handcuff the offender's hands.

The soldier then walked towards Zhang Tie and wanted to fix Zhang Tie's hands onto the wood pile.

"I will stand still right here, just whip!" Zhang Tie took off his shirt, exposing his robust back.

"The whip in the army is no joke. It's a dragon whip made of the large tendons of mutated killer whales and steel wires. An average person would pass out with only 3 whips. I suggest you to respect this whip. Otherwise, you might lose your honor in public. I respect you as a tough guy considering your excellent performance in Heavens Cold City recently, therefore, I am warning you about this!" The inspector murmured to Zhang Tie.

"Thanks, no need. I want to know whether the whips of Huaiyuan Palace can wake me up a bit!" After saying this, Zhang Tie smiled at Ma Aiyun and the other girls who had concerned looks.

After another glance at Zhang Tie, the inspector moved back as he nodded towards a muscular, barebacked, tough-looking guy who was holding a whip and preparing to execute the punishment. The tough guy then opened a rosewood box on his side and took out a black whip, which was as thick as a kid's arm. He then raised the whip in the air to show it around to the onlookers. After that, he dipped the whip in the water barrel before he pulled it out. After that, he slapped it towards Zhang Tie's back...

With an air-breaking sound, "Si..." he lashed the whip onto

Zhang Tie's back, producing a crispy sound, "Pah..."

Hearing that sound, all the onlookers felt their hairs stand on end.

Although he had a blood stain on his back, Zhang Tie was still standing there as firm as an iron pillar with the exception of a slight frown.

After slashing Zhang Tie with the whip, the tough man found that Zhang Tie didn't respond at all. He then moved his whip in front of his eyes to check whether or not it was broken. After finding no problem with the whip, he continued.

"Pah..."

"Pah..."

"Pah..."

In a wink, the tough guy had lashed over twenty whips. Not only did the onlookers change their looks, but even the executor changed his facial expression. Such a whip could even leave a mark on a rock, not to mention a person. However, Zhang Tie just stood there, still as a statue. The muscles on his back didn't even twitch a bit.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie would slightly frown after each lash. However, after ten lashes, he wouldn't even frown a bit. Instead,

he looked calm after each lash.

The onlookers had never seen a person who could stand more than twenty dragon whips without even moving a bit. They had not even heard of such a thing before.

More and more people came to watch, not only those from Hidden Dragon Palace, even many soldiers from Hurricane Army and Breaking Sun Army of Huaiyuan Palace had arrived. At the sight of Zhang Tie's performance they were all stunned.

After lashing the whip more than ten times with his full strength, the tough guy started to pant slightly.

"Harder, have you eaten food? This is no fun! Change to another executor!" Zhang Tie roared.

The moment he shouted, someone among the crowd instantly yelled, "Tough guy!"

With a solemn face, the inspector walked over. He took the whip and started to lash it onto Zhang Tie's back, causing a shrill, air-cutting and cracking sound on his back.

Then, gradually, all the onlookers started to count for him loudly.

"58..."

"59..."

"60..."

The sound of counting grew louder and louder, which even aroused the attention of people far away.

Hearing the increasingly louder yells outside the airship, the senior of Huaiyuan Palace, who was tasting tea calmly in his room, frowned. He walked towards the window and looked outside. Because the body of the airship was very high, the senior noticed Zhang Tie, who was standing still like an iron pillar and suffering from the punishment.

At this moment another man also walked towards the window in the room and watched.

"What a pity." Watching Zhang Tie being lashed, he shook his head slightly. "This young man is too merciful. Since he experienced the assassination on Hidden Dragon Island, I feel he's always estranged himself from Huaiyuan Palace on purpose!"

"It's normal. After all, he's new in Huaiyuan Palace and has no strong background. For a young man who was to be assassinated by a guard arranged by the clan, he is already brave enough to keep the previous partnership with Long Wind Business Group and stay on Hidden Dragon Island!" Although having scolded Zhang Tie just now, the senior started to appreciate him at this moment.

"I think that Huaiyuan Palace should master the manufacturing method of all-purpose medicament. If this young man encounters a worse situation, I'm afraid that nobody else will be able to produce it any more! For the sake of the Zhang Clan, it's not a good thing for him or Huaiyuan Palace if all-purpose medicament is under the control of this young man! This is nothing different than [a baby holding a treasure passing through the boisterous market!](#)"

The senior of Huaiyuan Palace then smiled proudly, "The reason Huaiyuan Palace is so powerful is not because of a small bottle of medicament. No matter what, the manufacturing method of all-purpose medicament is in the hands of Lord Huaiyuan's descendant. That's enough! If Huaiyuan Palace forces or cheats him into submitting the manufacturing method for all-purpose medicament, it would ruin the cohesiveness of the clan members. If so, do you think that Huaiyuan Palace can survive this holy war, considering the powerful capabilities of those people who cast their greedy eyes on Huaiyuan Palace?"

"It's really pitiful..." That man sighed as he watched Zhang Tie from afar, "If this boy could be a bit more docile, he would become another ferocious general in Huaiyuan Palace in a couple of years. But now, I feel this brat is not completely standing in line with Huaiyuan Palace. As he dares to take outsiders into Heavens Cold City privately and violates the rules of Huaiyuan Palace, he might do something more excessive in the future. Additionally, I'm afraid that he will not help Huaiyuan Palace do anything after the one-hundred whips!"

"No matter who he is, as long as he violates the rules of Huaiyuan Palace, he should be punished! In future, as long as he doesn't

betray Huaiyuan Palace, defame his ancestors or impact the interests of Huaiyuan Palace, just take him as a freak. Oh, what about that investigation?"

"We've confirmed that this brat has nothing to do with that event. First, he's not able to do that, especially considering the many people in the conference room of the Zhen Clan Mansion. He would not be able to kill them all in a short period before some of them even moved a bit. Second, he was drinking with his friends in Jinwu Castle until midnight that night. On the 2nd day, he was still on Hidden Dragon Island. Unless he could fly, he could not swim over 1000 miles over night to do this. Additionally, no airships or ships were recorded as leaving Hidden Dragon Island that night, neither on the next morning. Last but not least, how could he know about Zhen's arrangement in Huaiyuan Palace? When the Zhen Clan was scheming about Huaiyuan Palace, he was still in Blackhot City. Therefore, we've confirmed that another powerhouse who cultivated Iron-Blood Fist must have been involved with the event in the Zhen Clan Mansion."

"Who could that guy be?" The senior of Huaiyuan Palace also frowned.

...

In another room of the airship, Lan Yunxi watched Zhang Tie from afar as her face started to turn pale gradually.

...

"97..."

"98..."

"99..."

"100..."

With the last cracking sound, the yells among the crowd stopped. Then, the onlookers became quiet. Everybody was gazing at Zhang Tie. At this moment, Ma Aiyun and the other girls who got along well with Zhang Tie ran over, full of tears.

Yuan Ziyi took out wound medicine and started to rub it over Zhang Tie's back. At the same time, Gu Caidie had brought Zhang Tie's coat over and put it on for him.

However, Zhang Tie kept watching the clouds in the sky, which looked like ants and robust dragons. The one-hundred whips really woke him up. Just now, among the ever terrifying pain, his mind was unprecedentedly clear. Watching the clouds in the sky, he thought through many things.

"Zhang Tie, are you okay?" asked Ma Aiyun. Finding Zhang Tie absent-minded, she touched his forehead out of concern. She was afraid that Zhang Tie was driven mad by the whips.

"Senior sister Ma, I'm okay!" Zhang Tie grinned with a big smile. At the sight of Zhang Tie's smile, Ma Aiyun finally felt reassured.

When he was being lashed just now, Zhang Tie didn't feel pain at all. However after the punishment was over, when he moved his hand intending to pull out something from his bag, he felt his whole body had been cut into pieces, which made his face twist slightly.

"What do you want? I'll help you!" Ma Aiyun pressed Zhang Tie's hand, "Do you want all-purpose medicament?"

"No, it's my purse!" Zhang Tie answered as he gasped, "Senior sister Ma, please take out my purse and help me buy meat and alcohol from the Logistics Division for 150 people!"

"You still think about eating and drinking?" Ma Aiyun popped her eyes out at once.

"I've promised some cavalry brothers in Taishi Clan I'd drink with them tonight. I cannot eat my words. You come together with me. Don't forget to call Liu Xu, Wei Wu and Liu Yunfei when they come back, just to see me off!"

"What? You want to go?"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, Yuan Ziyi, who was rubbing medicine over Zhang Tie's back, suddenly shook her hand, causing Zhang Tie to frown once again.

Zhang Tie then nodded, "I feel it's not proper for me to stay here

any longer!" After saying this, Zhang Tie saw the girls' faces turn ashen at the same time. Soon after that, Zhang Tie revealed a sunny smile as he lowered his voice and murmured with a sneaky look, "Are you wanting to see me raising my buttocks on the bed, my senior sisters? I don't know whether that gesture is sexy or not. If you really want to have a look, come for me in Jinwu Castle silently. I will show it to you for free, either with pants or not..."

Having felt like crying just before, Yuan Ziyi instantly burst out laughing. As she wasn't being careful about the force from her hands, Zhang Tie uttered a ground-breaking, miserable shriek at once as he almost jumped up, "Argh, d*mn, lighter please..."

The onlookers who had intended to move closer to him instantly stopped after hearing Zhang Tie's shrill shriek like a pig being slaughtered. They then exchanged glances with each other and questioned to themselves, "Where's that tough guy? How come that tough guy disappeared after being lashed? Was he pretending just now? Why not pretend a bit longer? Why so embarrassing now..."

...

That night, Zhang Tie, Taishi Ci, Liu Xu, Yang Yuankang, Ma Aiyun and some cavalry brothers of Taishi Clan sat around bonfires and drunk until midnight.

After Zhang Tie returned to his tent in a half-cocked way, a shadow drilled into his tent.

"Senior sis Ma..."

Zhang Tie became awake immediately. However, his mouth had been blocked by a hot face...

What a nice wet dream...

A baby holding a treasure passing the boisterous market indicates that the treasure would be easily stolen or robbed.

Chapter 380: A Strange Place

On the tranquil sea with tender waves an old wooden trawler longer than 30 m was wobbling harshly.

The lacquer on the body of the trawler below the drafting line almost faded away. The earsplitting sound of the steam engines in the engine room also indicated that the working condition of the most important machine in the trawler had been much worse than before, like an old ox who was still pulling an oxcart and climbing the slope.

A flock of jagers was following after this trawler. Having been living in the sea area for a long time, these jagers knew that when sailors hauled their nets, they would throw small-sized sardines and parwns back into the sea. Those jagers would enjoy their meal at that moment.

If sailors had a nice mood they would even throw the fish and prawns into the air. Seeing this, those jagers would directly bite them in the air as if performing acrobatic stunts.

The jagers had already followed after this obsolete trawler for a whole morning, during which period, the sailors cast their net 6 times, 2 of which had nice gains which the jagers also enjoyed.

At this moment, a greater part of the fishhold had been filled with fish and prawns. With tons more weight, the old-ox like engine uttered a more jarring sound.

Besides, even the jagers in the sky started to tweet loudly.

"Boss, just cast the net. Even those jagers can't wait any more!" A sailor shouted loudly.

Beside the shipboard, a middle-aged tough man whose face had been full of wrinkles due to the long-term effect of sea wind was holding a tobacco pipe in the mouth. He was gazing at the seawater attentatively, wanting to see through the sea water.

After hearing the sailor's scream, he raised his eyes towards the sky before waving his robust arm forcefully and sent the order loudly, "Cast the net! After hauling this net, we will go back home!"

Seeing his gesture, all the sailors started to cast the well-arranged net into the sea by sections from the stern of the trawler.

The man being called boss then came to the cab from the shipboard and told to the helmsman, "Maund, starboard the helm! I feel ocean currents under the sea. Those silver-headed spotted fish always like to follow ocean currents!"

"Yes, sir!" The helmsman then turned around to check whether those sailors had finished casting their net. The moment they finished doing that, the helmsman had started to starboard the helm to steer the trawler towards the right.

The boss then came onto the deck to watch the buoys on the net together with the sailors.

"Boss, [Pike](#) is too old. It has almost run for 10 years. Why not get a new one for us..."

"Yes, it's such an unprecedented good market recently. Any seafood would be sold out the moment they reach the market. Those purchasers from canning factories in the downtown are squatting in the wharf every day. As long as they see us, they would charge at us like that we were beauties. We begged them before, but now, it's the complete opposite!"

"I was told that those canning factories really had good business nowadays. They work overtime every day. There are so many orders that they just can't deal with them all!"

"When I was in the tavern, I was told by a sailor that it was pretty chaotic on the continent recently. It seems like war will break out soon. A city might have been destroyed by demons while all the commoners inside had been killed..."

"So what! We have money to make!"

"But 2 months later when the sea freezes, we will not be able to head out any more, otherwise, we would make more money!"

The sailors talked before hauling the net. By contrast, the boss still held his tobacco pipe in the mouth with his eyes fixed on the stern. He was imagining a beautiful new steel trawler.

Of course, he had also thought about buying a new trawler like what those sailors had suggested. He had ordered a new trawler from Minsk Shipyard. He found an old friend who could help him get his new trawler in September without having to queue up.

Now, shipyards also had a good business. Additionally, the prices of the fishers manufactured by those shipyards also rose up like those canned fish.

Thinking of the 1800-odd gold coins, the price of the new trawler that he had paid for in advance, the boss felt heartache for a while. 1 month ago, the price of another steel trawler longer than 50 m and weighing 460 tons was only 1500-odd gold coins. He had been considering changing trawlers at that time. However, he hesitated and decided to change next year. Therefore, he missed the best purchasing opportunity.

As a result, he had to pay 20% more this time.

...

After he finished his smoke, the boss knocked his tobacco pipe which was made of whale's bone on the shipboard and sent another order, "Now, haul the net!"

Receiving the order, the sailors immediately started to rotate the capstan at the stern to haul the net out of the sea. This time, the boss's face turned gloomy.

The easier the sailors rotate the capstan, the fewer they gained.

Finally, they got no fish at all, even a prawn. What was more, they found a tidy hole whose diameter was greater than 2 m at the bottom of the net.

Squatting around the net, the boss and those sailors started to check the mysterious hole carefully.

"Is it a magical beast in the sea?" A sailor asked while his teeth started to quiver.

"Impossible. If it's a magical beast, it would take a great strength for it to make such a hole and we should have sensed that!" Another more experienced sailor waved his head.

The boss then rubbed the broken net and took the broken fish lines and started to observe them carefully. The end of the lines was tidy just like having been cut by a sharp weapon, making it very mysterious. Not only the boss had noticed that even those sailors had found it.

What could cause such damage in the sea? What if that thing targets at this trawler...Thinking of this, everybody felt a chill inside while those sailors moved their eyes onto the boss.

"As we've gained a lot today, it's time to go back!"

Hearing this, everybody felt they'd been relieved of a heavy

burden...

The Pike then turned around and drove towards the north. After sailing for half a day, the trawler finally drove into a boisterous fish pier on Kaja Island which was filled with fishers at dusk.

After ensuring they were safe on the wharf, everybody let out a sigh.

When they landed, their haul was soon sold out. After one day's work, Pike brought over 90 silver coins to the boss, which was much higher than that 1 month ago. After receiving their salaries, those sailors left jubilantly.

The boss directly called a trailer to carry away that broken net to mend it up overnight; otherwise, they would not be able to set sail tomorrow.

Several hours later, as those fishers had come back consecutively and sold out their fishes and prawns, few people were left on the pier. When the last purchasers from canning factories left after midnight, the whole fish pier became quiet, except for the surging sea waves.

At this moment, a black figure showed his head above the sea at the stern of the Pike like a legendary water ghost. Without making any sound, he then grabbed the shipboard and jumped on board the trawler.

After that, the shadow came outside the door of the crew modules on the trawler. With a slight twist, he had broken the tiny lock, causing a light sound, "Ka".

3 minutes later, that shadow changed into a tidy set of sailor's clothes and left the fish pier quickly.

Although there were no roadside lamps on the streets in this city, it didn't influence Zhang Tie's actions at all as he had night vision. Walking on the streets, Zhang Tie glanced here and there out of curiosity...

There were no tall buildings in this city. Almost all the buildings were lower than 6 stories with pinnacles or slopes on top. Most of their exterior walls were white, beige or a light wood color. Additionally, the most original textures of the woods and stones which were used to build buildings were preserved, making them natural, concise, firm and massive.

Almost no tall chimneys like those in Blackhot City could be seen in the city. No traces left by trolley vehicles on the ground either. Only a few buses were parking on two sides of the streets. All this indicated that this was a city with poor industry.

For Zhang Tie, this was absolutely a strange place...

After arranging everything in Huaiyuan Prefecture and Hidden Dragon Island, Zhang Tie had left Hidden Dragon Island 3 days ago.

Nobody knew where he was heading. Even Zhang Tie was not sure where to go. He only had one general target in his mind——the sea area in the north of Waii Sub-Continent.

Pike is the name of the trawler.

Chapter 381: Ewentra Archipelago

Zhang Tie went to the sea area in the north of the Waii Sub-Continent with only one target — to gain seven-strength fruits that could greatly increase his fighting strength!

Numerous marine animals and magical beasts were living in the sea area in the north of the Waii Sub-Continent, who were very aggressive and were all mammals. In Zhang Tie's eyes, it was the best hunting ground for him to gain seven-strength fruits.

With some more seven-strength fruits, Zhang Tie was confident that he could improve his precise throwing skill to a terrifying level. Although he had already realized sonic boom, it was not the end; instead, it was just the beginning. A javelin which could fly at the speed of sound would have a completely different destructive strength than that at two times the speed of sound transmission or four times the speed of sound transmission.

If he had eaten some more seven-strength fruits when he was chased by those b*stards from the Zhen Clan in Dragon Cave, he would not have gotten into such a situation; instead, he could've easily killed them all with his handbolts.

Of course, seven-strength fruits could not only improve his precise throwing skill, but also make him more energetic and increase his overall physical strength. Meanwhile, the power of Iron-Blood Fist and Iron-Blood Battle Qi could also be greatly increased by eating seven-strength fruits. The 9 wild wolf seventh-strength fruits not only gave him greater strength, but also gave him wild wolf-like endurance and speed.

Zhang Tie didn't travel by ship; instead, he directly dove into the sea and entered an ocean current that flew northwards. Under the propulsion of the ocean current, he crazily absorbed sea water into the Castle of Black Iron. With the effect of the counterforce, he gained an unparalleled speed that could not be matched by any traffic tools in this age. He then flew under water for three days like this before finally coming to this wonderful and strange place...

Over the past three days, Zhang Tie couldn't tell how many kilometers he had swum under water. He only knew that, without the bliss of rapid moving skill, he also reached a terrifying speed under water by only using his spiritual energy to adjust the diameter of the space tunnel for absorbing sea water into the Castle of Black Iron. He was definitely travelling at double the speed of a T9 on road.

What restricted his speed under water was not his ability but the pressure and force on his head, shoulders, and the other parts of his body.

Although he could easily dive into 100-m in the sea, facing the great pressure and impact force, he could still not stand for a long time. Therefore, he could only slightly decelerate for a while to recover. After recovering, he would continue to swim at full speed and test his maximal physical endurance ability.

For Zhang Tie, the three days travelling under water was a tough cultivation and a good chance for him to increase basic energy storage for castle of black iron.

The sea area in the north of Waii Sub-Continent was pretty vast with numerous islands, large or small. In the northernmost part, there was even an unpopulated icy continent. Zhang Tie only headed northward. Without any map or reference, he didn't know where he was, either.

The only thing that he could confirm was that he was definitely somewhere in the sea area in the north of Waii Sub-Continent. Temperatures in the sea and in the air at night both told Zhang Tie that he was already in the northern sea area.

After staying in the sea for three days, he finally arrived at a strange place; Zhang Tie didn't believe that anyone could find him. At that moment, Zhang Tie changed his look using his set of crossdressing medicament combination that he'd bought in the auction house in Kalur.

After crossdressing, Zhang Tie's hair and eyebrows turned brown; his eyes turned blue while his skin became white. He was like another human race. Not to mention those who had not seen him before, even his mom could not confirm that he was her son.

For those douchebags of Three-Eye Association, no matter how sharp the killers they assigned were, they definitely couldn't find him anymore.

'This crossdressing medicament combination is really good. It's really a necessity for one to change his face and escape from assassination after killing people or robbery.' Zhang Tie felt very lucky to have bought such a set of items with less than 400 gold coins in the auction house in Kalur.

Zhang Tie walked on the streets in the downtown as he kept looking around. At this moment, all residents across this city had fallen asleep, but there were still some lamplights from bars on the roadsides while tunes and sailors' banter drifted out of the bars. Occasionally he would meet some drunken guys.

According to his acknowledge about pioneers, Zhang Tie walked down the streets that were neither too spacious or eye-attractive nor too dark or narrow as he kept an eye on the shops' signs.

Eventually, Zhang Tie saw an inn's sign in less than twenty minutes after he left the pier. Under the lower right corner of the sign was a pattern of crossing sword and shovel. At the sight of that pattern, Zhang Tie knew that he finally arrived.

This was a three-story inn called 'Wild Home'. Although it was already late at night, there were still lamps on inside.

Zhang Tie then pushed in and immediately felt a warm sense.

On the first floor of the inn was a pretty large bar. When Zhang Tie entered, he found it was pretty boisterous in the bar. Although it was late at night, he could still see dozens of people gathering inside under the slightly dim lamplights. The thirty or forty people were all pioneers. They stayed in groups of three to five people and were discussing something in low voices.

When Zhang Tie entered, the crispy doorbell ring aroused the attention of all the pioneers inside the bar. Seeing that Zhang Tie

was just a teenager, after glancing over him for a short while, they moved their attention away from him.

Zhang Tie felt the atmosphere in the bar was a bit weird; without thinking too much, he directly walked up to the counter.

"Are there any rooms available?"

The woman behind the counter was over fifty years old. With a thick makeup, she was holding a cigarette in her mouth while cleaning a glass using a white towel. She looked tall and plump, indicating a threatening, tough temperament.

Hearing Zhang Tie's question, she peered at him before continued to wipe her glass, "The last small one in the attic on the 3rd floor. 2 silver coins for one night. No bargaining!"

"Fine! Give me a pioneering map. Oh, have you got anything to eat?"

That woman then put down her glass before fumbled out a tin-covered metal cylinder and put it in front of Zhang Tie, "Here's a pioneering map on Ewentra; 15 silver coins. We only have cod soup and caviar bread now!"

"Okay, sounds good!" Zhang Tie touched his stomach. During the three days' travel under water, besides drinking two vials of all-purpose medicament, he ate nothing else. At this moment, he really needed some real food.

"According to our regulation, you need to pay first. A map, a cod soup and a caviar bread comes to 15 silver coins and 70 copper coins in total!"

Zhang Tie then fumbled in his backpack before directly pulled out 16 silver coins and put them on the counter. After seeing the silver coins, the woman behind the counter shouted towards the kitchen, "Millie, one cod soup and one caviar bread!"

She then gave 30 copper coins back to Zhang Tie. After putting away his change and map, Zhang Tie chose an available table beside the counter.

'Ewentra?' After sitting down, Zhang Tie immediately recalled the map on the sea area in the north of Waii Sub-Continent and the local customs and practices, political and economic situations on Waii Sub-Continent that he had learned in Hidden Dragon Palace.

In Zhang Tie's mind, there was truly a place called Ewentra. Accurately, it should be the Ewentra Archipelago. It was an island chain on the west of the sea area in the north of Waii Sub-Continent, which was composed of hundreds of islands.

Ewentra Archipelago was one of the accesses to enter Ice and Snow Wilderness in the north from Waii Sub-Continent. If one wanted to enter Ice and Snow Wilderness in the north without going through the Ewentra Archipelago, one had to cross the ice-covered Cauca Mountain which spanned tens of thousands of miles, which would be a nightmare for everybody. Ice and Snow

Wilderness was the populated area in the northernmost part of Waii Sub-Continent. If one kept walking towards the north from Ice and Snow Wilderness, one would enter the unpopulated zone of the Ice-Covered Continent.

Ewentra Archipelago was very loose in its governance structure. It had not a powerful government. Like the Andaman Alliance which Blackhot City once belonged to, but it was much looser than Andaman Alliance. Besides some federations of city-states, some influential clans and great pirate organizations which occupied larger islands also had a say here.

'I've arrived at Ewentra Archipelago!' Zhang Tie was a bit stunned inside. 'Ewentra Archipelago was over 11,000 km away from the sea area near Huaiyuan Prefecture in Jinyun Country. Under the thrust of ocean current, I've swum over 11,000 km under water in three days! Who would believe me if I told anyone this...'

Zhang Tie was pretty proud and pleasant inside. Such a free swimming feeling in the sea made Zhang Tie spirited all over.

'Now that I've arrived here, I will look around then.' Zhang Tie told himself inside. Ice and Snow Wilderness faced the sea in three directions. In the wilderness and in the neighboring sea areas, there were so many mutated mammal magical beasts and animals such as huge, snow-land wolves, ice and snow great bears, sea dogs, seals and walruses, not to mention those mutated and evolved LV 1 and LV 2 sea creatures.

How many seven-strength fruits he could gain in Ice and Snow Wilderness completely depended on his fortune.

The cod soup and caviar bread he ordered was soon served by a fat female waiter. They smelt pretty good and appetizing. The moment they were placed on table, Zhang Tie immediately started to dig in without caring about others' stares. 'Wuh, this taste really nice!'

"It seems that the news that pre-catastrophe relics of a human city were found on Ice and Snow Wilderness has been spread out. Even such a hairless brat wants to have a try there..."

When Zhang Tie was eating his food, one of some pioneers who was sitting on Zhang Tie's right hand murmured to his partners. Although his sound was very low, Zhang Tie could still hear every of his word clearly.

"He only ordered cod soup and caviar bread, not even a drink. Besides, he didn't bring any weapons. And his clothes won't protect him in the climate of the Ice and Snow Wilderness. That's definitely a newbie. He must think pioneering is like traveling; one only needs a purse." Another guy sniggered slightly.

"I bet this newbie will only last one week in Ice and Snow Wilderness before becoming the excrement of those wild beasts!" A third voice sounded.

"What a pity! He looks handsome and has the potential to be a boy toy. Why would he choose to be a pioneer?"

"Perhaps, he thinks we pioneers can make money easily. Young

men are always naive!"

"When will the guy assigned by Wild Home to gather news come back? Akurey Island Shipping Association's long-distance remote sensing system should be able to contact Ice and Snow Wilderness. They must have business contacts!"

...

'I'm on Akurey Island, an island on Ewentra Archipelago. This is a large island covering over 4000 square km.'

Zhang Tie drank his cod soup as he listened to the others' discussions. Although those pioneers belittled him, Zhang Tie finally knew why so many pioneers gathered here.

They were here for the relics of a human city which was discovered on the Ice and Snow Wilderness. They seemed to be waiting for some news. Although Zhang Tie was interested in the relics of human city before catastrophe, he'd rather earn seven-strength fruits. Although relics could bring pioneers wealth, gold coins were not too attractive to Zhang Tie at this time.

The moment Zhang Tie finished his soup and bread, he heard another crisp ring; meanwhile, the door of the inn was pushed open by someone.

A person then rushed inside and started to roar even still at the entrance, "The pioneers on Ice and Snow Wilderness have

organized themselves. The news is true. They find some relics of a pre-catastrophe city in the Hella glacial crack in the south of Ice and Snow Wilderness. Additionally, there might be an even greater discovery underground in the crack — pieces of the Star of God..."

After a short silence, the inn exploded into a clamor.

Chapter 382: My Lord Is Coming

When Zhang Tie woke up in the attic on the third floor of Wild Home the next morning, he found that all the guests in the inn had disappeared.

After cleaning himself up, Zhang Tie ate breakfast in the dining room of the bar on the first floor as he looked around. Even though it was early in the morning, he was the only one left in the whole dining room. He could only see empty tables around him.

Actually, since those pioneers heard about the news on Ice and Snow Wilderness, some of them had already started to leave; most of them had already gone before dawn. Zhang Tie was the only 'lazy' guy left in the inn at the moment.

Millie, the female waiter of the inn served him their brand dish pizza with oyster as she asked, "Young man, you are special; they've long gone, are you still waiting for your partners?"

Millie was plump and looked quite pretty. She had big, watery eyes and raised nose, and some freckles on her face. The thick fat over her neck made her look like she had two jaws. When she stooped to put Zhang Tie's breakfast onto the table, her two white and tender boobs almost popped out of her collar.

"Oh, I'm not in a hurry. The early bird catches the worm; the early worm gets caught by the bird!" Zhang Tie ate his breakfast as he joked. The pizza with oyster tasted nice, but the seaweed soup with shrimp meat tasted a bit weird.

The fat girl then giggled as she coquetted by slightly patting him, "You're really funny!"

"Can you tell me how those pioneers leave Akurey Island? Is it by airship?"

"There's no airship. You can only take ship at the pier. There are ships heading for Saint Herner, where you can take huge steamers for Ice and Snow Wilderness!"

"Oh, thanks!"

"My pleasure!" The fat girl turned around and left when she slightly rubbed Zhang Tie's arm with her plump buttocks under her skirt. Zhang Tie then bravely and slightly patted and pinched them. The fat girl then turned around and threw an enchanting smile towards Zhang Tie.

There was really a high chance for young and handsome male pioneers to fall in love with amorous female waiters in inns. This was an old romance. After crossdressing, Zhang Tie looked pretty different than before.

Because of difference between human races, most of the white men on Waii Sub-Continent who mainly spoke Hebrew looked tough and resolute; Zhang Tie, as an east asian man, looked quite handsome before. After crossdressing, he became a white man and looked much more handsome and delicate. Although he was not as handsome as Heller, who made him self-conscious, he was worth

the appellation of handsome boy.

After breakfast, Zhang Tie dropped a silver coin on the table and left. He was only thinking about improving his fighting strength, instead of teasing girls. Therefore, he just ignored Millie's flirting.

After leaving Wild Home, Zhang Tie directly stopped a carriage and headed for the pier on Akurey Island.

Zhang Tie was in a nice mood. During the three days under sea water of challenging his endurance ability towards current, Zhang Tie gained one iron-body fruit in the Castle of Black Iron last night. After eating it, his body had been quenched by that mixed energy of cold and heat once again; as a result, he became resistant to strikes.

Besides that iron-body fruit, Zhang Tie gained one more leakless fruit last night. After eating it, the 15th surging point on his spine turned purple and was going to be activated very soon.

Therefore, although only after one night, Zhang Tie's overall strength had improved a bit. This feeling of gradually improving his overall strength was really awesome.

...

The carriage soon arrived at the pier. Zhang Tie then spent over 20 silver coins for a steamer ticket from Akurey Island to Saint Herner Island.

Saint Herner Island was the biggest island in the northernmost of Ewentra Archipelago and the interchange station from Ewentra Archipelago to Ice and Snow Wilderness. It would take a steamer to go from Akurey Island to Saint Herner Island only a few hours. After Zhang Tie bought his ticket, he only waited a few minutes before the steamer set out.

...

When Zhang Tie left Akurey Island, the boss and the sailors went aboard the ship and prepared for the day's work. They soon found that the lock on the hatch door was broken.

After checking, they found that only two sets of clothes were missing. Besides, that person who took away the clothes even left a gold coin on the desk in the room. They didn't call the police; instead, this thing was usually taken as a laughing stock among those sailors. Nobody connected that gold coin with that big hole on the net.

...

The distance between Akurey Island and Saint Herner was over 1,000 km. The steamer would arrive at next night, which meant that Zhang Tie had to stay on the steamer for over 30 hours.

After stepping onto the steamer, Zhang Tie just stood on the deck watching the passenger liners and freighters on the sea. The developed ocean shipping industry and port trade in Ewentra

Archipelago left an extremely deep impression on Zhang Tie. When the steamer fully set out of the harbor and started to navigate on the sea, Zhang Tie saw nothing else except for islands in the distant, large and small; although some islands looked nice, Zhang Tie didn't feel like viewing the scenery anymore; instead, he went straight back to his own cabin. After closing the hatch door, he entered the trouble-reappearance situation.

...

Trouble-reappearance situation — outside Heavens Cold City...

The only demonized puppet activated had already charged at Zhang Tie when he appeared in the trouble-reappearance situation. The demonized puppet was the first humanoid living being that appeared in Zhang Tie's trouble-reappearance situation as an achievement of Zhang Tie in Heavens Cold City.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie instantly pulled out his double-carps sword from his waist and cut off its legs. But the demonized puppet wouldn't die; instead, it just crawled along the ground, furiously clawing at the ground, wanting to drag itself towards Zhang Tie...

After a glance at that demonized puppet, Zhang Tie turned around and ran towards the camp, leaving it far behind him at once.

Half an hour later, a huge fury-wind war airship crushed a lot of tents on the ground into pieces before it unsteadily flew in the air...

...

In a deep night of July, on Ell Zida Mountain, the highest mountain in the middle of Ice and Snow Wilderness, although it was summer with the highest temperature when everything grew up in other places, this place was covered with ice and snow all the year round. Especially in the evening, the dropping temperature along with the chilly wind from the north tested everybody's physical endurance.

Ell Zida Mountain was where the holy grounds of Ice Field Huge-Bear tribe, the biggest tribe on Ice and Snow Wilderness, was located.

At this moment, the holy grounds of Ice Field Huge-Bear Tribe were surrounded by raging flames. Tens of thousands of the most powerful Cruel Bear Fighters in the tribe were kneeling down on the square with one knee with their hot and pious eyes gazing at that high sacrificial altar where the great sacrifice of the tribe was going on.

They were holding a sacred ceremony concerning the life or death of the whole tribe. The Ice Land Huge-Bear tribe had been waiting for this ceremony hundreds of years. It could be said that since this tribe migrated into the Ice and Snow Wilderness under the guidance of Ell Zida, the greatest prophet and pontiff of Ice Land Huge-Bear tribe, they had been waiting for this day.

This mountain was named after the greatest prophet and pontiff

of the tribe.

Even facing the intolerable, chilly wind of the ice and snow land, none of tens of thousands of Cruel Bear fighters, who were as robust as mountains, steel, and iron and in only simple leather clothes with naked arms and chests, uttered any sound. The entire holy ground was so quiet except for the sound of the heavy wind and the cracking sound of the burning oil in the braziers.

This ceremony held by the pontiff and 18 officiants of the holy ground had undergone more than an hour. Since the start of the ceremony, sparkling starlights had appeared behind the pontiff. The twisting starlights responded to the stars in the sky while shadows as obscure as mirage constantly twisted among the starlights.

Everybody was holding their breaths and watching that scene with eyes widely opened. However, except for the pontiff of the holy ground, nobody understood what the shadows represented. Because only the pontiff could master that knowledge.

Each time the shadows of the twisting starlights were about to collapse, everybody on the square became very nervous. In order to finish this ceremony, more and more officiants fell down in front of the altar while the rest had blood dripping from the corners of their mouths. However, nobody spoke. Even those officiants who fell down didn't make any sound either. Everybody was gritting their teeth and waiting for the end of the ceremony.

When the twisting starlights finally turned into the image of an Ice Land Huge Bear and disappeared, everybody on the square

forgot to breathe.

They stood still for over ten seconds, which felt as long as a century for many people.

Finally, the pontiff's exciting, crisp yet fatigued voice sounded out in the square which could be heard clearly by everybody.

"My lord, the lord of all lords, has arrived..."

Hearing this, tens of thousands of Cruel Bear fighters let out a sigh, which was collectively as loud as a thunder.

Meanwhile, terrifying battle qis surged into the sky one by another in front of the altar.

"We've waited for today for hundreds of years. Now, let's wait for pontiff Sarin's instructions. We will welcome our Lord back to Ell Zida. Each warrior of Ice Land Huge Bear Tribe is willing to use their own skin, blood, and flesh as the carpet and their bones as the stage for my Lord to ascend to the throne!" A loud thunder like voice sounded under the altar, which could be heard by everybody clearly too.

"Aukin, the most dubious and powerful warrior in Ice Land Huge-Bear tribe, in the mysterious maze with crossed time and space, I could only see a part of it. Perhaps, only the great forebears like Ell Zida could see more and guide us to wait for our Lord here and to make the prophecy of rejuvenating our tribe and population

come true."

"How can we find him and know who he is?" Aukin asked as what the others wanted to know.

Pontiff Sarin then started to hum again like talking in his dream —

"My Lord, the lord who is destined to conquer all the seas in the world comes here from over 10,000 km away in the sea. The sea with surging and dangerous waves are like plain roads under the Lord's feet...

"My Lord, the lord of creatures who founds an immortal undertaking comes from the east and south; now, he's on the sea and in the sky...

"The most powerful weapon of my Lord is his javelin. The javelin is as terrifying and powerful as bolts and thunders as it will destroy all the enemies on the road before us...

"My Lord's look belongs to himself, yet could not be identified by others...

"When my Lord fights, he erects the banner to summon all of his fighters and all his fighters will see that..."

"He's the most sacred god among all the gods. He controls all the other gods. He will bring the brilliance from the paradise to the

earthly world and return the original honors of everyone!"

"Go, all the most powerful and bravest warriors of Ice Land Huge-Bear tribe who's lucky enough to witness the arrival of my Lord, to fight together with my Lord in the future and to accept my Lord's most sacred and honorable baptism for you in the future; since your grandpa's grandpa, they had been waiting for this day, yet they failed. But you are lucky enough to see my Lord. Go, go tell the other tribes on Ice and Snow Wilderness: my Lord is coming. Go, go welcome my Lord to his immortal throne..."

Several minutes later, teams of sword-teeth beasts broke the tranquility of this land under the starlights with their heavy clops and darted in all directions from the foot of Ell Zida Mountain...

Chapter 383: Trouble

Zhang Tie arrived at Saint Herner Island the next evening, some hours later than the estimated arrival time because his passenger liner met a heavy wind the previous night which slowed its sailing speed.

Saint Herner Island was over 1000 km north of Akurey Island. The temperature here was obviously lower than that of Akurey Island.

The moment the passenger liner arrived at the port, passengers who had stayed on board for dozens of hours had disembarked hurriedly. Many of them were carrying luggage, some even held sabers or swords, except for Zhang Tie whose hands were empty.

Zhang Tie didn't notice that his hands were empty until he disembarked. He looked really eye-catching. This look didn't match a pioneer's status at all. 'It seems that I have to go to a store for some pioneer products on Saint Herner Island.'

Albeit there were some pioneer equipment and appliances in the Castle of Black Iron which were bought in Stars Viewing City, they were utterly different than the styles of those items used by those pioneers on the Ewentra Archipelago. If he wore them, he would tell others that he was a newbie coming from afar. That would be stupid!

Especially due to the climate of the Ewentra Archipelago and the Ice and Snow Wilderness, pioneers here were wearing utterly

different outfits than those in Jinyun Country. Of course, Zhang Tie who only wanted to increase his fighting strength calmly would not turn him into a spotlight only for saving a few gold coins.

There were mountains of products in the port of Saint Herner Island. Those tall tower cranes were constantly discharging goods from those super huge steamers. Zhang Tie found most of the goods were wood, ores, and square linen parcels that contained various animal hides. There were so many warehouses in the port while many workers were loading and moving these goods between warehouses and steamers.

The wharf was bustling. This place was much more prosperous than Akurey Island. Besides the larger population, the industry and trade here were also obviously more developed.

Zhang Tie also saw some dockyards near the port. The Zhang Clan was building ships in Jinhai City. Having visited the shipyard of Zhang Clan, Zhang Tie knew a bit about building streamers. At the sight of those docks near the wharf, Zhang Tie instantly judged that all the docks were capable of building huge streamers of tens of thousands of tons with varying sizes and platforms.

Besides being more prosperous than Akurey Island, this place looked more barbarous as the overseers on the wharf would ferociously lash those carriers with their whips and would shout loudly at any time...

Zhang Tie also noticed some primitive people with weird tattoos on their faces and bodies barging about among the crowd. Even

those pirates who wore skull horns with fierce fat faces also arrived while carrying sabers, sword, and shields.

Since he left the passenger liner at the ticketing window of the port, Zhang Tie had already witnessed 2 battles. The surrounding people were not even interested in watching the battles at all as they had seen similar scenes so many times. Of course, no sheriffs or policemen would care about them.

"Give me the latest steamer ticket to the Ice and Snow Wilderness!" As the line in front of the ticketing window was not long, Zhang Tie had gotten a chance to buy his ticket in only 3 minutes.

An old man with a brandy nose was sitting behind the ticketing window. After glancing at Zhang Tie, the old man slightly and lazily waved his head as he mumbled, "Another pioneer wanting to make a fortune in the Ice and Snow Wilderness? The latest passenger liner will set out in 5 days. There are VIP, first-class, second-class and economy-class cabins, which one do you want?"

"What's the difference?"

"16 gold coins for VIP, 7 gold coins for first-class, 4 gold coins for second-class, one person per cabin. Three free meals available for VIP and first-class. 80 silver coins for economy-class, passengers stay in one big cabin. Which do you want?"

The ticket prices really startled Zhang Tie. They were too expensive as they could even match that of airship tickets, "How

come they're so expensive?"

"It has to pass the Devil North Wind Belt of Auro Strait, you tell me why!"

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie gave him 4 gold coins, "Give me a second-class ticket!"

The old man then manipulated the ticketing machine, causing a series of "dadada" sounds. A few seconds later, he gave Zhang Tie his ticket. Taking the ticket, Zhang Tie took a glance at it and found that the ticket read——10:00 am, Jul.31st; No. 7 Pier, Saint Herner Harbor, Blue Polar Whale; Second-Class Cabin G614; Boarding with this ticket.

'It seems that I have to stay here a few days.' Thinking about this, Zhang Tie left the ticketing window.

On the streets outside the harbor, there were many people. Zhang Tie looked around and found various shops on both sides of the streets.

Zhang Tie didn't walk too far away. Instead, he chose an average, tidy inn that was less than a 20 minute walk from the harbor.

The management in the hotel was stricter than the pioneers' inn as it needed to register the ID number of the guest. Zhang Tie presented his latest ID certificate in front of the counter——an ID certificate of a countryman of Holy Golden Orchid Empire. A very

average name was beside his photo——Peter Hamplester.

Zhang Tie estimated that there were at least 10,000 people shared the same name across the Blackson Human Race Corridor. He remembered some guys called Peter at school in Blackhot City.

Zhang Tie then settled down on Saint Herner Island and waited for boarding. In the blink of an eye, 2 days had passed.

In the past 2 days, Zhang Tie also learned about the situation in the sea close to Saint Herner Island. On some small isles, there were many seals and walruses. Many people were living on these animals. However, these animals were kind in temperament and rarely attacked people. Although they were mammals living in the sea, their population were not hostile towards humans. Therefore, according to the generation rules of seven-strength fruits, Zhang Tie would not kill those poor animals.

However, those mutated seals and walruses were different. The bloody seals and huge walruses close to Saint Herner Island were existences that scared sailors a lot as the 2 species both liked to attack people and small fishers, which had caused a lot of disasters in the area.

However, the 2 species didn't have a large population near Saint Herner Island. They mostly lived in the Blueedge Strait to the east of the Ice and Snow Wilderness. Therefore, Zhang Tie had to go to Ice and Snow Wilderness to look for bloody seals and huge walruses which wasn't contradictory to his previous plan.

Only after slightly changing his route on the map, Zhang Tie settled down in the hotel.

On the 3rd day, Heller wanted him to collect some special plant seeds on the island. Zhang Tie also wanted to buy some equipment to respond to the climate of the Ice and Snow Wilderness. Therefore, after supper, he left the hotel.

He soon bought the necessary equipment at cost of less than 4 gold coins. With a hat made of sea dog's hide on his head, a pair of gloves made of a bear's hide on his hands, a multi-purpose cloak made of fox's hide on his back, and a heavy pioneer sword that could be used in the sea and on the land in hand, Zhang Tie looked no different than those pioneers on the streets.

Although the necessary equipment, Zhang Tie only bought some plant seeds wanted by Heller in a small store of a remote suburban farmers market after wandering for several hours in the downtown area.

After putting the seeds into his backpack, Zhang Tie found that small stores had closed as it was already past 10 pm.

Zhang Tie then returned according to the route in his memory...

...

There were a few people on the suburban road in the evening. Two rows of tall birches were standing on both sides of the road.

After walking for over 20 minutes, Zhang Tie only met 3-5 people. Of course, Zhang Tie would not be afraid of walking alone in the evening, additionally, he had night vision...

Seeing lamplights casting from behind, Zhang Tie hurriedly moved aside on the roadside stones. Ten seconds later, 6 cars passed by Zhang Tie, 1 of them passed a small puddle and splattered mud onto Zhang Tie's pants.

"F*ck!", Zhang Tie swore loudly. However, the driver didn't care about his feeling at all; in a wink, the team of 6 cars had gone dozens of meters away.

Besides swear, Zhang Tie didn't do anything else. However, the moment Zhang Tie was preparing to wipe the mud off his pants, Zhang Tie saw a birch several meters in diameter falling down in front of him and directly hit the hood of the first car, which forced the whole team to park at once. The last 2 vehicles failed to decelerate on time and directly crashed onto the ends of the front cars.

"Retreat!" Someone in one of the 6 cars roared. Although it was dozens meters ahead of him, Zhang Tie could still hear it clearly.

The roar was followed by shiny axes flying out of the pine woods on the roadside like locusts.

Some axes directly tore off the thin steel plates of the cars and were stuck inside...

Some directly hacked onto the bullet-proof glass and caused spider-web like cracks...

The first wave of axes didn't hurt anyone, except for causing the cars to appear in a sorry state.

In a split second, besides the first car which was under the big tree, all the other cars started to retreat rapidly as if well trained for the scenario. Meanwhile, 6 men with shields and sharp swords instantly jumped off the first car and rushed towards the roadside pine woods without making any sound...

The second wave of axes soon arrived. Before the 6 men arrived at the roadside, they had been torn into pieces by those flashing axes...

Some axes accurately flew into the cars through the cracks of the windows that were caused by the first wave of axes. As a result, balls of bloody mist broke out in 3 of the 5 cars at once. The fresh blood sprouted onto the glass in all directions like that small puddle being pressed by that car just now, causing the glass red all over.

Over 10 m ahead of Zhang Tie, some more birch trees of several meters in diameter fell down and blocked the 5 remaining cars.

The doors of the cars all opened, while people inside all rushed out and started to fight those killers in black clothes who were rushing out of the roadsides...

Miserable shrieks...fierce battles... the spraying fresh blood...the sounds of sabers, swords, and axes cutting into body...and those battle totems which had disappeared before rising up...

Within several seconds, before Zhang Tie determined whether to save them or to directly turn around and escape, the battle had come to an end.

Over 30 dead bleeding bodies covered dozens of meters on the road under the wrecked cars' lamplights. Most of them were those getting off the cars, 7-8 of them were killers in black clothes. Additionally, those killers were still sharply adding hacks on those dead bodies.

At this moment, a tough man who was covered with blood leaned against a car as he held a long sword and a shield to protect a woman. At the same time, he furiously glanced over those grim and bloody killers who were surrounding them.

Although some of those killers were killed, there were still over 50 people of them.

"Who are you?" The tough man asked loudly. "Do you know the consequences of going against the Ballas Clan? You have to pay for it with your blood!"

Those killers didn't speak at all, instead, they just moved forward to block that man and the woman behind him.

"Gitta, no need to ask. Don't you understand that those people are assigned by those old douchebags of the Ballas Clan?" A calm voice sounded, then the woman slightly let out a sigh. "Because of their absurdness and greed, they have lost their reason and chosen to cooperate with ghosts. They don't even think about that, even if they killed me, how could the properties of the Ballas Clan fall into their hands?"

"Papapa..." with a series of slight clapping sounds, a long-face muscled guy walked out of those killers, "Everybody on the Ewentra Archipelago knows that there is a seductive fox on Saint Herner Island, who is the most beautiful widow in the Ballas Clan. A woman who makes the Ballas Clan one of the top clans on Saint Herner Island in only ten-odd years. You look as beautiful as they describe!"

From Zhang Tie's viewpoint, he could not see the look of the woman who was facing him with her back over 20 m away, but from her back, Zhang Tie felt she was pretty mature and seductive. Additionally, he could sense the long-face guy's burning eyes fixed on that woman.

That long-face guy seemed to have felt Zhang Tie's gaze. He then glanced at Zhang Tie before waving his hand to a killer beside him. The killer then walked towards Zhang Tie. For those people, a teenager like Zhang Tie was just a small figure with bad luck. Why the f*ck was he still on the road at this time? Of course, they thought Zhang Tie deserved to be killed.

Seeing a killer walking towards him, all the others killers didn't care about Zhang Tie at all, including that long-face guy, because

in all of their eyes, Zhang Tie was like a salty fish on the chopping board, a common pioneer who might have been scared stiff by what was happening.

In many people's eyes, the alleged pioneers were just a number of homeless coolies who dreamed about becoming rich by moving around. They were no more threatening than those farmers who retired from army. Actually, many pioneers were composed of soldiers who retired from army and didn't feel like living simple lives. Most of them were between LV 1 and LV 5. However, few pioneers were above LV 6. The proportion of pioneers above LV 6 among pioneers was lower than the proportion of military officials among the same amount of soldiers. Therefore, they didn't need to worry about whether Zhang Tie was a powerhouse or not.

The tough man and that woman 20 m away also thought that Zhang Tie was just a poor guy who witnessed what was happening by accident.

Nobody felt that Zhang Tie's existence would cause any change to the current situation or what would happen next. It seemed that Zhang Tie had become a dead boy lying on the ground at this moment.

Zhang Tie then glanced at that guy who walked towards him with weapon as he sighed inside. 'I don't want to find trouble, but the trouble comes to me. Now that those guys want to kill me, unless I leave Saint Herner Island at this moment by directly diving into the sea and swimming to the Ice and Snow Wilderness or change my look once again, these people could easily find me on this island based on their capabilities and background.

Although Zhang Tie didn't want to stir up trouble, he didn't want to suffer any injustice for them. He felt it was not worth it for him to do that. Additionally, Zhang Tie confirmed that if he just escaped in this way, he would probably be the scapegoat of those killers and would be wanted badly by the motherf*cking Ballas Clan, dead or not. By doing this, they could stop him from releasing the truth to the public and let him be their scapegoat. One stone, two birds! Even idiots would know that.

The two men's talk had arisen Zhang Tie's interest as Zhang Tie, who always felt being the same as average residents, was also very interested in such revenge between wealthy and influential clans. Therefore, after thinking about leaving for a short while, Zhang Tie gave up this choice.

This was a nice game, a really nice game.

"I've been disappointed by the Ballas Clan. I don't know what those old douchebags have promised you, but I know what you want. We can have a trade here. You let me and my chief guard leave Saint Herner Island. We will leave tomorrow without taking any copper coins. I will give you all of my belongings on Saint Herner Island and in the Ballas Clan so that you could get what you want more easily. How about that?"

Although that woman was at an absolute disadvantage, she still didn't give it up. She kept talking about conditions with those guys calmly.

"Before seeing you, I truly wanted to kill you, but now, I've changed my mind!" That long-face man gazed at that woman with greedy eyes without covering his inner thoughts at all. He glanced at her body like how a wolf licking its prey. "It would be very nice if I could throw such an intelligent and beautiful woman into my bed! It would be very pitiful if you are just killed in this way!"

Hearing this, all the other killers started to smirk obscenely...

The moment the tough man heard this, he roared as his battle qi rolled up, presenting a king snake. He wanted to rush towards that long-face guy, yet he was concerned about the woman behind him. Therefore, he just glanced over those killers with burning eyes. "Unless I'm killed, you would not touch even a hair of Ms. Olina!"

"Then...go die!" Saying this, the long-faced man shot out his icy eye as he hacked his huge bola towards the tough man. At the same time, a huge battle qi totem of bloody scorpion appeared behind him.

After 3 loud sounds, Gitta's shield had been completely broken. meanwhile, he had been sent flying backwards in the air and fell to the ground 10 m away while sprouting out blood.

Seeing this, the woman let out a sigh...

The long-faced man then moved forward with a contemptuous smile, intending to hack that man into pieces...

At this moment, with a sound of breaking bones "Ka...", all men turned around and looked at that place where the sound came from.

It was where Zhang Tie was standing. He held that killer's neck like pinching a chick. When everyone turned around, they saw Zhang Tie just moving his hand back while that killer had fallen onto the ground with his twisted neck, completely dead...

Seeing their gazes, Zhang Tie felt embarrassed as he smirked, "He wanted to kill me, so I have to pinch him to death. You don't mind, right? Do you?"

The long-face guy with a bola narrowed his eyes instantly...

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the woman also turned around and stared at Zhang Tie who was standing away from them on the roadside.

When she turned around, Zhang Tie was stunned instantly as he seemed to be seeing Miss Daina in a different set of clothes...

...

Chapter 384: Saving a Beauty

That woman looked pretty similar to Miss Daina. At the sight of her, Zhang Tie even thought Miss Daina was standing in front of him.

However, this woman had something different than Miss Daina. Miss Daina had brown hair and blue eyes, however, this woman had chestnut-red hair and cyan eyes. Additionally, her lips looked plumper. Miss Daina was an intellectual, tender beauty yet this woman looked enchanting and a bit sluggish.

At this moment, Zhang Tie didn't see too much panic from that woman's delicate face. Instead, he only saw a bit of grief and an indifference facing trouble. At the sight of Zhang Tie, that woman's eyes gleamed.

Zhang Tie was very calm. Albeit he had killed a person, facing dozens of killers with fierce eyes, Zhang Tie didn't look flustered at all. Instead, he looked like an audience who was watching a performance.

That woman knew that a person who could still be that calm in such a situation definitely had his talent and had experienced greater troubles, except for Zhang Tie's look as a pioneer and young age under the hazy lamplights of the cars were out of her imagination.

With bola in hand, the long-faced man just fixed his eyes on Zhang Tie. He didn't say anything at all. His eyes were filled with a

killing intent. He then waved his hand and 4 killers rushed towards Zhang Tie.

Seeing this, Zhang Tie, who didn't want to expose the secret that he had mastered iron-blood fist, pulled out of that slim pioneering sword that he had just bought.

This sword had not seen any blood yet. but now, it would be used to kill people.

Nobody could describe how Zhang Tie launched his attack. In front of Zhang Tie, the 4 killers just looked like kids who were leisurely running and jumping in the wild of rural areas. He looked like he was holding a little wooden stick and slapping it over the roadside verdant grass, seemingly wanting to scare the butterfly off from the grass.

Zhang Tie only moved 4 footsteps in the whole process, 2 footsteps forward and 2 footsteps backward. During this process, he also rapidly stabbed 4 times along with his moving footsteps. When Zhang Tie returned to his original position, he looked as if he had done nothing at all. However, the 4 murderous killers all fell down on the ground and died without even a convulsion.

They were all attacked at their hearts and died instantly. For Zhang Tie, the 5 people were not even qualified as to be his targets.

The whole process lasted less than 2 seconds.

All the killers forcefully swallowed their saliva. Those killers who were closer to Zhang Tie felt a fierce killing qi from Zhang Tie's tranquil eyes when Zhang Tie raised his eyes and looked at them. As a result, they all moved one step back out of fear.

The long-faced man also felt that killing qi from Zhang Tie which was formed after killing numerous people. His face also slightly changed.

In contrast, that woman's eyes gleamed at this time.

"It seems that you mind me killing one of your people very much!" Zhang Tie revealed a smile.

"Who are you?" The long-face man barely opened his mouth.

"Of course, I'm a pioneer!" Zhang Tie shrugged with a smile as he showed his equipment and clothes to him. "Can't you see that?"

"Now that you are a pioneer, it's nothing to do with you. I've not seen what you've done. Mind your own business. How about that?" The long-faced man then moved his eyes between Zhang Tie and the woman before finally said while gritting his teeth.

What Zhang Tie performed just now made the long-faced man very cautious. What was more, the long-faced man couldn't make his decision as he didn't know Zhang Tie's real fighting strength and background. Therefore, he had to choose to give a compromise to Zhang Tie. Based on Zhang Tie's performance, the long-faced

guy realized that it would definitely be more difficult for him to kill Zhang Tie than killing the woman's 20-odd bodyguards.

Additionally, if Zhang Tie wanted to escape, the long-faced man estimated that they could not block him at all as Zhang Tie's mystical movements just now were really shocking. It was definitely a master level.

"I was just a passerby and want to go back downtown. I don't care about your thing at all. But you blocked me and even wanted to kill me!" Zhang Tie said in an innocent voice, "If you give way, I will leave right now!"

The long-face man carefully gazed at Zhang Tie for quite a while before finally forcefully waved his head, "Let him go!"

Receiving the order, dozens of killers hurriedly gave way to Zhang Tie. Seeing Zhang Tie putting away his long sword and walking towards them leisurely, many people let out a sigh.

When everybody thought that Zhang Tie would just pass by in this way, he flashed like a lightning bolt, cutting 3 killers' heads off at once while their blood sprouted out of their necks as high as 1 m. Before the 3 heads fell to the ground, he had stabbed 2 more killers' hearts, causing them to fly back in the air...

"B*stard, what are you doing?" With eyes turned red, the long-faced man instantly threw his bola towards Zhang Tie's head.

Zhang moved slightly aside as the bola missed him and passed by his shoulder with a strong wind. At the same time, all the other killers charged at him. Zhang Tie launched an attack once again and sent another killer fly in the air.

"I don't like suffering losses. Five men of yours wanted to kill me just now. Although I killed them, I have to hack back 5 times like what they did to me. You can also choose to kill me if you can. Attention, please, I am safeguarding myself by killing everyone. I'm not attacking you on purpose!" Zhang Tie kept killing them as he explained. He looked like a tiger among sheep, with each move, he would kill a killer in black clothes by the sword.

After saying this, he bumped into a man 2 m tall causing him sprout blood. Like a football, that tough guy was sent flying more than 20 m away and even knocked another 2 guys down. With a backhand, Zhang Tie then split open another killer's stomach...

At that time, Zhang Tie had been only less than 5 m away from that woman. Additionally, nobody else was near him. The long-faced man also figured out Zhang Tie's intention at this moment——Zhang Tie didn't mean to leave at the beginning, instead, he wanted to save this woman. He was cheated by Zhang Tie...

"Kill them!" The long-faced man then roared as he waved his bola towards that woman instead of Zhang Tie.

At the critical moment, the long-faced man was also very fierce. Now that he could not kill Zhang Tie, he would kill that woman first to finish his task today.

Of course, Zhang Tie was not faster than a LV 9 powerhouse's bola, neither would an average woman escape from a LV 9 powerhouse's trump card.

At the sight of that long-faced man's grim face and his terrifying bola, the woman thought, 'Am I going to die here today? Being stricken by such a terrifying weapon, I must look very disgusting...those Ballas idiots...

With this thought, she closed her eyes.

However, she was not stricken by the bola, because Zhang Tie threw out his sword and hit that bola in a split second. Although it could not stop the bola, it changed its flying trace at once, causing it flying aside...

With a strong wind, the flying bola blew her chestnut-red hair backwards. With a loud sound "boom", it hacked into a car beside the woman, causing a horrible big hole on a door.

The woman was not able to see clearly what had happened at all. She only felt a chilling wind over her ear. Closely after that, she was hugged by a pair of powerful arms and started to roll rapidly over the ground...

The long-faced man kept booming his bola onto the ground where the woman and Zhang Tie had just rolled by like their shadows. Being hugged by Zhang Tie, that woman also felt the terrifying power of the bola as she could feel earthquake each time

the bola tamped onto the ground...

At the critical moment, the woman didn't feel panic any more. Instead, she just gazed at Zhang Tie's young and handsome face and sensed Zhang Tie's breath. Zhang Tie hugged her meticulously like hugging a fragile porcelain—one hand over her waist, the other hand over her neck, resting her head against his shoulder; in this way, no matter how they rolled on the ground, she would not be bruised by stones and bulges.

Although still being in danger, that woman had already recovered composure as she could feel the unprecedented sense of safety and warmth.

At this moment, Gitta, her chief guard roared. After a short rest, the tough guy struck by the bola had jumped up again from the ground. Without caring about his wounds at all, he directly picked up his weapon and rushed towards Zhang Tie and that woman.

"Protect her, I need 1 minute..." After saying this, Zhang Tie threw that woman towards Gitta before catching the iron chain of the bola beside him and flew towards that long-faced man with the help of the strength when the guy pulled his bola back. In a split second, he had been less than 4 m away from that long-face man, making the bola ineffective...

Taking over the woman, Gitta instantly stood in front of her and split a killer into halves...

At this moment, Zhang Tie found the advantage of a LV 9

powerhouse. Seeing Zhang Tie being close to him with the help of his iron chain, the long-faced man revealed a sinister smile as he instantly loosened his grip on the bola. Meanwhile, the iron chain of the bola in another hand lashed towards Zhang Tie like a whip...

With a bola in hand, he could strike the enemy sharply and ferociously, far or not, without any shortcomings...

At the same time, some killers had picked up their axes from the ground and the cars.

"Boom him first..." The long-faced man shouted loudly.

Hearing this, they threw their axes towards Zhang Tie at once...

After drawing an icy arc in the air, the 4 axes directly chopped towards Zhang Tie as they blocked Zhang Tie's paths of retreat.

Seeing so many weapons attacking Zhang Tie, the woman was so scared that she instantly covered her mouth.

In others' eyes, Zhang Tie had no way to retreat at this moment. Additionally, he had no weapon, how could he deal with them at the same time?

Zhang Tie also narrowed his eyes. 'They are so tacit with each other, it seems that I have to use my double-carps sword...'

Zhang Tie had already reached his hand towards his waist...

However, at this moment, Zhang Tie felt blank like a hidden drawer in his brain was opened by others.

Time seemed to slow down at this moment as a weird feeling appeared. Meanwhile, those axes flying towards him instantly became "slow" in Zhang Tie's eyes——

That was true, they were becoming "slow"——Zhang Tie could identify their flight traces, their centers of gravity, strengths, and angles. He was sure that he would not be struck by them. He also sensed an instinct that he was able to allow his hands to follow a marvelous round trace and control those flying axes by changing their flying directions and strengths...

This sense was pretty similar to that when he awakened his precise throwing skill. The difference was that this time he could force back items flying towards him and take others' strengths and weapons as his.

Zhang Tie knew that he had awakened another ancestral bloodline. This one was more powerful than the precise throwing skill and was more irresistible.

For Zhang Tie, time seemed to be slowing down too much. Before the long-faced man's iron chain struck him, the 4 axes had already reached his sides...

Although in others' eyes, the 4 axes were thrown out at the same time, in Zhang Tie's eyes, they were not reaching his sides head by head as the distance between each 2 of them was greater than 1 m.

Seeing the first axe flying towards him, following that strange feeling, Zhang Tie put his hand over the edge of the axe and forced it to draw a arc in front of him before flying towards the long-faced man's iron chain...

When the second one arrived, Zhang Tie also forced it to draw an arc in front of him and sent it flying towards the long-faced man's head with an arc in the air...

When controlling the second axe, Zhang Tie had one more enlightenment—he didn't have to keep the article flying in a straight line. He could force it to fly towards the target in terms of curve, arc or twisting patterns.

He then imposed a force on the 3rd axe and forced it to fly back to the guys who had thrown out their axes in a curve, cutting through the 4 guys' necks in a line.

The 4th axe was forced to fly towards that woman and the guard which was crowded with most killers in black clothes.

For the 4th axe, Zhang Tie had been hard pressed to control it as he almost could not catch its flying speed. Thankfully, there were only 4 axes, with one more, he had to evade.

Actually, he had finished this process in less than 1 second.

Being imposed by Zhang Tie, the 4 axes flew towards 4 directions with a great strength.

Nobody could imagine that the result could be reversed in such a split second. Even the long-faced man didn't know what had happened until his death. If Zhang Tie directly threw an ax towards him when fighting him face to face, the long-faced man might not even be killed, after all, a LV 9 powerhouse who had prepared to fight might even escape from a sonic boom, except in this case...

The first ax broke the long-faced man's iron chain...

The second ax sent the long-faced man's head flying in the air...

The third ax slayed the 4 killers who had thrown their axes towards Zhang Tie, causing them to sprout blood from their necks and fall down instantly...

The fourth axe cleared a greater part of those killers surrounding Gitta and the woman...

After hitting the 4 targets, Zhang Tie heard 4-in-1 sonic boom as was expected.

As a result, almost 1/3 of the killers were killed...

The sudden loud sonic boom startled everybody who was fighting. Many killers in black clothes even stopped. When all of them realized what happened, they found a great number of people had fallen down including the long-faced man. Zhang Tie, however, who should have fallen down, was still standing where he was, almost without even single a movement. Some of them who had seen what Zhang Tie did just stared at him as if watching a ghost——

In those guys' eyes, Zhang Tie was like a huge spring as all the axes flying towards him were bounced back by a strong force the moment they drew close to him.

Zhang Tie moved so fast that most of people didn't see that Zhang Tie had changed the directions of the axes with his own hands. Instead, they only felt the axes automatically bounced back the moment they touched Zhang Tie.

That woman also widened her eyes. 'That was amazing! How could that happen! Those are axes that could even break the steel plates of cars, they are not a kid's rubber balls. How could they just bounce away?'

Among all of them, only Gitta could sense Zhang Tie's movements. If those axes all flew towards him, Gitta felt that he could block 2-3 of them with a shield or a proper weapon and could hardly block the 4th one. However, he could never force axes to bounce back. That was amazing! He had not even heard about that before...

Whereas, before those shocking killers understood what happened, Zhang Tie, who picked up a long sword with his foot, had rushed into them and chopped off their heads...

After a few minutes, when Zhang Tie killed the last killer escaping dozens of meters away in the birch forest, he dropped off that long sword which he picked up casually and came to that woman and her chief guard.

After such a bloody fight, the guard suffered a few more wounds. Thankfully, they were not fatal. Zhang Tie found that the chief guard was experienced in real battle.

"Are you all right?"

He asked both that man and the woman, although, with his eyes fixed on that woman, he sensed a sincere feeling from her.

"Just some bruises, it's okay..." Saying this, Gitta coughed out blood. He then took out of vial of medicament and drunk it. Zhang Tie peered at that vial of medicament and found it was a medium-level recovery medicament, therefore, he just nodded and didn't speak.

After narrowly escaping from the assassination, the woman's face looked pretty pale. Besides some blood stains on her skirt when Zhang Tie hugged her to roll over the ground, she was okay.

The scene was so terrifying, which could almost match a real

battlefield. However, seeing 80-90 dead bodies lying on the ground within 100 m, that woman didn't feel uncomfortable at all. This made Zhang Tie respect her more.

"Thanks for saving me and my chief guard, but our crisis has not been solved! Additionally, we are not able to defend against any future crisis." That woman then looked at Zhang Tie with a tender and attractive voice with her beautiful eyes deeply fixed on Zhang Tie full of expectations, "I'm Olina, the chairman of the Ballas Business Group on Saint Herner Island. I know it's a bit much, but can you give me another hand, or, if you wish to be employed by me, I'd like to pay you whatever you want!"

Chapter 385: A Conspiracy

There was always a moment when a person did something for some unknown reason in their life.

Take this moment as an example. Not knowing why, seeing this woman being very similar to Miss Daina and her expecting eyes, Zhang Tie had an impulsion to prevent her from suffering any harm; because of this impulsion, even though Zhang Tie knew that he might cause a lot of trouble if he helped her, he still did that.

As the woman had told him, although she survived, she was not sure whether more danger were still waiting for her.

"Well, I accept your proposal; but I have to claim one point that I will only be responsible for your personal safety and I will not kill people on purpose for you. I'm a pioneer, not a killer; additionally, I won't stay with you for a long time!"

"I promise you won't regret your decision today!" That woman stared at Zhang Tie deeply as her seductive red lips opened once again. "Then, what should I call you, young pioneer?"

"I'm Peter Hamplester, you can call me Peter!" Zhang Tie told her the fake name that he had long prepared well.

While they talked, Gitta, the chief guard, had already checked all the killers' corpses.

"Ma'am, may you have a look here?" Gitta was standing before that long-faced man's body whose head had been chopped off with a gloomy look. Hearing his words, the woman took out a hand towel and covered his mouth and nose with it; after that, she strode over those corpses and blood stains and arrived at Gitta's side, followed by Zhang Tie.

The body's clothes had been split open by Gitta using his saber; additionally, it had been turned over with its back facing the sky. Zhang Tie saw a strange tattoo on its back. It was a huge and grim snake with a unicorn on its head.

"Gitta, tell me what does this mean?" the woman asked her chief guard.

"Ma'am, this person comes from Magical Snake Island; additionally, he should have a high position on the island; otherwise, he wouldn't have been qualified to have such a tattoo on his back!" Gitta explained solemnly.

"Those motherf*cking douchebags, they are truly working with these demons!" As Zhang Tie had expected, the woman looked for just less than two seconds before recovering her composure. "Put his head away, it's useful! I remember that the heads of those guys from Magical Snake Island are very valuable. They are wanted by many people. The head of Bell Clan on Saint Herner Island likes to see these guys' heads very much!"

"Yes, Ma'am!" The chief guard didn't ask why. He directly peeled off a nearby killer's coat and wrapped that head with opening eyes using it.

Zhang Tie just watched from the side. As he didn't know their situation, he just kept silent.

"Ma'am, will we go for those motherf*cking douchebags now?" With that head in the coat, Gitta stood up in front of her once again and asked, emanating a strong killing qi while holding his sword.

"Now? Do we have any evidence to charge them? Or can we directly go kill them?"

"Of course, we go kill them!" Gitta answered loudly full of fury, "We've lost so many people, they even wanted to kill you. Shouldn't they pay for that? As long as you deliver the order, ma'am, I will go chop off their heads right now!"

"What then? If you kill them, you would be a murderer and I would be the most infamous vicious woman across Ewentra Archipelagoes!" The woman waved her head as an icy light flashed by her beautiful cyan eyes, "No, this is not the outcome I want. What I want is to let those motherf*cking douchebags drink their poisonous alcohol themselves!"

"What should we do now?"

"We will go back to Bluesea Castle first!"

...

In the following couple of minutes, Gitta cleaned up a car which could still run and moved away some birches from the road together with Zhang Tie. Zhang Tie could move those trees away himself; however, at the sight of Gitta coming to help him, Zhang Tie didn't want to make him look like a tough man or further expose his real fighting strength, therefore, he moved away the trees together with Gitta.

"Peter, I owe you my life!" After moving away those trees, Gitta patted his hands and told Zhang Tie with a serious look.

"If you say so, you might be my most valuable mortgagor now. I hope you will have no chance to pay it off!" Zhang Tie smiled. Zhang Tie liked such a tough man as he saw something from him which he sensed from his comrades back in Iron-Blood Camp — sincerity, passion, frankness, honesty.

Gitta also showed a big smile. Stretching out his hands, he tightly held Zhang Tie's hand. They then got on the car. Gitta drove the car; Zhang Tie then sat together with Olina in the back.

Sitting together with Olina, Zhang Tie smelt that special fragrance which was carried by mature women. Zhang Tie then found she looked really similar to Miss Daina; even their fragrances smelt almost the same which were both alluring and sweet. 'Are they using the same brand of perfume? What a coincidence...' Zhang Tie sighed inside.

The car's glasses had been completely broken while terrifying

traces of the axes were left on the plates; thankfully, its engine and lights still worked.

It was long distance from here to the downtown. Without the windoes, wind poured into the car.

The night wind on Saint Herner Island felt very cold when it blew by their faces...

Gitta didn't feel cold at all. He was driving his car with eyes widely opened as he watched the roadsides vigilantly. Olina only wore a skirt on the back seat. Only two minutes after Gitta started the car, she started to quiver all over slightly with her hands crossed in front of her breasts. Seeing this, Zhang Tie put off his fox hair cloak and covered it onto the woman.

"Argh, thanks!" Olin revealed a smile as she turned around and told Zhang Tie with a tender voice.

"My pleasure!"

After wearing a cloak, Olina adjusted her sitting position. When she sat down again, she moved closer to Zhang Tie to be warmer; as a result, their thighs almost touched each other. With that layer of silky high-end skirt between them, Zhang Tie could feel the nice touch onto her plump and smooth thigh.

At the beginning, Zhang Tie felt okay; however, as the car kept bumping up and down, their thighs started to rub constantly.

Gradually, Zhang Tie felt especially stimulative.

Zhang Tie glanced at Olina when she was also glancing at him. Seemingly because her body gradually warmed up, Olina's face looked a bit red. The moment they saw each other, they moved their eyes away at once; then, they felt ambiguous and stimulated immediately.

Gitta was still driving the car like nothing had happened.

Zhang Tie then slightly twisted his body due to embarrassment. Although he knew she was not Miss Daina, he still displayed his deep feeling about Miss Daina which went through his puberty and his numerous wet dreams to this woman. He felt like he was sat beside Miss Daina. With a bit of tension, he wanted to move closer to her and push her.

Especially that fragrance, which was too similar to that of Miss Daina. If Zhang Tie didn't look at her carefully, he would feel that Miss Daina really was sitting beside him.

"I'm a bit sleepy. Can I lean against your shoulder?" Olina asked. Before Zhang Tie agreed, she had already tilted her head onto Zhang Tie's shoulder. This intimate movement caused Zhang Tie's body a bit stiff. Not only this, she even tightly held Zhang Tie's right hand with her hands from below.

Being held by her, Zhang Tie felt the icy sweat in her hands. Zhang Tie then realized that this woman was not as calm as she looked when being attacked; instead, she was very scared inside

although she didn't display her inner feelings on her face.

Gitta only peered at them from the rearview mirror before continuing to drive as usual.

The woman's warm and soft nose then touched Zhang Tie's neck, causing his neck to become a bit itchy. As long as Zhang Tie turned over his head, his face would touch her forehead; therefore, Zhang Tie became a bit stiff all over.

After several minutes, when Zhang Tie felt this woman's hands warming up, he glanced at her through his eye corners and found that she had fallen asleep.

The car soon arrived at the downtown and crossed that road where Zhang Tie's hotel was on. It drove in another direction. In order to avoid from another ambush, Gitta seemed choosing a remote route with few passers-by. Although some passers-by noticed this car with a miserable look, they didn't react abnormally besides surprises.

In this way, the car arrived at a castle in the east of the downtown after twenty more minutes.

Blueseas Castle was at least double the size of Zhang Tie's Jinwu Castle. Besides, its walls were much higher than that of most western castles. When they arrived at the castle, it was already deep night as Zhang Tie could see that the walls were brightly lit and heavily-guarded.

Gitta seemingly wanted to park the car directly in front of the gate; however, at the sight of the brightly lit walls and the defensive weapons on the walls, Zhang Tie's heart raced as he had a blood sense...

"Stop the car!" Zhang Tie shouted towards Gitta. Gitta instantly parked it 500 m away from the castle.

"What's wrong?" Gitta turned around and asked.

"Put out the lamplights. 500 m is not a long distance for the defensive weapons on the walls!"

After the previous battle, Gitta had formed an instinctive trust towards Zhang Tie. He then instantly turned off the lamplights to put them out.

Olina woke up at this moment as she moved her head away from Zhang Tie's shoulder. She instantly sat straight and looked outside. "What? Have we arrived at Bluesea Castle?"

"We almost be there. But Peter told me to park it here and put out the lamplights!" Gitta explained to Olina.

Olina then immediately looked at Zhang Tie.

"Where are we?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Ms. Olina used to live here; this is Bluesea Castle!" Gitta explained.

"Who are those guards? How many people do they have? Who are their leaders?"

"They are armed guards of Ballas Business Group, totally over 200 people. Their leaders are five chief guards appointed by Ms. Olina. Is there something wrong?"

"If we directly park this car in front of the gate of the castle, have you calculated the chance of us surviving the ballistas on the wall?" Zhang Tie asked seriously.

Hearing this, Gitta and Olina turned their faces at the same time. Based on the terrifying power of those defensive weapons on the walls, with a close-range dense shooting, the car would instantly become a hornet's nest with numerous holes, let alone the people inside.

"You mean the guards of the business group have been bribed? How come?" Gitta almost screamed. As they were his colleagues, hearing Zhang Tie's speculation, he instantly doubted.

"Not all of them are bribed, those people could not bribe everybody; if possible, they would not have ambushed you tonight. But, if one of the chief guards and some guards who were responsible for manipulating the ballistae were bribed, what would happen then?"

Gitta didn't speak while Olina tightly bit her lower lip.

"What should we do now?"

"Gitta, do you know all the guards over there?"

"All of them. Many of them are my friends!"

"Then, are you afraid of death?"

"I should have died before. Ms. Olina saved my life. I should have died tonight too; thankfully, I meet you. I'm not afraid at all!" Gitta answered honestly.

Chapter 386: Reveal the Conspiracy

According to Zhang Tie's suggestion, Gitta just parked the car and put out the lamplights. Zhang Tie stayed to protect Olina while Gitta walked towards the castle alone.

Gitta soon arrived at the suspension bridge in front of the gate.

The suspension bridge had been raised. A 20-m wide moat surrounded that castle. It was the last warning to the invaders. In the defense system of the castle, guards on the walls had the right to attack any people crossing the moat without prior consent as they had trespassed the private territory.

After arriving at the riverside of the moat, Gitta raised his head and looked at the steam ballistae on the high walls as he was slightly choked inside. Although it was already late at night, from the lamplights on the walls, Gitta could still see clearly the shiny mouths of the steam ballistae and the mouth of a honeybomb-fashioned ballista, whose cover had been moved away after lying there for a long time, slightly hanging down towards the place in front of the gate.

From Gitta's memory, the mouths of those steam ballistae should have all been positioned horizontally. Thankfully, due to Zhang Tie's warning, he'd carefully observed these details and sensed a looming killing intent from the wall of the castle.

"I'm Gitta, the chief guard of Ms. Olina, lower the suspension bridge!" After a deep breath, Gitta stood on the riverside of the

moat and shouted loudly towards the castle with his full strength. Normally, the moment those guards on the wall caught sight of the arrival of Ms. Olina's fleet of cars, they would've lowered the suspension bridge.

But not today. Gitta shouted loudly twice. At the beginning, no sound was heard from above the walls; after over 10 seconds, an arrogant and lazy voice sounded on a tower.

"Who's screaming down there. This is Bluesea Castle. If you don't belong to this place, piss off right now; otherwise, I will teach you a thing or two!"

Gitta was not familiar with that voice. Even as the chief guard of Ms. Olina, Gitta could still not be familiar with every guard's voice. The moment he heard this strange voice, Gitta realized something wrong. Many people up there should have heard his loud voice. The one who responded to him should be a chief guard on duty there. He was very familiar with the other chief guards' voices and they were familiar with his voice. How come such a small figure came out to drive him away?

"Periv, Crie, Alexander, Ji Gang and Adeline. Which one of you is up there? Answer me!" Gitta shouted out of fury below, "You b*stards, who's up there? Come out, don't you recognize my voice?"

"Piss off, if you keep screaming there, we will shoot you!"

The same strange voice was heard again. But this time, it

sounded much more furious than the last time but mixed with a bit of timidity.

"I'm Gitta, the chief guard of Ms. Olin. Many brothers in the castle know me. If anyone dares shoot me, when Ms. Olin comes back, she will peel off your skin! Periv, Crie, Alexander, Ji Gang, and Adeline, which one is up there? Come out to talk with me!"

Gitta continued to shout loudly below the castle while some noises could be heard from the top of the walls and the tower.

Finally, a familiar voice was heard.

"Who's down there?"

"Crie, I'm Gitta, lower the suspension bridge!"

"Gitta, are you with Ms. Olin? Why are you alone? Where's she?"

"Ms Olin is in a safe place. Someone wants to kill her. She let me come back first and want you to pick her up with the guards in the castle!"

Hearing Gitta's words, the face of the 40-odd man with a nice handlebar moustache changed slightly while his trusted followers exchanged glances at each other before looked at him, not knowing what to do.

The current situation was completely out of the expectations of everybody and made their plan void instantly.

The 40-odd man then gritted his teeth and shouted, "According to the regulation of Bluesea Castle, without the order of Ms. Olina, nobody can open the gate in the evening. Only Ms. Olina has the right to dispatch forces from the castle. Gitta, what you told us was not trustworthy. Before I see Ms. Olina, I will not violate the regulations of the castle even though we are familiar with each other. Unless Ms. Olina arrives, I will not open the gate for you; nor will I allow you to dispatch forces from the castle!"

"Periv, you b*stard. If you don't come out soon, you'll have to pay off the 200-odd gold coins that you owe me tomorrow. Alexander, Ms. Olina needs help now, yet, motherf*cker, you are still sleeping! Ji Gang, you b*stard, besides molesting women, what else can you do? Adeline, if you don't come out right now, after I die, you will become a widow!"

Gitta's voice grew louder. Without considering Crie's feelings, he just called each chief guard's name and swore at them from the other side of the moat.

Hearing this, the people in the tower looked worse.

A guard beside Crie moved closer to him and murmured, "Head, why not make him shut up? We only need to trigger a ballista..."

"Shut up, do you want me to die together with him?" Crie swore

in a low voice as he felt very agonising. He didn't know the situation of Ms. Olina. If he killed Gitta at this moment, as long as that woman was not dead, he would be killed at dawn. Additionally, Gitta was safe, that meant that woman might really have been moved to a safe place. If so, it would be meaningless for him to insist on his plan. However, if he just allowed Gitta to shout loudly downside there and dispatch guards from the castle to support her, their plans would really be ruined, which he didn't wish to see. If so, those people's promise to him would not be fulfilled.

While Crie was still thinking about it, the other chief guards had already arrived at the wall of the castle. They had already heard Gitta's shout.

"Crie, what's happening?" Periv, with dense brown hair and beard and a robust frame, rushed into the tower first. "Why is Gitta shouting outside? Why not let him in?"

Crie forced a smile, "According to the regulation in the castle, without Ms. Olina's order, nobody is allowed to access to Bluesea Castle for free. Therefore..."

Periv just ignored Crie; instead, he roared, "Gitta, you b*stard, where's Ms. Olina? Why you are alone?"

Hearing this familiar voice, Gitta immediately realized that his shouting had worked. Peter was right, they truly could not bribe every person in the castle.

"Periv, Ms. Olina encountered an assassination attempt on the way back tonight. Someone wants to murder her. Ms. Olina told me to dispatch guards from the castle to pick her up!" Gitta shouted in a louder voice.

Not only had Periv heard Gitta's words, even Alexander, Ji Gang, and Adeline, who had just arrived at the tower, also heard them.

Alexander was over 50 years old. He was the eldest one among the chief guards. With a fat frame and bald head, he looked more like a cunning businessman. Ji Gang was a young man of over 20 years old. He had blonde and oily hair and a handsome play-boy look; a long sword was hung at his waist. Adeline was a woman, whose left eye and eyebrow had weird flame-like tattoos. Additionally, she had fiery red hair. Carrying a javelin container, she had a barbarian clan's bloodline.

Only after a few seconds, the other chief guards had already found out what had happened. Crie was explaining to them why he didn't allow people to lower the suspension bridge and let Gitta in.

Alexander looked at Crie while slightly narrowing his eyes, "Crie is reasonable, but Ms. Olina truly has told us that if she was not in the castle, the five of us can make the decision to deal with emergencies. What's happening tonight is an emergency, let's vote then!"

"I agree to dispatch guards to pick up Ms. Olina!" Periv said loudly.

"I agree too!" Adeline also replied without any hesitation.

"I agree!" Ji Gang smiled, "I've long waited for such a chance to save Ms. Olina!"

"Count me in!" Alexander also expressed his opinion.

After a moment of hesitation, Crie saw Periv moving his hand closer to his sword handle while Adeline raise her eyebrows.

"Now that you agree, I agree too!" Crie hurriedly expressed his instance.

...

After waiting over the moat for a short while, Gitta saw them lowering the suspension bridge. The five chief guards then rushed out of the gate with a great number of guards, many of whom were female fighters in light armor led by Adeline.

"Gitta, where's Ms. Olina? How's her condition?" Periv asked firstly.

"Ms. Olina is now in a safe place. Adeline, Ms. Olina wants you take over the defense system of the tower of the outer castle!"

"Okay!" Adeline didn't doubt Gitta's message at all; instead, she just glared at him, "What were you raving about just now? I will

give you a lesson when I'm free!"

Adeline then said something to her female fighters. Then all the female fighters returned to the castle and took over the defense systems of the outer castle's tower at once. The order passed by Gitta amazed everybody else. Alexander then stared at Crie deeply. At this moment, Crie didn't say anything; he looked pretty bad, even a bit flurried.

"Do we need to dispatch cars there?" Ji Gang asked.

"No need, follow me!" Gitta glanced at Crie with an icy expression before said, "Crie, follow me up too!"

Crie forced a smile as he pushed in front of Gitta in a humble way, "I was just following the rules in Bluesea Castle, hope you don't care about that!"

Gitta ignored him and hurriedly checked over his shoulders that he was being followed by everybody else...

...

Wearing Zhang Tie's fox-hair cloak, Olina just sat under a pine together with Zhang Tie on the roadside. Seeing the team of people holding burning torches walking towards them out of the castle, Zhang Tie knew that his speculation was right. Facing such a situation, he preferred to be derided as an idiot instead of risking his own life to test those strangers' morality.

Zhang Tie sensed that the woman let out a sigh slightly.

"What if Gitta hadn't come back?" Seeing the swaying flames moving closer to them, Olina who was gazing at the distant asked Zhang Tie suddenly, "You should've known that was a possibility. They might not have bribed all of my loyal followers; yet with only a small plot and a vial of poison, they could make nobody be loyal to me anymore. By then, I would be isolated and you would be in an even more dangerous situation. I want to know if you'd leave me alone then!"

Hearing this question, Zhang Tie was stunned for a short while. Rubbing his face, the moment he wanted to reply, he heard Olina continue, "I want to listen to your true words!"

"True words?" Zhang Tie kept silent. He would not tell a lie to a woman whenever it was, even on the bed. It was his principle, "If that happened, if we could not fight those guys who want to kill you, I would escape together with you; in the worst scenario, we would leave Saint Herner Island!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's answer, the woman's eyes gleamed. She then continued to ask out of curiosity, "Why? Aren't you afraid of the troubles that I might bring to you? I might have lost everything by then and would not be able to pay you at all!"

This question made Zhang Tie a bit embarrassed. Even if he wanted to tell the truth, he didn't know what to say, because the truth was a story of a poor teenager's growth.

Thankfully, Olina didn't keep asking him. Seeing Gitta bringing his men over, the woman glanced at Zhang Tie's embarrassed face while a smile threatened to spread across her face. She then recovered her dignity and calmness again.

...

The group coming out of Bluesea Castle had already seen Olina and Zhang Tie after they left the castle hundreds of meters away. Everybody was then shocked as they hurriedly ran towards Olina...

At the sight of Olina, besides amazement, the chief guards relaxed at once, except for Crie, whose face turned pale as his body slightly shivered. 'Now that Ms. Olina has already arrived at the outside of the castle, why not enter? Why would she call them over there? Does she already know that...'

At that moment, not only Crie, even the other chief guards had thought of the same question.

Gitta walked towards Olina and murmured to her. Olina then instantly fixed her eyes onto Crie and said in a calm voice, "Crie, Gitta has told me what happened just now. I hadn't imagined that you are that loyal to me. Good, very good!"

Crie forcefully swallowed his saliva as he said stiffly, "It was merely my duty..."

"Madam, Gitta said that someone wanted to murder you tonight? Oh, where are the other guards?" Periv walked one step forward and asked loudly.

"We will talk about it later. Head back to Bluesea Castle first!"

"Madam, who's he? I feel a dangerous aura emanating from him!" Adeline had fixed her eyes onto Zhang Tie since she arrived here. Although this young and handsome man looked innocent, he felt very dangerous. At the first sight of Zhang Tie, Adeline who was sensitive to danger, felt the hairs on the back of her neck stand up at once. This feeling was similar to when she met the most dangerous beasts in the forest.

Adeline's words raised everybody else's attention onto Zhang Tie.

"This is Peter. From now on, he's my bodyguard. He enjoys the same treatment and privileges as Gitta in Bluesea Castle." Olina didn't explain too much about Zhang Tie's background; instead, she just declared her decision, which instantly showed her dignity as a lord. After that, she waved her hand. "Go back to Bluesea Castle now!"

With everybody's protection, Olina returned to Bluesea Castle. After entering the castle, Zhang Tie found that Adeline always kept her eyes on him while that young chief guard Ji Gang seemed to find him a bit repulsive instead of being hostile toward him. Gitta silently pointed at Crie as he looked at Zhang Tie and nodded solemnly. Zhang Tie then understood what happened...

Zhang Tie was really curious how would Olina deal with such a situation.

...

The main hall was very luxurious and magnificent. After returning to Bluesea Castle, the five chief guards were called in there by Olina.

In the hall, Olina sat on the main seat while the five chief guards were standing in front of her. As her bodyguard, Zhang Tie just stood on her left-hand side. Gitta had disappeared the moment he returned to the castle. Nobody knew where he was.

Olina then described how she was attacked that night in a very calm tone. After hearing that, the five chief guards were all stunned. Before they could ask any questions, Olina had already delivered a series of orders...

Chapter 387: Special Treatment

"Take my visiting card and take some guys to register a case in the City Defense Administration of Saint Herner Island. After that, go to the Ballas Clan's Greyrock Castle and call Aetna, Cilicis, and Mesa to Bluesea Castle tomorrow morning; tell them that I've got something important to negotiate with them. If they want to know the details, tell them about the events that occurred tonight..."

"Yes, madam!"

"Crie, I will present a certificate to you after a while. You then take a small team of guards to leave Saint Herner Island now for the Headquarter of Ewentra Bounty Hunters Association and increase the amount of reward by 1 million gold coins for hunting personnel on Magical Snake Island!" Olina's tone was mixed with a killing intent.

Crie slightly shivered all over as he lowered his head, "Yes, madam!"

"Adeline, go contact the seniors of your tribe, tell them that I've agreed to their conditions. Ballas Business Group will spare 20% of the airline business of Sinaila Island to you, but the number of barbarians in the Armed Silver Wing Guards of Ballas Business Group should be increased to 30% of its total population; meanwhile, an alternate captain of Silver Wing Guards will be assigned by your men, who will only answer to me!"

With the strange tattoos around her left eye and eyebrow,

Adeline raised her eyebrows once again and forcefully nodded.

"Periv, you should work hard these days. You will take over the responsibility for the safety of Bluesea Castle!"

"Trust me, madam, if any malicious guys slide into the castle, I will chop off my own head!" Periv patted his chest proudly.

"Ji Gang, go to the training camp of Silver Wing Guards to select two hundred more guards and train them to be qualified guards of the castle. I want to see its effect within two weeks! You will do it yourself first; after a couple of days, I will let Alexander help you!"

"Yes, madam!" Ji Gang bowed towards Olina elegantly.

"Well, I'm a bit tired and want to take a rest!"

In the whole process, Zhang Tie just watched aside silently. When Olina dispatched Crie to the headquarters of Ewentra Bounty Hunters Association to execute that task, Zhang Tie instantly felt that woman was very shrewd. In this way, she cleared the 'dangerous members' out of Bluesea Castle in a reasonable way and put Crie in a sticky position at once. Zhang Tie felt that Olina had included other deep meanings in this order but he couldn't figure them out right now.

After getting their own tasks, the five chief guards left; Gitta then returned to the hall.

"Madam, I've been told that Crie has let his subordinates to take over the extremely powerful defense equipment on the tower tonight; he even checked the running situation of those equipment in the power boiler room and engine room of the castle; at his request, the two main power boilers' nominal working pressure were both 30% higher than normal..."

As the lord of Jinwu Castle, Zhang Tie knew clearly what did it meant. It was the standard ready-for-war condition. Albeit higher nominal working pressure of the main boilers meant extremely great power of the defense weapons which were driven by the steam-driven boilers, yet it also meant less life expectancy of the boilers. Therefore, normally, the main power boilers' nominal working pressure was only maintained at a normally stable value; only in emergencies, or when checking the working condition and running performance of the boilers, would they adjust the main boilers to a heavy-burden running state.

"Gitta, do you want to revenge for those dead guards?"

"Of course, I even want to take my brothers to chop off the heads of those old douchebags of the Ballas Clan right now!" Gitta replied in a very righteous and furious way.

"You know that is impossible. If you want to revenge them, from now on, you have to hide your animosity. You should be happy!"

"Happy?" Gitta looked unimaginable, "Madam, you want me to be happy at this moment?"

"Yes, be happy!" Sitting on the main seat, the woman took a deep breath and revealed a brilliant smile as her breasts rose up. Sitting beside her, Zhang Tie couldn't help but peer at her plump boobs. As a result, his heart raced slightly.

"We were not ambushed by those guys from Magical Snake Island tonight; instead, we ambushed them. We lost over twenty people, yet they lost fifty to sixty people. We gained a complete victory; we even chopped off the head of an important figure from Magical Snake Island. Shouldn't we be happy about that?" Olina explained to Gitta.

"But, why?"

"Because, as long as we look happy, our enemy, who doesn't want to see us happy, will not feel safe. They will be curious as to why we are so happy. Thus, they will try their best to figure out the reason. Then, someone will get revenge for you!"

"Madam, you're making me confused!"

"Don't worry, you will understand it in a few days. Now, you only need to keep my words in mind. If some of your friends invite you for a drink and ask you about this, you just tell them that we long got the message and we prepared our own ambush tonight instead of being ambushed. This is a task for you. Am I clear?"

"Okay, I understand!" Gitta forcefully nodded.

"Gitta, take your men to deal with those dead guards. All the personnel who were killed tonight will be rewarded with five times that of the common standard!"

"Thanks, madam, their deaths are valuable!"

"I've already let Alexander register our case in the City Defense Administration. Given the speed of the City Defense Administration, it would take them at least two hours to arrive there. You and your men will have to arrive there first. After dealing with our men's dead bodies, you should have enough time to adjust the scene to make it look like we ambushed those killers. Is that ok?"

"It's not difficult. Although we were ambushed at the beginning, later, with the help of Peter, those killers looked like they were being ambushed. We only need to do some trivial adjustments to make everything look like we ambushed them!"

"I hope that only you, me, and Peter know about what Peter has done. As for what happened at that time, just let others guess about it!"

"Yes, madam!"

"You can leave now!"

Gitta then left, leaving only Zhang Tie and Olin in the whole main hall.

Zhang Tie then looked at her with a curious look, "Why not let others know what I did?"

"Because you've helped me so much; additionally, you will leave here sooner or later. As those guys from Magical Snake Island are all ruffians, I don't want to bring their hatred to you," Olina explained to Zhang Tie seriously.

Zhang Tie just watched her and didn't know what to say. Previously, he wanted to protect her; it was really out of his imagination that she'd start to protect him. As for the revenge from Magical Snake Island, Zhang Tie didn't consider it at all; Magical Snake Island was at most a killers' organization in this sea area. He had even dared to offend the Three-Eye Association, which was supported by demons. Of course, he would not care about having one more Magical Snake Island as his enemy. Additionally, if a LV 9 guy could gain a high position on Magical Snake Island, it indicated that the organization was not powerful at all. Furthermore, no matter how fast those people were, nobody could catch him up in the sea, and this place was very close to the sea. Therefore, he was not afraid of them at all.

Actually, even Zhang Tie had not realized that, with his growing fighting strength during the past year, he had met the greatest powers across the Waii Sub-Continent like the Norman Empire, Huaiyuan Palace, and Three-Eye Association which were far greater than common powers. Even the Zhen Clan in Heavens Cold City, which had a knight, was also a great power.

Being gradually influenced by this, whenever he met any more

powers or organizations, Zhang Tie would compare them with each other; as a result, he thought that some of the local powers were not threatening at all.

However, what Olina said brought a strange feeling to Zhang Tie.

"If you say so, I think that I should thank you. It feels a bit strange!" Zhang Tie rubbed his face.

Olina then revealed a smile as her beautiful cyan eyes started to gleam. "Now that you are going to stay with me and help me so much, I should be a bit considerate for you, right?"

"It feels like what friends should do!"

"Don't you feel that we are not friends now? Or would you prefer to be my savior and want me to treat you with a more respectful attitude? Am I not even qualified to look out for you?"

"No, I didn't mean that!" Zhang Tie felt a bit embarrassed then. This woman's words were too sharp, which really felt like being in Miss Daina's class.

"Alas, I know..." The woman showed a sorrowful face and then started to touch her enchanting face. "Do you feel that I'm too much older than you? Although I don't like to admit it, time flies, I'm 36 years old now. Not like those young girls at all, I'm old and look ugly and could even be your aunt. However, you are at most 18 years old. Do you feel that I'm not suitable to be your friend?"

"No, you're very beautiful and are one of the most beautiful and charming women I've ever seen. I don't feel that age is a problem at all!" Saying this, Zhang Tie peered at her plump boobs with an embarrassed look once again.

"Really?" The woman's eyes brightened up at once as her face look brilliant.

"Really, I wouldn't lie to a woman!"

"Thanks!" With a smile, Olina stood up from her chair. After that, she turned around and slightly lowered her body before kissing Zhang Tie's face. "In Ewentra, this is the highest reward from a woman to a man who praises her!"

At this moment, Zhan Tie watched that familiar yet strange beautiful face which was so close to him before glanced over that snow-white scenery and that black lace around her boobs below the collar of her skirt; meanwhile, he sniffed the nice fragrance from her body. This made Zhang Tie feel entering that same wet dream that he had experienced numerous times where he encountered Miss Daina...

In the wet dream, Miss Daina was so sexy just like this woman in front of him.

Not knowing whether it was an illusion or not, Zhang Tie felt that she had started to draw him in on the journey back; however, he finally couldn't stand such allure as he responded with the

direct response that a man should have at this moment.

That woman then sensitively lowered her head and looked at the raised tent between Zhang Tie's legs; after that, she straightened up before covered his mouth with her hand and started to giggle...

Zhang Tie's face blushed instantly.

No matter where and what local custom it was, if a man showed such a strong physiological impulsion in front of a woman, it would be a breach of etiquette.

"Pah... pah... pah..." Olina clapped her hands three times. When the sound was still resonating in the hall, a side door was pushed open and a 50-odd female steward whose hair was tied up entered. In an old-fashioned and conservatory black skirt, although quite old, she still looked like a marble statue with no defects at all; instead, she looked delicate and even a bit merciless.

"Madam Kate, please take Mr. Peter to the room No. 2 to take a good rest. Prepare a set of proper clothes for him; he's now my bodyguard and will live in Bluesea Castle for a while!"

"Yes, madam! Mr. Peter, please come with me!"

At this moment, Zhang Tie also felt a bit embarrassed in front of Olina. Like a young school student who had been caught doing something bad by teacher, he hurriedly left.

However, Zhang Tie had not imagined that room No. 2 was not in the outer castle but in the inner castle. From the main hall to the inner castle, Zhang Tie didn't even find a male servant in the inner castle, even the guards were female. All the women were watching Zhang Tie out of curiosity like

"Ms. Kate, are there any males here?" Zhang Tie couldn't help but ask that woman who was leading him with a candlestick in the front.

"Actually, since Ms. Olinia settled into Bluesea Castle, you are the first male to live in the inner castle!" The woman answered icily.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie's heart started to palpitate at once...

Chapter 388: Ballas Clan

Despite being the first man sleeping in the inner castle, Zhang Tie still stayed in room No. 2 quietly overnight no matter how heavily his heart pounded. Any young man encountering such a situation would have his fantasies run wild.

Before going to bed, Kate had some female servants measure Zhang Tie's body. After that, nobody else came in Zhang Tie's room over the night.

There was only a wall between room No. 2 and the room where Olina, the lord of Bluesea Castle lived while a door was opened on the wall. In this way, the two rooms were accessible to each other. It was very suitable for Zhang Tie to live in room No. 2 as Olina's bodyguard. If any emergencies were to occur, Zhang Tie would be able to enter her room as fast as possible.

As long as he had no health problems, Zhang Tie was always awake at 6:00 am due to his biological clock.

Lying on the bed, Zhang Tie stared at the ceiling. He felt it strange and incredibly stupid that he had promised a strange woman to be her bodyguard without any hesitation yesterday.

Because she looked beautiful or because she looked like Miss Daina?

If another woman encountered that situation yesterday or that woman looked very ugly or could not leave me any deep

impression, I'm not sure as to whether I would accept her request and be involved with so many troubles so easily!

As this was a very serious question, Zhang Tie tried his best to consider it when he was most clear-minded in the morning. However, even he started to despise himself when he got the answer——No!

If she was not that beautiful or didn't look like Miss Daina, Zhang Tie would at most save her from her would be killers or accompany her to a safe enough place before left. He would never do such a stupid thing. As a man who always had a plan, he would not choose to be involved in such a dispute which had nothing to do with him as his primary target here was to improve his fighting strength and to gain as more seven-strength fruits as possible.

After thinking it through, Zhang Tie mocked himself before letting out a deep sigh——I'm still a mortal, having not reached the level of immortals.

Donder said it was a male animal's instinct to display themselves in front of beautiful women. In a man's subconsciousness, they did this to gain the right to mate with beautiful women so as to keep and optimize their DNA.

Did I do that to gain the right to mate with Olina last night?'

With this whim, Zhang Tie felt a bit filthy. At the sight of the ever-firm steel mummy which raised up and caused a small hill on the quilt, Zhang Tie had to admit that that woman was especially

lethal to him.

That woman's nickname was "hot fox". If a woman could be that influential in the Ewentra Archipelago, she was definitely not an average woman.

"Are you a bad guy?" Zhang Tie opened his quilt and patted the relentless thing as he mumbled.

At this moment, that bad guy nodded sometimes. Zhang Tie then revealed an obscene smile...

After having went to the washroom, the relentless thing finally became docile. The moment Zhang Tie wanted to put on clothes, he remembered that his clothes had been taken away by some female servants last night. What was left in his room were only a double-carps waist and some personal belongings.

Zhang Tie then pulled down the rope of the bell to call servants in. In only about 20 seconds, he had heard knocks.

"Come in please!"

When the door was pushed open, 4 female servants with sweet looks walked in with many things before closing the door of his bedroom.

The 2 female servants in front were carrying a set of tidy clothes, shoes, and socks. As for the 2 female servants behind, one was

holding a basin of hot water while the other was holding a towel and something strange. It was Zhang Tie's first time seeing them. Each of them looked more than 20 years old. In Zhang Tie's opinion, they all had top looks and figures.

"Mr. Peter, here are your new clothes!"

"Fine." Zhang Tie nodded. Now that he had to stay here for a few days, his look as a pioneer would not be proper. When in Rome, do as the Romans do.

"Do you want to put it on now?" A female servant asked Zhang Tie.

"Yes!"

Soon after Zhang Tie replied, the female servants had surrounded him. One of them started to help him undo his buttons while the plumpy female servant who asked him directly knelt in front of Zhang Tie. She directly peeled off Zhang Tie's short pants, exposing his naked buttocks.

"Argh!" Zhang Tie shouted loudly at once. He hadn't imagined that they were that audacious. He hurriedly covered his mummy and asked in an embarrassed way, "What do you want?"

"We are helping you change clothes. Madam has told us, as long as you live in the inner castle, we will look after you like how we look after her. We will satisfy all of your demands and make you

feel at home." Kneeling down on the ground, that female servant raised her head and smiled at Zhang Tie.

Seeing that sweet smile and her plump boobs, Zhang Tie felt that bad thing became relentless again. Her gesture of kneeling down in front of him reminded him of those days in Blackhot City when he "fed pigeons" with the girls of the Rose Association.

Zhang Tie hardly moved his eyes away from that female servant's alluring lips, "Hmm...hmm...I will do it myself!"

Even in Jinwu Castle, he didn't request the female servants to serve him that considerably.

"How come that be! This is our job. Oh, Mr. Peter, can you lift your right foot so that I can help you take off your pants? If you cannot stand steadily, you can support yourself on my shoulder..." Saying this, the female servant had already moved Zhang Tie underwears to his ankles.

Zhang Tie could only lift his two feet one by another and allow that female servant to take off his pants. He would never move his hand away from his mummy at this moment. Because in only a few seconds, that relentless thing had already grown pretty grim. As a LV 7 fighter, of course he could stand steadily even for a whole day.

"Mr. Peter, can you straighten up your hands? I will take off your outer garment." Another charming female servant who was undoing his buttocks asked.

Hearing this, the 4 female servants glanced at Zhang Tie at the same time while they tried hard to not burst out in laughter.

Zhang Tie glanced at the 4 female women who were looking at him with strange looks and mumbled inside, 'F*ck, if you are not afraid of that, I won't fear anything then. You really think that I've not seen so many beauties before?' With this whim, Zhang Tie directly loosened his grip.

After the pressure on it was released, that relentless thing instantly sprung up like a furious long spear and pointed directly at the beautiful face of the girl who was kneeling down right in front of him while shaking slightly. It was even less than 15 cm away from her face.

"Argh!"

This time, the 4 female servants uttered a slight scream in unison. At the same time, their faces blushed slightly at once as they almost forgot what they were doing.

"Is that okay?" After moving his hands away, Zhang Tie asked. Then, the female servants recovered composure while the female servant hurriedly took off his outer garment. In a split second, Zhang Tie showed his muscles and perfect figure.

The 2 female servants holding a basin and 2 towels hurriedly started to clean up Zhang Tie's body. When one servant cleaned up his body with a wet hot towel, another one would instantly dry it

with the dry towel. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't feel cold or uncomfortable at all.

The 2 female servants moved so adroitly and audaciously that they soon cleaned up Zhang Tie all over, including Zhang Tie's toes and that relentless thing.

In the end, Zhang Tie directly closed his eyes. After recovering composure, Zhang Tie instantly felt that everything became smooth. Even he was naked, he still didn't feel embarrassed at all.

"It's over!" Several minutes later, Zhang Tie heard a voice before he opened his eyes.

Zhang Tie then glanced over himself and found he was wholly new. He was wearing a set of black knight's clothes which had a double line of buttons with golden laces. It looked both dignified and comfortable. His double-carps waist had also been put on by them. Now, he looked as carefree and handsome as a rich dandy.

The water that the female servants used to clean his body had been mixed with a special essence which smelt like tobacco. Sniffing this fragrance, Zhang Tie felt like steamed bread.

Watching him, the female servants' eyes radiated bright lights while their faces blushed.

"This set of clothes fits me well, thanks!" Zhang Tie nodded towards them.

"You're welcome. If madam sees you, she would be very happy!"

Zhang Tie shrugged. 'These female servants might have taken me as a boy toy who had some talents.' For such a misunderstanding, Zhang Tie didn't want to explain at all, instead, he just raised his nose and sniffed his sleeves. "What have you put in water, it smells so good!"

"That's a plant essence being extracted from dragon-blood tobacco leaves which only exist in the Ice and Snow Wilderness. It could clean up people's body and make them energetic. Besides, it could take good care of your skin. It's the best product for men." The female servant who was kneeling down in front of him answered.

"Hehe. It's still early now, I want to warm up in the training field in the castle, can I?"

"Madam has told us that you can do whatever you want in Bluesea Castle!"

...

Several minutes later, Zhang Tie arrived at the training field inside Bluesea Castle. At this moment, it was only a bit after 6:00 am. The faerie dragon star was still hanging in the eastern sky. According to the timetable of the castle, the guards would not start training until 7:00 am.

There were so many training instruments and weapons on the training field. Zhang Tie skimmed over the rows of weapons and chose a heavy sword which weighed about 20 kg before he started to practice.

Zhang Tie's training was very simple. After standing steadily, he would repeat the eight sword movements that he had learned on Hidden Dragon Island——splitting, hacking, poking, pricking, raising, rebounding, stirring up and pushing aside.

Strictly, Zhang Tie had not completed his compulsory cultivation courses on Hidden Dragon Island at all. In the past one year, even though Zhang Tie was talented and practicing hard, he still only finished the fundamental foot movements and shield defense skills. As for basic swordsmanship and basic archery, he had just started them. He had not accomplished 1 m times for each movement of fundamental swordsmanship. As for basic archery, Zhang Tie was absolutely a newbie——although he knew the concrete movements and strength, yet it would be a question of probability for him to hit the target if it was over 30 m away.

Thankfully, as he had awakened the ancestral bloodline——precise throwing skill, which could help him realize long-distance attack. Otherwise, he even felt shameless to tell others that he came from Hidden Dragon Palace.

After staying in the Hidden Dragon Palace for so long, although students in Hidden Dragon Palace were forbidden to talk about the ancestral bloodlines that they had awakened, Zhang Tie still had heard about some "half-opened secret"——over 50% of students in

Hidden Dragon Palace had awakened the most popular "archery affinity" as their first ancestral bloodline.

After awakening this ancestral bloodline, people could have a super high affinity and enlightenment about archery. As a result, they would improve their archery very fast. This ancestral bloodline was the foundation of the other powerful archery-related ancestral bloodlines. It was said that Lan Yunxi awakened the most powerful archery-related ancestral bloodline, which was terrifying as it could help her kill many opponents more powerful than herself.

As for the other 2 compulsory courses—flying skill and horsemanship, Zhang Tie had not started them yet.

Although he had exchanged for the secret knowledge of flying skill before leaving Hidden Dragon Island, he had not yet started to cultivate it. According to the requirement of this secret knowledge, people were not able to cultivate flying skill until LV 8 as this skill required one to release strength through the spine and further development of physical potentials. As for horsemanship, Zhang Tie didn't think it was necessary to learn it recently. Therefore, as long as he was free, Zhang Tie would cultivate his basic swordsmanship.

Although the training conditions in Bluesea Castle could not match that of Hidden Dragon Island, the principles and movements were the same. Therefore, Zhang Tie kept repeating the 8 movements of swordsmanship.

Now, it would take Zhang Tie about 2 seconds to complete the 8

movements. His target was to finish them in 1 second before he reached LV 8. Zhang Tie was told that Yu Xiaotian, whose nickname was Soaring Heavens Sword, who ranked 3rd on the Hidden Dragon Fighting Strength List could complete the 8 movements 4 times in 1 second. However, it was said that the first ancestral bloodline that Yu Xiaotian awakened was also "sword affinity" which had a deep potential for development.

'Why haven't I awakened "spear affinity" at the beginning?' Zhang Tie didn't understand it until now. As for the throwing-related ancestral bloodline that he awakened last night, Zhang Tie didn't remember its name. He only faintly felt that he had awakened all the ancestral bloodlines concerning precise throwing.

He knew that his precise throwing skill could still be further evolved. However, he didn't know whether that bloodline that he awakened last night could be further evolved or not. Zhang Tie could not find an expert to guide him after leaving Hidden Dragon Palace. Everything was had its pros and cons. If he wanted freedom, he was doomed to fumble alone on the way of cultivation.

After Zhang Tie practiced for over 20 minutes alone on the training field, Gitta arrived. Seeing Zhang Tie cultivating himself, Gitta didn't speak.

Zhang Tie's movements looked simple, boring, while being not powerful at all. Albeit knowing those basic swordsmanship movements, Gitta didn't find anything special from them.

"Do you usually practice in that way?" After watching for a short while, Gitta finally uttered.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie put away his sword and stopped.

"Not exactly, but this is a very important training item."

"Unbelievable, based on your swordsmanship last night, how come you still practice these basic movements?" Gitta looked amazed.

'Swordsmanship? I know what motherf*cking swordsmanship? Although there's a lot of secret knowledge about swordsmanship in the Secret Knowledge Pavilion of Hidden Dragon Palace, he I didn't exchange for anyone of them. As I've not passed the test of basic swordsmanship, I'm not qualified to exchange for that secret knowledge over there. Last night, I was only using some hand gestures of the iron-blood fist with the help of a long sword. That sword was just the extension of my palm and my fingers. Essentially, I was using iron-blood fist. Unless I met a powerhouse who had also enlightened the one step, one scenery situation of iron-blood fist last night, others could not figure out the secret of my movements.'

Of course, Zhang Tie mumbled inside.

"The more frequently you practice the basic skills, the better. There's an old saying in eastern continent, 'the secret of any skill lies in proficiency'" Zhang Tie pretended to be very serious.

"The secret of any kill lies in proficiency..." Hearing this, Gitta became stunned at once before frowned and mumbled repetitively. After repeating it 3-4 times, his frowns instantly disappeared as he burst out an exciting and enlightening expression, "Thank you, I finally understand what I lack!"

With a faint smile, Zhang Tie's heart pounded, 'If you become an idiot by always practicing such basic movements, later on, don't blame me. There's another old Chinese saying, 'Don't attempt to drill a hole on the tip of a hole'. Even if you drill a hole on it, it's still useless.'

Seeing Gitta wanting to ask another question, Zhang Tie hurriedly changed the topic. By now, except for iron-blood fist and precise throwing skill, he could rarely show anything more powerful. He was not qualified to teach others at all. Additionally, he didn't need to explain precise-throwing skill and iron-blood fist to Gitta as the first one was formed by awakening his ancestral bloodline. As for the iron-blood fist, he didn't know how he had made it even till present. As Gitta was simple and honest, Zhang Tie liked him, so he didn't want to cheat him.

"Oh, how about the task that Ms. Olina had let you do last night?"

Zhang Tie knew that since he went to bed last night, many people in the Bluesea Castle didn't sleep at all, instead, they were running like machines. As Zhang Tie's task was to protect that woman, he didn't care about the other things. Additionally, that woman had her own decisions facing such an event. From the series of decisions that she had made since she came back to Bluesea Castle last night, Zhang Tie had realized this point.

"We've dealt with the dead bodies of our guards according to the order of madam. We lost 22 guards, yet they lost 67 killers. It seems that we've ambushed them and gained a complete victory!" Not until then Zhang Tie still didn't understand why Ms. Gitta would let him do that.

"Oh, Gitta, can you tell me what happened between the Ballas Clan and madam?" Zhang Tie instinctively felt that there was a sophisticated dispute between that woman and the Ballas Clan. She was the chairman of Ballas Business Group, yet those members of the Ballas Clan wanted to kill her. This felt weird.

Gitta hesitated for a short while.

"Is it inconvenient for you to mention it?"

"No, nothing inconvenient at all. Although the madam doesn't like us talking about the Ballas Clan, I still want to say it. Those Ballas clansmen are just shameless b*stards. It's the biggest mistake that madam has made in her life. She treats them too well!" Gitta said furiously as he waved his fist fiercely.

"If you are free, can you tell me about the details so that I could make an early judgment about the possible coming dangers?"

"Fine!" Gitta let out a long sigh...

...

18 years ago, the alleged Ballas Bussiness Group and Ballas Clan didn't exist on Saint Herner Island at all. At that time, there was only one agency called Ballas on Saint Herner Island. It was too small and was hardly managing a wood business.

The male boss of the company was a young man called Shire who came here to develop his undertaking. He had a beautiful wife called Olina.

Ballas was lucky because he had such a beautiful wife. He was unlucky as he had died in the 2nd year after getting married to his wife, leaving her wife who had been pregnant 2 months. For the business of the company, Ballas went to the Ice and Snow Wildness. However, he was attacked by bandits. Besides losing all the payment for goods, he was also heavily wounded. Soon after returning to Saint Herner Island, he died.

Before he died, he still owed a great amount of money. Except for the wood agency called "Ballas Company" which was illiquid, he left not even one copper coin.

Therefore, the debtees asked his wife who was still pregnant for debts. Olina, whose belly gradually bulged gritted her teeth and started to take over that completely illiquid Ballas Company for her late husband and her baby. She then started to learn all the skills to manage the company and to do the wood business in order to pay off the debts and strive for a bright future for her baby.

Facing the dilemma, she displayed her exceptional perseverance,

wisdom and business talent.

Only after 4 months, the Ballas Company managed by Olina had paid off the huge amount of debt owed by her ex-husband. Not only this, she made a great sum of money. Right at the same time, because of working overload, she had a miscarriage.

In only half a year, she had experienced so many difficulties, however, she was not beaten by them. After losing her baby, she became more ambitious and started to manage Ballas Company carefully.

3 years later, Ballas Company was changed to Ballas Commercial Organization and started to grow rapidly in the commercial world of Saint Herner Island.

6 years later, Ballas Commercial Organization was changed to Ballas Business Group and started to own its own armed forces and fleet of ships. From then on, it had begun to be famous across the Ewentra Archipelago.

On the 7th year, some relatives of Olina's ex-husband's family came to Saint Herner Island for Olina's shelter. Olina took them in, causing the recent situation...

Now, Ballas Business Group had become well-known across Saint Herner Island. Benefited from this, those Ballas Clan's relatives being taken in by Olina gradually grew arrogant...

"When they came to Saint Herner Island, madam took them out of kindness and arranged positions for them in the business group at their requests. In the early a couple of years, they were very serious and honest; however, they gradually changed. At the beginning, they considered themselves as madam's family members and relatives; gradually, madam became their younger generation; then, because they surname Ballas and have stayed in Ballas Business Group for a long time, they felt that they should have shares of this business group; finally, last night, they might think that the whole Ballas Business Group should belong to them while madam became the outsider..." Saying this, Gitta forcefully punched his own palm.

"Hmm, I understand!" Zhang Tie also sighed with feelings. Because of her mercy and tolerance to her ex-husband's relatives, she had raised them into fierce wild beasts. Perhaps in those b*stards' heart, a lonely woman had become their last obstacle to occupy the Ballas Business Group. The woman should have realized that.

After Gitta said that, the day was going to break. Thus, Zhang Tie and Gitta got the message at the same time——after being told that Olina was assassinated last night, those b*stards of Ballas Clan finally arrived at Bluesea Castle after one night.

...

Chapter 389: Poison or Cheese

Hearing that the Ballas clansmen arrived, Zhang Tie followed Gitta out to have a look at those freak b*stards. Before arriving at the gate of the castle, Zhang Tie had already heard a hoarse voice drifting from outside.

"B*stard, do you know who I am? These are my guards. Why do you allow them to put down their weapons before entering Bluesea Castle. Who grant you this right. Where's Olina? Call her out! We need a reason. Why Ballas Clansmen have to face such a rude treatment in the territory of Ballas Business Group?"

The moment he finished talking, the others outside the castle had started to kick up a row.

"That's it. Why do you force us to put down the weapons and don't allow us in?"

"Go back to Greyrock Castle! I've told you that they don't like us..."

"I was told that that woman faced an assassination last night. She sent people to notify us. Therefore, we come here to see her. However, she stopped us from entering the castle! What does she mean?"

Hearing this, Periv roared, "This is the rule of Bluesea Castle. This father doesn't care who are you! Have you the motherf*cker seen any castle allow hundreds of fully-armored soldiers in with

weapons? If you want to enter the castle, you have to put down your weapons. Additionally, only 10 of you are allowed in at most! The others have to stay outside the castle!"

Soon after Periv finished his words, he had heard swears outside the castle at once.

Zhang Tie and Gitta didn't come to the outside of the castle to have a closer look, instead, they came to the tower of the castle and looked downward through the shooting mouth of a bolt mound.

The suspension bridge had been put down; however, at this moment, a team of over 200 guards was crowding between the suspension bridge and the gate of the castle. 3 of them in brilliant clothes were riding on 3 exceptionally handsome horses and looked at the guards of Bluesea Castle outside the castle. They didn't even get off their horses before entering the castle, which showed their arrogant and domineering looks.

Standing in the tower of the castle, Zhang Tie could see clearly that the 3 men were all old. One among them had pale hair They had different frames. One fat, one thin and the rest was normal in weight yet was evidently baldheaded.

...

"Are they the b*stards of the Ballas Clan?" Zhang Tie turned around and asked Gitta.

Gitta nodded as he said furiously. "The fat one in the middle is Cilicis, the thin one on his left is Mesa while that baldheaded one is called Aetna. They were Shire's uncles and small figures on Charthe Island previously. However, after arriving at Saint Herner Island, they gradually forgot who they were."

"Do they live in Greyrock Castle? Who else does the Ballas Clan have on the island?"

"Madam was forced to build Greyrock Castle for them 4 years ago. Previously, they directly lived in Bluesea Castle. They had more than 10 people, including their kids and wives; however, some of these d**chebags wanted to take madam's ruling position, therefore madam let them move away. After that, these people pretended to be pitiful across the Saint Herner City. They even spoke ill of madam. Therefore, madam had to build Greyrock Castle for them and arranged them in!"

"Did they also take so many people to Bluesea Castle before?"

"Nope, at most 10!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie understood at once, 'The 3 guys had a guilty conscience; otherwise, they didn't need to take so many people in the daytime. However, they must have thought up a good reason for this—Now that Olina encountered an assassination, it was reasonable for them to be cautious outside by taking more guards as the relatives of Olina.

"It would be much more convenient if we could directly deal with

them down there!" Zhang Tie sighed as he touched the steam-driven defensive ballista on his side.

"I also think so, but if we do that, madam's reputation would be ruined." Gitta answered with a look of agreement.

After a mess, those b*stards found that Periv had a determined attitude while nobody turned on the defense equipment on the wall and it was peaceful as usual inside the castle, they finally recovered composure. After a short negotiation, the 3 guys on the horses had agreed to take only 7 guards inside the castle.

...

Olina received the 3 people in the Hall of Deliberation of the castle. As her "bodyguard", Zhang Tie just stood behind Olina lazily with Gitta and watched the 3 b*stards walking inside.

"Olina, we were told that you were attacked last night. Are you all right?"

The moment they entered the Hall of Deliberation, Cilicis had already shouted loudly in a cunning and exaggerating way like being afraid of not being heard.

When in Huaiyuan Prefecture, Zhang Tie had seen too many people wearing expensive clothes made of eastern silk. However, he had not seen such tasteless dress collocations. The moment they came in, Zhang Tie almost thought they were 3 colorful showing

stands of silk cloth.

"I'm okay. After what happened last night, I became more clear-minded and thought through many things!" Olina said with a smile so kindly and calmly like she was not influenced by what happened last night at all.

"Argh, what have you seen through?" Hearing her words, baldheaded Aetna asked nervously. Soon after he asked, Mesa the thinner guy hurriedly pulled his sleeve. Realizing it, Aetna hurriedly coughed several times to cover his previous tension and malpractice. "Oh, I mean what have you thought through? Are you stimulated by that or something else!"

Seeing such an awkward performance, which almost revealed his true intentions, Zhang Tie couldn't help but show the white of his eyes. 'Such idiots wanted to rule the Ballas Business Group? Are you motherf*cking kidding me? No wonder Olina could tolerate them for such a long time. They had been too foolish that they could even make people loosen their vigilance. Additionally, I thought Olina didn't expect that these b*stards could be that vicious.'

Olina then sighed. "I'm thinking that if I was just killed last night, the whole Ballas Business Group would be dangerous. I have no relatives around me anymore, except you. I think that actually, you should help me manage some affairs of Ballas Business Group. These years I've been putting so much time on the affairs of Ballas Business Group. I think I should spare some more time to enjoy life. With so much money, if I don't consume them, it would be a great pity!"

Hearing this, the 3 men were all stunned. From their expressions, Zhang Tie could see they were surprised that they didn't meet any dangers but good things.

Aetna was so happy that he almost jumped up/ "It should have long been that. No matter what, Ballas Business Group should be shared more by Ballas Clansmen!"

"Cough..cough..." Mesa coughed as he glanced at Cicilis before asking Olina, "Do you mean that?"

"Yes, I plan to let you 3 enter the board of directors of the business group to see the concrete operations of the top management of the business group. With rich experiences, you can definitely provide necessary opinions for me on the board of directors. There are some positions in vacancy. Cilicis, I want to let your son take the position of the representative of Ballas Business Group's Continental Agency as you had recommended."

The suspicious expression of Cilicis instantly disappeared after Cilicis heard Olina's words. At the same time, he pretended to be modest and hesitated, "This, this is not proper..."

"I've already decided. I called you here to declare this. As I've thought it through, therefore, I just let it go." Olina's pun could only be figured out by Zhang Tie and Gitta. Although Gitta still didn't understand it too much, Zhang Tie completely understood it at once as he was shocked inside. At this time, he finally understood what Olina said last night. She was really killing people

without spilling blood.

"What else?"

"Hmm, one more. I planned to visit the head of Bell Clan today and sent him a gift so as to negotiate with Bell Clan on how to establish new settlements in the central part of Saint Herner Island. However, after what happened last night, I want to have a rest in the castle today. When you go back to Greyrock Castle, please visit the head of Bell Clan on my behalf."

"No problem!" At this moment, the 3 people had been extremely joyful that they even jumped high; Hearing that Olina assigned them such a "brilliant" task, they hurriedly nodded.

"Alexander!" Olina shouted before Alexander walked into the Hall of Deliberation with a delicate square box whose length of a side was 33.3 cm and stood beside her seriously.

With a smile on her face, Olina looked kinder, however, Zhang Tie could sense a merciless intention flashing through her body. "I will let Alexander go with you with the gift. I prepared the gift for the head of Bell Clan, he will like it. There's also a letter in it. You can leave now if you have nothing else to deal with."

After Alexander and the 3 people of the Ballas Clan left, Olina made a gesture to let Gitta leave too, leaving Zhang Tie and herself in the Hall of Deliberation. At the sight of this woman, Zhang Tie felt she was very fatigued and had a sense of relief.

"Is the gift in the box that heads you had Gitta cut off last night?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Hmm, old Bell's 2 sons were killed by those people on Magical Snake Island. As for all the top managers of Magical Snake Island, he has done a lot of investigating. Additionally, he is offering rewards for their heads. Old Bell definitely know who he was!"

Zhang Tie then kept silent for a while. Watching that woman in front of him with sophisticated expressions, he realized that this woman was so considerable. Her capabilities were out of his imagination. If those killers on Magical Snake Island were truly hired by the 3 people of Ballas Clan, she did this to make them jump into the fire pit themselves.

She had Gitta rearrange the battle scene and kept secret what happened last night. After that, she abnormally awarded those guys of the Ballas Clan and let them send this killers' head to the Bell Clan. After combining the above 3 pieces of information, those people on Magical Snake Island must have reached a conclusion that their people were screwed over by the Ballas Clanmen. On one hand, Ballas Clanmen pretended to assassinate Olina by hiring killers from Magical Snake Island, on the other hand, they notified Olina in advance and saved her at the critical moment. They did this to make Olina set a trap to kill all the killers and to take an important figure's head as a chip to cooperate with the Bell Clan...

When a killers organization met this situation, they would not hate Olina. Instead, they would hate the Ballas Clan who hired their men so much. As a result, those on Magical Snake Island would definitely kill them as a result.

Not to mention those idiots of the Ballas Clan who didn't understand Olina's plan. Even if they figured it out, they could not refuse it either, because this woman's arrangement looked reasonable.

Not until then did Zhang Tie realized how this woman who looked weak could establish such a great undertaking alone on this island.

Olina turned around and looked at Zhang Tie. From Zhang Tie's expression, she realized that Zhang Tie had already understood what she thought. She then asked him, "Am I bad?"

Zhang Tie waved his head. "Have you thought that what if Ballas Clansmen didn't really orchestrate the assassination?"

"If so, everything I've promised them today would be their rewards. I will take it as my compensation for them. They would not lose anything then. Additionally, if they were not involved in it, those people on Magical Snake Island would not look to them for vengeance."

Zhang Tie became dumb at once. For those of the Ballas Clansmen, if they did it, today's reward would be a poison covered with honey. If not, today's reward would be cheese covered with honey. It depended on whether they had even a bit good intention towards this woman.

'Does such a woman need my protection?' Zhang Tie started to be

suspicious. Thinking of this, he instantly felt relaxed. The alleged weakness might be the woman's best camouflage.

"Previously, I thought I might stay for a while on Saint Herner Island. However, given from the current situation, I might leave here soon, because I find that you are more sensitive to your crises than me."

"Am I that disgusting or men don't like women with such a train of thought." Olina sighed as she revealed a sorrowful look.

"I have to go to the Ice and Snow Wildness. Additionally, I find that if I stayed here too long, I might be eaten by you, including my skin and bones."

Hearing his reply, Olina burst out with charming giggles at once...

Chapter 390: A Person From Magical Snake Island

Obviously, the trip ticket from the Pier No.7 of Saint Herner Harbor to Ice and Snow Wildness was wasted. In order to comply with his promise to Olina, Zhang Tie stayed on Saint Herner Island a few more days.

These days, after encountering the assassination attempt, Olina spent most of her time in Bluesea Castle, so did Zhang Tie. During this period, Zhang Tie only went out one time to buy a shipping ticket leaving Saint Herner Island on August 5th.

The reason that Zhang Tie chose to leave on August 5th was because some powerhouses of the barbarians would arrive at Bluesea Castle on August 4th from Sinaira Island. Sinaira Island was the biggest island in the Ewentra Archipelago. It covered over 180,000 square kilometers. With dense forests, it gathered barbarians and pirates in the sea area in the north of Waii Sub-continent.

Now, Adeline, who was beside Olina and those female fighters in the castle all came from the powerful barbarian tribe on Sinairi Island. The barbarian tribe and Olina always had reliable cooperation. After this event, Olina had Adeline pass a message about an agreement that she had reached with the barbarians tribe previously. According to that agreement, Adra Island to protect Olina.

Adeline's tribe would at least assign 2 "truly powerful" fighters and a barbarian shaman to protect Olina.

According to Adeline, the "truly powerful" fighters assigned by barbarians tribe were at least LV 10 fighters. They might even be a master fighter or a great master fighter. Additionally, barbarian shaman's powerful sensing ability towards dangers were also well-known across the Ewentra Archipelago.

With the assistance of such powerhouses, Zhang Tie knew that his status as her "bodyguard" would retire gloriously. What made Zhang Tie more reassured was that the powerhouses and shamen assigned by Adeline's tribe were all women. Adeline's tribe was centered on matrilineal society and goddess worship which accounted for a great part of the barbarian tribe. In this tribe, women were the most privileged and powerful ones instead of men.

Most women were not ambitious. Additionally, they were more loyal to undertakings and work than men. Zhang Tie thought that this might be why Olina trusted them. Of course, Olina, the able woman might have a deep relationship with that barbarians tribe ruled by females like Adeline.

Olina didn't leave her castle for a few days. However, there were always people going to Bluesea Castle to visit her. As a result, many affairs regarding the Ballas Business Group were dealt with in Bluesea Castle directly. Zhang Tie also felt free. Besides eating and drinking, he also practiced his fighting skills. Therefore, in only a few days, Zhang Tie, as the bodyguard of Olina, was already getting along well with the chief guards and most of the guards.

Zhang Tie was very easygoing. When he was free, he used to train

together with the guards on the training field and played jokes with them. Therefore, in a short time, everybody in the castle had fallen in love with this handsome teenager.

Of course, those who liked Zhang Tie most were those female servants who always served him these days. They used to serve Olin, however, after Zhang Tie lived in room No. 2, Olin had assigned them to serve Zhang Tie.

At the beginning, whether it was changing clothes or taking bath in the evening, those female servants all performed very seriously. Gradually, after a couple of days, they had grown increasingly audacious and started to tease Zhang Tie, always causing Zhang Tie to become very excited.

Last night, when Zhang Tie was taking a bath, the servants walked into the bathroom naked and expressed that they would help Zhang Tie take the bath. In less than 2 minutes after they started touching Zhang Tie's body, their naughty little golden fish had already started to swim across Zhang Tie's body. Everything then happened naturally.

...

Early on the morning of August 4th, Zhang Tie woke up from those women's crossed limbs. After what happened last night, Zhang Tie now felt pretty refreshed. After slightly moving away the snow-white limbs and thighs from his body, Zhang Tie rubbed the 2 pairs of plumpy flesh balls that he loved so much last night beside his head, Zhang Tie then got off the bed. After putting on a night-robe, Zhang Tie sat on the chair calmly beside his bed and

started to appreciate the beautiful scenery on the bed.

Since that week when he messed with the girls of the Rose Association and Beverly, Pandora, Alice, Zhang Tie had been fascinated by sitting beside the bed calmly and watching a number of women lying on the bed lazily and sluggishly. This feeling intensified Zhang Tie's sense of achievement. Whenever he watched similar scenery, he would look like a general who had won a battle and was making an inspection tour towards the battlefield to see his captives.

The inside of the room smelt weird. Under the dim light, this smell felt more extravagant. The delicate curves of those female servants were looming under the thin bed sheet. Because of the fierce battle on bed last night, they were too fatigued and were still in a deep sleep.

Watching that wall facing the big bed, a thought came to Zhang Tie's mind. 'Last night, those servants and I were so crazy that their screams and groans might have been heard outside the corridor. Olin who was sleeping in the neighboring room should have heard that! She should have heard it.'

With this thought, Zhang Tie felt so excited and evil inside. After thinking about for a while on the chair, Zhang Tie watched the 4 women lying on the bed again. He then smiled until he realized that he hadn't asked their names although having been familiar with them for a few days. Whether it was a bit too dissolute to sleep with some girls whose names were even unknown? Zhang Tie thought that he might have been as lascivious as described by Hista.

‘Is this the payment given by that woman? Hehe, although it was not a great treasure, it truly feels nice although it was a bit too lascivious...

I will be leaving tomorrow, it doesn't seem too bad to create such a memory before departing.’

...

After putting on some clothes and cleaning up, Zhang Tie arrived at the training field as usual. Before the first sun light arrived, he had already started to cultivate his fundamental swordsmanship.

The rapid sound of horse hoofs broke the tranquility of Bluesea Castle at dawn...

Before he practiced for a while on the training field, Zhang Tie had already heard the sound of horse hoofs outside the castle. Although it was not loud, it was very resonant. Thus, someone started to shout loudly outside the castle with a flurried voice. "Hurry up, put down the suspension bridge, I will to see Mrs. Olin, something happened in Greyrock Castle!"

...

In a few minutes, all the influential figures in Bluesea Castle gathered in the Hall of Deliberation, even Olin had been woken up.

When Zhang Tie saw Olina, he felt Olina's eyes turned a bit red. At the sight of Zhang Tie, she stared at him deeply.

Something truly happened in Greyrock Castle. Last night, 19 members of the Ballas Clan living in Greyrock Castle had their heads chopped off. This assassination happened silently. It wasn't until this morning that the servants in the castle found something was wrong. The guards in the castle also became [as flurried as a fly without head](#). Finally, someone thought about notifying Bluesea Castle.

Nominally, the whole Greyrock Castle still belonged to the Ballas Business Group. After the Ballas Clan members were killed, the Greyrock Castle could not even be sustained for 1 day longer without the support of Bluesea Castle.

Hearing this news, all the people in Bluesea Castle were in a short silence.

At this moment, Zhang Tie was watching the woman with a sophisticated look. He knew that the Ballas Clan was finally buried by this woman due to their own greed and foolish behaviors. After feeling like they had been screwed by the Ballas Clan, Magical Snake Island as a whole was driven mad and finally carried out their revenge in the shortest period.

Hearing this news, Olina closed her eyes as she looked a bit sorrowful while appearing to carry a sense of relief. After a long while, Olina finally opened her eyes.

"Do you know how killers infiltrated Greyrock Castle?" Sitting on the main seat, the woman asked the messenger in a calm voice.

"No...we don't. All the defense facilities in Greyrock Castle were normal last night!"

"Was there any guard or someone else missing in Greyrock Castle this morning?"

Hearing this question, the messenger looked at Olina with a surprised look. "One guard disappeared!"

Zhang Tie immediately understood what happened. That disappearing guard must be the very killer or the betrayer who let the killers in before escaping. His status as a guard must be fake.

Right then, a guard entered the Hall of Deliberation and murmured beside Periv's ears. The moment Periv heard that guard's words, he instantly raised his eyebrows.

"Periv, what's up?" Olina asked.

"Someone is outside the castle. He said he had a gift for you, my madam. The guard in the castle let him to show the gift so as to check it, yet that man insisted on handing this gift to you himself. Additionally, he has something to tell you."

"Let him in then. Bring him in the Hall of Deliberation! I want to see what gift he has brought to me." Olina said calmly.

"Madam!" Gitta stood up at once and wanted to stop that, "It's too dangerous! I need to take a look outside first!"

"This is Bluesea Castle. Although that person dares to come here alone, why would I not dare to see him with you on my side?"

Hearing this, everybody in the Hall of Deliberation raised their chests, including Zhang Tie. At the same time, Zhang Tie sighed inside, 'This woman is really sharp!'

"What if he's a killer..." Gitta still wanted to argue.

"If all the killers on Magical Snake Island were that brave, it would not be called [Magical Snake Island](#)!"

Gitta then didn't speak any more. Olina then made a gesture to let Periv bring in that person.

That person following Periv in looked tough with a fat face. Raising his head, he looked pretty aggressive. With a case in hand, the moment he entered the Hall of Deliberation, he had glanced over everybody else. As Zhang Tie looked young, that man soon moved his eyes away from Zhang Tie like how he treated a toyboy. In a contrast, he observed Gitta and Adeline for a longer time. When he focused on Olina, a wild wolf-like greedy light and a obscene smile appeared on his face. He then licked his lips.

This guy had a special personality of fighters. He must have a higher fighting level. Besides Zhang Tie and Olina across the Hall of Deliberation, all the others looked depressive, furious and wanted to charge at him.

As he dared to glance over Olina so rudely in the public, it fully indicated that he despised the others.

"You are Olina, the chairman of Ballas Business Group, the charming fox of Saint Herner Island?" Before the others asked him, he had already asked abruptly.

Right, I'm Olina!" The female owner of the castle answered calmly.

"Heh...heh...truly nice. You look good, no wonder Phonex could be screwed by you!"

Hearing this, Zhang Tie instantly knew his status.

"You are from Magical Snake Island?" Olina asked.

"Right!" He raised his head and answered.

The moment he replied, the sound of blades being pulled out of the sheaths drifted across the Hall of Deliberation. Olina raised her hand to stop those people whose eyes had already turned red.

"I heard you had something for gift me?"

That man instantly threw that case onto the ground while a head with a pair of widening flurried eyes and a brass cylinder with a document inside rolled out of the case and stopped beside Zhang Tie's feet.

The head belonged to Crie, that chief guard who left Bluesea Castle a few days ago while that brass cylinder with a document inside must be the letter of authorization that Olina had Crie to give it to the head of Bell Clan.

Lowering his head, Zhang Tie watched that head with still a painful look before sighing inside, 'This man might be an able man, yet he's just an idiot.' Olina was obviously sending him to the hell, yet he truly went there. Did he still want to be awarded an influential position in Bluesea Castle when he came back?

"I heard you sent Phonex's head to that old guy in Bell Clan a few days ago. After hearing that, our boss also decided to send you a gift. How about it? Do you like it?"

...

A fly without head truly could still fly for a short while, yet in a flurried way.

Magical Snake Island indicated that killers there were always as cunning and timid as snakes.

Chapter 391: Shoulder the Responsibility

The alleged Magical Snake Island was not the most powerful one among the numerous powers across Ewentra Archipelago yet it was definitely the most infamous organization. When they boarded a ship, they would be pirates. When they disembarked, they would be bandits. As long as others could afford them, they would always do some part-time jobs as an organization of killers. They might be more adapted to fight other dark powers.

If in Jinyun Country or Norman Empire, such an organization would have long been swept by the other forces and organizations in 1 day. However, they lived pretty well in the Ewentra Archipelago.

Before meeting the guys from Magical Snake Island, Zhang Tie had not imagined that an organization of killers and pirates could be that unscrupulous. After killing the opponent's man, they even dared to send the head back.

If not being that unscrupulous or ignoring the men in Bluesea Castle to a certain degree, he would never dare to do that.

Everybody in Bluesea Castle were impulsive to launch an attack, the first one was Adeline.

With a flash of a red shadow, Adeline had already rushed up, causing a air-breaking sound from her short spears.

It was Zhang Tie's first time seeing a female barbarian fighter

launch an attack in the castle. The moment she moved Zhang Tie instantly judged that Adeline had already reached LV 8 like Gitta.

Barbarians' fighting skills were fierce, direct and swift. Adeline was very good at using her short spears with great power. The moment she moved, the area within 5 meters was filled with her flashing shadows.

That guy who sent the head here also didn't look weak. He was not flurried at all. Given his performance, he was even much powerful than Adeline. After 5 or 6 movements, that man punched towards Adeline's breasts. Adeline put her short spears horizontally to block it. He then directly boomed onto Adeline's short spears, sending Adeline flying back in the air at once.

Adeline kept flying back over 10 meters before she touched the wall with her foot tip and rebounded back.

The moment Adeline was boomed away by that man, the other men all roared and intended to rush forward.

"Stop!" Olina's voice sounded timely.

Hearing this order, even Gitta, Peri widely opened their eyes and gasped like old oxes, they also stopped at once. Adeline, who wanted to charge back also stopped her footsteps. Instead, she pointed at that person with the short spears. Behind Adeline, a great number of female barbarian fighters had already taken out of their short spears and aimed at that man, intending to throw their spears towards him.

However, with arms crossed, that man just watched the surrounding people with a contemptuous sneer. "Do you want to defeat me using numbers? Go ahead then. But don't blame me for not giving you a heads up—I'm not here for killing, but I don't mind killing some of you!"

"Even if you are LV 9, do you think that you could survive here?" Adeline also put it bluntly.

"If I was killed here, all the people in Bluesea Castle have to accompany me in death. Although we Magical Snake Island were not good at other things, we are always good at killing people." That guy added with his nasal holes facing the sky. "You also know about our power. We can easily sweep such a tiny Bluesea Castle!"

"I think you are not here to show your fighting skills. Just tell us, what do you want? By the way, I'm very satisfied with this gift. Thanks for killing a traitor of Bluesea Castle!" Olina smiled as she glanced at that head on the ground.

"Traitor?" Hearing this, the guy from Magical Snake Island became stunned for a short while.

"Don't you know that? This guy was bribed by someone several days ago and wanted to kill me on my way to Bluesea Castle. Therefore, I sent him away. Alas, I almost forgot this..." Olina fondled her forehead. "Those who employed you might not fully believe in your real strength, therefore, they bribed another

person in Bluesea Castle as an alternate. I'm afraid they didn't tell you about it."

After gazing at Olina for a while, that guy found she was not telling a lie. The guy being killed by Magical Snake Island seemed to be fully within her expectations. Therefore, he was stunned slightly and became slightly kind.

"What a charming fox. You are right. I'm here not for showing off my fighting strength, but for negotiating with Bluesea Castle on behalf of Magical Snake Island."

"Negotiation?" Olina frowned her forehead.

"Right, negotiation. According to the intentions of our boss Bellus, the debt between Magical Snake Island and Bluesea Castle is cleared off now. At the beginning, those b*stards who hired us to kill you had been swept by us. The employment between us had been canceled off, I will not find you trouble from then on. We will not find trouble with you from now on. You'd better not have your men go to the Headquarter of Rewarded Hunters Association anymore. We believe that even though Ballas Business Group could spend 1 million gold coins, it was still not a small expenditure for you. If you really drive us mad, we would carry out revenge at any price. By then, money won't work, either."

After thinking for a short while, Olina nodded. "I agree, please notify your boss. I agree with this condition."

"But we have one more attached condition."

"What's that? Do you want us to compensate you for your loss?"

"Hehe, Magical Snake Island is not money-centered!" The man casted a contemptuous smile. "Our boss' condition is to let you tell us who killed Phoenix that night. After you tell us about that, our debt would be cleared up. Don't tell me that Phoenix was killed by you. Given the strength of Bluesea Castle, even the Bell Clan's guards could not kill Phoenix easily. Even though Phoenix had fallen in your trap, he could also escape safely. Additionally, according to our investigation, those guards of the Bell Clan didn't leave at all that night, therefore it must be somebody else who had killed Phoenix. Therefore, our condition is to know that guy who had killed Phoenix."

Hearing this condition, Gitta even slightly glanced at Zhang Tie while Olina sitting on the main seat didn't even look at Zhang Tie. She was afraid that her casual movement would arise that guy's attention; instead, she said mercilessly, "Is this your condition? You want to revenge that guy who had failed to assassinate me and let me to screw over my savior?"

"Right, this is the condition for we Magical Snake Island to cancel off the debts between you and us. Phoenix is a member of the roundtable warriors on Magical Snake Island. Based on the rules of we Magical Snake Island, we have to get revenge for the death of any member of roundtable warriors. If we are not even that cohesive, our Magical Snake Island would not be Magical Snake Island any more!"

"If so, you can go back to tell your boss and the other roundtable

warriors on Magical Snake Island, I'm in Bluesea Castle and waiting for you to kill me!" Olina refused this condition at once.

Hearing this reply, that guy on Magical Snake Island instantly looked grim before revealing a wisp of a sneer. "Don't you need to consider it more? You have to know that if you stir up our Magical Snake Island, you will not like the outcome at all. As our target and our enemy, you would see a completely different outcome!"

"Have you made a decision? You should also know that you could survive the outcome if you piss off a woman. Although gold coins are not all-purposeful, as long as it reaches a certain scale, it would help a lot of things come true." Olina watched that guest from Magical Snake Island like a proud queen. "I almost forgot to tell you that I've already entrusted Golden Roc Bank to audit and keep the properties of the Ballas Business Group. As long as I suffer from an accident, all the properties of Ballas Business Group would be converted into my insurance and fund for revenge. Anyone who could avenge me would gain all the properties of the Ballas Business Group. How much do you think the heads of roundtable warriors on Magical Snake Island are worth? If I was truly killed, I wonder if there are any sharper powerhouses that would like to visit Magical Snake Island?"

It was that guest's turn to change face. He had not imagined that such a charming fox could be that vicious—if you Magical Snake Island want to fight me regardless of your lives, I will accompany you, let's see who the final winner is?

Zhang Tie, who didn't speak at all, just watched Olina. Not until then did he realize that this woman was so sharp. Although she

looked weak, she was more responsible than many other men.

Not until then did Olina glance at Zhang Tie casually and calmly, however, her eyes seemed to hide many things.

According to Zhang Tie's temperament, of course he would not let a woman to take the burden for him. Even though he killed Phoenix in order to save her that night, he did it voluntarily. In his eyes, Magical Snake Island and the roundtable warriors were nothing but fart. How could they scare him to hide behind a woman?

Zhang Tie then revealed a smile towards Olina, which included a bit of relief, moving and more pride.

Olina understood what Zhang Tie meant. She then slightly changed her face.

"Periv, see off the guest!" The female owner of Bluesea Castle delivered the order at once.

"All right, don't be regretful!" That man glanced at Olina fiercely before turned around and left.

"Wait a moment!"

"Kill him!"

The first voice was made by Zhang Tie while the second was from the female owner of Bluesea Castle. The 2 voices almost sounded at the same time. The latter one sounded pretty resounding and high-pitched.

Hearing this, the man from Magical Snake Island stopped at once. In comparison, hearing "Kill him", all the female fighters threw their long-prepared short spears towards that man.

Periv, Gitta and the other fighters on Olina's side had also charged at that guy at the same time.

At the same time, Zhang Tie also moved. Although standing on Olina's side, the moment Zhang Tie moved, he had already stridden in the center of the hall. He then blocked Gitta's way forward as he punched against Periv's fist, forcing Periv back. After that, he surged forward again and kicked Adeline's short spears. In a split second, he had stopped the 3 powerhouses' attack.

At the same time, the man from Magical Snake Island rolled over on the ground and instantly escaped from those short spears thrown by those female fighters like a centipede twisting on the ground.

"Puh, puh, puh, puh..." 10 more short spears flew by that man, some of which hit the wall in the distance causing sparks on the hard wall while others directly inserted into the wooden floor of the Hall of Deliberation and made holes on the floor. All this indicated the great fighting strength of those female fighters.

All this happened in a split second. The moment the others moved a bit, they had to stop involuntarily in the next. Nobody could imagine that Zhang Tie joined in so abruptly to block away the first round of attack for that guy from Magical Snake Island.

Gitta seemed to understand something. Pevri just watched Olina full of doubt while Adeline pointed at Zhang Tie with her short spears with a hostile expression. At this moment, that guy from Magical Snake Island was staring at Zhang Tie full of doubt. 'What's wrong? I've not heard boss talk about this mole at the woman's side. Why would this guy help me? It shouldn't be that!'

Having been very calm, although this female owner was still sitting on the main seat, her sharply undulant breasts indicated that her inside was not that calm at all.

"If we kill this guy at this moment, it would be hard to explain what happened then!" Zhang Tie watched Olina and he shrugged.

"It's nothing to do with you!" The female owner of Bluesea Castle gritted her teeth and urged.

"I chopped off Phoenix's head. How come it was nothing to do with me." Zhang Tie smiled as he turned around towards that guest from Magical Snake Island who was watching Zhang Tie with a dubious look. At the same time, Zhang Tie instantly looked very righteous and sacred like an unrivaled swordsman in Chinese legend, "I'm Peter Hamplester. I'm just a pioneer and have just been in Saint Herner Island for about 1 week. My current status is the guest of Bluesea Island and will leave Saint Herner Island tomorrow. I was born to hate evil things. No dark thing is allowed

to exist in my eyes. You can go back to tell your sh*t boss and those sh*t like roundtable warriors that I'm the one who chopped off Phoenix's head. If you b*stards of Magical Snake Island would like to revenge, just come for me. If you don't dare to, you tell everybody else on Magical Snake Island to clean their necks and wait for me to come for you over there..."

"You, you did that? The visitor from Magical Snake Island stared at Zhang Tie in an unimaginable look before glanced over the other guys in the Hall of Deliberation. He was confused whether this was a plot or trap or not. Given his look, he didn't believe in Zhang Tie's words at all. He found everything about Zhang Tie was not logical including Zhang Tie's age, real strength or motive to arise Magical Snake Island's hatred at this moment.

"What? You don't believe in me?" Zhang Tie asked him.

"Brat, who do you think you are? Phoenix is a LV 9 powerhouse. I persuade to not seek for death yourself." An icy light flashed across that man's eyes.

Zhang Tie didn't speak. Instead, he directly rushed over there. The moment he pulled out his long sword from its sheath, he had already launched his storm-like attack towards that guy, including that guy into sharp sword qi at once.

As the old saying goes, the moment an expert moved, he would show his proficiency. Similarly, the moment Zhang Tie moved, that guy with a contemptuous look had already jumped up like a cat whose tail was stepped on.

At the sight of Zhang Tie's attack, everybody in Bluesea Castle widened their mouths out of amazement. Watching Zhang Tie's performance, they realized that Zhang Tie's swordsmanship had long surpassed each of them. At the beginning, they could not see the difference between Zhang Tie and that guy. But as Zhang Tie kept attacking him, he took the preemptive move gradually. As a result, the man from Magical Snake Island gradually moved to the defense-focused side as his face turned red gradually.

At this moment, even those people who didn't understand why Olina brought Zhang Tie in the castle had figured it out that Peter was a swordsmanship powerhouse who was even sharper than a LV 9 powerhouse.

Zhang Tie's swordsmanship was so fast and fierce which was seen by them for the first time.

After 5-6 minutes' fight, with a miserable scream, blood was seen spraying in the air while an arm and an ear flew off the guy coming from Magical Snake Island. At the same time, he was sent flying back in the air before fell to the ground heavily.

With a clash, Zhang Tie waved a beautiful curve in the air before put his sword back into the sheath. He then watched the man lying on the floor with a proud look.

"Do you believe in me now? I only leave a mark on you this time. When I see you next time, I will chop off your head!"

"Argh...brat, you are dead, you are dead...our boss will definitely kill you if you dare to kill anyone from Magical Snake Island!"

"I will wait! You have one minute to disappear in front of me. Otherwise, I will chop off another hand. Do you want to have a try?"

After taking out of a vial of medicament from his coat by his shaking hand and eating it, the guy glared at Zhang Tie deeply before turned around and tumbled away.

"Periv, please see off this guy, keep him alive on the way back. If he dies I'll have to find the other b*stards from Magical Snake Island to pass along my words!" Zhang Tie smiled.

Everybody in the Bluesea Castle then watched Zhang Tie with awestruck looks.

Chapter 392: Leaving Saint Herner Island

Zhang Tie already had the same wet dream about Miss Daina numerous times——luxurious dining table...snow-white tablecloth...burning candles...dim yet ambiguous candlelight...in a sexy skirt, Miss Daina revealed half of her plumpy breasts. Sitting on the opposite of the dining table, she was watching Zhang Tie. Each time she put the food on her knife and fork into her opening cherry lips, she would tease him...

The dream always started with a dinner yet never ended over the table.

Zhang Tie once just treated it as a dream which could never be realized. But at this moment, when this familiar dreamland appeared in front of him, he was shocked inside.

Sitting on the opposite of the dining table was not Miss Daina, instead Olina who looked very similar to Miss Daina.

At this moment, Olina was absolutely a noblewoman who used to attend to the cocktail party of top-class society. With a brilliant diamond hairpin on her coiled hair, she was wearing a set of beautiful blue bobbles with purple grains. The bobble was skintight which well revealed her good frame as a mature woman.

Especially when she stood up, the extremely large yet firm U-shaped collar of her bobble was like a bottomless canyon which was mysterious and alluring. It could arise people's endless desire for exploration as it included an unknown danger.

Olina had well dressed. It was a beautiful and delicate make-up especially for an evening reception, which made her pretty elegant yet sexy and absolutely a noblewoman.

Zhang Tie had not been that impulsive for a long time. However, when he was brought to the dining room by a beautiful female servant, at the sight of Olina, Zhang Tie felt his heart burning and felt his throat becoming dry.

At this moment, Olina was completely Miss Daina in his dreamland.

Being shocked, under the warm yet ambiguous candlelights, Zhang Tie could not identify whether he was in reality or in the dreamland.

When the fiery candle burned, it smelt pretty good. Smelling this fragrance, Zhang Tie started to have a maggot in his head!

Zhang Tie felt being a bit dizzy and a strong desire for sprouting something from inside.

When those beautiful female servants served the dishes on the table, he loosened his shirt's buttons.

"Are you feeling hot?"

Olina was sitting on the opposite of the dining table which was longer than 4 meters which seemed to be an unreachable distance.

Through the candlelight of the silver candlesticks, Zhang Tie threw a glance at Olina and saw that pretty delicate diamond necklace hanging from her neck to the place between her breasts, which was shining brightly in the candlelight. At this moment, the woman's half-exposed plumpy breasts seemed to expand greatly.

Zhang Tie felt his throat almost smoking. He then hurriedly took a cup from aside. Before looking at the liquid, he had already finished his drink.

It was white wine in the cup. As he drank it too quickly, he almost choked. As a result, he started to cough heavily.

Seeing this, the woman on the opposite burst of laughter, causing Zhang Tie feel like he lost a bit of face.

"Cough...cough...I thought it was water." Zhang Tie explained. "But, but I truly feel a bit hot!"

"Is that hot? I don't feel that. You are the first one who feels hot at night on Saint Herner Island!"

"Perhaps...there are too many candles here!"

"Oh, maybe. Then, we will have a candle moved away..." At this moment, that woman smiled like an aunt who caught small kids in

the kindergarten. He looked pretty comprehensive. The woman then waved her hand to let a female servant move away one candle. Soon after that, the room looked a bit dimmer.

The female servant who moved away the candle was the one of those lying on Zhang Tie's bed this morning. She glanced at Zhang Tie in a teasing manner, causing Zhang Tie to become restless.

"No need to be that solemn, I will leave tomorrow."

"Do you think this is solemn for a person who saved my life twice?" The woman's voice sounded a bit sad. "I've told you that as long as you could help me that time, I'd like to pay you at any price. I mean it."

'Any price?' thinking of her promise 2 days ago and watching that alluring woman in front of him, Zhang Tie had a maggot in his head at once. However, the moment the whim appeared, Zhang Tie had chased it away in his mind. 'A love affair between a man and a woman is very nice. If you treat it as a condition for something, it would be not right then.'

"No, of course, I don't think you are kidding but I really don't need your reward at all. I'm very happy in Bluesea Castle these days, especially last night. You've already made it, no need to feel guilty or that you owe me anything at all."

Of course, Olina knew what Zhang Tie meant by "especially last night". Zhang Tie's frankness and generosity was out of Olina's imagination.

"Do you know how many things would you lose by saying this? Although the Ballas Business Group doesn't rank first in Ewentra, it's still a big business group which owned tens of millions gold coins and could also rank top 20. Don't you want to reconsider it? All those who are familiar with me know that I rarely promise anything to people."

"Gold coins and wealth might be very precious but in my eyes, what is truly precious is living creatures. Sometimes a small earthworm or a small grass is far more precious than them. This morning, as you wanted to stop that guy from leaving, you've already ceased to owe me anything at all." Zhang Tie sincerely said. "Additionally, I don't feel that anything could be more precious than the thing that you wished to shoulder for me this morning."

Hearing this, Olina gazed at Zhang Tie for a while as her eyes sparkled in the candlelight. Not until several seconds later did she recover her composure and let out a deep sigh.

"You are right. Something between people is truly more precious than gold coins. I have no relatives now, even sons or daughters. As a woman, it is very sad to be alone at this age. If only I could have a relative like you on my side."

Zhang Tie scratched his head and thought for a short while. Then, he also felt this woman was very miserable. He then asked, "Do you feel I should call you aunt Olina or sister Olina?"

"You tell me." The woman glanced at Zhang Tie in a charming

manner.

Watching her mature, beautiful face and that pair of boobs which almost jumped out of her bobtail, Zhang Tie then replied, "I will call you sister then!"

The woman in the opposite then burst out laughing, causing her body quiver and showing her charming look. Watching this, Zhang Tie forcefully swallowed his saliva once again.

"Well, you just call me sister from then on. Actually, based on my age, that's reasonable. Before you leave Saint Herner Island, let your sister Olina invite you to enjoy some great food."

The female owner of the castle then clapped as those female servants served the dishes one plate after another.

The supper was truly the most sumptuous one that Zhang Tie had ever eaten. Olina didn't mention the compensation for Zhang Tie, neither did Zhang Tie ask about it. They just talked about other topics very tacitly like family members. Gradually, several hours passed.

Zhang Tie admitted that if he had no maggot in his head, he would feel very comfortable while eating supper together with her both visually and acoustically, even gustatorily. It felt pretty pleasant only watching her putting food in her mouth gracefully.

After supper, Zhang Tie had a farewell to her politely before

returning to his own room.

Less than 10 minutes after Zhang Tie returned to his room, the 4 beautiful female servants who had fought over him last night had knocked at his door. The moment they walked in, they had already stripped off their clothes. After that, they climbed onto Zhang Tie's bed and started to take off clothes for Zhang Tie...

For Zhang Tie, of course, he started to enjoy the following process. He then totally released his desire that had been oppressed since the beginning of the supper.

1 hour later, Zhang Tie's door was pushed open once again as another 4 beautiful female servants walked in.

"How about playing a game? You are forbidden to look. Just identify while covering your eyes. When you get it right you will get the reward..." A female servant murmured to Zhang Tie as she took out a black blindfold from out of nowhere to cover Zhang Tie's eyes.

Of course, Zhang Tie didn't mind playing this game at this moment, instead, he felt more stimulated...

However, after a short while, when he entered a hot and tight v*g*n*, he smelt a familiar fragrance. At the same time, he faintly heard an obviously oppressive, strange yet very familiar groan.

Zhang Tie became slightly stunned, however, he didn't move

away his blindfold. Instead, he was in a pretty violent and excited state...

Later on, in a period as long as that of the supper, Zhang Tie tightly seized the woman under his body in the darkness to prevent her from escaping. Zhang Tie was so crazy and rude that he injected his bodily fluids into different holes on her body and sprayed it all over her body, including her face, breasts, butts, thighs and lower abdomen...

After spraying out his bodily fluids one time after another, Zhang Tie felt that he finally returned to an elegant harbor which looked like a mirror that reflected the sun in the autumn after being restless 17 years like a small boat in a terrifying storm.

...

Early the next morning, August 5th, many people from Bluesea Castle gathered at the pier of Saint Herner Harbor to see Zhang Tie off, including Olina, Gitta, Periv and Adeline. Three women with strange tattoos on their faces were at Olina's side.

Two of the three women were bald. They were twins. In the same armor with flame grains, they both felt very oppressive, causing Gitta and Periv stand away from them. As for the other woman, she covered herself in a black robe with a circle of colorful bird feathers over her waist and a necklace composed of various animals skulls and odd stones.

The 3 women arrived at Bluesea Castle last night, who were

powerhouses assigned from Adeline's tribe. Since Zhang Tie caught sight of them yesterday, he had not heard them speak. Instead, they were just like mutes in a cool manner.

The siren of the passenger liner weighing tens of thousands of tons had sounded twice. The steamer was going to set off while Olina, Gitta, and Periv were all bidding farewell to Zhang Tie.

As it was a bit cold in the morning in the harbor, Olina wore a white marten, showing a very indolent and charming look. Overnight, everybody found that the female owner looked bright like a bud opened when being watered.

Periv was touching his beard while thinking about something. Gitta kept his eyes swimming between Zhang Tie and Olina. As for Adeline, she looked hostile about Zhang Tie once again like a warehouse keeper catching a guy who was preparing to dig a hole at the corner of the wall.

Zhang Tie and Olina then exchanged glances with each other. Olina's face slightly blushed. Zhang Tie wanted to say something, however, finally, he found that he didn't know what to say to this woman. It felt very sophisticated.

"Bon voyage!" After saying this, Zhang Tie directly embraced Olina tightly.

"Take care of yourself!" Olina kissed Zhang Tie's cheeks before taking out a delicate box and gave it to Zhang Tie. "This is an item that the Ballas Business Group gained several years ago. I might be

helpful to you."

Zhang Tie didn't even see inside; instead, he directly put it in his coat.

"Two LV 5 men 100 m away were gazing at us since our fleet of cars left the castle. I feel they are hostile towards us!" One barbarian shaman who was always silent pointed at Zhang Tie.

Her special ability gained Zhang Tie's attention.

"Gitta..." Olina shouted as Gitta turned around and intended to walk towards them.

"No need." Zhang Tie stopped Gitta. "They are just some scouts, it doesn't work even if we kill them. Actually, more people are watching me on board. I bought my ticket a couple of days ago those guys from Magical Snake Island could never know that I would leave today. Just let them find me in the Ice and Snow Wildness."

After saying this, Zhang Tie shouted towards the two scouts 100 m away. "B*stards from Magical Snake Island, your grandpa Peter is waiting for you in the Ice and Snow Wildness, let's see how many heads of your motherf*cking roundtable warriors would be chopped off by me, hahaha..."

Zhang Tie's voice was so loud that so many people in the surrounding had heard it. As a result, they all exchanged glances at

each other and were amazed. Few people dare to provoke people from Magical Snake Island in the public.

The huge steamer's siren sounded once again and was preparing to leave the harbor while the bridge stair being placed against the huge steamer started to be moved away.

With loud laughter, Zhang Tie turned around and ran towards the huge steamer on his side. He ran onto the bridge stair the moment it left the huge steamer and jumped onto the board several meters away. He then waved his hands towards them.

The 2 scouts who were watching Zhang Tie from afar were stunned at once. Even if there were still powerhouses on Saint Herner Island from Magical Snake Island, they would have no time to embark anymore. Instead, they could only watch Zhang Tie leave...

Chapter 393: Firm Decisions

About 1400 km away to the southeast of Saint Herner Island, there was an island which covered about 200 square kilometers. On this island, there was a volcano that kept releasing black smoke into the sky all year round. Besides, a great amount of magma also sprouted out of the seabed near the island. As a result, the vapor made this sea area hot while always being covered by dense fog. This area was full of mystery.

In the legends shared by sailors of the Ewentra Archipelago, the sea area nearby this island was where demons lived. The magma which poured out of the seabed not only extended this island several square kilometers each year, but also filled the neighboring water with various hidden reefs that were formed by congealed magma. Like this island, those hidden reefs also changed each year. Even the most experienced captains and sailors would not be close to this sea area. Additionally, according to the legend, there was even a terrifying magical snake in this sea area which usually took passing vehicles and numerous living beings as food.

The legend about the magical snake in this sea area could be dated back to several hundreds years ago. That was why this island was named as Magical Snake Island. Although many people spoke about the magical snake, few of them had ever seen it. However, those living on Magical Snake Island were much more terrifying than that magical snake.

This was Magical Snake Island, one of the most infamous and frightening places across the Ewentra Archipelago.

On the evening of August 5th, in a mountain cave that was brightly lit, all the top figures on Magical Snake Island gathered there. Surrounding a stony roundtable They were discussing a person with solemn looks, a person who appeared on Saint Herner Island as a pioneer——Peter Hamplester.

"Where does this b*stard come from?"——A furious sound resonated in the cave. "Did he really dare to speak on the pier of Saint Herner Harbor?"

"Really, besides our scouts on Saint Herner Island, many people on the pier heard it!"

Hearing this reply, another round of swears could be heard in the mountain cave.

At this moment, an icy and hoarse voice sounded when all the other voices disappeared.

"Bunny, how about that man's fighting strength according to your battle in Bluesea Castle?"

The man who asked was over 50 years old with only one eye while his the other eye was wearing a black eyepatch. Sitting on the east of the roundtable, he looked gray and thin. Besides this, he was filled with a brutal sense.

Bunny was that guy whose hand and ear were chopped off by Zhang Tie in Bluesea Castle. At this moment, he was also sitting

beside the stone roundtable with hatred on his face.

"Boss, he's only a bit more powerful than me. His swordsmanship is very sharp. I'm not sure about his level. He might be LV 8 or LV 9. If we don't kill him, how will we on Magical Snake Island live in this sea area?"

"Only a bit more powerful than you?"

"Yes, I'm sure!" Bunny replied loudly.

"If so, brothers, who'd like to bring that man's head back from the Ice and Snow Wilderness? LV 10 is suggested. We need to let him know the outcome of being hostile towards Magical Snake Island! We have to solve this quickly." With one blinded eye, Bellus Ken said while he glanced over all the others sitting around the stony roundtable.

Over 10 people were sitting around the roundtable. Hearing Bellus Ken's words, more than half of them kept silent. Instead, they glanced over the other 6-7 people who were also exchanging glances with each other.

"I will be there. I've not tasted such a fresh boy for a long time..." A 40-odd-year-old guy revealed an obscene smile. He looked very righteous like a priest before he smiled. However, the moment he smiled, he instantly showed the gold teeth that covered his mouth, none of them were true teeth. At the sight of this, all the others felt chilly inside and instantly moved their eyes away from him, including Bunny who was screaming loudly just now .

"Dawson, you just need to bring back that brat's head, you'd better not do anything excessive. The Ice and Snow Wildness is not like Ewentra Archipelago as it belongs to Slavass. If you do anything excessive, you might not be able to come back alive." Bellus Ken glanced at Dawson seriously before warning him.

"I know, I can control myself. Besides that brat, I will not stir up any trouble. Oh, on my way back, can I take a trip to Bluesea Castle?" Showing his gold teeth, Dawson ground his gold teeth when he mentioned Bluesea Castle, causing a jarring frictional sound.

"Let's call it an end about Saint Herner Island. That woman is a sharp figure. As she has bound Ballas Business Group with her life, if she was in trouble, Golden Roc Bank might directly attack us considering the wealth of the Ballas Business Group. Additionally, 2 barbarian powerhouses above LV 10 were assigned there to protect her, plus a barbarian shaman, we might suffer a great loss if we want to kill her."

"Then, we just forget about the shame?" Someone asked.

Bellus Ken glanced over everybody on the stone table while a shrew light flashed by his only one eye. "There're always chances. It's not peaceful on the continent recently. Demons have been impatient. Therefore, we only need to wait for a short period. I believe that we will soon leave Magical Snake Island."

"Boss, I heard that the relics about pre-catastrophe human

civilization was found on Ice and Snow Wilderness, there might be the fragments of the Star of God; won't we...?"

"Do you think that you can touch the fragments of the Star of God?" Bellus Ken shouted loudly out of fury, causing that guy quiver all over, "Without a level above knight or a powerful reliance, you are only going there for death! There's only one guy across Ewentra Archipelago, who's barely qualified to compete for that thing—the old d**chebag on the Stars and Moon Island!" Saying this, the one-eyed head gritted his teeth while the only left eye turned wholly red, "That old d**chebag made one of my eyes blind, making me hide in this motherf*cking place many years. After hearing the news, the old d**chebag would definitely go there. I hope he was killed over there; that way, I will definitely kill all the clan members of that old d**chebag on Stars and Moon Island."

"Boss, as long as you can reach one level higher, you will be a knight; by then, you will not be afraid of that old d**chebag anymore!" A LV 9 guy who had just reached LV 9 flattered.

Flattery existed everywhere. Even in Magical Snake Island, such kind of people also existed among the central figures of Magical Snake Island. The alleged round table warriors all had distinctive fighting strengths which caused different positions. Among them, the most powerful and privileged one was definitely Bellus Ken, the boss of Magical Snake Island. Having reached LV 15, he was a standard fighting spirit. As for others, the one with the lowest fighting strength had also reached LV 9.

(According to the opinions of fans of this book, I slightly adjusted

the ranks that mentioned previously; after the adjustment, the ranks would be strong fighter, fighting master, great fighting master, fighting general, fighting demon and fighting spirit—Drunk Tiger, the author)

That flatterer didn't know that he had flattered the wrong man this time.

"You mean I'm afraid of that old d**chebag?" Bellus Ken glared at that guy on the opposite of him with only one eye as he narrowed his eyes and uttered an icy voice.

"Boss...I...I don't mean that!" That guy's face turned pale at once as he hurriedly explained with a poor look.

Nobody wanted to hear his own explanation. In an organization composed of pirates and killers, of course, the boss had his own way to preserve his authority.

From several meters away, Bellus Ken directly punched out a fist with blue battle qi which was as large as one's head. In a split second, it had stricken onto that guy and exploded him into flying blood and broken flesh, which even splattered onto the others' bodies and faces; some of them were so scared that they dared not to make any sound at all while someone else looked nothing had happened. Dawson just gritted his gold teeth while stretching out his long tongue to clean off the blood that splattered onto his lower lip. He looked enjoying it very much.

"A wise person who knows how to stay away from a powerful

enemy to preserve his own fighting strength is not equal to be afraid of his enemy!" After easily killing that LV 9 guy, Bellus Ken explained icily. After that he glanced at Dawson who was licking the fresh blood over his face and said, "Dawson, you go to Ice and Snow Wildness tonight..."

"Yes, sir!"

...

Zhang Tie didn't know that after he left Saint Herner Island by Polar Light Huge Ship for less than 1 day, he had been chased after by a powerhouse assigned from Magical Snake Island. Whereas, this was in Zhang Tie's expectation. Besides not knowing what kind of person would be assigned to assassinate him by Magical Snake Island, he was not amazed about anything else as he had already taken this crisis brought by Magical Snake Island as a challenge.

As early as that guy from Magical Snake Island raved in Bluesea Castle to force Olina revealed the one who had killed their man, Zhang Tie had already prepared for this day.

With his current fighting strength, if he used sword, he was confident to kill that LV 9 guy from Magical Snake Island in 2 minutes. If he used any throwing weapons, he could narrow time into several seconds. However, Zhang Tie kept hiding his real fighting strength.

The reason was Zhang Tie knew that after he left Bluesea Castle,

Magical Snake Island would definitely assign someone to assassinate him. As long as he didn't perform extremely powerful in Bluesea Castle, the people assigned by Magical Snake Island would not be the most powerful one; instead, they would just assign someone that they estimated to kill Zhang Tie definitely. After all, powerhouses above LV 9 were not easily found anywhere. In Huaiyuan Palace, such people were precious resources, let alone in Ewentra Archipelago! As the old Chinese saying goes, high-quality steel should be used to build high-quality blade.

Undoubtedly, a LV 10 powerful fighter was actually enough to deal with one person who could barely defeat a common LV 9 fighter.

After experiencing being chased after by a strong fighter, Zhang Tie knew it clearly that even if the most average strong fighter had already lit over 55 surging points. Compared to a LV 9 fighter, a strong fighter would have lit at least 20 more surging points. On fighting strength, a strong fighter would at least be one time more powerful than a common LV 9 fighter. A strong fighter would cause Zhang Tie very embarrassed; facing fighting master, Zhang Tie could only directly jump into the sea to escape.

Of course, the killer being assigned by Magical Snake Island to assassinate Zhang Tie depended on Zhang Tie's performance in Bluesea Castle. Therefore, when Zhang Tie chose to shoulder the threat from Magical Snake Island bravely, he was actually driving himself forward greatly; meanwhile, he was gradually influencing the possible strategies which were taken by Magical Snake Island on dealing with him; additionally, it also spare a chance for him to jump into the sea to escape in the future.

Zhang Tie would like to see whether he could stand the attack from a possible strong fighter assigned by Magical Snake Island. He wanted to see whether the speed and fighting strength brought by seven-strength fruits could help him defeat that powerful enemy which was always his concern.

'If Lan Yunxi could make it, I could make it too. Albeit I could not match her on the most powerful blood line that she has awakened, my castle of black iron and that small tree could not be matched by anyone else either.

The most ideal result is that——in order to kill me, Magical Snake would assign all of its round table warriors one by another to assassinate me; finally I killed them all one by one, causing the rest b*stards on Magical Snake Island not bring any trouble to the other people any more.

Zhang Tie had already made the decision when he embarked——now that I've left my home, I will change from an ant to a Chinese dragon. The first step was to step this poisonous snake Magical Snake Island under my feet...

Chapter 394: Devil's North Wind Area

The Polar Light had entered the devil's north wind area of the Oro Strait on the second day since it left Saint Herner Island. From then on, it started to cross the sea.

As a strait in the southernmost part of the Ice and Snow Wildness, the Oro Strait was the only route from the Ewentra Archipelago to the Ice and Snow Wildness in the north. Not until Zhang Tie came to Oro Strait did he understand why they could only enter the Ice and Snow Wildness by sea. The reason was that airships didn't work in this region at all because of the terrifying devil's north wind area in the Oro Strait.

During the past year in Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Tie had learned a lot. At least, he had read the creation of the devil's north wind area in Oro Strait from the textbook titled "Continental Geography"—a powerful air convection and cyclone between the subpolar low pressure area of the Ice and Snow Wildness and subtropical high pressure area of the Ewentra Archipelago.

The terrifying north wind originated from the air convections between different pressure areas over this star. This convection would not come to an end, neither would the terrifying north wind above Oro Strait. Being pushed by such a powerful north wind, an ocean current with the greatest flowing speed across Waii Sub-Continent formed in the sea of Oro Strait—"Ocean Current in the Wildness". Because of the same constant north wind, the airspace above Oro Strait also became a forbidden region for airships.

In that age, no airship could fly across this devil's north wind

area. Perhaps the aircrafts before the catastrophe could do that, however, for an airship, although its huge body and great height, it was nothing different than a kite in the terrifying north wind area. The moment any airship drew close to this place, it would be blown away from the north wind and gradually fly towards the south instead of heading for the Ice and Snow Wilderness.

Because of the devil's north wind area in Oro Strait, this strait became the forbidden area of all the air traffic vehicles in this age. Additionally, even Zhang Tie's passenger liner started to move forward slowly. The liner's normal speed was 18 nautical miles per hour. Since it entered this area on the 2nd day, its speed instantly dropped to 10 nautical miles per hour facing the surging waves over 10 meters in height.

Zhang Tie was told on board that it would take them 7 days of bumpy travel on the sea to reach Eschyle City in the southernmost part of the Ice and Snow Wilderness. Eschyle City was a window for the Ice and Snow Wilderness to exchange with the Ewentra Archipelago and the rest of the world as the only city in the Ice and Snow Wilderness. Compared to the vast Ice and Snow Wilderness, Eschyle City was not even a sesame on a pie on the pioneering map.

Zhang Tie bought a tourist-class ticket. For people who had to sail across the sea for 7 days, of course, they would not just stay in their own cabins. Instead, they could also enjoy themselves in dining rooms, bars and gambling houses on board.

It was very boring on the ship. Besides polishing his surge points and cultivation in trouble-reappearance situations, Zhang Tie also

went out of his own cabin sometimes and ate something in the dining room. Meanwhile, he would take a look at the Oro Strait.

During these days of travel over the sea, Zhang Tie had become acquainted with some new friends——Sam, Gerri and Isle.

Sam and Gerri were pioneers and bosom friends. After being told that pre-catastrophe relics and pieces of the star of god were discovered in the Ice and Snow Wildness, they had been heading for there to seek fortune. Isle was a businessman who specialized in trading furs and food between the Ice and Snow Wildness and the Ewentra Archipelago.

Zhang Tie's cabin was linked to the other 3. Besides their own independent space, the 4 cabins shared the same narrow passage and a washroom. It felt like a dorm at school. After staying on board for 2 days, Zhang Tie had already acquainted with the other 3.

...

Under the impact of his powerful spiritual energy, the purple surge point uttered a booming sound in Zhang Tie's mind like a collapsing dam. Following that, the purple brilliance flew in all directions and gradually disappeared in Zhang Tie's body. Then, a red spark started to appear at the surge point before turning into a blazing flame.

With the warmth radiated from this surging point, Zhang Tie felt that part of the darkness that covered his body had been driven

away. At the same time, the joint of the 15th vertebrae uttered a crisp sound like an opened metal lock, causing a numb, cool sense that was similar to that of an orgasm. This sense spread from his nervus centralis all the way to his brain, making Zhang Tie hum out of control due to excitement.

The 15th surging point on his spine was finally broken through by Zhang Tie's spiritual energy.

Not until that numb sense completely faded away did Zhang Tie let out a sigh before standing up from his bed. He stretched out his limbs before put the pyramid-based crystal into Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie then felt that he had greater physical strength. Besides, he felt his limbs becoming more coordinated. Additionally, he felt something agile in the location of the qi sea where the soul fire entered and the shrine surge point as if some stones were moved away from a solid hinterland of a mountain.

Since the 14th surging point was lit, Zhang Tie had felt that slight changes would happen in the qi sea of his lower abdomen each time he lit a new surge point.

If it was in Blackhot City, Zhang Tie definitely didn't know what such changes indicated. However, at this moment, Zhang Tie knew that it was the prelude of opening his qi sea. The greatest difference between a LV 9 fighter who had lit at least 34 surging points and a LV 10 strong fighter who had lit at least 55 surging points lay in the fact that a LV 10 strong fighter had also opened his or her qi sea besides lighting all the surge points on his or her

spine.

Qi sea, sea of battle qi, was the source of the greatness of a fighter.

The difference between a LV 10 strong fighter who had opened his or her qi sea and a LV 9 fighter was decisive. Their great difference in fighting strength and physical quality could be identified from the different numbers of surge points that they had lit which was even greater than the total fighting strength from LV 1 to LV 8. That was to say, from LV 10, each level higher would be a chasm that could hardly be exceeded by the likes of commoners. At this moment, the value of some top ancestral bloodlines among the Chinese would gradually stand out.

Zhang Tie knew that he was still far away from opening his qi sea. It would take him about 2 years to open his qi sea.

He needed to lit another 40 surge points. Each surge point had 7 barriers in different colors which meant 280 barriers in total. Zhang Tie knew that one leakless fruit could break through 3 barriers. In this way, he needed to consume at least 93 leakless fruits before reaching LV 10.

It took 93 weeks for 93 leakless fruits to grow mature, namely 651 days or 22 months.

However, at this moment, Zhang Tie didn't even know how to improve himself to reach LV 9 and LV 10 which were the most important stages. The cultivation knowledge after LV 9, especially

the content on lighting surge points was the top secret knowledge. People had to spend a lot of clan contribution points and reach LV 9. Besides this, they had to pass a strict examination before being qualified to learn it. By now, Zhang Tie had not even reached any condition, of course, he was not qualified to learn it.

To improve from LV 7 to LV 10 in 2 years, which was a rocketing speed for commoners; however, for Zhang Tie, it was still too slow. His master Zhao Yuan told him that in many real powerhouses' eyes, LV 9 and LV 10 were only the beginning of the cultivation process.

Zhang Tie knew clearly that in the later stages, each level would require an exponential increase in the number of surge points to be lit. By contrast, the function of the leakless fruit would gradually become less observable. Additionally, the Third Holy War was drawing near. After the event in Heavens Cold City, Zhang Tie faintly felt that this holy war might be more miserable while demons might have greater power than the people could imagine.

After thinking for a second, Zhang Tie realized that he had not entered the Castle of Black Iron for over 2 weeks. After 2 weeks accumulation, there should be 2 more leakless fruits on the small tree.

Zhang Tie was slightly stretching his limbs in his cabin and intending to eat the 2 leakless fruits in the Castle of Black Iron so as to break through the 6 barriers of the 16th surge point on the spine when his hatch door boomed.

"Bang, bang, bang, Peter, are you in there..."

The moment Zhang Tie heard this voice, he had given up his thoughts of entering the Castle of Black Iron. With a helpless smile, he then opened the hatch door.

2 pioneers who looked a bit older than Zhang Tie were standing outside the hatch door. The one on the left looked a bit fatter with observable purplish hair while the one on the right looked thinner and taller. Besides brown skin, he had black hair, tall nose and gleaming eyes.

"Oh, hi, Peter!" At sight of Zhang Tie opening the door, the fatter one shouted.

"What's up, Sam?" Zhang Tie still asked kindly. He didn't feel unhappy about being disturbed at all.

"I haven't seen you step foot out of your door since yesterday afternoon. Don't you feel bored inside? Gerri and I are going for supper, therefore, we are here to call you out to head there together." After saying this, Sam gazed at Zhang Tie. "You look red, are you sick?"

"Argh, no, I was just sleeping!" Zhang Tie told a lie. Having lit a surge point, his qi and blood were all activated, causing his face to become a bit red in a short period as if he was exercising. However, Zhang Tie didn't think it necessary to tell the truth.

Sam was only LV 4 while Gerri was only LV 5. They had been extremely excellent among pioneers of the same age.

"Were you sleeping?" Gerri stealthily glanced at that narrow room which could only hold a bed and a desk with a weird smile. "Were you there doing something weird? I know, you feel bored all alone. When you do that, you would always be excited. I know, I know, but don't always do that, it's not good for your health!"

"What are you talking about it?" Zhang Tie asked out of doubt.

Gerri then held nothing in the air with a hand before moved up and down, which was familiar to almost every man. "If you are too bored, why not take a look in the gambling house after supper. I was told that many beauties were inside. Isle had won more than 2 gold coins in the gambling house yesterday, which was almost equal to half of his ticket price. He went there early this morning again and hasn't come back even now!"

Zhang Tie revealed a smile as he scratched his hair. He had not imagined that it had even arisen others' misunderstanding after cultivating for so long in his room. 'It truly is a bit weird. I will take a walk outside to get some fresh air. No matter what, the leakless fruits will not run away by themselves. I can eat them this evening.'

"Fine, let's go!" Saying this, Zhang Tie locked his door before walking out of the narrow passage which was paved with an anti-slip corrugated steel plate.

"I was told that the VIP cabins upstairs were much better than ours. They are like chartered rooms in high-end hotels. Besides,

their passages are paved with carpets. There is also a club in the VIP area. I met a female blonde bartender there yesterday with a pair of ears of a bunny girl..." Sam said with an admirable look/ "When we become rich, we will also try the VIP cabins! If so, we will not feel tired of traveling here and there anymore!"

Gerri burst into laughter. "When you become rich and can afford 20 gold coins for a shipping ticket, will you still travel here and there for pioneering work?"

"That's it! When we have money, why would we look for pioneering work?" Sam also realized that as he patted his head. "Gerri, tell me about your ideal life after becoming rich."

"When I have money, of course I will raise a great number of beauties in my castle. I will create a great clan by sowing seeds everyday like a seeder!"

Hearing this answer, Zhang Tie also smiled. 'Cut it out guys.'

"Peter, what about you?"

"Me?" Zhang Tie pointed at his own nose.

"Yea, even if we are pioneers, we should also have dreams!"

'Dreams?' Zhang Tie recalled that dream——Lying on a pile of gold coins at an old age and watching a number of beauties dropping off tears in front of him. He then shook his head. Every

man wishes for that life but in this motherf*cking age, they should be able to survive first.'

"If I can live safely and steadily, I almost have the same dream as Gerri!" Zhang Tie told them honestly.

"Ha, you're too pessimistic. Do you only want to survive by yourself? The death and injury rate of pioneers are not too high, additionally, if there are truly urban relics in the Ice and Snow Wilderness, we will just follow the greater part of people there and share a bit. It should be safe." Sam comforted Zhang Tie.

"Trust me, you have me!" Gerri patted his own chest.

"Thanks!" Zhang Tie smiled.

"We're friends!"

...

The fact was that Zhang Tie's thought about "living safely and steadily" was not useless, especially in this age, on this mystical sea.

Soon after they finished their very average supper in the average dining room, they had heard a specific, rapid and transient frequency which was very jarring like a warning. None of them knew what this indicated.

However, before they asked others, an extremely terrifying sound screamed in the dining room.

"Class I warning. A super large dangerous creature is drawing close to our ship. Please hold fast to anything that is bolted down and stationary!."

Right after this voice, the ship quivered heavily, shaking off many tablewares from the tables onto the ground...

Chapter 395: A Huge Deep-Sea Monster

Every ship that could freely access the Oro Strait weighed tens of thousands tons.

So did Polar Light. With a length of 300 m, it could displace over 6000 tons of seawater when it had a full load. This was definitely the biggest ship that Zhang Tie had ever seen. Even in Huaiyuan Prefecture, it would be qualified as a huge ship.

At this moment, Polar Light was close to having a full load. Besides its over 4000 passengers, it also carried over 30,000 tons of materials.

Try to imagine the strength required to shock such a huge ship.

Most people inside the dining room were holding onto anything that was bolted down to secure themselves while Zhang Tie rushed outside at once.

"Peter, where are you going?" Sam screamed.

"Don't worry, I'm just taking a look outside..." Zhang Tie replied as he ran.

"What a crazy guy!" Saying this, Gerri made a gesture towards Sam, "Let's have a look at that thing. If something really happens to our ship, it is same both in and out the dining room."

Sam nodded as the 2 people ran towards the door of the dining room. Only a few stepped away after they moved, they were thrown onto the ground by another huge shock.

"F*ck..." Sam swore.

...

At this moment, Zhang Tie had already rushed out of the dining room. Before the second huge shock, Zhang Tie had jumped off the ground. After stepping onto the wall of the passage, he immediately landed on the corridor outside the cabin.

Many people rushed out after Zhang Tie.

About half of the 4000-odd passengers in this ship were pioneers. Some of them didn't know what happened at all, they only wanted to see what was happening outside. Some of them were very bold. When they were told that Polar Light encountered an attack from some dangerous creature, they also ran out due to the excitement.

The north wind was whistling outside the cabin while waves were surging high. The moment Zhang Tie rushed out, he had heard a voice, "It's at the fore..." Zhang Tie then sped up towards the front of the ship before witnessing an extremely shocking scene.

Zhang Tie saw a terrifying tentacle stretching out of the sea which contained an immense number of suckers. It was dozens of

meters in height and was twisting at the fore of the Polar Light. Shortly after that, it started to whip the board, causing the whole ship shake heavily like a fish being lashed.

Although the metal structure of the ship could not be easily broken, with this whip, Zhang Tie heard the jarring sound of twisting and squeezing iron and steel. At the same time, many buildings and facilities at the fore were broken by such an irresistible attack.

Broken materials flew in all directions, causing many people to wail mournfully. Some unlucky guys were even broken into pieces by the whip.

Although Zhang Tie was far away from that tentacle, he also suffered from the attack of some broken pieces flying towards him from the front. Thankfully, he dodged away from them.

After the tentacle's attack, another huge tentacle stretched out of the starboard as it swept across the shipboard. As a result, another 5 or 6 onlookers were rolled up by the tentacle. With miserable shrieks, their skeletons were broken at the same time while their innards burst out. With fresh blood spraying in the air, they were pulled into the sea...

At the sight of such a scene, many people who had just run out immediately turned around and rushed back in. They were outside here only to be the dimsum of the monster. By contrast, it was safer in the cabins.

Even the thinnest part at the tip of the tentacle was wider than 1 m. It swept across a spot less than 10 m in front of Zhang Tie, breaking a row of windows on the left of the shipboard. After rolling up one person, the huge tentacle instantly made a knot over his body in less than 1 second, causing his eyes pop out of his face.

"Huge Deep-Sea Monster, Huge Deep-Sea Monster..." Someone shouted loudly on the deck above Zhang Tie when bolts were shot into the sea from huge steam-driven crossbows.

Zhang Tie didn't know whether or not they had hit the huge monster with the bolts. The moment this question flashed across Zhang Tie's mind, a surging wave had risen into the sky suddenly while another huge tentacle several meters in width stretched out from the bottom of the ship. In a split second, Zhang Tie saw a steam-driven ballista, debris of buildings and more than 10 people were swept into the sea. Meanwhile, a loud sound and some shrill screams drifted from the starboard...

The monster in the sea seemed having been irritated by the huge bolts.

After rushing out of the passage after Zhang Tie, Sam and Gerri saw a tentacle as wide as several meters shrinking into the sea along with those pieces and people, their faces turned pale at once. They then instantly turned around and escaped back towards their cabins as they realized that they were only targets by standing by the shipboard...

Zhang Tie also prepared to run back into this own cabin. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie had realized that it was out of his ability to

deal with this huge deep-sea monster. Although he kept moving towards the north in the sea, he had not seen such a terrifying monster before.

Zhang Tie didn't think he was a righteous swordsman, neither did he think that he could save others at the risk of his own life. If that huge monster destroyed the ship, Zhang Tie could escape by himself. However, he didn't know how many people could he save.

Thinking of this, Zhang Tie really heard 'helps'.

"Help..." A guy lying on the deck 7-8 m away from Zhang Tie was screaming miserably while a sharp metal strip penetrated his thigh, causing him to unable to move.

Soon after his scream, another wide tentacle stretched out of the sea and swept over the deck like a mop that was used to clean the deck and the shipboard. As a result, with the cracking sound of metal, the metal guardrails of the shipboard and the deck rolled up like instant noodles.

In a wink, that huge tentacle had been less than 10 m away from the person. That guy's face changed as he watched that terrifying black tentacle which rolled towards him like a tank with a despairing look.

At this moment, Zhang Tie rushed towards the man. He caught his clothes and rolled into a cabin on one side before the tentacle reached them...

After this round of attack, the door and the window of the cabin had been transformed and broken into pieces while one wall was cleaned. In the blink of an eye, the cabin had been destroyed as if it had been attacked by a tornado.

The moment Zhang Tie stopped rolling, he saw another surging wave from outside the shipboard while another huge tentacle stretched out of the sea, twisting in the air, and was going to hack downwards...

"B*stard!" With a furious, grim voice, a blue sun appeared outside the cabin. Being stimulated by that brilliant, blue sword qi, Zhang Tie slightly narrowed his eyes. At the same time, Zhang Tie's heart palpitated while a powerful pressure rose from outside.

This powerful pressure reminded Zhang Tie of a familiar sense. Zhang Tie then immediately remembered the scene when he met the senior from Huaiyuan Palace on the airship. However, this person's powerful pressure was different from that of the senior from Huaiyuan Palace. The latter's powerful pressure was as steady as Mount Tai while the prior's powerful pressure felt like being pricked by numerous sharp long swords.

‘Knight! How come a knight on this ship?’ Zhang Tie was a bit shocked as he let out a sigh almost at the same time.

Before that huge tentacle fell down onto the deck, it had become cut into pieces while its blood sprayed over the sky. Being influenced by this, the rest of the huge tentacles that were surrounding the Polar Light withdrew back into the sea, causing a 100-m high water column at once. Meanwhile, a baby's high-

pitched baby crying drifted from below the sea.

When that sound was produced, even Zhang Tie covered his ears with hands as he felt like vomiting.

Eyes widely opened, Zhang Tie watched the man standing in the air being covered with blue sword qi. When the knight shot into the sea like a bolt, Zhang Tie also made a decision and rushed out of his cabin.

Zhang Tie had never witnessed how a knight fought. As there was a chance, of course, Zhang Tie would not give it up.

Zhang Tie directly came to the fore of the ship and looked at the sea...

Huge tentacles stirred up the 100-m high water columns and surging waves, making the Polar Light bumpier. Among those water columns and surging waves, a huge black shadow which was 100 m in width was below the ship. At the sight of it, Zhang Tie felt chilly all over.

In a split second, the blue sword qi had cut off the tentacles of over 100 m in length which stretched out of the sea like cutting melons and vegetables like lightning bolts. After dropping into the sea, the twisting, broken tentacles also caused high sprays and surging waves. As a result, Zhang Tie was soaking wet.

At the same time, the monster uttered a shrill shriek.

There was a steam-driven ballista at the fore of the ship. Whereas, the sailor of this steam-driven ballista had already been hacked away by one tentacle. At this moment, when the blue sword qi was fighting the monster, Zhang Tie noticed that nobody was manipulating the ballista, therefore, he immediately ran towards it.

After rapily checking the steam-driven ballista, Zhang Tie found that only the defensive armor plate of the steam-driven ballista was dented and twisted. The whole ballista was still in good condition. The steam pressure of the ballista was normal while a 2-m long triangular crossbow had been in place. The ballista was ready for launch at any time.

Without saying anything, Zhang Tie instantly sat in the seat of the gunner. At the same time, Zhang Tie forcefully rocked the steering driving wheel and aimed at that monster. At the same time, he held the hammer and prepared to trigger the bolt. Narrowing his eyes, Zhang Tie adjusted his shooting angle along with the rocking ship. Through the reticle window of the ballista, Zhang Tie observed the fight as he waited for the right chance.

Soon the chance arrived. Only after 1 minute, when the monster lost 2 tentacles, the seawater where it stayed instantly became as pitch dark as ink.

"You want to escape? Go die!" With a loud reproach, he hacked a crescent brilliance higher than 20 m into the sea.

In a split second, the seawater was frozen. Being split by that crescent brilliance, a 100-m long and deep vacuum groove was produced in the pitch dark water while a hill-like ferocious head of the monster was seen above the water...

Before being shocked by that knight's great strength, Zhang Tie had already stricken onto the trigger key with his right hand.

With a quake, a 2-m long huge bolt was sent flying towards the head of that monster from the ballista along the vacuum groove. When the crescent brilliance struck its head, the bolt also entered the monster's head.

Zhang Tie didn't know about the result, he only felt that his huge bolt directly entered the huge wound on the monster's head which was caused by that crescent brilliance.

After that, the seawater refilled the groove. Besides constant wind and waves, everything became quiet again...

After the blue sword qi disappeared, the person was standing still in the air above the sea where he had fought the monster.

Dozens of seconds later, an isle-sized body floated above the water while its lifeless tentacles started to bump over the sea.

It was 20 m higher above the sea although it was only a small part of its body.

The man standing in the air then flew back to the fore. After lowering his head and glancing at Zhang Tie, he didn't say anything. Instead, he walked towards the top deck where the VIP zone of the Polar Light was located.

Watching that man's back, Zhang Tie found he was an old man whose age was unidentified. That man looked like a bit older than 50 years old. However, he had no wrinkles. He also looked like he was 70-80 years old as he seemed to have experienced a lot. Besides well-combed silver-gray hair, his silver-gray pupils could bring a great pressure to people. Additionally, he had a raised forehead and a tall figure with a long sword in a sheath hung on his waist. All this radiated a great and sharp power.

When Zhang Tie recalled that old man's strike with his crescent sword qi which had even split the seawater and reached 100 m under the water, Zhang Tie felt that he was in a dream. If he stood in front of such a powerful person, the strike would have destroyed Zhang Tie 100 times.

'Is this the fighting strength of a knight?' Zhang Tie watched the old man's back with an admirable look. He didn't know when he would have such a powerful fighting strength—with only one strike, even gods and monsters would run over 100 m away.

"Star and Moon Sword Sage! Is that Samaranch, the Star and Moon Sword Sage?" Someone shouted on the top deck.

'Samaranch, Star and Moon Sword Sage!' Zhang Tie remembered this name.

At this moment, Polar Light had already anchored. The moment the crisis was solved, all the others staying in their cabins had run out while the sailors and seamen on the ship started to clean and repair the ship.

At the sight of the dead body of the terrifying deep-sea huge monster and the damaged parts of the ship, they were all struck dumb with astonishment. The whole fighting process lasted only 3-4 minutes from the deep-sea huge monster's appearance to its death. However, within such a short period, many people on the ship had experienced life or death situations.

From the hill-like part above the sea, Zhang Tie thought it was a mutated and evolved huge cuttlefish after observing it for a short while.

Zhang Tie then left the fore.

"Castle Lord, could you please collect a bit of its flesh? Just a finger-sized piece of it is enough!"

A familiar voice sounded in Zhang Tie's mind directly. It was Heller, the steward of Castle of Black Iron.

Zhang Tie was not used to talk with Heller in this way.

"Is that you, Heller?" Zhang Tie asked in mind.

"Yes, it's me, Castle Lord, I'm talking with you through the teleportation door of Castle of Black Iron. In this way, nobody could hear our conversation except for you. With increasing spiritual energy, you will get used to this way of communication. If you increase your spiritual energy a bit more, you will be able to talk with me directly without having to enter Castle of Black Iron!"

Hearing this explanation, Zhang Tie was reassured. "What will you use it for?"

"I will explain it to you when you come back. As the flesh of the huge deep-sea monster contains its mutated and evolved gene, which is very valuable. This might be useful to Castle Lord. The gene can only survive for several hours after. Therefore, you have to send it into Castle of Black Iron before it loses its activity!"

...

When the Star and Moon Sword Sage destroyed a tentacle of the deep-sea monster, he cut it into many pieces which scattered everywhere on the ship. Therefore, on his way back into his cabin, Zhang Tie casually picked up a piece of glutinous flesh which was as size as half a fist and teleported it into Castle of Black Iron by putting it into his pocket.

Chapter 396: A Forgotten Option

"Peter..."

When Zhang Tie walked across the messy area intending to check the wounds of the guy whom he had saved, he caught sight of Sam and Gerri. At the same time, Sam and Gerri also saw Zhang Tie. With a scream, Sam then walked towards him with Gerri.

"It's great to know that you're safe!" Sam revealed a big smile. However, he also felt a bit embarrassed as he scratched his head. "When we came out just now, we saw the monster's tentacle right in front of us, so...so..."

Zhang Tie then smiled as he patted Sam's shoulder. "I know, it's okay, I was also out there to watch the fight instead of fighting the monster. Therefore, I didn't need your help as I could simply dodge the monster's attacks."

Hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Sam and Gerri both let out a sigh. No matter what, although Zhang Tie ran out himself, it was not a righteous deed for them to turn around and escape.

"Oh, where's the monster?" Gerri looked around out of curiosity...

Zhang Tie then pointed at the fore. Standing beside the guardrail of a destroyed shipboard, Gerri then pulled a fixed item as he looked outside before he screamed.

At this moment, more and more people poured out of their cabins and started to look out of the shipboard. At the sight of the dead body of that huge deep-sea monster, they all screamed one after the other. Someone picked up its broken tentacles and watched them carefully.

Seeing Sam and Gerri being that curious, Zhang Tie didn't talk with them too much. "Enjoy yourself, I've got something to deal with. See you later."

"Argh, okay!" Saying this, Gerri then ran towards the fore while pulling Sam's arm.

Zhang Tie then came to the position where the man he had saved was. Although this area had been completely destroyed, the man could already stand up reluctantly while a sailor and a doctor were dealing with his wounds. At the sight of Zhang Tie, the man immediately struggled to hold Zhang Tie's arm in an excited manner as he shouted, "That's him, that's him, this young man saved my life. If he wasn't here in time, I would've been smashed to pieces..."

Hearing his voice, all the people in the destroyed cabin glanced at Zhang Tie, including that sailor and that doctor who were tending to his wounds. Although saying nothing, they all looked at him with admiration. What Zhang Tie did at the critical moment was so noble and brave that everybody would praise him if they knew.

Hearing this praise, Zhang Tie felt a bit shameful. Although it

was critical at that moment, before action, Zhang Tie had calculated the movement speeds of himself and the monster's tentacle. After knowing that he would not encounter any danger, he directly rushed towards the man and saved him. Therefore, although it looked very risky in others' eyes, Zhang Tie felt being safe.

However, it was unnecessary for Zhang Tie to clarify this to the public. Although he was not a righteous swordsman who especially did good things for the benefit of the average people, he wasn't an idiot either. Additionally, he had truly saved the man's life.

"Argh, I'm just here to take a look. It's good to know you're safe."

"Young man, do you know that you've just saved the life of Gelomof. May I know your name?" That man being saved by Zhang Tie asked solemnly.

"You can call me Peter."

Hearing Zhang Tie's reply, Gelomof instantly opened the collar of his coat. After that, he undid that heavy gold necklace and gave it to Zhang Tie.

"If encounter any difficulty in the Ice and Snow Wilderness, remember to find me in Bearman's Inn of Eschyle City. If I've already died, go to my sons, if my sons have died, go to my grandsons. I will tell them that anyone who presents this gold necklace is the savior of my family. I'm sure that they will exert their utmost efforts to help you!"

That man was so sincere that even Zhang Tie felt reluctant to refuse his good intentions. After glancing at that gold necklace with a bear head which was almost as heavy as 0.5 kg, Zhang Tie directly took it.

"I'll remember it. Bearman's Inn of Eschyle City. If I meet any difficulty, I will come for your help!"

Hearing Zhang Tie's words, the man burst into waves of laughter.

...

Because of the huge deep-sea monster's attack, the Polar Light anchored on the sea. At this moment, the sailors were all busy repairing the damaged parts of the ship and treating the wounded.

As the huge deep-sea monster only attacked them for a few seconds, only the exterior structures and the upper structure which was close to the shipboard were damaged. Therefore, after several hours' maintenance, all the passengers were told that they only needed to wait for one night before moving ahead.

Hearing this, all the passengers recovered their composes, especially when everybody was told that Samaranth, the Star and Moon Sword Sage was also on board, they finally felt reassured.

Besides damaging a part of the hull, the huge deep-sea monster

also caused high casualties——over 70 people were killed or injured. Additionally, 20 more people were missing. Everybody knew that the alleged 'disappeared' was just a euphemistic way of speaking. Being attacked by that monster, they must have entered its stomach or have dropped into the sea and would not come back.

Those who lost their friends or relatives were extremely grieved at this moment. In contrast, all those surviving the attack changed the tragedy into a comedy——after being told that Samaranth, the Star and Moon Sword Sage was also on the ship, some passengers who thought they were influential then queued up in the VIP area. They wanted to appreciate this legendary figure and dreamed to befriend him.

In contrast, more average passengers, especially those who lived in economical and average cabins were queuing up at the fore. They were taking photos together with that floating dead body of the huge deep-sea monster on the sea. As a result, the price of a photo soon rose to 30 silver coins from 15 silver coins. Even then there were many people still excited about taking photos.

The photographer on the ship then benefited the most from this event.

Sam and Gerri were also posing a charming gesture at the fore.

Not until Zhang Tie, Sam and Gerri finished taking their photo did Zhang Tie see Isle, the one living next to him, coming back from the gambling house of the Polar Light. What made them speechless was that Isle didn't even know what happened till now.

When being asked why the Polar Light anchored, Sam widened his eyes at once. "You don't know what happened?"

"I truly heard warnings in the gambling house but nobody cared about that as we were so immersive. Additionally, those guys in the gambling house told us to not go out until the ship sank. What? Did it run on rocks or an iceberg?" The small furrier asked out of curiosity.

Gerri told Isle what happened briefly. Hearing that, Isle widely opened his mouth before running out. After a short while, he ran back with a pitiful look. "What a pity! Such a huge body would contain tens of thousands tons of flesh. Being similar to that of octopus, its flesh is very good food. Additionally, as the price of food on the continent grows day by day, if we could process this flesh into canned fish or store them, we would make a lot. When food is insufficient, we could even save a lot of people using its flesh."

Hearing this, Sam and Gerri both felt pitiful while an idea appeared in Zhang Tie's mind...

...

Although it was already dark, the clamour caused by the dead monster still didn't fade away. After ensuring that he would not be disturbed by anyone else, Zhang Tie returned to his narrow average cabin. He then closed the steel hatch door before entering the Castle of Black Iron.

As it was already dark outside, the Castle of Black Iron also became dark inside.

Some torches were burning around the small tree and the houses. The torches were not too dazzling but could illuminate the surroundings.

Heller had long waited for Zhang Tie's arrival respectfully. As per usual, the 3 coolies would go to bed the moment the night fell and got up to work the moment the sun rose.

"Castle Lord, welcome to the Castle of Black Iron." Heller bowed elegantly.

"Good work." Zhang Tie nodded.

"I know Castle Lord has a lot of questions to ask. Let's talk about them in the house." Heller stretched out his hand to invite Zhang Tie in.

"Fine."

Zhang Tie directly followed Heller in the only double-storey log cabin.

The parlor had been furnished. However, compared to that of Jinwu Castle, this was only a clean place which was suitable for

deliberation.

A plate of strawberries and a plate of other berries were placed on the desk. At the sight of them, Zhang Tie realized that the Castle of Black Iron could provide him more and more materials now.

"Tell me about the function of the flesh of that huge deep-sea monster." Throwing himself onto a chair beside the desk, Zhang Tie grabbed 2 scarlet strawberries and threw them into his mouth. Tasting the refreshing and sweet strawberries, Zhang Tie instantly felt pretty good all over.

Hearing this question, Heller only replied with a smile as he put his hands in the air and separated them in a cool manner. Then, Zhang Tie saw a menu in the air.

——Basic Attributes of Castle of Black Iron

——Space and Terrain Transformation

——Living Beings and Species Administration

——Forming Special Seeds and Fruits of Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree

This was the main menu of the Castle of Black Iron

"Have you remembered that?" Heller smiled as he watched Zhang

Tie. He then moved one hand up in the air, causing the top 3 lines gradually fade away, leaving the last option that Zhang Tie had not used before.

——Forming Special Seeds and Fruits of Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree.

Chapter 397: Flower of Life

Gazing at the last option for a while, Zhang Tie realized that he hadn't touched it for over a year. After skimming over this option when he obtained the Castle of Black Iron at the beginning, which almost made him suffer from a heart attack due to excitement, Zhang Tie had not checked this option at all.

Zhang Tie could still remember the astronomical figures of basic energy storage, merit values and aura values required by those "special seeds and fruits".

"Am I able to grow some special seeds and fruits now?"

Zhang Tie asked.

"The wealth accumulated in Castle of Black Iron has been able to grow a few special seeds on the small tree." Heller confirmed. "Why not give it a look."

Of course, Zhang Tie knew what the word 'wealth' meant coming from Heller's mouth. It actually referred to those basic data. Zhang Tie then pressed the last option in the air before seeing a wholly new interface.

Being the same same as the first time Zhang Tie opened the option, there were various rotating three-dimensional patterns and descriptions of strange seeds and fruits on the interface. The only difference was that a few of those patterns were bright as they were activated.

Heller then pointed at one of those activated seeds. Zhang Tie then touched its pattern. In a split second, its three-dimensional pattern became enlarged and clearer.

——Seed of Flower of Life

——Aura Values: 530000

——Basic Energy Storage: 1358000

——Merit Values: 90000

——Planting Area for LV 1 Flower of Life: A Square with a side length of 66 m.

——Flower of Secret, also the flower of taboo which was usually mentioned by some human clans. It figured out the fundamental secrets of the existence of life. With one bioactive cell, the flower of life could clone another living being.

The seed of this flower of life required astronomical amounts of aura values, basic energy storage and merit values which were out of Zhang Tie's imagination.

"What's clone?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

"Simply put, a clone is a duplicate of another living being."

"Duplicate a life?" Zhang Tie was shocked by this answer greatly.

"That's it. It could duplicate a new life, including flesh and blood. If you have learned a lot about the scientific development of mankind before the catastrophe, you would know that people have already mastered the technology of cloning technique before the catastrophe. It's one of the most high-end techniques that people have mastered during that age."

"What do you mean by taboo?"

"With only one drop of your blood, the flower of life will clone a person who looks the same as you, including all the physical features and genes. If so, can your parents identify which one of you was the original if the both of you stood in front of them at the same time?"

"Of course I'm the real one!"

"Yes, you are the real one. But who will be the one who looks the same as you? From bloodline, as he originates from you, he also originates from your parents!"

Zhang Tie was then confused.

"As this technique would bring a huge impact to human ethics, it has been treated as a taboo. Actually, for many human races and living beings in the universe, they could not accept this."

"Wait, you mean a few races and living beings didn't think it was unacceptable. Don't they treat this as a taboo?" Zhang Tie figured out something from Heller's words.

"The reason lies in the difference in understanding the essence of life among different races and living beings. If you think that this body which contains various elements, blood and flesh is all of you, you will then take the cloning technique as a taboo. Whereas, if you take this body as a garment, will you treat those people who wear the same garment as you on the streets as taboo?" Heller said meaningfully.

"You mean it's nothing to worry about that?"

"I've told you that this depends on your understanding of life. If this body is all of you, then, will you think that you are different from those people with incomplete bodies essentially? When you see them wearing ragged clothes, do you think they are still as same as you? If this body is all of you, then, who's the one in the trouble-reappearance fruits? Is that just your illusion and conscious activity?"

Heller stared at Zhang Tie who was slightly frowning his forehead, "Don't worry about that anymore. Everything in Castle of Black Iron now exists for you. You are the absolute ruler here. Therefore, you don't need to change your world outlook to adapt to the things here. On the contrary, they will adapt to your existence and viewpoint! If you feel that you could hardly accept them, you can't choose them. If you feel it is nothing different than a garment worship, it is a garment workshop!"

After thinking for a short while, Zhang Tie ridiculed it. 'What a bullsh*t taboo! I've not planned to do anything weird with it at all. I'd better consider something more realistic.

"Therefore, you asked me to bring in a piece of flesh of that huge deep-sea monster?"

"Yes. That powerful mutated living being is very valuable. If you can afford it, with the help of the flower of life, you could constantly produce huge deep-sea monsters in the Castle of Black Iron."

"I don't think it is very powerful at all. The Star and Moon Sword Sage killed it in only a few minutes. Additionally, what do I need that disgusting thing for?" Zhang Tie crooked his mouth.

"Based on my analysis of that piece of flesh, I find that the huge deep-sea monster was going through puberty. Such a creature has a great potential for growth. If it was an adult monster, it would be at least twice the size of the one you saw. If so, it would not be killed by people so easily as an adult deep-sea monster is one of the most powerful lords in the sea. What's more, as these cloned creatures sustain their lives by consuming your resources, they will be closely related to you and treat you as their owner."

"You mean I can treat these cloned things as my pets?"

"As you will, they will definitely be much more docile than average pets." Heller confirmed.

Hearing this, Zhang Tie's heart raced. With his eyes fixed onto that seed of flower of life, Zhang Tie suddenly thought of something.

"You mean people have already mastered cloning technique before the catastrophe? Is this flower the product of human science at that age?"

Heller replied with a smile, "Besides the human race, there were numerous living beings and species in the universe. The flower of life is just a living being. Humans always dreamt of conquering the whole world with high-end science. Did you ever imagine that some other races and living beings could conquer everything by planting various plants? Those plants were born to have all the functions required by the human race, which were more senior than the top achievements of human science."

"That's unbelievable!"

"Fishes are born to swim and dive. However, how many difficulties have humans experienced diving deep into the sea? Birds are born to fly, however, how long had humans spent before being able to fly in the air? Treatment of water and soil pollution was a hot topic of human society even till the catastrophe, however, many plants are born to be able to purify water and revitalize the soil, which is much more powerful than human's scientific civilization. Humans are always dreaming about eternal prosperity through sunlight, however, plants are born with that ability."

"When did humans start transmitting messages through electromagnetic signals? All the plants in a forest naturally have the ability to transmit threatening warnings of invaders thousands of kilometers away through electromagnetic signals in a second. Receiving their signals, their partners would respond to it as soon as possible. Do you feel their instincts are strange? Do you feel that human civilization before the catastrophe is really that powerful? Living beings are born to have various strange instincts. Now that plants are born to have unimaginable super instincts, how could there not be a plant that could accomplish duplication and clone of life?"

Hearing Heller's words, Zhang Tie touched his head. 'This steward not only dwarfs me in looks but also has excellent eloquence and wisdom.' Compared to Heller, Zhang Tie found that he was totally an innocent kid.

"Wait..." Zhang Tie suddenly recalled that in many Chinese myths and legends, many people and living beings were bred in flowers. Are those myths and legends real?" Zhang Tie then told Heller about these myths and legends.

"Human myths and legends contain many memories and knowledge from far ancient times. Of course, many of them were fully fabricated by descendants based on their imaginations. As for the myths and legends that you mentioned before, I could only tell you that some of the Chinese might have a flower of life on this star long time ago." Heller explained to Zhang Tie seriously.

"What? You mean there's another Castle of Black Iron?" Zhang Tie was slightly stunned.

"There is only one Castle of Black Iron. But the flower of life is only a single member of a huge special plant population."

"Why could the small tree bear the seeds and fruits of the flower of life?"

"Because the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree is the king of that huge special plant population, which carries the life potentials of all the members of this population. When the conditions became mature, the Manjusaka would release all the life potentials of those members. This is its fate and instinct. You can also take the flower of life as a subordinate of the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree."

"You mean the option 'Forming Special Seeds and Fruits of Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree' is essentially the reproductive channel through which the small tree releases the life potentials of that huge special plant population?" Zhang Tie widened his eyes.

"You can take it as a contract or an appointment, based on which, you bring them into this world through your own efforts and they serve you as a payment instinctively. The most perfect and harmonious relationship in the universe is established on this reciprocity, cooperation, and interdependence." Heller confirmed.

"You mean, this space of the Castle of Black Iron might be a big botanical garden at the beginning which would bring various subordinate strange flowers and plants to that small tree while I am that diligent gardener who's selected to look after this botanical garden?" Zhang Tie pointed at his own nose.

"I don't think you are wrong. Because I'm also a subordinate of this space, I could only tell you that as I've told you, the most perfect and harmonious relationship in the universe is established on this reciprocity, cooperation, and interdependence. The fundamental rule in the universe is that one party could not casually determine the life or death of the other party, casually harm the other party or pay with no gain, which is applicable anywhere, especially in people's social life. Any relationship that violates this fundamental principle can't be sustained. However, relationships that violate this principle exist everywhere, like friends that become enemies, regime changes and the changing relationships between nations." After saying this, Heller asked Zhang Tie, "Do you think that mysterious existence who created the Castle of Black Iron has not considered this simple thing?"

Zhang Tie was numb...

Chapter 398: Making Progress

Of course, the powerful flower of life which could clone a new living being was very useful for Zhang Tie. With the genes of huge deep-sea monster, the moment he realized that he could have such an "assistant" in the sea, Zhang Tie was very excited.

Certainly, the flower of life's ability was limited. In order to clone a living being, the flower of life could only clone one time with one gene although it required an astronomical amount of basic energy storage, aura values and merit values. Being similar to most plants, it would not produce 2 flowers that were the exact same. The creature produced by the flower of life was also unique.

Therefore, with the gene of the deep-sea monster, Zhang Tie could only clone one huge deep-sea monster. If he wanted more, he had to obtain the genes of other huge deep-sea monsters.

However, Zhang Tie was already very satisfied with this.

...

"To produce a seed of the flower of life, you need 53000 aura values, 1358000 basic energy storage and 90000 merit values. Do you agree to produce the seed of the flower of life on Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree or not?"

"——Yes or No"

After seeing the familiar words once again, Zhang Tie instantly chose "Yes". The moment he touched the button, Zhang Tie felt that the small tree started to radiate a faint but colorful light that covered its leaves. Meanwhile, the small tree's leaves slightly shook and uttered the sound of "Ring ring ring...", which was pleasing to Zhang Tie's ears.

Zhang Tie felt that the small tree was very happy at this moment.

Zhang Tie knew that plants had emotional responses. It was said that the human race gained inspiration from plants' emotional responses while studying lie detectors. It was really out of his imagination that this small tree's emotional response could be that intense.

Feeling that the small tree was happy, Zhang Tie also became happy himself. In the past year, Zhang Tie had picked off so many fruits from it, yet, he didn't give anything to the small tree at all. Realizing that the small tree was very pleased with his choice, Zhang Tie was secretly overjoyed.

Although Zhang Tie input the largest amount of basic energy storage, merit values and aura values in producing the seed of flower of life he had ever saved up in the past year, he felt it worthwhile.

Perhaps in others' eyes, this was just a marvelous tree, however, for Zhang Tie, the small tree was his best friend and close partner as it had accompanied him throughout his growth.

"How long will it take the small tree to create the seed of flower of life?" Zhang Tie asked Heller.

Enjoying the sound of the small tree, Heller closed his eyes until he heard Zhang Tie's question. "It would take the Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree 1 hour and 40 minutes to breed a seed of flower of life. It's a seed, a fruit and the first subordinate of Manjusaka Karma Fruit Tree."

"Oh, what's the name of that strange plant species that the flower of life belongs to?"

"You are familiar with it as you even registered your exclusive label with it." Heller looked serious.

"You mean that strange plant species is called Manjusaka?" Zhang Tie widened his eyes.

Heller then nodded, "You got it. It is!"

"But isn't it a strange flower of legend?"

"The Manjusaka flower truly exists. As it is also a member of the strange plant species known as Manjusaka Karma. Just like the flower of life, the Manjusaka flower is born to enable people to seal their memories or memorize what happened. It could enable you to forget your sadness and comfort you."

If Zhang Tie was told this by others, he probably wouldn't believe

them. But since it was told by Heller, Zhang Tie believed it deeply.

Before the small tree bred its fruit, Zhang Tie checked his accumulated resources in the Castle of Black Iron by touching the basic attributes panel.

——Castle of Black Iron

——Length: 1 Kruso

——Width: 1 Kruso

——Aura Values: 111598

——Merit Values: 45127

——Basic Energy Storage: 1529100

——Special Output: Basic Reiki Yeast.

Only a few aura values were left while only 1/3 of merit values were left. What made Zhang Tie a bit reassured was the basic energy storage. After consuming 1358000 values of basic energy storage, there were still more than a half left in the Castle of Black Iron. This indicated Zhang Tie's fruitful achievement when he traveled in the sea for consecutive 3 days.

During the 3 days, Zhang Tie's basic energy storage surged 3 times. This also indicated indirectly that all the payment was valuable.

After checking these items, Zhang Tie checked the logs of merit values. He found that the merit values during this period mainly came from those sand scale fish that he employed people on Hidden Dragon Island to set free.

Nowadays, the slave responsible for setting free sandscale fish on Hidden Dragon Island was Paul, the alternate muling of the Sun Dynasty whom Zhang Tie bought from Stars Viewing City.

Without explanation, Zhang Tie just told Paul to buy some sandscale fish from the fish market on the wharf of Hidden Dragon Island before pouring them into the sea. Although Zhang Tie left Hidden Dragon Island, he didn't arrange anyone to supervise Paul's work every day. However, Zhang Tie could see Paul's work every day in the Castle of Black Iron.

If Paul set free sandscale fish, Zhang Tie's merit values would increase on the same day. As it was Zhang Tie who spent money and employed people to set free the sandscale fish, the merit values all belonged to Zhang Tie like how he arranged people to set free earthworms in Blapei.

By the way, Zhang Tie would like to test whether that person is reliable in an unconstrained environment. If that person could finish this job very meticulously even in such a scenario, it indicated that he was valuable. As was appointed between Zhang Tie and him, if that person could show his value to Zhang Tie, he

will get Zhang Tie's support for his revenge plan.

The latest 2000 merit values came from Glomof whom Zhang Tie had just saved from the terrifying tentacle of that huge deep-sea monster. As an old Chinese saying went, "To save a person is better than building a [7-story pagoda](#)"

The small tree was still gleaming while playing a nice score of music with its shaking leaves. Zhang Tie then left the house together with Heller and walked towards the small tree.

It would take some time for the seed of flower of life to come into being. Zhang Tie then planned to eat fruits during this period. Before eating fruits, Zhang Tie walked around the small tree. When he caught sight of the trouble-reappearance fruit, Zhang Tie threw his glance at Heller.

Of course, Heller knew what Zhang Tie wanted to know.

"Right, this trouble-reappearance fruit contains the scene where Castle Lord fought that huge deep-sea monster. The very living being that could be activated inside is the huge deep-sea monster. You've had good fortune today. Closely after Star and Moon Sword Sage opened its head, your bolt directly penetrated through that wound on the monster's head and gave it a fatal strike. Without your strike, that huge deep-sea monster could still stand for 2 minutes before dying.

"Ha...ha..." Zhang Tie became excited as he burst out laughing. What a fortune! He only thought about sealing the huge deep-sea

monster in the trouble-reappearance fruit at that time. He hadn't imagined that he was that lucky and had really made it.

Zhang Tie could not obtain such a precious chance to fight a huge deep-sea monster at sea anymore no matter how much he spent. Although Zhang Tie knew that he had rare chance to fight the huge deep-sea monster with his current ability, he still wanted to strengthen his swimming and fighting skills through fighting such an unrivaled opponent.

Additionally, after killing that huge deep-sea monster, he saw a huge passenger liner in the trouble-reappearance scene. With this super great toy, Zhang Tie could really enjoy himself.

Zhang Tie was thinking about removing the huge deep-sea monster and replacing it with some sea serpents.

Zhang Tie felt that it was his lucky day as so many achievements were waiting to place themselves before him.

...

He then constantly digested 4 fruits under the small tree.

Being affected by the 2 leakless fruits, the 16th surging point gradually turned from red to blue. With 2 barriers left, it would be ignited.

After eating the new trouble-reappearance fruit, Zhang Tie

gained a new scene and an unrivaled opponent.

After eating that fruit of redemption——gratitude from sandscale fish, Zhang Tie's sensitivity to cold and water flows rose by 8.7% respectively, which was over 12 times greater than that of commoners respectively.

This made Zhang Tie more curious. After setting free earthworms, he gained the preliminary recovery body. Zhang Tie really wanted to discover how his body had evolved after setting free so many sandscale fish.

After eating 4 fruits, Zhang Tie went off the stages from that high platform where the small tree was while Heller was waiting for him to the side.

The fruit of flower of life was still hanging over the small tree. It seemed to be growing fast while the small tree was still gleaming with swaying leaves.

"How long has it been?"

"It only took Castle Lord 1 hour and 20 minutes to digest the 4 fruits. 20 minutes are left before the fruit of the flower of life grows ripe." Heller watched that latest fruit with an eager look.

Zhang Tie then recalled a question that he had considered outside the Castle of Black Iron just now.

"Do we have a place to store food in here?"

"Yes, we have. But it's almost fully loaded. I'm thinking about having Agan to build another warehouse to store food these days. The daily grains supply in Castle of Black Iron could support the daily demands of one hundred. We need to solve the problem of lack of laborers and arable land."

"That huge deep-sea monster is still floating at sea. What a huge piece of flesh! Its body weighed at least thousands of tons. I was told that its flesh was a top food material. It would be a great waste to leave it floating at sea in this way. Do you have any method to deal with it?"

Zhang Tie asked this purely out of his sense of crisis. Zhang Tie knew that when the holy war broke out in the future, food would be in urgent demand. Since the event in Heavens Cold City, the prices of grains across Waii Sub-Continent had been surging rapidly. Everybody had a sense of urgency as they increased their stockpiles. Now that Zhang Tie knew that food would be very scarce in the future, he would feel uncomfortable by just leaving it flowing away at sea based on his personality. Given Zhang Tie's family background in Blackhot City, he would definitely treat it as a great waste if he just watched such a big piece of flesh floated away.

"You want to bring the flesh of huge deep-sea monster inside?" Heller narrowed his eyes. From his look, Heller seemed to be interested in Zhang Tie's thought.

"Right. If it was on land, I might not be able to bring it inside; but,

as it is at sea, I could bring it in. However, the problem is how to store them?" Zhang Tie scratched his head, "If we just put it in Castle of Black Iron, it would go bad in only a couple of days!"

"I don't think it would definitely go bad in Castle of Black Iron. Have you forgotten about the space and topographical transformation function?"

Being reminded, Zhang Tie instantly thought up something as he looked at Heller in surprise. "You mean..."

"We can enlarge the northern area of Castle of Black Iron. Why not directly create a huge ice cave underground to store those flesh? Additionally, reproduction and growth of microbes and bacteria which can cause food go bad will be restrained in the icy cave. In this way, we can store the flesh underground as long as possible..."

Hearing this, Zhang Tie directly jumped up from the ground.

"You will be responsible for building an underground ice cave and breeding the flower of life. For the ice cave, the larger, the better. I have to go out to get the flesh back now!"

After saying that, Zhang Tie left the Castle of Black Iron immediately...

Pagoda is a kind of Buddhism tower.

Chapter 399: Collect the Booty

In the evening, the wind grew heavier with the surging waves. It became colder outside. Sailors were busy repairing the damaged facilities. As the greater part of the metal guardrail on the left shipboard of Zhang Tie's floor had been destroyed, sailors were knotting nets with ropes in case that someone fell into the sea.

Given the low temperature of the sea in the Oro Strait, if commoners were to fall in, even if they could swim, they would be freeze to death in only 5 minutes.

After being anchored, the Polar Light was bumpier than when it was in motion. Therefore, sailors were very careful on deck.

Tonight, the stars were sparse while it was pitch dark over the sea. The fluorescent lamps hanging on the shipboards could only illuminate the area within 10-odd meters. The surging waves were blocking people's vision like the rising and falling of large black mountains.

Certainly, darkness only affected commoners. For Zhang Tie, after activating his night vision, he found nothing different between the day and night. The only difference was one layer of golden light when he activated his dark vision.

Now, Zhang Tie could not see the dead body of the huge deep-sea monster and its 100-m long tentacles that were floating not too far from Polar Light several hours ago. Due to the heavy northeast wind and the surging waves, it had been blown away.

Zhang Tie came downstairs to the bottom deck from the left side of the top deck.

At this moment, a manager was surrounded by 50-60 infuriated passengers at the entrance of the bottom deck. It took Zhang Tie a lot of effort to push through the crowd.

It was really noisy over there. Many people were screaming loudly while some were weeping.

"I'll say it again. No insurance service is provided for any ship that heading for the Ice and Snow Wilderness from Saint Herner Island. No business group or insurance company would be able to guarantee the safety of ships and passengers on this most dangerous route. This custom remains unchanged for hundreds of years. For those passengers who were killed, we can only give our condolences. We can't compensate them anything they've encountered. Your shipping tickets don't include insurance fee. You can see it at the ticketing center."

The manager was explaining loudly which was soon drowned by furious voices.

Zhang Tie could not give any help to the relatives and friends of those victims, neither was it related to him. Therefore, he just kept walking downstairs. Those above floor 3 were common cabins while those below floor 3 were economy class cabins and cargo cabins.

The hull below floor 3 was also attacked by the huge deep-sea monster. Thankfully, the damage wasn't as severe as that above floor 3.

It was the same as above, the bottom area was also very noisy. A great number of sailors were gathering in the center of the ship as they were pulling up a 50-m long tentacle by tower cranes, steel ropes, and pulley blocks.

Among those tentacles, this one was the shortest as it was only half of its full length even though Zhang Tie found that it still weighed over 100 tons.

Many people living in economy class cabins were watching them work. Some even gave them a hand. Therefore, over 100 people were busy working over there.

A fat man in a chief's uniform was commanding them.

"Take care, guys. The huge deep-sea monster's flesh is a top seafood ingredient. It's much more delicious than any octopus you've ever eaten. Those rich people prefer to spend much money on this. What a pity! Our ship is already at full capacity. Even if it wasn't, it would go bad in a couple of days on the ship. If we can move its body back, we will be rich!"

"Chief Hegel. Is the flesh of this huge deep-sea monster really as delicious as you've said?" A sailor asked loudly.

"Of course!" The fat chief said proudly. "Although its tentacle is sturdy, it tastes as tender and fresh as a sea cucumber. Additionally, the flesh of this huge deep-sea monster is high in nutritional value. Additionally, its qi and blood are very beneficial to people's health. If one always eat the flesh of huge deep-sea monster, one could be very robust. I was told that some powerhouses in Slav tribes like Mr. Samaranth would regularly hunt for huge deep-sea monsters and cultivate powerful fighters with the flesh of huge deep-sea monsters!"

"Haha, we will have yummy food!"

"Come on boys! I will show you my skills on roasting sea monster, trust me, you will bite off your tongues..." The chief waved his hands. Hearing this, all the sailors cheered up and started to work harder.

Hearing Hegel's words, Zhang Tie made up his mind. If he just let the food float away in front of him, it was no different than committing a crime.

The engine room was under the deck at the stern of the Polar Light. It was so noisy inside the room while the air was filled with stimulating smell of turpentine. Therefore, few people would usually come here, especial in the evening. There were only 2 dim fluorescent lamps at the stern, which reluctantly illuminated a small piece of area, leaving the surroundings shrouded in darkness. Almost no one was close to the deck and shipboards at the stern. Surging waves collided against the stern as sprays flew over the shipboards and fell onto the deck.

Zhang Tie came to the stern. After checking that nobody was there, he directly jumped into the sea without making a sound.

The moment Zhang Tie dived into the sea, he had activated a rune of the rapid moving skill. Meanwhile, he felt an undercurrent being pushed by the powerful north wind.

In a small range, when the undercurrent flew southwards, some other undercurrents were flowing oppositely as compensation.

Although it was an interesting circulation of water flow in such a small range, Zhang Tie knew that in a wider range, being opposite to the most famous flow driven by north wind was an ocean current that moved northwards.

The ocean currents here also formed a system. Under big ocean currents, there were medium-sized ocean currents, under these there were also small undercurrents. Under small undercurrents, there were smaller ones. Although of different sizes, these ocean currents formed an organic entity as they were linked with each other. Additionally, they had the same structure. Ocean currents that lasted thousands of miles and small undercurrents behind Zhang Tie both presented the same feature.

At this moment, Zhang Tie had a strange feeling. He thought about the Taichi pattern, which was from traditional Chinese culture. Zhang Tie felt that the circulating ocean currents formed a perfect Taichi pattern. Additionally, such circulation presented weird geometrically fractal laws.

'Some secrets seems to be hidden inside.' some thoughts flashed across Zhang Tie's mind.

However, when Zhang Tie wanted to considerate it, he lost his inspirations at once. Therefore, he could only give up temporarily.

Although Zhang Tie was wearing a thin piece of cloth, he could still freely move like a fish. After slightly sensing the surrounding sea flows, Zhang Tie turned around and dived towards the south.

The huge deep-sea monster was a territorial creature. Generally, no other sharp monster would be seen within hundreds of miles from a huge deep-sea monster. Therefore, Zhang Tie was brave enough to dive in the sea at this moment.

Although Zhang Tie was very confident about his great swimming speed in the sea and didn't think it was possible to see any sea monster swimming faster than him, he didn't know what surprise this mysterious ocean would bring him. Perhaps, this monster was a male while there was a female near it. Zhang Tie really didn't want to meet another huge deep-sea monster.

With this thought, Zhang Tie became alert as he started to look for the dead deep-sea monster.

He started from the stern and searched towards the south in the shape of a "Z". Based on his intuition, Zhang Tie judged that the dead body was at most dozens of miles away at this moment. Additionally, the huge deep-sea monster and its tentacles were so great in size and length. If Zhang Tie kept searching towards the

south along the wind and ocean current, he definitely wouldn't miss it.

Zhang Tie moved very fast. After leaving the Polar Light for several minutes, he had already been moving as fast as when he traveled in the sea several days ago. After eating a lot of fruits, his endurance had increased a bit. Gradually, Zhang Tie's moving speed exceeded the maximum that he reached several days ago.

Zhang Tie felt like he was driving a supercar in the sea while his body was that supercar. Similarly, the size of the sea flow that he absorbed into Castle of Black Iron with his spiritual energy was like an accelerator. It felt pretty cool. Additionally, with the help of his night vision, he could see this colorful underwater world. The whole ocean was golden while various fishes and shrimps and other marine life passed by him.

Although there were heavy winds and surging waves over the sea, it was relatively peaceful underwater.

Only after swimming a couple of minutes in the sea, Zhang Tie had already heard Heller's voice in his mind——Space and Topographical Transformation of Castle of Black Iron is completed.

After using up the basic energy storage, merit values and aura values of Castle of Black Iron, Heller had already built an ice cave which was about 600 m in length and over 100 m in width and height.

Because this ice cave was purely for storing food, Heller adopted regular geometrical patterns for this standard building. The whole ice cave was a square warehouse, the inside of which was divided into 21 rooms with different sizes. The temperature inside was kept lower than -18 degrees Celsius while the other indicators like moisture inside the ice cave were most suitable to store food.

After faintly sensing it through the teleportation gate of the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie had known the situation inside.

"Oh, do we need lots of energy to sustain this ice cave?" Zhang Tie asked Heller in his mind. After using the Castle of Black Iron so many times, Zhang Tie had learned one law—there's no free lunch in this world.

"It only requires a bit of energy. Because the Castle of Black Iron has a relatively closed and efficient energy circulating loop, absorption, and release of energy both happen in the Castle of Black Iron. I mean, you only need to throw some bricks into the Pool of Chaos. The energy converted from these bricks would enable this super large underground ice cave to run for hundreds of years with this low temperature. It is similar to the magma cave which was used to plant the fiery-flame red lotus."

Hearing Heller's explanation, Zhang Tie finally understood.

Only after a few minutes, Zhang Tie had noticed a broken tentacle of the monster, half of which was floating on the sea.

That tentacle was almost 100 m. Its thickest part was even

greater than Zhang Tie's height. With a glance, Zhang Tie knew it weighed at least hundreds of tons.

Back on the continent, Zhang Tie could never bring such a huge thing into the Castle of Black Iron as he could not carry it at all. However, he had a much easier solution in the sea. After locking onto the huge tentacle with his spiritual energy, Zhang Tie grabbed one end of that huge tentacle. After that, he opened the teleportation channel of Castle of Black Iron and absorbed that huge tentacle in together with a great amount of seawater.

Zhang Tie obtained this technique when he traveled in the sea several days ago. If an object could float in or on the sea, it meant that its weight equaled to its buoyancy. Although it was there, it was in a special state of zero weight for the Castle of Black Iron. Therefore, Zhang Tie could move it into the Castle of Black Iron using this method.

When seawater poured into the Pool of Chaos, that huge tentacle was thrown into the largest room in the underground ice cave.

As it was his first time to move such a long tentacle into the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie felt it a bit difficult to do despite his great physical strength.

However, everything he did for this was worthwhile. The moment he thought that he could add hundreds of tons of flesh into the warehouse of the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie would be very energetic in doing that.

In the next half an hour, Zhang Tie found another 2 broken tentacles and teleported them into the Castle using the same method.

1 hour later, Zhang Tie saw the hill-like body of the huge deep-sea monster 70 km away to the south of the Polar Light.

Some of its 8 tentacles had been broken while its body was covered with wounds caused by the Star and Moon Sword Sage. Only 5 tentacles of different lengths were left with it. Zhang Tie took a look at the huge deep-sea monster and found that its eyes had been dug out. Zhang Tie didn't care whether its eyes had special functions, he only cared about its flesh.

It was so huge. Even with the method that he used before, Zhang Tie could still hardly move it into the Castle of Black Iron. Staying in water, Zhang Tie thought about it for a short while before taking out of his double-carp swords. He firstly chopped off all the tentacles and teleported them into the Castle of Black Iron, leaving a hill of flesh.

It was the most tiring thing that Zhang Tie had ever done since he was born. It took him 4 hours to dismember the huge deep-sea monster and move them into the Castle of Black Iron.

After doing this, Zhang Tie was exhausted. It was really a great test for Zhang Tie both spiritually and physically to teleport all of its flesh into the underground ice cave of the Castle of Black Iron.

Commoners could never make it. During this process, the sharp

and long double-carp swords helped Zhang Tie a lot. Holding the swords' handle, as long as Zhang Tie released sword qi several meters in length, he would leave a huge wound on its body and tentacle. After circling around a tentacle with his double-carp swords, Zhang Tie would soon break it off. If it was a shorter sword, it would be much harder.

After doing this, Zhang Tie felt pretty satisfied and safe. This time, Zhang Tie finally understood the old Chinese saying, "With grains in hand, one would not be flurried". 'Old Chinese sayings are really wise!' Zhang Tie sighed inside. He estimated that the flesh as high as a hill in the Castle of Black Iron and would weigh at least 4000 tons. No matter how long the holy war would last, Zhang Tie knew that he wouldn't worry about meat to eat anymore. This huge deep-sea monster would enable Zhang Tie, his family members, and friends to survive longer than 100 years.

'What a worthwhile trip!'

Thinking of that trouble-reappearance fruit and the flesh as high as a hill, Zhang Tie burst into peals of laughter.

...

After leaving the Polar Light more than 5 hours, Zhang Tie silently climbed back onto the deck of the Polar Light wearily from the gangway ladder. He was wet all over.

When he was aboard, some passengers on the deck were almost stunned to death. They even took Zhang Tie as a monster in the

legend. Otherwise, who could climb on board from the sea in the middle of the night? Pointing at Zhang Tie, one of them even stammered, "Who...who...who are you?"

"Don't worry, I'm also a passenger of this ship. I dropped off into the sea just now. Thankfully, I'm good at swimming and survived..." Zhang Tie said with a fearful look as he took off his shoes and poured out the sea water. After that, he lifted his shoes and returned to his own cabin in wet clothes under the amazing looks of those people, leaving them glaring at each other.

When Zhang Tie was out of his cabin, he found Isle going out to the washroom. At the sight of Zhang Tie, Isle widened his eyes and seemed to be wake up instantly. "Peter, what are you doing?"

"I dropped into the sea just now when I was sleepwalking, so I swam for a while in the sea." Zhang Tie smiled, revealing his white teeth. Before Isle replied, Zhang Tie had opened his door and entered his room. Closely after that, he shut up his door, making a loud sound, "bang".

"Dropped into the sea while sleepwalking and swim back?" Looking at Zhang Tie's door, Isle muttered, "Lunatic!"

...

In the next 5 days, Zhang Tie ate food made of the flesh and tentacles of the huge deep-sea monster in the dining room. To tell the truth, it was really fresh, yummy and tender. Although it was not the staple food, after eating it for 5 days, Zhang Tie still liked

it. Especially when it was cooked with spices, Zhang Tie felt it was pretty good.

Thinking about his storage in the Castle of Black Iron, Zhang Tie almost burst out laughing in his sleep.

On the 6th day, the scarred Polar Light finally arrived at Eschyle City, the only city on Ice and Snow Wildness, one day later than the estimated time of arrival.

During these days' travel by ship, Zhang Tie was told that Eschyle meant "The place where my lord is coming!" in the local language, which was hilarious and strange.

On August 2nd, 890th year of the Black Iron Calendar, it sprinkled in Eschyle, making the port hazy.

After taking a deep breath, Zhang Tie left the deck of the Polar Light and landed on the Ice and Snow Wildness on foot after 8 days of bumpy travel on the sea.

Chapter 400: Being Tracked

Eschyle City reminded Zhang Tie of Kalur City. As the only city in the Ice and Snow Wildness, Eschyle was qualified to be a magnificent city.

Eschyle was also a huge city being built against a mountain. Standing at the wharf, Zhang Tie caught sight of the tall grey city wall in the drizzling rain while facing the special wild feeling from the Ice and Snow Wildness.

Besides being shocked by the size of Eschyle City, Zhang Tie also sensed something tough and wild.

Those pioneers disembarked and rapidly left the wharf, boosting the taxi industry and animal-driven vehicles industry present in the city. Some high-end black cars were parked by the gangway. The moment some influential figures disembarked, they had rushed into the black cars. With a slight shake, those cars disappeared in the drizzling rain.

Watching the Star and Moon Sword Sage leaving by car, Zhang Tie narrowed his eyes. "Can pieces of the Star of God truly be found in the underground of Haidela Glacial Cracks in the south of the Ice and Snow Wildness? If not, how come even legendary figures like Samaranth came here from afar?"

Samaranth's intention here had been spread all over Polar Light these days. Everybody believed that Samaranth was here for the pieces of the Star of God. Additionally, Samaranth didn't deny it,

which made more or less confirmed the speculations.

Zhang Tie felt the turbulence of the airflow through the fine hair over his neck as he also heard the familiar footsteps. Therefore, Zhang Tie didn't dodge, instead, he stood still and waited for the hand being placed on his shoulder.

"Peter, how about going together with us?"

Sam and Gerri carried a high pioneering luggage and wearing a waterproof cloak respectively as they walked out from behind Zhang Tie.

"Are you going to Haidela Glacial Crack?" Zhang Tie asked.

"Of course. Aren't all the pioneers coming here for the relics and the pieces of the Star of God?" Sam answered confidently.

"I'm afraid that we cannot share any of the pieces of the Star of God, but if we can find the relics, we might able to earn a bit!" Gerri added.

"I want to improve my fighting skills in some other places! As Haidela glacial crack is too boisterous now, I might not able to make any gains if I went there." Zhang Tie smiled. As he was already the target of Magical Snake Island, he didn't want to bring dangers to his new friends.

Additionally, he was not here for any relics or pieces of the Star

of God at all. Although they were very attractive, especially the pieces of the Star of God which had many marvelous effects, Zhang Tie knew that he could not share any part of the pieces of the Star of God with his limited abilities. The moment he watched Samaranth's great fighting strength, Zhang Tie had known that it was no different than seeking death by competing with Samaranth.

'If Samaranth is here, the other powerful ones who are as powerful as Samaranth might also come. If so, it's not the business of a newbie like me. I'd better focus on forming seven-strength fruits. People can't always survive on luck.' Zhang Tie mumbled inside.

"All right. Hope to see you later. We will go to Haidela Glacial Crack now. When we finish our task there, we will come back to Eschyle City and stay here for a long time. Sam and I both plan to breakthrough to LV 6 before leaving the Ice and Snow Wildness. Therefore we'll be heading to some entrances in Ice and Snow Wildness leading to the underground world where we can form our battle qi! If you want to look for us, just go to the Pioneers' Bar in Eschyle City!"

"Wish you good luck. Oh, here are my gifts for you!" Saying this, Zhang Tie took out 2 vials of all-purpose medicament and gave 1 to each of them. Considering that the all-purpose medicament had been sold across the continent, Zhang Tie was not afraid of exposing his real status by gifting 2 vials of all-purpose medicament.

"What's this?" Sam and Gerri looked at them with curious looks.

"All-purpose medicament gifted by my friend!"

"All-purpose medicament?"

The two young pioneers' faces were filled with doubts. At the sight of their looks, Zhang Tie knew that they must not have heard about all-purpose medicament at all. For most of the pioneers, all-purpose medicament was still a bit far from their daily lives as a new medicament. If not Zhang Tie, they might have to wait several months before knowing this new medicament.

"You can take it as a preliminary antidote. When you are wounded or need to increase your physical strength or when you catch a cold, you can use it!"

"Hehe, sounds great. Its package is also not bad. Thanks, buddy!"

Sam and Gerri then put away the medicament as they were still dubious about Zhang Tie's words. They felt that Zhang Tie was boasting to a certain degree. However, considering Zhang Tie's kindness, they extended their thanks to him.

They then bid farewell at the wharf. Isle was still dealing with his goods and could not disembark at the moment. As Zhang Tie had said goodbye to him just now, he didn't wait for him anymore.

Most of the pioneers directly called a car nearby the wharf and left.

Haidela Glacial Crack was in the south of the Ice and Snow Wildness on the map. It was in the wild 2000 km away to the northwest of Eschyle City. There was a small town called Sciatta about 300 km away to the west of Eschyle City. It was the farthest place that wheeled vehicles could reach in Eschyle City.

All the pioneers who dreamt of wealth in the Haidela Glacial Crack chose Sciatta as their first destination after they reached the Ice and Snow Wildness. From Sciatta, they would then set out for the Haidela Glacial Crack based on their own abilities. As for whether they could survive there or not, it depended on them.

As it was only 300 km away from the wharf to Sciatta, if everything went smoothly, they would arrive at Sciatta at night.

Zhang Tie watched Sam and Gerri and 10 more pioneers bargaining with a truck driver and getting on his old truck before disappearing into the rain.

Soon after Sam and Gerri left, the rain became heavier. The drizzling rainwater flowed down along Zhang Tie's neck, causing him to shiver. After glancing at that high city wall of Eschyle, Zhang Tie tightened his waterproof cloak and left the wharf...

...

5 minutes later, Zhang Tie queued up outside the south gate of assistance City. After being checked, he paid the entrance fee.

Despite the heavy rain, all the people were still queuing up orderly outside the city gate because of the 2 lines of fully-armored robust soldiers standing outside the city gate who were all taller than 2.2 m.

The soldiers were wearing eccentric iron bear-head helmets, making them very terrifying.

A tall fighter was standing in front of Zhang Tie, who was also carrying a leather container which contained 6 metal javelins.

The 2 lines of soldiers seemed to pay special attention to this person who was carrying a container of metal javelins. Zhang Tie noticed that many people among the soldiers had already focused on this fighter since the guy queued up.

Feeling this, the fighter became a bit nervous as he glanced at himself several times to see whether something was not wrong.

Compared to that fighter who was carrying a container of javelins, Zhang Tie was in a worse situation. The moment he left the Polar Light, Zhang Tie had found that he was watched by someone. The man kept spying on him all the way from the harbor to their present desination. Although hiding among the crowd, the spy still didn't move his eyes away from Zhang Tie.

As he was queuing up, Zhang Tie touched the ring with common look on his fourth left finger. If not for this ring, Zhang Tie might not have realized that he was spied on by someone the moment he

disembarked.

The finger ring was gifted by Olinia when he left Saint Herner Island. It was a rare rune equipment which was called the "Ring of Awareness".

2 rune effects were added onto the Ring of Awareness—an 8% increase of Zhang Tie's sensing ability, gaze alert. As long as someone looked at Zhang Tie with bad intentions for over 20 seconds from behind, this ring would warn Zhang Tie.

Few people would gaze at someone from behind for over 20 seconds, strange or not. Additionally, people's eyesight was a media possessed special spiritual energy which could carry one's emotions and mentality. With this ability, the ring could receive and sense this spiritual energy thrown from others before warning the one being gazed at.

This was a very rare effect, which created an invisible security blanket over Zhang Tie. With this effect, Zhang Tie knew that this rune ring must be very precious. Rune equipment like this one which could grant the wearer with some special ability were always rare goods which could even be hardly seen in auction houses.

When he left the dock, Zhang Tie's finger with the Ring of Awareness felt numb. He then realized that he was spied on. The person in question was very skilled and knew how to hide in different situations. If not for the ring, Zhang Tie wouldn't even notice he was being spied on at all.

However, after being warned by his finger ring, Zhang Tie sped up. When he arrived at the city gate, he finally found out who was following him.

With a wisp of cold smile over his mouth corners, Zhang Tie realized that the spy must be from Magical Snake Island. If not, how could such a trivial person like him be followed by someone the moment he landed in the Ice and Snow Wildness?

'Based on the power of Magical Snake Island, it's normal for them to arrange some assistance and intelligence centers in Ice and Snow Wildness. When he was on the Polar Light, Magical Snake Island must have notified their people here through long-distance communication means. It's not difficult for them to find a person who looks like me from the passengers.'

Those b*stards!

When it was that fighter's turn to be checked, one head-like guy walked towards him from the 2 lines of soldiers and glanced at him carefully.

"Is it your 1st time here?" The man's voice sounded oppressive yet kind, which was in sharp contrast to his personality. In Zhang Tie's opinion, this guy should roar as he might always do.

"Yes!" That fighter replied.

"What are you here for?"

"I was told an animal tide occurred somewhere in the Ice and Snow Wildness, therefore, I came here to improve my fighting skills and make some money!"

"Hmm, you can enter for free!" After glancing at the fighter for a short while, the head waved his hands.

That fighter was stunned for a second. Holding a silver coin, he didn't know whether he should put it inside the box in front of him, "You mean...I don't need to pay the entrance fee?"

"Right. All the warriors with javelins would enter Eschyle City for free from then on. This rule was made several days ago!"

Receiving the confirmation, the fighter revealed a big smile as he said, "Thanks!". Anyone in any place when receiving such special treatment would be very happy.

"If you are confident about your throwing skill, you can attend the eagles hunting meeting on Ural Lake a few days later. The winner would win a set of rune javelins made of aerolite!" Before that fighter left, the head added.

Hearing this, the fighter turned around with his eyes widely opened as he forcefully swallowed his saliva, "What? You mean a set of rune javelins made of aerolite?"

"Right."

"Anybody could attend it?"

"Yes, anybody, regardless of age and race. If you think you are able to do that, you can attend it. Additionally, I was told that the winner might even gain the favor of the holy virgins of the tribes in the Ice and Snow Wildness!"

Hearing this, even Zhang Tie had realized that the head was urging him to attend it. However, that fighter only took a deep breath twice before nodded and left with his container. He seemed to be contemplating participating.

A set of rune javelins made of aerolite and being favored by holy virgins! The rewards were really attractive. Any man who liked money, women, privilege or sharp weapons would be restless as they heard this news.

Even Zhang Tie's heart raced as he was thinking about having a look at the throwing skills of those powerhouses.

'He said this special treatment was released a few days ago. But why? Ice and Snow Wildness is really boisterous these days!'

However, Zhang Tie could never imagine that this might be related to him.

When it was Zhang Tie's turn. The head glanced at Zhang Tie

with a frown as Zhang Tie's boy-toy face and pioneering look made him disgusting.

"You are a pioneer?"

"Yes!"

"4 silver coins!" The head replied in a cold voice.

"What? why do you ask for 2 silver coins from others, someone free, yet 4 from me?" Zhang Tie rebutted loudly.

"All the pioneers are here to make money. You only want to take away goods away from here without contributing nothing to us. How come that happens! Therefore, all the pioneers need to pay twice the entrance fee!" After saying this, that man waved his head impatiently while those surrounding soldiers were staring at Zhang Tie with malicious looks. It seemed that as long as Zhang Tie dared to jump up, they would beat him up.

Zhang Tie then threw 4 silver coins into the box silently. After that, he sped into Eschyle City without even looking back.

When Zhang Tie left the city gate, he heard someone muttering behind him, "Why such a young man prefer to be a pioneer? Are they dreaming of gold coins dropping off the sky, humph!"

"These pioneers are no different than hyenas. When they find rotten meat, they would rush over there. However, when they

meet troubles, they would escape as soon as possible. I should suggested to the lord that he should forbid these pioneers in from then on. These guys are nothing but crap!"

"I don't agree with you. These guys contribute to the improvement of maps. As so many remote areas are waiting for them to explore, they are not useless!"

"If not, I truly think that we should not allow any pioneer to step in Ice and Snow Wildness..."

"Mind our own business!"

Zhang Tie then started to run. He looked like seeking a shelter. Therefore, he was far away from those comments very rapidly. After leaving 50 m away from the city gate, he saw another figure hurriedly following in through his eye corners.

Zhang Tie then narrowed his eyes. At the sight of an alley not far from him, Zhang Tie directly flashed inside...

In half a minute, another figure arrived and flashed into the same alley without any hesitation...

It was a very heavy rain while the day turned gloomy!

Rainwater fell down from the roof and eaves of the buildings on both sides of the alley, forming 2 fine waterfalls. The ground of the alleyway had been covered with 1 cm high rainwater.

Zhang Tie was standing against the wall under the eaves in the corner. Narrowing his eyes, he watched the waterfalls pouring off the eaves over his head.

With a lightning bolt across the sky, it turned white in a split second in front of him. After a few seconds, a series of booms drifted from afar. At the same time, with a series of rapid footsteps, a guy flashed in this alley...

The moment he flashed in, he saw Zhang Tie while the latter was also watching him with a smile. The man's face instantly changed as Zhang Tie launched his attack...

Along with spraying raindrops, Zhang Tie moved as fast as lightning bolt...

That person was also good at fighting. Zhang Tie estimated that he was about LV 6. However, compared to Zhang Tie, he was nothing but crap.

Zhang Tie moved both in both a quick and fierce manner. Two seconds later, with a muffled harrumph, Zhang Tie had already grabbed his neck and fiercely threw his back onto a stone wall on one side of the alley.

Feet in the air, that person sprouted a mouthful of blood when he was pounded onto the wall by Zhang Tie. After the blood fell into the rain water on the land, it was soon flushed away into the drainage system with swirls.

Not until then did the thunder disappeared...

"Don...don't kill me, I...I will give you all of my money!" Before Zhang Tie asked, the guy had already started to explain in a flurried look like when a commoner met a bandit.

Zhang Tie then replied with a smile, 'What a smart guy! He has long thought about fabricating a lie!'

"Who else is in Eschyle besides you are from Magical Snake Island?" Zhang Tie put it bluntly.

"I...I don't know what are you talking about!" That man looked innocent until he heard "Magical Snake Island" when his pupils narrowed out of control.

Although people could tell a lie through mouth, they could not cover it with their eyes. This was how Donder taught him before. If this guy had nothing to do with Magical Snake Island, when he heard Magical Snake Island, his pupils would remain unchanged or enlarge. Instead, his pupils narrowed, which meant that he was extremely nervous inside.

"I'll ask you one last last time. I don't want to waste time on you. Who's sent from Magical Snake Island to kill me? Tell me all of their names. Then, I will save your life. After that, you can escape from Eschyle without worrying about MSI's revenge on you..." Zhang Tie said calmly.

"I really don't understand what are you talking about, my money..." Before he finished, he looked extremely anguished. He looked down as he saw Zhang Tie poking a dagger into his body from below his left armpit. He wanted to groan yet he couldn't as his neck was being held by Zhang Tie. Before he closed his eyes, he glanced at Zhang Tie regretfully and amazingly. He didn't seem to believe that Zhang Tie had seen through his trick, made up his mind, and mind and was that merciless.

"I've told you that I don't want to waste time on you!" Zhang Tie loosened his grip while that guy slid onto the ground like a pile of mud. At the same time, a lot of blood flew off his body and dyed the ground.

Zhang Tie then quickly disappeared in the curtain of the heavy rain...

Several minutes later, another person flashed into the alley. The moment he flashed in, he had caught sight of that guy being killed.

"Damn it!" That person swore loudly...